



OTHERWORLDLY EVIL MONARCH

BOOK 03

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Otherworldly Evil Monarch

(异世邪君)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Jun Xie was the number one assassin in modern earth. His skills and knowledge in the field of assassination were unparalleled, his accomplishments unprecedented, his reputation terrified the entire underworld. However, during a mission to retrieve a mystical treasure, a mishap occurred...

He is now Jun Moxie, a sixteen year old super level debauchee, sole heir to the declining Jun family. A family of valiant heroes, left with an old grandpa, a crippled uncle and a debauchee as the sole heir! Accepting the world's criticism and cold stares with a smile, his new journey begins! His life will be carved by his own will! Rise to the top! Evil Monarch Jun Xie!

“This cup I toast to those I’ve killed in my past life. Forgive me, for there is no chance for you to have revenge. Gulp!

This cup I toast to those whose life I will take in my new life. Forgive me, for you are fated to die by my hands. Cheers!”

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Novel Saga @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Novel Saga @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201: 'Free Hand' granted

"There are only the early signs of it at present." Zhao Jian Hun stated coldly: "This scheme will require a very serious amount of planning before it can be executed. After all, the Jun Family is the strongest military power of the Tian Xiang Empire, and even the Emperor doesn't not take your Family lightly. However, their plan seems abundantly clear."

"Ha ha, the smell of their mothers' milk hasn't even dried out yet, and those three kids are actually thinking of targeting my Family....." Jun Wu Yi laughed coldly.

"Moreover, the fact that the Dugu Family still can't find a suitable match for their daughter has made their position unclear on this matter." Zhao Jian Hun added: "To be honest, I'm actually looking forward to this happening. If the two main forces of the Tian Xiang Empire are divided..... If your Empire's backbones breaks, then it's a good thing for us, and I can just take my army and vandalize your entire force in one swoop, and then I can easily expand the Yu Tang map! How wonderful would it be if I could just unify this world in one single swoop?!"

"Why are you telling me this? What's in it for you?!" Jun Wu Yi grunted.

"I cannot hide this in Jun Wu Hui's presence! I'm only telling you this because you're Jun Wu Yi's family, and he was my most respected opponent."

Zhao Jian Hun turned around and looked at Jun Wu Hui's statue once again and then slowly spoke: "I'm looking forward to the Jun Family producing another man or woman of the White Commander's caliber. But either way, I cannot allow this 'once heroic' family to vanish in the dark of a power struggle."

"This is the only thing I'm capable of doing for the Idol of my heart."

Zhao Jian Hun stood up straight and strode forward to Jun Hu Wui's statue once again, looked up at it, and continued to stare at it for a long time, and then he suddenly turned around: "I'll take me leave!"

"I won't be seeing you out!" Jun Wu Yi stated in a harsh tone, and then added: "..... nor will I be thanking you!"

Zhao Jian Hun stood motionlessly for a while before he smiled at Jun Wu Yi, and asked in a coarse voice: "You won't see me out?"

Suddenly his voice lowered as he asked: "Am I not important enough? Or perhaps I'm not worthy enough?"

Jun Wu Yi was silent for a while, but then he smiled and said: "You are."

"I understand." Zhao Jian Hun took a deep breath: "Once I leave, I'll immediately return to Yu Tang! Jun Wu Yi, if we ever meet on the battlefield again..... don't hesitate, and don't think that I won't attack you mercilessly because of today!"

The sides of his face showed a sign of sadness: "All these year, I've had to bear all this, and I'm really tired of it now! The undefeated general.... But I'm really just a lucky Bastard!"

Once he finished this last sentence, he turned around and walked away.... Without looking back.... without speaking another word. His desolate silhouette continued to walk away, his black cloak raised in the wind, his head held high, and his figure slowly disappeared out of sight.....

The Tian Xiang soldiers stationed on both sides of the walkway could only stare at their enemy nation's commander in awe.

"This man is too proud." Jun Wu Yi whispered as he stared at Zhao Jian Hun's disappearing figure: "Back then, Big Brother had once said: his pride is his character's biggest weakness, and can be used to trick him into several trap, and he'll tread into them each time without repenting his action."

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help muffling his laughter: "Yes, but he should've died a hundred times by now.... managing to stay alive till now isn't an easy thing to do in his case."

"Although this man is too proud, but his pride is also his greatest asset. He's well versed with every battle formation, every ambush tactic, and his knowledge of warfare transcend that of any other man; why shouldn't he be proud of his abilities? If I were him, I'd be the same!"

Jun Wu Yi smiled: "And this great ability of his was always admired by your father. Even in the greatest moments of desperation, this man never gave up; in fact he never even gave up hope even though he was defeated several times.... Your father and I were once talking, and he told me that even he wouldn't have been able to do this! Zhao Jian Hun is an exceptional man! He never gives up, no matter how harsh his circumstances are!"

Jun Mo Xie could only endorse this statement in his heart: [setting sail with the tailwinds is not regarded as talent; surviving through adversities, and fighting to survive, and continuously fighting back is the sign of a true hero!]

"At that time, when we were trying to study Zhao Jian Hun, it was his own actions and words that had helped your father in deciding the strategy for dealing with Zhao Jian Hun." Jun Wu Yi's words were brimming with pride: "And his strategies are still valid when it comes to dealing with Zhao Jian Hun!"

"What?" Jun Mo Xie suddenly became interested in knowing more.

"Zhao Jian Hun was one of the most prominent bachelors in Yu Tang at that time, and one of the most influential ministers of the Empire wanted to give his daughter to Zhao Jian Hun in marriage; but that woman was extremely fat, and ugly." Jun Wu Yi smiled: "At that time, Zhao Jian Hun had bluntly spoken out in front of the entire cabinet of minister: How's such an ugly woman a worthy

match for such a brilliant general?"

Jun Mo Xie burst into laughter.

"The first time when Big Brother heard of this, he said: Zhao Jian Hun is proud, blind to political power, and superior to his fellow soldier in terms of all kinds of abilities; he holds himself in a very high light, and will never allow himself to be subjugated to another man. Since the Yu Tang Empire lacks this kind of talent, they will allow him to break the rules to allow him to flourish, but this a bad thing for him. Being proud and aloof is good for a learned man in most cases, but there can be exceptions when pride can also become a fatal flaw! Even in the future, whenever anyone is capable of grasping this weakness of his, that man will be able to put himself in a position of invincibility against Zhao Jian Hun!"

Jun Wu Yi's voice seemed full of recollection: "Big Brother had once said, Zhao Jian Hun is an ordinary general, but he has still risen to the spot of Yu Tang's most prominent general in less than two years! Big Brother had said, but even then, his weakness still remains the same as before. Getting a hold of his weakness isn't very difficult, but to use his weakness into getting the better of him isn't easy because his personality foreordains toughness of character. It will take more than just a series of fatal blows to erase his fighting spirits, but even then he would eventually come back. And that's exactly what happened; Big Brother used his weakness to defeat him twenty nine times, but unfortunately in the final battle....."

"It's easy to change circumstances, but it's difficult to change one's nature." Jun Mo Xie sighed as a burst of sincere respect arose in his heart for the father he had never met. This one sentence alone had given infinite knowledge about the enemy general. This one sentence alone was enough to get a hold of the enemy general's weakness, but moreover had laid out the necessary plan to defeat the man. [It is no wonder that Jun Wu Hui is regarded as the god his generation's military minds!]

After understanding Zhao Jian Hun's weakness, Jun Mo Xie instantly understood the reason behind the man's suffering.

[He's a proud man, and a real warrior! If such a man has to bear the shame of defeat, then he perhaps wouldn't take it to his heart, and will probably be able withstand it because he knows that he can find another opportunity to wash that shame away. But now he has to bear the shame of something that doesn't even belong to him, a shady "Victory"!]

[For such a proud man, this victory is even more painful than death.]

[The lucky general!]

[This title.... such shame is something that a man like Zhao Jian Hun is simply incapable of withstanding, and it has put his mind in shackles! Moreover, he has no way to get out of it either!]

[It is no wonder that he said: All these year, I've had to bear all this, and I'm really tired of it now!]

At this point, Jun Mo Xie could finally understand the true meaning behind this sentence; he could finally understand the endless pain, grief, and burden that this man has had to bear all these year!

Perhaps, the only way to unload this burden would be to defeat the Third Brother of the Jun Family; the only remaining of the Three Great Jun, Jun Wu Yi.... But even the chances of this taking place were now slim!

Zhao Jian Hun had remained undefeated all these years, and although he had seen many victories, but his heart was already overwhelmed! Therefore, he had recklessly followed after Fei Meng Chen to the Tian Xiang Empire so he could pay his respected to Jun Wu Hui's cenotaph! Not for anything else, but just to vent out the pain of his heart!

From this point of view, Zhao Jian Hun's words regarding taking

revenge for Jun Wu Hui's death weren't fake! Because, Jun Wu Hui's culprits are the same people who have brought upon this immeasurable pain on him!

Taking revenge for Jun Wu Hui would be tantamount to the only outlet he has left to vent out his own anger and suffering!

"It seems that three Princes simply cannot wait to bathe in the springs of Imperial power!" Jun Wu Yi spoke as they exited the memorial: "Mo Xie, they simply cannot obliterate the Dugu and Jun Family. The Dugu Family and the Jun Family are simply too powerful for these little kids to deal with, and they simply aren't qualified enough to remove us from their paths! However, dealing with just you alone, is much simpler; in fact, the chances of success are much higher for them. After all, you are the sole heir to the Jun Family, and if you're gone, then no matter how hard your grandfather and I work, no matter how well we place our Family... it will all be for nothing. You should take guard in this regard."

"Uncle my strength may not be too high, but..... if they want to kill me, I'm afraid that's easier said than done." Jun Mo Xie smiled, and then broke into a cynical laughter, [I was just manipulating a battle between six Spirit Xuan experts the other night, and even then I was able to move about freely, so what threats do these little assassination tricks carry for me? With the Yin Yang Escape law, I could even get away if all the Eight Great Master came for me,] "However, if they attack me first, then I will not show them any mercy."

Jun Mo Xie's mouth slowly curved into a cruel smile.

[The three Princes? Ha ha, the Princes want me dead? That's funny! I'd like to see which of the three brothers actually has the courage to come after me! Would I even need to retaliate?]

"Don't show them any mercy!" Jun Wu Yi's hair was flying back in the wind, while his eyes seemed a bit faint as he added: "But once you attack them, it is necessary that you don't leave any

traces behind at any stage, else it will bring an endless storm."

"I understand." Jun Mo Xie's eyes narrowed as he continued to push his Uncle's wheelchair forward. [Third Uncle really isn't afraid of starting trouble, is he?]

[When it comes to being discrete, I believe that there's no one else in the world more capable than I am at it!]

At this time, a figure was standing at the roof of the opposing building, which suddenly dropped out of sight like an anxious bird flashing away for the fear of getting struck by lightning. The uncle and nephew duo, both caught a glimpse of this figure, and immediately became anxious.

"He was too fast! He's too fast for anyone from my generation!" Jun Wu Yi's pupils dilated.

Jun Mo Xie's mind suddenly burst into movement.

Although the face wasn't visible, but the smooth flight of the figure was somewhat familiar; it was almost like a hawk was descending down from the heavens above, and in today's world, there was only one man capable of possessing such elegance and speed, and that man was none other than the Eighth Great Master himself, The Solitary Falcon!

"Third Uncle, that man seems to be an old friend. I'll go and see things out; you please head back, and don't worry about me." Jun Mo Xie slowly stated as he noted the direction in which that figure had disappeared.

Chapter 202: Battle in the Maple Forest

"Alright, but you be careful." Jun Wu Yi agreed in a heartbeat. He had already realized that if his nephew wanted to go alone, then he must have his own reasons.

Jun Wu Yi was rather confident of his nephew's abilities, and wanted to return to his own personal practice as soon as possible instead of worrying needlessly about his nephew's whereabouts.

A few days ago, Jun Mo Xie had given Jun Wu Yi a detailed outline of a very mysterious sword-play technique stating that he had accidentally stumbled upon it. Initially Jun Wu Yi had scoffed at the technique refusing to believe its validity, but had later realized that the technique was indeed very effective. In fact, Jun Wu Yi was completely taken by this technique since it was subtler than anything he had ever seen before, and could still be used to impulsively kill off an enemy with a burst of strength!

Moreover, this technique was so precise, that it was rather difficult to dodge if applied correctly! Jun Mo Xie had studied several ancient weapons in his previous incarnation, and had sorted out his knowledge to formulate a technique which suited Jun Wu Yi's temperament.

Jun Wu Yi had fought in several wars as a younger man, and was cold-blooded but impulsive military general, which made this law a perfect fit for his nature!

It was as if the technique was made to his measure! As a result, Jun Wu Yi had been madly trying to learn it.

The uncle and nephew duo split up.

Jun Mo Xie was a bit confused since the fray for the Xuan Core had already ended, which meant that all the experts who had previously gathered in the Tian Xiang City should've already dispersed by now. However, for some reason, the Solitary Falcon

was hadn't left the city yet.....

The young master Jun had always known that it was impossible to know the entire story behind any man's actions, but he had already figured out that the Solitary Falcon was never interested in the Xuan Core itself, and had only come looking to find the right opponents to fight against. He knew well that in case the Solitary Falcon had been interested in the Xuan Core, then he could've easily escaped with the Xuan Core at any time he wanted to, and no one present on the scene could've obstructed his path; so much so, that even the two Xuan Beasts from the Tian Fa forest wouldn't have been able to catch up with him.

[So, what is he doing here today?]

[Perhaps, there's something else in the Tian Xiang City which has caught his attention? Could it be that he's found another expert to fight against?]

Jun Mo Xie had been wracking his brains to get close to the Solitary Falcon right from the beginning, which is why he had engaged the Solitary Falcon in such enticing conversations and had offered him such fine wine.

However, his plan had to be pushed out ahead of scheduled time, and the unexpected arrival of so many Sky Xuan and Spirit Xuan experts left Jun Mo Xie overwhelmed.

Later, once the battle for the Xuan Core had terminated, Jun Mo Xie realized that he could use the help of those two Xuan Beasts from the Tian Fa forest to do his necessary tasks, which meant that he no longer needed the Solitary Falcon to carry out his immediate plans!

As a result, even though he had planned everything very precisely, he was forced improvise quickly in order to adapt to the quickly changing circumstances.

However, the young master Jun's heart had still been nursing

some grievances in this particular regard: [I spent so much time and energy in planning everything out, and now it's all gone to waste? What a complete waste of my time and energy!]

Jun Mo Xie was bit disappointed with himself since he knew that it would be very difficult to track down the Solitary Falcon once the man had left the Tian Xiang City. However, now that Jun Mo Xie unexpectedly saw the Solitary Falcon's figure in the Tian Xiang City again, he was obviously unwilling to let go of this opportunity!

Therefore, the hitman Jun immediately followed after the disappearing master in full speed!

The hitman's speed and agility were second to none, but no matter how hard he tried to push himself, he still found himself unable to catch up to the Solitary Falcon; in fact the distance between them kept increasing steadily! This is not to say that Jun Mo Xie was short on skills; his Xuan Qi was still quite low, and although his cultivation had shown a lot of improvement of late, but it was still only equivalent to that of a junior Gold Xuan expert. However, the young master Jun was confident that after breaking into the second layer of the Hongjun Pagoda, his strength would reach at par with an Earth Xuan expert's Xuan Qi as per the Xuan Xuan continent's standards.

However, that was to be taken into writing much later, but for now he had already lost sight of the Solitary Falcon's figure; but still, the hitman didn't give up, and continued on this wild-goose chase by pairing his assassin's skills and intuitive abilities with the clues at hand for tracking the Solitary Falcon down.

The Maple Forest, south of the City

The maple leaves appeared as red as blood in color under the late autumn sunset.

The autumn wind was whistling through this seemingly forest of blood, and it seemed as if the thousands of maple leaves which had

once adorned the branches of the trees of this forest were no longer able to resist the force of the wind and were falling and flowing in the it, making them seem like waves of blood surging up and down a sea of blood.....

The entire horizon seemed to be painted in blood!

One blue-robed lonesome figure was standing quietly in the wind, and although he was standing motionlessly on his spot, but his fluttering robes made it seem as if his body was an embodiment of a turbulent sea with waves rolling up and down, roaring and rippling endlessly. The azure-blue color of this man's robes was complimenting the deep red color of the forest in background, and it seemed to be creating a strange but serene, hostile but peaceful picture.

His azure hair was raised in the wind, and seemed to be merging into the blue sky above. Although numerous leaves were falling to ground, but the ones around him would inevitably circle around him, and his blue hair didn't seem to have been contaminated by them at all. His eyes were calm and composed, with no hints of sadness for the road behind, no desires or hope for the one ahead, no panic, and no fear.

This man was Hai Chen Feng!

Being a true friend, Hai Chen Feng had showed up as promised.

To meet this unknown but unparalleled enemy for his friend's cause!

His eyes were poised eastwards, and he seemed to staring at the horizon in the hope of catching a glimpse of his hometown beyond the sea, where his master was waiting for his return!

[Once this battle is over, will I get an opportunity to return home again?]

Woo..... a fierce autumn wind breezed through the sky, and it seemed as if a meteor had fallen from the sky and its sudden

impact upon landing to ground had made the wind gush away from it!

Hai Chen Feng squinted his eyes as a ray of azure blue light flashed from his body and he stood rooted to his spot, steady as a rock, but his hair started to flutter in wind behind his body, while the maple leaves tilted backwards and sped past, and away from his body! The tens of millions of leaves which had somehow managed to brave the autumn winds until now, finally gave in and were caught up in the powerful force of this wind, flooding the sky with their blood red radiance!

The red and the blue sea had been suddenly separated from each other!

Hai Feng Chen suddenly seemed to standing alone in the frame, with no one around him, and no support!

It almost seemed as if all the strenuous effort he had previously put into picking a favorable geographical position had been neutralized in an instant!

Hai Feng Chen's facial expression changed almost instantaneously while his hand found its way to the hilt of his sword as he looked upwards to search for his enemy, but saw no one!

There was no enemy in sight!

This unknown man hadn't even appeared in flesh yet, but had already deliberated Hai Feng Chen into using his Xuan Qi!

Whoosh!

A black figure appeared in a flash at a high altitude in the sky above in front of Hai Feng Chen. The man descended to about ten feet in the air, but the manner in which the winds were breezing past his robes made him seem more like a hawk than a human!

His long hair were flowing down by his shoulders, his spine was as straight as a spear, his eyes seemed as crisp as lightning, his nose

and lips resembled that of an eagle, his face was thin, and it almost seemed as if his entire body was a personification of death! He appeared like the overlord of the sky, just waiting for his next prey; like a hawk looking down on a rabbit!

"Is your excellency the one who picked on the Jin Yang gang?" Hai Chen Feng took a deep breath and asked in a respectful tone. His Sky Xuan intuition had already made him aware that he was no match for this man in front of him!

"Yes, and you are Jin Feng Lie's hired help? And a Sky Xuan expert at that, yes, yes, that's good, that's very good!" the man in the black gown glanced at Hai Chen Feng as his face became ardent with desire. Hai Chen Feng's heart was already beating like a drum: [his cultivation is simply too high for me... what level has he already reached? he's at least a Spirit Xuan expert ah!]

Even though Hai Chen Feng was a toughened Sky Xuan expert at heart, he still didn't know whether to laugh or to cry! Although he expected this person to be quite strong, and maybe even stronger than himself, but he had absolutely never imagined that this man would simply be beyond his ability to cope up with!

[This person is so strong that I believe that even Master wouldn't be able to defeat him easily!]

[But there are only a very handful of people who have progressed that far..... so who is this person?]

The real reason why Hai Feng Chen didn't know whether to laugh or cry was, [since this person has already progressed this far, why would he stir up trouble with a small faction like the Jin Yang gang? If such a person had asked something from Jin Feng Lie, then Jin Feng Lie should've offered him everything he possessed... but instead he has managed to annoy this man!]

[What is this?]

The man in the black gown smiled coldly: "However, being just a

Sky Xuan expert, you've actually dared to challenge me! Ha ha! Good! Good! At least you have courage!"

"Justice is to be found everywhere, and so I had to! Even through mountains of daggers, and seas of flame, one mustn't look back!" Hai Feng Chen stated in a genuine tone as he respectfully folded his hands: "Sir, I request that you leave my friends be! And in case I've offended you, I request that you forgive me."

"I never do." The man in black laughed loudly; his voice seemed rather weird, almost as if an eagle was chanting: "I came to the Tian Xiang City in search of something, and the purpose of my trip has been fulfilled, and was quite productive; therefore, I was about to leave without bothering about this nonsense with the Jin Yang gang; but just as that was about to happen, I received your challenge for a battle. It looks like people sometimes just get lucky ah."

"Since your objective has already been accomplished, why not leave this matter be, Sir?" Hai Chen Feng sighed, and then added: "Your excellency has indicated that you were only interested in the competition for the Xuan Core, right?"

The man in black groaned, almost as if someone had hit a wrong note, and his face suddenly became gloomy. He batted his eyelids, and said: "Just because that's over means that we won't fight? That's nonsense! Today I'm going to teach you a lesson! You need to note: there are some people you simply shouldn't provoke, and since you've provoke one, you must pay the corresponding price!"

Chapter 203: As it turns out

"So my senior wishes to bully me? Well, in that case, I request that we greet each other for a fight!" the innate arrogance of Hai Chen Feng took control of his better judgement, and he thought to himself, [since you know that you're stronger than me, you think you can just bully me around by using sheer force? I would rather die at your hands before I let you intimidate me! Whatever the outcome, Hai Chen Feng is also the disciple of one of the 'Eight Great Masters'! You really think you can frighten me that easily?]

It must be mentioned that the Blue Master, Meng Hong Chen was a rather reclusive and odd character, and never talked to his disciples about the outside world. He had defeated the Solitary Falcon several years ago in a rather secluded battlefield, and therefore Hai Chen Feng naturally didn't see the fight; in fact, he hadn't even heard too many rumors about it. So much so, that Hai Chen Feng actually hadn't been able to recognize the man he was confronted with, and had no idea that this man was as renowned as his own master, and was another one of the 'Eight Great Master', The Solitary Falcon!

"Ha ha, there's no need for such formalities, this battle was predestined by the heavens!" the Solitary Falcon laughed loudly and then suddenly dashed downwards as swiftly as the clouds, and extended his palm to strike his enemy.

Hai Chen Feng grunted angrily, and then unsheathed his Azure-blue sword speedily with a 'whoosh'.

Bang! The Solitary Falcon's right hand collided with Hai Chen Feng's sword, and the collision gave rise to a loud noise.

Hai Chen Feng's heart was left amazed since he had barely ever come across someone as amazing as this man he was confronted with; although the collision was equally matched. He could sense that the man in front was much stronger than him since even

though the collision was equally matched, it was still a bare hand against a sword, which obviously meant that in case he tried to use fist techniques to fight against this enemy, he'd have no chance of winning the battle. A storm of doubts started emerging within his heart as he began comprehending the enormity of his situation.

He could clearly tell that he was no match for the man in front, but still had no idea why his opponent wasn't taking the initiative to take the upper hand.

There was a special reason as to why the Solitary Falcon had been roaming around, looking for someone to fight with. Over these last few years, he had mostly spent his entire time training atop snow cladded mountain peaks, having chosen Eagles and Falcons as his opponents, and had been slowly learning from their flight trajectories, their fighting styles, their hunting tactics, their attacking postures, owing to which he had been able to evolve his original 'The Nine Eagles' style into a more profound and much more powerful set of strokes: 'The Seventeen Eagles'!

This set of strokes was potentially were powerful, but since this style was still in the early phases of its development, it was far from being a proper style and the linkage between different strokes had been giving the Solitary Falcon a headache like no other. Hence, the Solitary Falcon decided to seek out worthy opponents since it would help him in understanding the deficiencies of his style, and moreover would pave the way to making the necessary improvements to his style; however, he hadn't been able to achieve his objective so far.

He was well aware that the other Great Masters weren't sitting idly either, which is why he knew that they wouldn't assist him with his idea; or perhaps he just didn't want them to see the tail of this emerging dragon.....

Therefore, he naturally wasn't left with many known options.....

Moreover, the other Great Masters were all slightly stronger than

the Solitary Falcon, and when it came to a real battle, he'd have to use his tried and testing moves rather than these experimental ones which made the thought of provoking them on intention a completely meaningless suggestion.

All this had rendered the Solitary Falcon completely helpless in his current venture.

The possibility of using Feng Juan Yun for his experiments was still a more plausible alternative, but any encounter between these two mortal enemies was bound to be a battle between life and death! In such a situation, the Solitary Falcon would obviously find it very difficult to practice his new styles since it would mean only one of two things; He'd either get bullied, or he'd end up courting his death.....

Moreover, even if he was capable of assuring his safety, he still didn't wish to leak out this new and secret style to Feng Juan Yun. The Solitary Falcon wanted to prove his superiority to Feng Juan Yun, and was rather hoping that this new style would help him in achieving his objective one day!

Apart from these options, there weren't too many people left in the world who could possibly qualify to contend against him.

The Solitary Falcon did contemplate the idea of going into the Tian Fa forest to polish his style but the thought of the power that watches over the Tian Fa forest was enough to make him reconsider, and he had eventually decided against going there: [I'd end up into a Xuan Beast's shit if I go there.....]

At the end of his tether, the Solitary Falcon decided to follow the only remaining workaround: casually fight whoever he could find! No matter who the person was, as long as the man was a famed expert, the Solitary Falcon would try to seek the said-person out in order to combat against them; even if the man was a disciple of the Great Masters..... since these men in particular would be better trained and would have superior knowledge of their skills, they

would only help him in polishing his new style better.

As a result, the Solitary Falcon had been travelling north and south, constantly seeking out known experts. However, he had been very disheartened in the recent past upon realizing one thing: after fighting these so-called hundred or so 'experts', not only had he not been able to enhance his skills, his expertise with this new style had actually seen a decline!

The reason behind this unwanted result obviously wasn't very difficult to analyze.....

It is just as it happens in a game of chess; when one plays a weaker opponent repeatedly, one eventually tends to decline from their prime.....

In this state of gloom, the Solitary Falcon accidentally came across the rumor surrounding the Xuan Core, and then immediately decided to travel all the way to the Tian Xiang City to catch up with this entire situation in time. However, just when he was finally able to find exactly what his heart had been craving for, two extremely powerful Xuan Beasts came out of nowhere and stole the Xuan Core in front of his eyes.

It was needless to say that this incident was greatly detrimental to both Shi Chang Xiao and the Solitary Falcon's interests!

Shi Chang Xiao's trip to the Tian Xiang City hadn't been a long one, but the strenuous effort that the Solitary Falcon had taken to cover this long road had completely gone down the drain. The Solitary Falcon's mind was completely imbalanced even the next day, and he eventually decided to go up to Shi Chang Xiao's doorstep, looking for trouble. However, upon reaching the man's camp, he was made aware that the Great Master had already left the previous night.....

Extremely dejected by the way things had turned out, the Solitary Falcon decided to leave as well. As for his original plan of using the Jin Yang gang - [if there's no decent expert in this city

anymore, then what's the point of using that Jin Yang gang now? All that useless-gang was supposed to do for me was to locate high quality experts I could fight against.... But now that the Xuan Core is gone, what good would they be able to do for me!]

However, he had never expected that he would actually receive a 'war challenge' from the Jin Yang gang's hired hand!

The initially dejected Solitary Falcon had finally found an outlet to vent out his frustration! He charged towards this Maple Forest animatedly to vent out his grief, and was in-turn left overjoyed. He could clearly see that the man in front was a disciple of none other than the Blue Master himself! Moreover, this man had already reached the Peak of the Sky Xuan realm!

It was almost as if the heavens had listened to his prayers!

Moreover, it was rather obvious that this man didn't seem to recognize the Solitary Falcon!

The initially frustrated master was left thanking his stars!

Therefore, the Solitary Falcon naturally decided against rashly exposing his true identity for the fear that this man may kneel down to his knees screaming 'Master!', which would obviously be detrimental to his personal agenda!

Hence, he withheld this key information since he wanted to fight this man.

[This person clearly seems to be a disciple of the Blue Master, and since he's already reached the peak of the Sky Xuan realm, it could be presumed that he's one of the best disciples Meng Hong Chen has ever trained. If I can have a good and hearty battle with this man, then I believe that I'll be able to find the inspiration I've been seeking all along.]

Therefore, he deliberately decided to suppress his real strength even though the opposition was fighting in full swing, and soon the two of them had exchanged at least a dozen blows.

At this moment, an uninvited guest arrived at the scene!

This uninvited guest was obviously the young master Jun!

Although the young master Jun was an expert beyond match when it came to tracking people, but he had been wracking his brain to no avail initially since the Solitary Falcon was no ordinary man either. However, it really didn't take his expertise to locate the Solitary Falcon in the end since it wasn't awfully difficult to spot a sky full of drifting red leaves.

The young master Jun quickly concealed himself nearby, and started gazing at the Solitary Falcon as if the man was bullying a young child. However, Jun Mo Xie's simply couldn't help but admire the man's dedication: [even though he is one of the 'Eight Great Masters', he really isn't worried about taking the rogue road ah....]

As he continued to watch the Solitary Falcon's fight with this blue-robed man, he suddenly realized something really strange.

Even though the Solitary Falcon seemed to doing his utmost, he still seemed a bit overwhelmed. However, as Jun Mo Xie continued to watch the fight, he started to realize that the Solitary Falcon was repeating the same strokes again and again in a loop, and wasn't making any attempts to use any variations at all.

On the other hand, the man in blue was using a plethora of skills and styles, and was basically going all-out.

It seemed to him as if this Great Master was actually just using this blue-robed man as a dummy for his personal practice!

The Solitary Falcon's body didn't seem to be moving much; in fact his legs were completely immobile. His hands on the other hand were moving in weird manners; he'd sometimes extend his arms wide, sometimes he'd stretch them forward... he was opening and closing his palms in very weird styles as well.....

Jun Mo Xie continued to watch for a long time, and a strange

sense that something was amiss kept growing stronger and stronger in heart.

Suddenly a thought emerged inside his brain: [this is clearly the Solitary Falcon's homemade style! And this style has been inspired by the body of an Eagle or a Goshawk! This is a bit too obvious; but what's even more obvious is that even though he has created this technique, he hasn't yet perfected its system!]

He could tell from the manner in which these strokes were designed, that each stroke of this style had a dedicated line of power in support, and even though these moves seemed very strange at first, but once perfected could produce a tremendous amount of power.

Jun Mo Xie silently counted thrice, and was finally able to determine that the style contained a total of seventeen strokes! The Solitary Falcon was using the entire style in a single sequence; hence it wasn't very hard for him to determine the total count of moves in the style.

[Although this style was capable of producing a large amount of power, but it seems that he has his heart set on not killing his opponent, which is why he is deliberately suppressing his strength to adjust his output to a mediocre level, but in case he was using this style to contest against a man of equal strength, he wouldn't be able to keep up. However, coping up with someone much weaker than himself is much easier for him since even if the opponent occasionally tears a hole in his style, he can easily make up for the loss.]

Moreover, the hitman could tell from his experience that in case the Solitary Falcon employed his complete strength in using this style, he could easily produce a much more powerful strike! But the Solitary Falcon wasn't doing it on purpose! Even though he was using his true strength to defend himself, he didn't seem to be using it to attack!

Jun Mo Xie suddenly realized why the Solitary Falcon wasn't interested in the Xuan Core, but had still come all the way to the Tian Xiang City; why the Solitary Falcon was so eager to fight, but still wasn't interested in fighting an expert of equal ability!

[This is the reason behind all of it! Ha ha, why didn't I see it earlier?.....]

As he continued to watch the style which the Solitary Falcon was developing, he couldn't help feeling a bit nervous. Each move and action of the Solitary Falcon's style seemed strange, but vaguely familiar.

[Jerky..... too raw! It can be said that these moves can be turned into something very powerful, but at the moment these moves can only be best described as the 'seventeen lose' strokes! It lacks polishing, and cannot yet be called a proper martial style, but it's already good enough to be brought into a prototype stage!]

[The Solitary Falcon's moves seem very similar to the actions of an Eagle! The Wingspan stroke, the Soaring Eagle stroke, The Charging Eagle Stroke, the Rabbit-fighting Stroke..... and these I will work upon! And after a very systematic study, once I'm done tampering with all his strokes, I'll make them far more powerful! Ha ha ha.....]

Chapter 204: Burning both jade and common stone

Jun Mo Xie was keenly watching the Solitary Falcon's new style, and felt that even though the style was still unrefined, and not even properly linked yet, but the individual strokes of this style were extremely sophisticated; maybe not as good as the ones he had studied in his previous incarnation, but it was still more powerful in its make! Since this style used the martial artist's Xuan Qi, it was capable of producing an amazing amount of power, which had left Jun Mo Xie both mulling over its merits, and admiring it at the same time!

What was even more mesmerizing was that, even though the Solitary Falcon was repeating the same moves again and again, he was making subtle changes in each successive round, and was gradually eliminating the weakness of this new style. Therefore, once he was able to practice this method for a sufficiently long duration, he might actually be able to eliminate the flaws in the system, and might actually be able to get the style battle-ready!

It must be mentioned that learning and creating a martial arts are completely different from each other. Creating a martial arts style from a scratch requires a great amount work, since the style needs to be revised again and again, and the creator cannot even skip a single step in its process. This whole process takes several decades, and can sometimes take the effort of generations together before the complete and polished technique is finally ready.

This concept was no different in this ancient world either, but the Solitary Falcon had still abandoned the traditional martial styles, and was working on creating his own custom style at a very quick pace, which clearly exhibited his expertise and wisdom in the world of martial arts, and this feat of his' was something the future generations to come would benefit from. The style he was

trying to create could be regarded as an epoch-making breakthrough!

Just this one aspect alone was enough to regard the Solitary Falcon as one the 'Eight Great Masters', but moreover, a genius craftsman and scholar!

From another perspective, although the man was already regarded as one of legendary Masters of his time, he was still willing to drop from his status, and descend to fighting a man who could only be described as ordinary and unworthy in his eyes, just so he could improve and perfect this style he was trying to create; a feat which not many people would be capable of doing!

[Hang on a second!]

An idea sprouted inside Jun Mo Xie's mind.

[The Solitary Falcon is trying hard to find suitable opponents, but hasn't been able to..... the Xue Hun Manor and the Silver Blizzard City would surely qualify as suitable opponents, right?]

[The Solitary Falcon is wracking his brain to improve his style right now..... but I've also learnt some similar styles in my previous life.....]

[The pouncing Eagle, the Hissing Eagle, Nine Eagles transformation.....]

[If I don't use these resources, then wouldn't they just go waste? That truly would be a real waste of them!]

Jun Mo Xie's apprehensive mind suddenly eased up a lot.

The Solitary Falcon on the other hand, was constantly altering his strokes, but was still keeping the battle in equilibrium. However his mind was completely occupied in figuring out new ways to make his strokes more linked and coherent. Moreover, casting out the same moves again and again was slowly making him more and more familiar with them, along with gradually improving his style and its efficiency; although the process was

extremely slow, but the man was still enjoying it to the utmost.

This world was very different from the one Jun Mo Xie had come from since martial strength revolved around Xuan Qi in this world. Although Xuan Qi was quite powerful and intense in its own merit, but its explosive nature and delicate functioning limited the styles one could practice, which is why a vast majority of the martial artists used basic moves supplemented by their Xuan Qi to contest a battle, and would rarely use more complex styles; in essence, unless a martial artist had a large arsenal of tricks, he would continue to use the same strokes again and again.

If one pursued speed and power at the same time, then Xuan Qi was unlikely to keep up; and in case one focused on endurance, then they couldn't use complex or bulky moves.

However, even though the Solitary Falcon's style was still quite raw, but it was very different from this general approach. Once this technique was gradually improved and perfected, it would emerge as a pioneering work in shaping the future of martial arts! In fact, it could even be said that his work could even pave the way to bridging the gap between the present and the future!

On the other hand, Hai Chen Feng was abnormally calm while his sword continued to hack, chop, cut, slash..... he was vividly demonstrating some of the most exceptional moves of the Blue Master himself, and would often suppress his enemy on occasion; but the man in black would always stabilize himself again.

With the passage of time, Hai Chen Feng started to realize that his initial advantage of having a better arsenal of tricks had actually reduced, while the initially-abundant flaws in the opposition's style were now becoming hard to find. Moreover, the opposition would once-in-a-while counter heavily, and would completely destabilize him.

Their battle had reached a point where the situation had completely reversed, and now Hai Chen Feng was doing his utmost

to fight, and was in turn sweating all over, while his breathing was becoming increasingly unstable. On the other hand, his opponent was breathing far more stably, and his style was becoming more and more efficient, and it seemed evident that the man was capable of finishing off Hai Chen Feng anytime he wanted to, but still wasn't. It seemed as if this man in black was some heavenly steed soaring across the skies with no purpose at all, else Hai Chen Feng would've already died several times by now.

This battle between these two experts was becoming more and more dangerous with every passing minute. It must be mentioned that danger and intensity are two completely different concepts with respect of a martial battle. Intensity is a term used to define a fierce battle between two equally matched opponents, where each side is doing their utmost to win, and in such a case, unless the fight reaches its climax and both sides start taking risks to win the fight, the fight is unlikely to result in causality. However, in a general case, the probability of fatality is extremely small since both the parties are likely to have already exhausted their energies before reaching the climax, making them both ineffective in delivering a fatal blow.

However, danger is a completely different concept in this regard; it pertains to a fight between two unmatched opponents since the weaker side is incapable of preventing any harm to himself, and such was the circumstance Hai Chen Feng had landed himself in at the moment!

His opponent was no other than the Great Master, Solitary Falcon himself, and even though the Solitary Falcon had his heart set on not injuring his practicing-partner initially, but as his mind was becoming more and more engrossed with his research, it seemed that he was beginning to fight more and more instinctively. Although he was still control his Xuan Qi, and was maintaining the same level as Hai Chen Feng in this regard, but he was still a legendary master, and Hai Chen Feng was simply no

match for him in any respect!

Although Hai Chen Feng wouldn't exactly perish in the blink of an eye anytime soon, but the difference in their expertise was becoming a bit too obvious now!

Hai Chen Feng had already given up on winning this fight by a fluke, and had moreover realized one very important thing; [this man has been playing around with me from the very beginning..... since that's the case, I'll teach him a good lesson... even if I die doing it!]

Hai Chen Feng was a Peak Sky Xuan expert in his own merit, and had rarely ever come across anyone worthy of being his match, which had obviously given rise to arrogance and self-esteem. However, at the moment, he found himself being transformed into a play-toy of another, which was bringing more shame to his name than he was capable of washing away!

In his eyes, this situation was very similar to that of a cat playing with a mouse, where the cat was just trying to exhaust the mouse before killing it.....

He could clearly sense that his situation was similar to that game of chess there even though his opponent was capable of finishing the game in one move, the opponent was still dallying around until the point where the weaker side was completely exhausted and humiliated.....

Such a mischievous strategy was easy to play out against a novice player, but in case the man on the wrong end of the curve was an expert in his own right..... Such a situation was likely to drive the man mad....

Hai Chen Feng's predicament was roughly the same, and it seemed as if he had no way out of his plight.

However, Hai Chen Feng still had a secret trick in his arsenal!

Hai Chen Feng unexpectedly started moving his sword back in

forth in circle, and suddenly a starting building a hurricane-like structure around the Solitary Falcon. The winds constituting this air-storm started becoming blue in color slowly, and gradually started deepening in their shade! With each consequent circle he made, the hurricane became even deeper in shade, and slowly went from sky blue to blue, to deep blue, to azure, and then almost to the color of ink!

The Solitary Falcon had been extremely pleased with this experience so far since he had been able to achieve exactly what his heart desired. At this time, he suddenly felt an increase in the pressure around him, and before he could make a move, it seemed as if he had been surrounded by a sea of tides, almost as if the torrential rains had started pouring over a trapped boat, while the real storm lay approaching.

He suddenly realized what was happening as he remembered the Blue Master's signature skill: The wave of the World!

[This trick will cause destruction indiscriminately. It will burn both jade and common stone alike!]

This maneuver was capable of exploding out one's Xuan Qi, and could mobilize the entire Xuan Qi in one's Dan Tian, and then turn it into one explosive and lethal strike. This particular skill was capable of assisting the user to surpass the gap in realms by at least one or two layers; perhaps even more! And with the help of this explosive attack, one could even kill an enemy much stronger than oneself in one swoop; even if the enemy was one or two layers ahead!

However, this maneuver had one basic drawback, that is, no matter the enemy's injuries, the user would turn to toast!

Before injuring the enemy, the user would hurt himself, and whether or not the enemy survives the strike, the user would be foreordained to death!

The Solitary Falcon cursed out in shock: "You bastard, you're

courting your death! I'm Solitary....." he wanted to say: "I'm Solitary Falcon, your brother-master!"

However, the Solitary Falcon's words were interrupted but a burst of laughter from Hai Chen Feng, who shouted back at him in a grief stricken tone: "You old bastard! Now you're afraid of it? You will now know the mistake you've made!"

He continued to rotate his sword around in circles, and it seemed like his sword was at the center of a turbulent sea, giving rise to monstrous waves. This storm had already started making 'clank' sounds, almost as if a legendary dragon was hissing his last and angry dying breaths!

His sword continued to move in circles, making the whirlwind's sounds even louder and noisier! Suddenly, a white light flashed, which was shortly followed by loud sound, and it was evident that a thunderbolt had originated in the sky above, which was now piercing through the sky, and was decisively crashing downwards!

The Solitary Falcon was left dumbstruck!

The Solitary Falcon was left anxious and gloomy by this approaching strike, and violently cursed out: "You little bastard, quickly stop this madness! Or else, I'll go and seek out Meng Hong Chen after I'm done with you! I will settle this score with him for giving his secret technique to a madman like you! You're not just mad, you're an idiot too!"

"I'm the Solitary Falcon! You need to stop this....." the Solitary Falcon's intestines were already full with regret since he could sense that the situation had already gone beyond the point of reversal at this stage.

Chapter 205: Request me! I'll save him!

It wasn't that the Solitary Falcon was afraid of getting hurt; unless the Blue Master himself casted out this skill, the Solitary Falcon wouldn't be in any danger of getting hurt.

The gap between the Solitary Falcon and Hai Chen Feng was so huge that this 'The wave of the World' maneuver simply couldn't close it down. Let alone dying, the Solitary Falcon wasn't even likely to get hurt by this attack!

However, the Solitary Falcon was still afraid of this attack coming into play even though he was in no danger of getting hurt.....

[It's all over now! All the fun that I could have had is now over; I could've learnt so much more from this fight, but now this guy has inadvertently forced it all to an end..... but what will I tell Meng Hong Chen when he comes looking for answers? That I forced his disciple to his death while conducting my training? That I've become a murderer?]

[Meng Hong Chen will not let go off me for this one.... He'll fight me to death! But what can I do now?]

Hai Chen Feng had also heard the Solitary Falcon's words, and had suddenly become even angrier!

[You old bastard! Why didn't you say this earlier?! This ship has already sailed, and I've already burnt out all the energy in my Dan Tian.... The arrow has already been released from the bow! Now it's impossible to stop this!]

[I'm toast!]

At this moment, Hai Chen Feng felt as if he was dying under the most persecute of circumstances known to this world!

[There are no words to describe the injustice of this world!]

[This man is actually my Master-brother, the Solitary Falcon?]

[What is this damned bastard saying?]

[Why didn't he say it earlier? Why didn't he tell me that he's at the peak of the Spirit Xuan realm? Had I recognized him earlier, I would've fled without thinking twice about it! I'm nothing in front of a man like him!]

[I only cast out this attack to teach him a lesson, but this won't do anything to him at all, but I'll die for sure!]

Hai Chen Feng was depressed beyond measure.....

However, no matter how much he wanted to stop it, no matter how much he cursed, 'The wave of the World' attack was now beyond the point of recall.

Solitary Falcon was as angry as Hai Chen Feng was, and was incessantly scolding and abusing the man along with this maneuver in his heart as well!

The Solitary Falcon's state of helplessness was visible in his eyes, while his anxiety was evidently being displayed on his face.....

[What do I do now? I should kill him... at least this boy's corpse will be preserved if I kill him before his attack does!]

[Bang!]

[Boom!]

A cloud of dust fused with the air in an instant, covering the sky in its dark; so much so that even the blue colored sky wasn't visible anymore. The Solitary Falcon's strikes had sent Hai Chen Feng flying out of this dust cloud like a kite without a thread.....

The dust settled down in a few moments, leaving a sad-faced Solitary Falcon staring at his hands with a gloomy emotion in his heart, and one could see that he could break into tears at any moment!

[What is this ah!]

Hai Chen Feng was lying flat on the ground a few feet away, his mouth was stained in his own blood, while his chest was only falling and rising very slightly. Anyone could tell that this person was breathing his last breaths, and almost nothing could bring him back to life at this point.

Hai Chen Feng's face was revealed in very strange expression, and it seemed as if he was crying, but was still laughing at the same time. This was a very strange expression for someone who was on the verge of his demise.

At this point, Hai Chen Feng had no more strength left in him, so much so that he couldn't even lift his fingers anymore. However, he was still trying to move his mouth a bit, but wasn't succeeding at it either. It could be estimated that he probably wanted to laugh at his own fate once, and would've then cursed out loudly.

[Numerous Sky Xuan Experts have died since the inception of time, so what's the big deal with me? Why do I feel so wronged?!]

[Why? Why?]

[Dammit!]

[This is way of life! But I was born under some ill-fated star!]

Given Hai Chen Feng's situation, the Solitary Falcon had intentionally suppressed his own strength while casting out this fatal attack since he wanted to preserve the man's body, else a man of the Solitary Falcon was more than capable of turning Hai Chen Feng's body to dust if he desired it.

The Solitary Falcon was covering his face with his hands since he didn't wish to see Hai Chen Feng's current situation. [There is no hope for him now. I'm really unlucky.....why did this happen to me? I really don't know if this whole scenario was good or bad in the end..... and what on earth am I going to tell Meng Hong Chen when I meet him next time? Why did my life have to be so bitter ah?]

The Solitary Falcon looked up once again with some hope in his eyes, but then suddenly looked down again, knowing that all was already lost. He turned around in a fit of rage and kicked a tree, and sent it flying away into the air.

"Ha ha, you think that you've sent your Brother-disciple to his death in your training exercise? Nope, he's just playing dead, or perhaps he's just practicing to be dead....." suddenly a voice rang at a distant, but with a hint of mockery in it: "Whichever it is, you are indeed worthy of being called a Great Master! I really admire you! Really, I do."

The Solitary Falcon was already depressed enough to lose his mind, and this sentence made him completely furious in an instant, and so he angrily cursed out: "You son of a bi**h! Get lost! I know it's you Shi Chang Xiao, you old green turtle!"

As far as the Solitary Falcon was concerned, there was only one man inside the Tian Xiang City who was capable of talking to him in this manner, and that man was obviously Shi Chang Xiao! [But wait, hasn't he already left? Then who is this guy?]

[Is somebody playing a joke on me!]

The atmosphere was completely silent, while the Solitary Falcon was completely enraged, and just when he was about to curse out again, he was suddenly shocked to see a black entity in front of him.

A black masked man, who he didn't seem to recognize was squatting right there in front of him with one hand holding Hai Chen Feng's wrist, seemingly counting his pulse rate, paying no attention to the Solitary Falcon; and the distance between this black masked man and the Solitary Falcon was less than three meters!

The Solitary Falcon was just about to hurl out a few more abuses, but abruptly held them back in his stomach.

The Solitary Falcon had always been considered the fastest and the most agile man in the entire world, and had always believed that no man would ever be able to match up to his expertise in this regard at least!

The Solitary Falcon's speed and agility were second to none, and this fact was recognized by everyone in the world!

That being said, it could be estimated that even Yun Bei Chen wouldn't be capable of coming this close to him without him finding out about it!

[Who is this black masked man?]

The Solitary Falcon had goosebumps all over his body in an instant! [He got within three meters of me without me noticing anything at all!]

[Is this person a monster or ghost of some sort?]

[Since this person was able to get this close to me so quietly, he obviously wouldn't be some road-side expert, right? Since when was such a powerful master born in this world?]

"This trick is too fierce; it actually required a man to shatter his own Dan Tian in order to simulate the full potential of one's life force. It is a really cruel technique! Unfortunately, the stone has been burnt, but the jade is still unharmed....." the black masked man continued: "This boy's resolve is very strong; I like it. If this Old man hadn't stepped forward, then you would've actually ended up killing your brother-disciple....."

"This.....Brother... what do you mean..... he can still be saved?" the remark had left the Solitary Falcon so overjoyed, that he was unable to speak up without stammering.

"Don't say that, he hasn't died yet. This Old man is here now, and I could save him even if he was already bending over his death, okay?" the black-masked man rolled his eyes: "Now don't speak another word!"

"....." A number of dense black lines creased on the Solitary Falcon's forehead. There was no man in this entire world who could speak to him with such contempt in their tone, especially if the person already knew his real identity.

"Well? What are you still standing there for? It's irritating me." The black masked man spoke up unceremoniously: "Good, go ahead, disturb me, but then should I just let your disciple die? Quickly roll away from me! Else I'll walk away from this without caring about his life!"

"....." the Solitary Falcon's face turned red, almost the same shade as a Falcon's backside, and without saying another word, he heavily took a few steps back. Then he said: "If you don't cure him, then I'll make you pay for it with your life!"

"Oh really? You dare to threaten this Old man? Looks like you've got a lot of courage, ah!" the black masked man calmly stood up: "I'm not going to cure him now!"

He just stood there with his arms folded, contemptuously looking at the Solitary Falcon: "You will make me pay with my life? Come on! This old man wants to see what skill a Great Master like yourself possess that can make me pay for something with my life; you think you're invincible because you're one of the 'Eight Great Masters', ah? I spit on the likes of you!"

The Solitary Falcon stared back at the man so ferociously that it seemed that his eyeballs would pop out of their sockets, while his chest was drumming heavily from anger, and it seemed as if he'd start vomiting blood at any moment.

This was already beyond the limit of any insult he'd ever suffered!

The Solitary Falcon almost wanted to roar out loudly: [I'm going to kill you!]

However, after much deliberation, he decided that if Hai Chen

Feng's life could be saved, then it was more important to get that done first, and then he could always sort out his personal differences later. Otherwise, once the death of a young generation expert was pinned to the name of a Great Master, then he would fall from his position and status in no time at all.

"What do you want me to do?" the Solitary Falcon forcibly suppressed his anger; "Quickly start saving him! I'm not going to bother you! Stop dilly-dallying around....." seeing that Hai Chen Feng's breathing was becoming more and more weak, the Solitary Falcon started glaring at the black masked man, but his tone seemed extremely urgent.....

"Request me!" the black masked man's arms were still folded as he stated calmly: "Request me to save him. I was only taking the pain of saving him because he seemed pleasing to my eyes, but now you've started talking, and I don't find you pleasing at all, so I won't save him unless you request me to."

"I request.....?!!" the Solitary Falcon whispered a few words, unable to come up with the strength to speak up any louder, nor able to believe that he was being asked to plead somebody, and it seemed rather obvious from his facial expression that he seemed trapped in a case where you give someone an inch and the person starts asking for a mile.

The black masked man snorted, and then turned around, and started walking away without showing any traces of reluctance.

"Stop!" the Solitary Falcon was covered in sweat from top to bottom, and was barely able to speak up this one word.

This situation surrounding Hai Chen Feng had already ashamed him to his core. Therefore, even if it wasn't for Meng Hong Chen's sake, he still couldn't allow Hai Chen Feng to die!

"Old man..... I request you Old man, please save him....." the Solitary Falcon was grinding his teeth so hard at this moment that his cheeks had gone red, and his eyes were staring at the man in

front so sharply that it seemed as if he'd eat that man alive.

[Even the waters from five rivers would never be enough to wash away this shame I've had to endure today!]

[I could live through my entire life, but I'll never be able to live wash away this shame, and I'll probably take this shame with me to the heavens above.....]

The black masked man snorted, deviously looked at him once again, and then pointed a finger in his direction: "You think your request means something to me simply because you have the title of the 'Eighth Great Master', ah? I was about to start working on saving his life, and then you threaten me with my life? What kind of rubbish is filled inside your head, ah? You need to flood your head with water someday!"

The Solitary Falcon was breathing so heavily that the wind coming out his nostrils was forceful enough to swirl the leaves on the ground around in circles, while the manner in which he was gnashing his teeth clearly expressed his desire to chop this man into two! And then split his stomach open! Break every bone in his body; one by one! And then make him eat his shattered bones until his stomach was full! And then watch as his bones turn to feces inside his stomach.....

Chapter 206: Breakthrough

The Solitary Falcon turned around and faced the other side, and one could tell that he had no interest in turning back around either. Moreover, it seemed from facial expression that he was dying to rip open that black masked man's head.

"That stupid bird-fighting move has brought him to such a point where he's completely obsessed with it! He probably just goes around every day looking for shrimps he can fight with, and he thinks that it will help him in becoming a legendary master someday?"

The black masked man seemed to be thinking out loud: "It's only a set of seventeen strokes..... and even they aren't properly linked yet; it's just sad ah, what a shame ah, and he actually has the nerve to call himself one of the 'Eight Great Masters'! Someone needs to put that boy's head in its place!"

The Solitary Falcon turned around the moment he heard these words, and looked up at the man behind that mask with a faint hint of surprise in his eyes: "You, you, what did you just say?"

"What did I just say? I said you're doing it all wrong!" the black masked man rolled his eyes: "You think that your silly "so-called" fighting style can sum up the hundreds of different maneuvers that a bird does? You haven't been able to figure it out completely yet and due to your lack of knowledge, that Eagle-fighting style of yours is closer to being Fly-fighting style; it's no surprise you can't produce any real power with it! And then, you're actually being complacent with such a silly technique? It's just shameful.... and plainly ridiculous!"

This time, even though the black masked man's tone was far worse and more demeaning than it was previously, but each word that came out of his mouth drummed the Solitary Falcon's ear and forced him to reconsider his initial judgements. As a result, instead

of becoming even more rebellious this time, he felt as if someone had pulled him down from his celestial status and thrashed him to ground with a 'thud'.

"Please advise me, Sir!" the Solitary Falcon stated respectfully. As far as he was concerned, [he was able to point out my shortcomings in an instant, therefore he obviously must be someone very senior, right? He has to be someone from my senior generation ah!] At this point, the Solitary Falcon suddenly put aside his personal arrogance and ego.

"First you cool down. Once I'm done saving him, I'll take another look at your little trick, and see if it's worth my time or not." The black masked man stated in an indifferent tone.

"Yes." The Solitary Falcon immediately turned around, sat down on the ground, and stated meditating.

The black masked man leisurely squatted down on the ground, comfortably hummed twice, and then once again grabbed Hai Chen Feng's wrist.

[The 'Eighth Great Master' ah, wow! Who can dare to teach him a fighting style? Hmmmm! I can! And once I'm done training him, I will have his respect! I'm the master Supreme! I'm the best!]

The man in the black mask was obviously the young master Jun, Jun Mo Xie!

That being said, Hai Chen Feng's injury was indeed very serious, and would be regarded as untreatable at this point in this world without advanced medicine. However, with 'The Art of unlocking the Heaven's fortune' in his arsenal, it was something that Jun Mo Xie could fix since quite easily this injury wasn't even as serious as Jun Wu Yi's. However, because this injury was fresh, and since the man was in a critical situation at this point, the young master Jun would obviously need to be very careful.

Of course, in case this task was being undertaken by any other

person apart from Jun Mo Xie, then Hai Chen Feng would surely die!

Jun Mo Xie started the Hongjun Pagoda into motion, and an awe inspiring Aura started surging through his body; then he directed this aura into his palm, and started infusing it into Hai Chen Feng's meridians, and started repairing his broken meridians bit by bit, and then went on to renew the linkages between his Xuan Qi flow paths, and then slowly proceeded to repairing the damage inside his Dan Tian.....

Hai Chen Feng's face, which seemed deathly pale earlier, slowly started becoming rosier in shade, while his body started to shift a bit and he started moaning aloud; initially incapable of even opening his eyes properly, Hai Chen Feng was now watching this man in behind the black veil with eyes full of gratitude.

This gratitude wasn't entirely to thank him for saving his life, but also for insulting the Solitary Falcon, which had been rather enjoyable for Hai Chen Feng! In his almost dying moments, those insulting words were the only retribution he thought he'd ever get!

But fortunately, it wasn't the end of his life just yet!

An awe-inspiring aura was slowly flowing through his meridians, and his entire body, which had previously lost all its functioning, now suddenly seemed replenished with energy! Hai Chen Feng was well aware that such energy wasn't something even his own Master was capable of summoning!

[This is miracle!]

Hai Chen Feng's eyes were unflinchingly watching Jun Mo Xie's face, and slowly that expression of gratitude in his eyes started transforming into worship and adoration! [Who is this man? He is such a mysterious man, but given how advanced his skills are, he must be someone exceptionally strong!]

The Solitary Falcon instantly turned around the moment he

heard Hai Chen Feng's moaning, and suddenly found himself staring at the scene in shock.

His brother-disciple had blown off his Dan Tian in a suicide attack, and his injury had already reached a point where no man or medicine in the Xuan Xuan continent was capable of restoring him back to his health! However, at present the Hai Chen Feng in front of his eyes was breathing far steadier than before, and anyone could tell that even though the man's injuries were still serious, but still posed absolutely no threat to his life anymore! Moreover, given the rate his injuries were healing at, one could estimate that he'd heal in no time as long as these ideal conditions were able to persist.

It was evident to the Solitary Falcon from the Aura which was surging in the atmosphere that this man in the black mask was someone beyond anything the Solitary Falcon had ever seen or heard off! Even though he was one of the 'Eight Great Master' of this world, he still couldn't help smacking his lips: [Luckily I didn't attack him in a moment of impulse earlier; else I would've been lying on the ground next to Hai Chen Feng! I got really lucky this time!]

Solitary Falcon, a man who had always been known to be bold and reckless, was dripping cold sweat at this time.

[This is just unbelievable! Would even Yun Bei Chen be able to match up to this man's strength?]

Since this thought had already crossed his mind, the Solitary Falcon secretly started drawing a comparison between the two men, and almost exclaimed out loudly upon reach a conclusion on his analysis.

He could clearly distinguish that Yun Bei Chen's strength, at the time when he had last seen the man several years ago was not even in the same layer at this man's! If Yun Bei Chen's strength was a small stream, then this black masked man's strength was an ocean!

[I reckon that even if Yun Bei Chen has progress a long way since I last saw him, he still probably hasn't reached anywhere near this man!]

Drops made of cold sweat had already started dripping down from the Solitary Falcon's forehead by now.

The Solitary Falcon was staring in shock, while Hai Chen Feng was staring in admiration, but neither man was aware that Jun Mo Xie, the center of the interests was slowly inching closer to a personal moment of crisis.

Even though Jun Mo Xie had only intended to extract a small amount of Aura from the Hongjun Pagoda in order to heal Hai Chen Feng's injuries, but soon enough a huge storm had started rushing through his own meridians, which soon-after was followed a loud 'ringing' like sound inside his head, and his mind had been sent into a state of complete chaos and confusion. Suddenly, it seemed to the young master Jun that he was stuck inside a void, and would spend the rest of his days living in vain.... And all alone!

This sudden turn of events had given rise to a strange sense of loneliness inside his mind.

Meanwhile, a huge surge of Aura had started rushing through his meridians, and it seemed that his meridians were harboring a turbulent sea of aura, with each wave stronger, fiercer, and more menacing than the previous one!

Jun Mo Xie was naturally left lamenting his luck!

[I've been sensing and anticipating this moment for a long time, and now that it is finally happening, it is happening at the most unfortunate timing when I'm on the verge of completing a big assignment.....]

The situation inside his mind was becoming more and more urgent with every passing moment, while the Hongjun Pagoda had

already gone berserk, and had started emitting numerous gleaming rays of light inside his brain!

A powerful suction force was pulling Jun Mo Xie's conscious into it, and this pull was so fierce, that Jun Mo Xie could clearly sense that it was time for him to withdraw away from this place.

Hai Chen Feng was extremely surprised by this sudden surge in energy, and couldn't help vomiting out some blood, while the Solitary Falcon was simply left dumbstruck.

Jun Mo Xie reluctantly restrained himself as he slowly stated: "I have stabilized his condition. There is no immediate threat to his life anymore, but I'll need to put him through a number of conditioning procedures before he is completely healed. However, I have an urgent matter I need to tend to, and therefore I must leave immediately."

"This....." the Solitary Falcon raised his eyebrows, simply unable to guess his next step.

"Falcon, you will immediately take him to the Jun residence in the Tian Xiang City. There, you find seek out my disciple, the third master of the Jun Family, Jun Mo Xie. He will assist Hai Chen Feng in recovering from this injury; I've already imparted all the knowledge he needs in order to heal this man, and this task should be rather easy for him! This boy should be back to his health in a few months' time!"

The Solitary Falcon nodded.

"As for you, I've passed down several styles to Jun Mo Xie, which are quite similar to the one you're trying to make; if you want to complete your style, you must seek him out as well. Anyway, I'm not really interested in these little things anymore. However, I must warn you that his temperament isn't as polite as this Old man's is, and in case you wish to learn a few moves from him, then you must be willing to endure a few insults!" Jun Mo Xie quickly finished his instructions since it felt as if the moment of a

breakthrough was almost upon him!

"Remember, do not disclose the relationship between this Old man and the Jun Family to anyone!" He deliberately didn't warn them, and just stated these final words in a normal tone since he knew that they wouldn't dare to go against his will.

"Jun Mo Xie?" the Solitary Falcon opened his mouth and murmured, and then looked up again, but only to find that the mysterious man had already disappeared.....

"Amazing speed!" the Solitary Falcon simply couldn't help crying out in alarm this time.

[He mentioned the Jun Family before he left.... uh, I guess I'll immediately go there.]

He picked up Hai Chen Feng's body with one hand, and stated in a grave tone: "Boy, you will not say anything about today's matter to anyone; is that understood? If anyone finds out about this, then I will personally peel off your skin!"

Even though Hai Chen Feng's body was still as weak as a dead man's, he still spoke up in denial: "I won't say one word about the mysterious Master to anyone."

"What do you mean?" the Solitary Falcon suddenly stopped in his stead, meanwhile his long hair got caught in the wind as a result: "Are you saying that you'll tell people about our battle?"

"I cannot be sure." Hai Chen Feng hummed twice, and it seemed that his heart harbored infinite contempt for this so-called 'Master-brother' of his'. [First you beat up someone so much weaker than yourself, and then you actually have the courage to ask me to keep my mouth shut about it? What happened to this courage of yours in front of that mysterious master, ah?!]

"You won't say a word about anything!" the Solitary Falcon replied back barbarically: "If you tell people that you managed to injure me, then it will arouse a lot of doubts, and if you say that I

saved you after you destroyed your Dan Tian, then people will raise questions once again. Basically if anything surrounding this battle comes to light, then the senior who just saved you will be revealed to the world, and let me tell you this once and for all; even your master and I put together cannot dare to provoke that man; hum hum, you weigh the situation yourself and decide."

When a man of the Solitary Falcon's caliber states: "Even your master and I put together cannot dare to provoke that man", then the extent of the shock and horror which Jun Mo Xie's skill must have instilled in his heart becomes rather obvious!

Chapter 207: The Hongjun Pagoda and the Good Fortune

Since the Solitary Falcon was quite complacent, he was sure that Hai Chen Feng would keep his mouth shut because he had ordered it, and now that he was no longer worried about losing face in front of the world, he started focusing his attention on the task of finding Jun Mo Xie. As long as he was able to find Jun Mo Xie, he could improve the seventeen strokes of his style! [This is working out really well.....]

[But what's peculiar about Jun Mo Xie's 'character'?]

The young master Jun's shamelessness was publicly known, but since he didn't wish to ward away two potential disciples, the young master Jun deceived them into going towards that Jun residence, and had only subtly indicated that his "so-called" disciple was a bit ill-tempered!

However, such public knowledge wasn't something a man of the Solitary Falcon's caliber would've bothered to learn about in the past.

His heart was full of joy and longing at the moment; it could be estimated that even if this mysterious master tried to con the Solitary Falcon, he wouldn't pay much mind to it....

As far as the Solitary Falcon was concerned, the agility of this mysterious master was unmatched in every respect; but in reality, the young master Jun hadn't actually left the vicinity, and had simply escaped underground; but since his backside was metaphorically on fire, even he didn't pay attention to the depth that his body had gone underground too! However, it could be estimated that he would've already reached deeper than an underground well's boring limits.

The young master Jun would've obviously wanted to find a more

stable place to make this breakthrough, but by the time he spoke that last sentence to the Solitary Falcon, he had already started sensing that he was trying to hold back the turbulence of an ocean, which was soon followed by another loud 'boom' sound from the Hongjun Pagoda, and more Aura had started to flood into his body moments after. His mind had been launched into a state of complete confusion under the strength of the impact of this Aura on his meridians; meanwhile the Hongjun Pagoda had started to shake violently....

[I really can't hold this back anymore.....]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie didn't even wait for the Solitary Falcon's response, and directly casted out the 'Yin and Yang escape' law, and drilled his body into the ground like a mouse would've under just menacing conditions. He was completely unaware that this 'vanishing' act of his' would completely turn the 'Eighth Great Master's' world upside down!

Although the 'Yin and Yang Escape' law was indeed a peerless and unique technique, but its effect was something completely different from the Solitary Falcon's perspective; [the mysterious master's agility was amazing ah,] the Solitary Falcon had always paid special attention to his agility and had always believed that there was no one superior to him in this regard, however today he witnessed an act of agility which was far superior to anything he had even imagined!

This had also convinced the Solitary Falcon of this mysterious master's prowess, which is why he had obediently decided to seek out Jun Mo Xie. As far as seeking out a younger man for the sake of learning was concerned, the Solitary Falcon didn't seem to mind in the least. He was awfully clear on one immortal and unwavering truth: a superior in terms knowledge shall always be respected!

On the other hand, Jun Mo Xie was now completely ignoring the Solitary Falcon's presence above the ground, and was sitting cross-legged inside the ground beneath, and immediately started to

realize that the situation was becoming more and more intense, and soon enough the young master Jun was no longer able to resist the power of the Pagoda anymore, and found his own conscious being pulled into the Pagoda.

The door to the Hongjun Pagoda opened silently.

Standing inside the magnificence of the Hongjun Pagoda's first layer, a few words suddenly panned out inside his mind: Defend the desires of the Yin and Yang!

Clear understanding!

Is clear understanding!

After one understands, one can protect the desire of the heaven and earth!

As he read these words, a burst of white light flashed up ahead, while a fragrant scent rushed through his nostrils, and what was initially an illusion of a ladder up ahead, suddenly became reality. These steps seemed to be leading up to a door, a solid but simple portal, which seemed to be opening slowly at the moment!

The second level of the Hongjun Pagoda had finally opened its doors to Jun Mo Xie!

An inexplicable burst of excitement seized Jun Mo Xie's heart! The first layer of the Hongjun Pagoda had given him some extremely powerful secret laws such as the 'Yin and Yang Escape' law, which had allowed him to defy the natural order of things in order to protect himself and his interest; as per the norms of this world, the young master Jun was only a basic Gold Xuan layered expert in terms of strength, however with the help of this law, he could roam around in the company of even Spirit Xuan experts without any fear of physical harm!

It was almost as if a three year old child had been given the power to transcend the status of an adult, and allowed him the right of an equal dialogue!

[Just imagine the benefits I could get from the second layer of the Pagoda, ah?]

He composed himself, and then slowly stepped forward towards the door, and felt a rather familiar kind of an atmosphere as he reached the second layer's entrance.

Suddenly, there was a burst of light from within the second layer of the Pagoda, and an endless stream of graphics flew out of it, spinning around in circles, seemingly resembling a bird's nest in shape, and then slowly penetrated into the point between his two eyebrows, and then disappeared with a trace, leaving no signs of ever existing in the first place.

At the same time, Jun Mo Xie's mind could clearly see a series of words and few humanoid images inside it; it seemed as if those images resembled the flow-system of his meridians.

Everything seemed to be going just the way it had happened while entering the first layer of the Pagoda!

"One who walks the scope of the heaven and the earth, must protect the desires of the heaven and earth; one who rashly beheads another, nurtures a heart of ice; nine loyal transformations stabilize the soul by the will of the heavens, and then abides by it....."

Jun Mo Xie started becoming a bit excited after carefully considering the words again: [from what I can tell, it seems the first layer was only a beginning to 'unlocking the heaven's fortune'!]

[Abide by the will of the heavens!]

[From now on, only this can be regarded at the correct path ahead!]

He was standing motionlessly at the door of the second layer at the moment!

The young master Jun was completely unaware that his

corporeal body was undergoing some very drastic changes at the moment!

In addition to the huge amount of Aura which was rushing through his body's meridians again and again, a huge amount of aura had also penetrate through the pores in his brain, and the sole of his feet, and this crazy stream of aura was stretching and expanding his body's meridians in such a drastic manner that the clothes on his body were simply unable to resist their force, and had slowly turned to ash, and had then faded away into inexistence!

The sweat pores on the surface of the young master Jun's body were acting like springs, and were continuously emitting a dark, purplish fluid....

The aura inside his meridians was gushing about in such a turbulent manner that one could clearly hear the sounds they were making.

Since Jun Mo Xie's conscious was completely absorbed in this sea of knowledge, his mind was neglecting all external activities, which is why he had no idea that his body was undergoing such a major transformation.

[This second layer of the Hongjun Pagoda said, 'nine loyal transformations stabilize the soul', which was very similar to the directions of the first layer, 'the nine refinements of the soul, and one never falls into hell!']

[The first two directives of the Hongjun Pagoda have something in common, and that's the word 'nine'; nine refinements, and nine transformations!]

[The number of layer in this structure is also nine, but what does this reveal?]

[It's unlikely that it's all just a coincidence, right?]

Jun Mo Xie's mind quickly evaluated everything that happened

since the beginning of his time in this world, and after making a few calculation surrounding that information, the young master Jun was able to realize that his body had undergone several changes before the second layer of the Pagoda had revealed itself to him; upon careful introspection, he was quickly able to realize that the count of these changes was actually nine in number!

The first time this had happened, he had lost control and his soul had unexpectedly landed itself in this world, and this was the ninth time, which had finally taken him to the second level of the Hongjun Pagoda.

[It's no wonder that my body didn't fall into Hell after its death! "Nine refinements of the soul, and one doesn't fall to hell!" so that's the reason all this is happening....]

He couldn't help a wry smile, [it seems that I'll have to go through these so-called nine transformations before I can enter the third level ah! This obviously means that the tasks I'll have to undertake will be far more difficult than before!]

As the thought of this crossed his mind, his heart suddenly felt a strange sense of tranquil, and it seemed as if mind frame had changed by a lot. In this quiet and peaceful atmosphere, his conscious slowly started to float into the second level of the Hongjun Pagoda!

This room was as huge as the one below, but wasn't empty.

There was a three-legged Dan furnace in the middle of the room; a multicolored flame was steadily and smoothly burning under the furnace.

A 'book' like object was hanging near this furnace, wrapped in a golden and glittering skin.

A few characters were inscribed on the furnace: The furnace of good fortune!

The moment Jun Mo Xie read these words, they unexpectedly

and abruptly disappeared!

Even the audacious Hitman was very surprised by this!

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help carefully inspecting this mysterious furnace from a distance, and then slowly took two steps closer to it; it started seeming as if a voice was calling out to him from this mysterious furnace, seemingly trying to pull him closer towards itself!

That inexplicable force didn't seem irresistible at all, but Jun Mo Xie still didn't wish to resist it since it felt as if this voice belonged to a very intimate friend of his'.....

Just as he approached the furnace, the flame under this furnace which seemed to me calling out to him, suddenly jumped up and instantly wrapped Jun Mo Xie's consciousness inside it; Jun Mo Xie only had a very little time to feel it, but it felt as if his body was passing through the eighteen layers of hell as a penalty, but since his consciousness was sober, he could clearly feel the extreme pain of it, and this pain had already gone beyond the point of his ability of endurance.....

Outside, Jun Mo Xie's body had already stopped discharging that strange fluid; his body had started feeling a burning sensation since it had already been wrapped in a large and colorful flame!

Above the ground, that large maple forest, which was initially thriving, had withering in the blink of an eye. The entire range of plants on the ground had withering, irrespective of their ability to withstand heat, and even the most stubborn blades of grass were no exception to this; this initially plush forest had instantly turned into the driest patch of land!

A cloud of mist started to rise upwards from the ground, and quickly disappeared into nothingness in the sky above. All the water within a few miles of radius had instantly evaporated!

It seemed as if this lush part of the Tian Xiang City had suddenly

become an epitome of death!

This land was so dry now, that even if one flooded this land with water, this water-depleted land would absorb the water so deep down in its water channels that one would probably never be able to dig deep enough to find any traces of moisture in it.....

Jun Mo Xie's fair and sturdy body continued to turn and twist in this flame, until this flame slowly and gradually reduced, revealing Jun Mo Xie's unscathed body!

Suddenly, there was another calling-like sound, and Jun Mo Xie's body instantly disappeared from the ground.

At the same time, and for the first time ever, he found his physical body standing inside the Hongjun Pagoda's second level!

Chapter 208: The Flame of Primal Chaos, and the Furnace of Good Fortune

[TL's note:

The flame of primal chaos refers to a mythical flame that is the origination of all matter; like the big bang theory sort of a thing. The object referred to as a furnace, is more like a cauldron in terms of appearance.]

There were two bodies of Jun Mo Xie's inside the Hongjun Pagoda at the moment; A real one, and an illusionary one.

An irresistibly strong force was trying to pull the two bodies together, and soon the two bodies fused together and became one.

The Furnace of Good Fortune had started issuing a sonorous sound once again, and soon a light emerged from it, circled around the furnace, and then vanished into nothingness.

Jun Mo Xie suddenly realized that his wrist had been cut, and blood was flowing out of that cut like fountain; however, instead of falling down to the ground, his blood was falling straight into the furnace!

The initially fading multicolored flame started blazing up again, and had soon encompassed the entire furnace into its colorful conflagration. However, Jun Mo Xie didn't feel any heat from this massive fire, even though he was standing close proximity.

[The Flame of Primal Chaos!]

These words suddenly appeared inside his mind, and then a dark golden-blood colored light flashed from within the Furnace of Good Fortune, and instantly entered into Jun Mo Xie's body. The young master Jun abruptly realized that the wound on his wrist had faded away all of a sudden, and if his body hadn't been feeling a slight discomfort due to the massive blood loss, he would've never realized that his wrist had just been cut moments ago.

The multicolored flame suddenly stopped burning again, and the entire room quieted down once again, reversing the atmosphere of the room to the one similar to when he had entered the second floor in the beginning.

The three-legged furnace remained silently in its place at the center of the room.

The multicolored flame under the furnace was only burning with a very small fire underneath at the moment, but the flame was still so smooth that it seemed as if it would continue to burn for the rest of eternity.

The book was still quietly placed next to this furnace.

Jun Mo Xie continued to stare at his surroundings with eyes wide open for a long time, believing that he was inside a dream, and then suddenly pinched his thighs; even though he felt the pain of the pinch, it still seemed to him as if he hadn't yet recovered from the shock of these sudden and unexpected turn of events.....

[How did my body get in here?]

For a long time, he was unable to believe what his eyes were seeing, and pinched his body a few times as a result. He pinched his body so hard that at one point it seemed as if he'd pull out his skin, but this sharp pain finally made him realize: [this is really hurting! It seems that my body has really entered into the Hongjun Pagoda!]

[Does this mean that I can access it anytime I want?] Jun Mo Xie's head was still feeling a bit dizzy; it was almost as if the heavens were dropping meat pies on his head, and he didn't have any place to take shelter.

However, the young master Jun was still feeling a strange sense of happiness at this moment!

He hadn't found happiness in shade, or in the radiance of springs, but only inside the Hongjun Pagoda.....

[He he.....]

"Blood becomes the evidence, soul's wisdom becomes the proof, and the soul transforms in strength - the Flame of Primal Chaos refines all living things in this world; the furnace of good fortune, turns into the supreme creator!"

These words suddenly appeared inside Jun Mo Xie's brain. The young master Jun could clearly feel that his body, the odd ancient-looking Furnace of Good Fortune, as well as the Flame of Primal Chaos were now so closely related that it would be impossible to separate them.

Jun Mo Xie took two steps forward, and leaned over the golden colored book.

Just as his hand touched the book, the book suddenly turned to a mass made of nothingness, circled over the Furnace of Good Fortune once, and then vanished into the space between his eyebrows just as the previous images and letters had.

Folk Remedy!

[TL: Folk Remedy means homemade medicines.]

These two ancient looking words would spin around in Jun Mo Xie's mind for a while, and would then be replaced by numerous dense characters and imagines depicting the alchemic methods to create numerous types of potions, and also the necessary steps to create the constituent raw materials; once these methods had circled inside his head for a while, they would once again be replaced by those two words.

"I understand!" Jun Mo Xie mumbled these two words as he read those characters inside his head.

[Now I really understand!]

The Hitman's heart was jumping with excitement, but the composed Hitman suppressed his heart's excitement and calmed himself down forcefully. Simultaneously, he realized something

very amazing and gratifying; the flowing Qi inside his meridians had mysteriously converted into the same colors as that of the Hongjun Pagoda's Aura, and was now slowly swimming around his meridians in very mist-like manner!

[Such progress is simply amazing!]

['The Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune' surely requires some very difficult things, but once I've practiced and mastered its methods; it definitely gives good rewards in return!]

Jun Mo Xie estimated that his present strength had reached the peak of the Gold Xuan layer as per the standards of this world. He had gone from the peak of Silver Xuan to the base of the Gold Xuan earlier, but had now stabilized into the Gold Xuan layer, and had then progressed to its mid mark, and had then surpassed to its peak!

And all this had happened in a matter of six seconds!

It must be mentioned that Jun Mo Xie had only arrived in this world a mere two months ago!

He had found himself in a very troublesome situation upon entering this world; moreover, he had acquired the body of young man whose strength was only comparable to that of a poor beggar!

His family was in crisis; his life was in crisis!

His body's strength was only comparable to that of ant in this world!

Had the original Jun Mo Xie persisted in this world any longer, then he would've succumbed to his end very easily in no time at all.

In fact, had it not been for the Hongjun Pagoda's support, the new Jun Mo Xie would've also already died countless times by now! He had always relied on this secret to transform his perilous circumstances into safety!

However, it was absolutely undeniable that his personal strength was far, far from being adequate!

His body's strength had reached the Peak of the Silver Xuan realm in less than two months' time, which was no less than a miracle! However, Silver Xuan strength isn't enough to ensure one's safety in this world.

It could be said that his life was still in danger at that point, and he could still be vanquished in case the circumstances changed against his best interests!

Then a few days ago, he received the 'Yin and Yang Escape' law, and the young master Jun was finally able to find a way to ensure his life's protection! Moreover, this law had given him the best means to protect himself when in danger!

However, even then, it was still far from being enough! It had never been in Jun Mo Xie's nature to hold back! Therefore, he's still need to the strength to go forward, and take the offensive charge when needed!

Jun Mo Xie would never owe anyone, he would never ask anyone for help, nor could he let anyone bully him; such was his nature! [If you steal from me, I'll club you; if you disgrace me, I'll do you a hundred times over. If you hurt my family, I'll slaughter your entire Family; and if you deceive me, then it will remain etched in my memory forever!]

[Betrayal is the most intolerable thing!]

Betrayal was the world's greatest evil in Jun Mo Xie's eyes!

Even though this shade was different from the scales of the world, but this was one of the reasons he associated himself on a moral level with his family!

[If you dare to hurt even one strand of my hair, I'll cut off your arm! And whoever dares to hurt me, I'll destroy his entire family!]

[No matter who! They will all get the same treatment!]

However, strength of character isn't everything; physical strength decides everything in the end. If one only has strength in character, one eventually finds the way to his doom!

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had been looking forward to opening the second layer of the Hongjun Pagoda as soon as possible, and then the third, and then.... The ninth!

He knew that the Hongjun Pagoda was the only real support he had in this world!

The benefits of financial power can fly away like the dust; even his family may not be able to ensure their survival in this present situation of a power struggle with just money.

First, the ten year long trouble with the Silver Blizzard City, and now the trouble with the Xue Hun Manor had been putting the young master Jun under a lot of pressure! Moreover, each Family in the Tian Xiang City was breeding snakes these days as the power struggle was beginning to take its toll, which was adding more peril to his circumstances!

No one knew of the pressure that Jun Mo Xie had been feeling. Although he had never showed it, but it didn't mean that he wasn't feeling it.

However now that he had opened the second layer of the Hongjun Pagoda, even though his strength was still quite low, but he had finally found some real and positive capital!

He knew that his lone Gold Xuan strength wouldn't be enough! In fact, it would be far from being sufficient! However!....

With the help of this Furnace of Good Fortune, and the book of Folk Remedies, Jun Mo Xie could now build his family a solid and staunch army in a very short period of time.

Moreover, it would also assist in rapidly increasing his own strength!

Then, once the time was ripe, Jun Mo Xie could expose his fangs

to the entire world!

Jun Mo Xie could suddenly feel the wind rising in front of his eyes;

[The powers of this world, I, Jun Mo Xie has finally found some real capital to confront you now!]

Suddenly, the young master Jun found himself in the dark of the ground, seemingly having no idea as to when he had exited the Hongjun Pagoda. As the thought of Solitary Falcon and Hai Chen Feng rushing to his residence in search of him crossed his mind, he immediately sensed the urgency of the situation and escaped out of the ground.

Sunshine!

Jun Mo Xie seemed a bit lost standing above the ground, while his eyes were lowered under the gaze of the sun.

His strength had progressed quite significantly over a very short period of time! It was only natural that he'd be in a very excited frame of mind, in fact he was somewhat complacent about it; it was almost as if a pauper had suddenly won a lottery! Although he knew well that he needed to keep it a secret, his heart was still aching to flaunt his new strength a bit, and therefore he couldn't help summoning his strength.

In his excited frame of mind, the young master Jun hadn't even realized that he was standing completely naked in the woods at the moment.....

"Ah!!!!....." A scream pierced through the air, and was followed by a girl's anger and resentment filled curses: "Rogue! Stool! He's got the courage to in broad daylight....."

Jun Mo Xie turned around to realize that two people were standing about ten meters away from him; a young man and young maiden. The young maiden's hair were flowing down over her shoulders and all the way down to her white dress, she had a

rather delicate looking elegant body, and was in the process of turning around while stomping her feet at the same time; her hands seemed to be covering her eyes shut.

Next to her stood a handsome young man, but his eagle-hook nose and the angry grimace on his face made it rather clear that he wasn't very happy at the moment. His left hand stretched out to point a finger towards Jun Mo Xie, whilst his right hand found its way to the hilt of his sword: "You have the courage to do such a shameless act in broad day light! This young master simply cannot stand your nerve; I'm going to teach you a lesson!"

"What lesson? I don't understand you?" Jun Mo Xie couldn't help wondering: [these two aren't mentally unstable or something, right? I'm just standing here and you come over shouting curses at me? Can't you tell me from my appearance that I'm no rogue of any sort? You're really looking to start a quarrel now!]

It was rare for Jun Mo Xie to take someone's words to heart, but still found himself subconsciously stepping forward.

The young woman had just secretly parted her fingers to steal a glance at Jun Mo Xie, only to realize that he was stepping closer to her, and couldn't help feeling shy and angry at the same time, and thus she cried out in anxiety: "You, you, you, shameless character..... don't come near me! I'm very powerful..... you don't come near me....."

Her tone seemed full of anxious complains! Somehow, having witnessed a completely naked man for the first time had incited a rather strange feeling inside her, and though she knew that she shouldn't be looking at him, but still couldn't help her curiosity, and found herself secretly staring at the naked man in front from the secrecy of her parted fingers.....

Chapter 209: You will wish you hadn't said that

The young master Jun was a bit puzzled; as far he was concerned, [do I really look that scary? I mean just look at this girl, she looks as if she'd start crying any minute now!]

The distance between the two parties wasn't much, and the young master Jun's small steps forward had obviously been bringing them closer!

"Yan Meng, don't panic; I will behead this shameless bastard with my sword!" the young man smiled as he stated confidently, and then slowly approached closer to Jun Mo Xie, having already unsheathed his sword, and then shouted: "You shameless bastard, step any forward and you court your death!"

Seeing his shiny sword made Jun Mo Xie even gloomier, and then his words only made him angrier, [and how am I being shameless? Isn't this guy just clearly bullying me?]

[You may like to bully other people, but you've clearly found the wrong person today!]

[You can't protect yourself ah! And you're telling this woman that you'll kill a masked stranger for her? Your mother really gave birth to a bastard! Damn it, I'll show you; you're going to regret this forever!]

The young master Jun's initial feeling of excitement had long died down, and had instead been replaced by a sense of anger, and hence he took a couple of large strides forward, feeling it necessitated to teach this arrogant youngster a lesson.

As he walked forward, he suddenly felt a cool breeze chilling his body, and was forced to look down in that moment of surprise!

"You're the real scoundrel!" the young master Jun shouted back, as he covered Little Mo Xie with one hand.

He had finally realized that his entire body was naked!

This was obviously far less shameful than running home naked without realizing it!

His body had been set ablaze previously when he had undergone a refining procedure by the Flame of Primal Chaos, and even though his body had received enormous benefits without even suffering any burns from the fire, his clothes had been turned to ash in moments.

However, Jun Mo Xie's body was underground at that time, while his conscious was inside the Hongjun Pagoda, which is why he had no knowledge of it. He hadn't realized this at the time when he had pinched his body since he was too intoxicated by the unexpected turn of events, and had completely forgotten about all other things because of it.

After coming out of the Hongjun Pagoda, the young master Jun was in such an excited frame of mind upon realizing that his strength had progressed a long way that he simply didn't notice it, and soon enough found himself being cursed and abused by complete strangers.....

During this sudden transformation from feeling like a 'hero' to being called a 'rogue', Jun Mo Xie simply hadn't realized that he was standing stark naked.....

"You, you, you are such a shameless character that you've even turned to the thief who shouts the same at others!" The young maiden continued to stomp her feet while clutching her eyes shut: "You're a scoundrel, and then you have the courage to call others rogue.... You're an utterly shameless character!"

Although the young master Jun was clutching Little Mo Xie with one hand, his face showed absolutely no signs of embarrassment as he opened his mouth to bicker in a sarcastic repartee: "There is nothing rogue about a man running around naked in the streets; we were born naked, and we will die naked; our parents were

naked when they conceived us, why don't people call that rogue? However, the eyes peeping at such things from the crevices of their fingers and then shouting rogue are the real scoundrels that plague this world!"

"I didn't ask you to see me, then why were you staring at me? You profane my innocence! You're the thief shouting thief here, and then you have the courage to call me a scoundrel? You're really unreasonable!" Jun Mo Xie twisted his words to force logic in the most unreasonable ways, backing it with utter shamelessness: "You young woman, are the real scoundrel here!"

The young master Jun advocated his preposterous reasoning in the same tone as that young girl had, seemingly mimicking her, and having raised his standards to a completely new and unrivalled height of shamelessness!

"You, you, you..... Xiao Feng Wu, hurry and kill this lecherous man; he insults me!" the girl shouted as she stomped her feet once again: "He actually has the courage to lecture me, and dares to call me a scoundrel after....."

"Your Family name is Xiao?" Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes: "I hate the Family name Xiao! In my experience nothing good has ever come from that Family name, so it's no surprise that an arrogant youngster from such a hateful Family name is acting like such a rogue!"

Recalling the pain and hardships that the Silver Blizzard City had forced on his Uncle had obviously made Jun Mo Xie extremely sensitive towards that one family name!

The young man named Xiao Feng Wu suddenly became very furious and shouted: "Shameless bastard, you actually dare to open your mouth and be rude towards my Family? I'll take your life!"

He raised his sword as a golden light flashed from his body!

This young man had actually reached the Gold Xuan realm!

Given his age, his talent was at least at par with Li You Ran!

Such strength might have caused some minor problems for the young master Jun a month ago, but now that his strength had seen a major enhancement, he could basically just ignore the opposition's threat!

Just as Xiao Feng Wu raised his sword, the naked figure in front of him suddenly disappeared, which was followed by a whizz of cold wind, and soon he found his face being slapped by a cold hand, while his crotch simultaneously felt a very powerful foot; the man's upper body curled down to his legs like shrimp, while his sword fell to his side.

'Chi' 'Chi' sounds were made as a piece of cloth was torn off from his robes. Although Xiao Feng Wu wasn't weak, but he still lacked practical fighting experience, and the young master Jun's kick had sent his liver and gall bladder mourning with pain as a result; the man rolled three feet and fell to the ground, but his face continued to look up at the naked man in front.

He watched as that shameless and naked man wrapped the cloth he had just ripped from his own robes around his body, and then leisurely tied a knot, and then actually jumped around back and front twice while twisting his buttocks to inspect if some obscene parts of his body were still visible or not, and then turned his head forward again.

His upper body was still bare, while his slender legs also remained exposed as the cloth only circled around his broad shoulder and then down to his waist, making his attire look very free and unfettered but still quite glamorous by the standards of this world!

This person's appearance had completely changed in matter of moments. Even though his thin lips, his oblique eyebrows, and that faint smiling expression were enough to incite fear in any man's heart, one still couldn't help but be fascinated by his style.

He had just been exposed to a moment of such extreme embarrassment, but even then the young master Jun didn't blush in the least! This was evidence of the fact that his shamelessness had reached a point where it had already surpassed all of its kind before and since!

The girl, who was standing at a distance from this scene had completely forgotten to cover her eyes from the shock of these sudden turn of events, and was now watching Jun Mo Xie with her tiny red mouth opened as wide as it could be, never having imagined that her companion, a Gold Xuan realm expert, a peerless talent of his generation would ever be subdued by just half-a-move of this shameless mans'!

Although this man's face was covered with mud, which made it rather hard to access his appearance, but it was rather obvious that he was quite young in age, and was in fact even younger than his peer, [how could he be so powerful?]

"What is your name, and where do you come from? You come to the Tian Xiang City and actually dare to provoke me, ah, are you trying to dig your own grave?" Jun Mo Xie stepped forward in short steps since his present clothing limited the movement of his long legs to some extent: "You wanted to teach me a lesson and then kill me? Really? Well, understand this, you're only alive thanks to my good nature, else I would've cut you up and would've dropped your pieces to your grandmother's doorstep!"

Jun Mo Xie cursed, and then turned around to leave since he had no intention of staying any longer.

"How dare you? Don't ever let me see you in the Silver Blizzard City, else I won't let you live!" Xiao Feng Wu cried out, his eyes wreaking of a cruel and malicious aura: "Boy, you pray that I don't find you again! I will slaughter your entire Family! If I don't make them run from their own house, and then slaughter them like dogs, then I'm not a Xiao!"

Jun Mo Xie was already preparing to leave when his footsteps halted midair, his eyes suddenly turned as cold as steel, and he turned his face around to look at Xiao Feng Wu: "Silver Blizzard City? You come from the Silver Blizzard City's Xiao Family?" his tone was already cold, overcast, and extremely gloomy.

"Yes, that's right!" Xiao Feng Wu struggled as he tried to stand up, and smiled ferociously: "Are you afraid now? Well, it's too late! Unless you and your entire Family kneel down to the ground and beg me for an apology, I will slaughter your entire Family in front of your eyes!"

"That's good! That's very good!" Jun Mo Xie slowly nodded, his face dull, but not angry. [Since that's the reason behind your arrogance, then I'm no nephew to my Uncle if I don't punish you!]

[You will wish you hadn't said that!]

"Kneel before me!" Xiao Feng Wu was under the impression that this man would inevitably turn soft, and he'd get a chance to save his face in return, and therefore, naturally couldn't help sensing his greatness!

"Kneel before you, my ass!" Jun Mo Xie abruptly stepped forward, and slapped the man across his face with a heavy hand, and sent the man falling a few steps backwards, spraying blood from his mouth.

Jun Mo Xie followed after him, and punched him twice in his each of his eye sockets, giving birth to a Giant Panda: "I'll show you! I'll show you! I'm going to paralyze you! You think that Silver Blizzard City is that great ah?"

"You threaten me!" - punch!

"You think that you can bully me because of your family name!" - kick!

"You want to destroy my entire Family!" bang bang bang.....

"I'll destroy you! I'll f**king destroy you! I'm not just going to

beat you up! I'm going to destroy you!" bang bang bang bang.....

"You want me kneel down and apologize! Not even if your grandmother drops!" bang bang bang bang bang bang.....

"You bastard! You bastard! You bastard!....." Jun Mo Xie grabbed his hair, and raised his trembling body upwards as he cursed, "you bastard!", and then threw him down to the ground once again, and repeated the same procedure several times, and then grabbed his hair once again, which were still somehow painfully attached to his scalp, and then looked his face once again, and then sent his body flying; the man fell down to ground a few meters away, unconscious; unknown whether dead or alive.

Jun Mo Xie still didn't stop, and flew after than man once again, and started pounding more strikes to his body, even as the man's body continued to flow blood.

The young man was awakened from his unconscious state several times, but sunk back into it since his body was unable to tolerate the pain of it.....

A man was lying on the ground, and an almost-naked man was standing on top of him and was beating him up in a frenzied manner.....

"Ah....." the young girl was unable to even blink her eyes at the moment, nor could she understand how her companion had been suddenly turned into a human 'sandbag' in a matter of moments.....

Things were happening too fast, and it was a bit dizzying for her. This young maiden's head was simply unable to make head or tail of what was happening at the moment, nor could she decide on her own course of action.

"What is your name!" Jun Mo Xie fiercely looked at her as he gasped a few mouthfuls of air, and then ferociously pointed a finger in her direction as he shouted in a rough voice: "Dammit,

tell me or you die!"

The young woman was almost in tears as she tried to open her trembling mouth, while her face had already gone pale with fear:
".....me?"

Chapter 210: Don't call him your senior again

"Are you a ghost?" Jun Mo Xie shouldered no signs of being protective towards the fairer gender, and stared viciously at her as he asked again: "What is your name?"

"I.....I.....my name is Han Yan....Meng..... I'm very powerful..... don't you dare attack me....." The young maiden seemed awfully terrified which was rather evident since her jade-shade face had turned deadly pale.

Since birth, she had always been treated with respect wherever she had gone; she had never felt so bullied in her entire life. [This man is a super-hybrid of a 'scoundrel' and a 'bully'!]

Hence it was only natural that the young woman was awfully frightened at this time!

She had obviously never imagined that sneaking out from the Magnificent Jewel Hall for a little playtime would result in encountering such a 'fiend'! The young maiden's heart was constantly beating like a drum, and as the thoughts of those numerous dangerous possibilities crossed her mind, she started trembling more and more fearfully.....

"Han Yan Meng?" Jun Mo Xie was dumbstruck: "This guy is from the Silver Blizzard City's Xiao Family? Yes? And You're from Han Yan Yao's Family?"

"She..... She is my elder sister..... don't you dare attack me, my sister loves me dearly, and she's terribly powerful....." Han Yan Meng threatened in a trembling voice, and it seemed rather obvious that she was just trying to prevent herself from being beaten up.....

Jun Mo Xie was left completely dumbstruck at this point.

[So this is the girl Mu Xue Tong was ferrying around? She's the

one he was calling the little princess of the Silver Blizzard City? That would make her my Uncle's sister-in-law to be!]

[That basically means that she'll be my elder someday.... Kill me now!]

"Is this your personal dog?" Jun Mo Xie pointed at the miserable looking Xiao Feng Wu as he asked.

"No, no, no." Han Yan Meng nervously waved her hand: "No, he is not my personal dog....."

Han Yan Meng hadn't yet finished her sentence when the young master Jun cut her off in between: "You haven't educated him one bit; he's not just a dog, but a wild dog!"

The young maiden quickly waved her hand to differentiate, "He is not a wild dog, he.... He is a man; he is my senior, his surname is Xiao, and his....."

"He is a man? I don't see so! He is dog!" Jun Mo Xie once again interrupted the young maiden's words as he wiped his hands and face off Xiao Feng Wu's blood, "I said he's a dog, that means he is a dog! An uneducated wild dog! Do you understand?"

"No, he he, he really isn't a dog, he....." the young maiden had always been pampered by her family, and had never met someone so tyrannical in her entire life, therefore she obviously didn't know how to deal with such a situation, and then suddenly an idea popped into her head: "You you, see, he he, he has no tail.... Dogs have a tail. So that means that he is actually a person....."

Jun Mo Xie was left stupefied once again, hesitated for a moment, and then broke into laughter, and then deliberately stated: "You don't know this yet, but his tail was cut off; how else would they be able to make him look man-like instead of a dog!" he wanted to say 'pleasing to the eye', but decided against it, and then suddenly discovered something strange about the man.

[I beat him up so badly, but he's still breathing... his chest is

falling up and down rhythmically, and even his fingers are showing subconscious movements, and it almost seems that he'd wake up any moment.....]

Jun Mo Xie's mind burst into making some calculations again; [his cultivation is very limited ah, so there should be no reason why he was able to withstand such a heavy beating, what is going on here? There must be something weird behind all this!]

He tightened his waist cloth, and then strode forward and stationed himself in front of Xiao Feng Wu's body, and started sizing up his body with frowning glances, and then suddenly bent down laughing loudly, and then tore open his chest-clothing to reveal a soft, shiny and silvery armor that Xiao Feng Wu was wearing on his chest. Jun Mo Xie grabbed the armor with his hands and exerted some force to tear it open, but the armor remained in its place!

[What an amazing thing ah!] The young master Jun unceremoniously stripped the man down, and then stripped down that soft armor off his body. He grabbed the sword which was lying on the ground, and then pricked that soft armor with the sword's tip. Even though the armor was extremely soft in its make, it was still easily able to withstand the tip of the sword, and although there was no force behind the stab, the armor didn't even have the slightest of scratches on it.

It was rather obvious that the only reason Xiao Feng Wu had been able to survive this onslaught was because he was wearing this armor on his body. Xiao Feng Wu was lying unconscious on the ground, and had no idea that this was happening; however Jun Mo Xie had already understood that even though he had been able to beat this man unconscious, he still wouldn't have been able to kill him as long as he was wearing this armor!

Han Yan Meng wanted to come forward and rescue her companion, but was afraid of Jun Mo Xie's strength, and feared that he might actually slap her in the face which might send her

flying out as well, and hence had resigned herself to squatting on the floor, clutching her face, and crying silently.

"What is this?" Jun Mo Xie asked Han Yan Meng, [what is this evil little thing, I really want to know.]

"Snow Silkworm Armor." Han Yan Meng opened her trembling eyelids and started staring at him again with a heart full of grievances: [he's so shameless; his bodily skin is actually as delicate as mine, and he's quite good-looking too, but he still has no sense of shame or justice!]

[He is so disgraceful! How can someone treat a girl like this?]

"Snow Silkworm armor, this a good thing. Well, good, very good." Jun Mo Xie looked at the armor lovingly as he twisted it over and over, and then tossed it up and down.

Han Yan Meng secretly thought of something and tried to hide it from reflecting on her face, but couldn't prevent her tears from stopping.

Snow Silkworm armor was obviously a very rare treasure in the mainland, but wasn't very uncommon in the Silver Blizzard City's high-class; in fact, most people had one such armor. This was one of Silver Blizzard City's monopolized treasures. In fact, when it came to precious items, a 'Snow Silkworm' armor was nothing special for them since they had several more advanced items in their arsenal. The young master Jun was able to analyze this very quickly, and estimated that this young man might be carrying some other very valuable treasures.

"What other precious items is he carrying?" Jun Mo Xie wasn't looking at her at this moment, but her facial expression had changed slightly by now. The young maiden was quite inexperienced in worldly affairs, and although she had only thought of something, but her subconscious actions attracted the young master Jun's attention, and he could clearly sense that she was looking down upon him disdainfully at the moment.

"The best is the Xuan Silkworm armor, and I have one.... I'm not wearing it....." Han Yan Meng was suddenly startled to see that the bloodied Jun Mo Xie was looking at her, and was so scared of his appearance that her naïve heart almost stopped beating, and eventually decided to say that she wasn't wearing the armor, [I reckon that this bully will actually try to grab my armor as well, and might actually beat me up and then strip me over a Xuan Silkworm armor.....]

"Xuan Silkworm? Well, he he he....." Jun Mo Xie looked at her maliciously, and a burst of horror gripped Han Yan Meng, who immediately raised her arms in the air.

"Don't worry, I know you're wearing that Xuan Silkworm armor, but I will not rob a girl; I'm very cultured that way." Jun Mo Xie glanced at her as burst of unhappiness seized his mind, [If I'm able to clean up the Xiao Family, and then somehow Uncle and Miss Han Yan Yao's love finds a way, and they end up getting married, then this little girl will become my Elder in name!]

[Would I call her Aunt? Or Sister-in-law?]

[Ah, this so is disturbing already! And then there's a Xuan Silkworm armor right there in front of me, and I simply can't grab it... this isn't done!]

Jun Mo Xie stretched out his hand, and pulled her cheeks, scaring Han Yan Meng in the process, and then he laughed evilly as he turned around and sped away, "Miss Han, he he, I heard you call him your senior; don't call him your senior again, ha ha....."

Han Yan Meng breathed a sigh of relief as she saw that overbearing "monster" leaving at last, and finally started calming down. She patted her tiny chest, and then sighed, but was soon left puckering her eyebrows because she suddenly remembered the last sentence that "Monster" had said before leaving.

"Why? This is obvious, isn't it? He's from the Xiao Family, so why shouldn't I call him as such? I really don't understand this! It

seems from this mans' words that he's some sort of a martial madman! Anyway, he's definitely not normal!"

Han Yan Meng's eyes were open wide and round for a while as she continued to mutter to herself in confusion. Eventually, she came to the final conclusion: [the 'crazy' don't think in the same terms as normal people! I've never seen such a madman before!]

The autumn winds gradually started rising up again, and since Xiao Feng Wu's injuries were quite serious, he showed no signs of waking up to his senses, leaving the unexperienced Han Yan Meng standing alone at a complete loss, and as she stood there all alone for an increasing period of time, the fear of heart also increased. However, a very strange phenomenon was taking place at this time: [as the cold autumn winds were rising up, the maple forest was slowing fading out, and the trees were slowly turning to ash; the forest simply seemed unable to withstand the cold of the winds.]

Chapter 211: A Great Master's arrival

The young master Jun casted out the 'Yin and Yang Escape' law and secretly entered into a clothing store, stole himself a robe, left his half-torn attire hanging on the hanger as a replacement, and then proceeded to finding his way back to the Jun Family's residence.

The young master Jun still wasn't skilled enough to be able to cast out the 'Yin and Yang Escape' law and return to the Jun residence in one single go, which is why his journey back was bound to take some time!

The Jun residence was bustling with excitement at this time!

It was rather hard to describe the scene; not only was the house-staff running about excitedly, even the Family's elders were running about!

One of the 'Eight Great Masters', the Solitary Falcon had suddenly arrived at the Jun residence, which was nothing short of an honor for them!

This was rather uncommon; even for families of such influence!

Upon reaching the Jun residence, the Solitary Falcon had immediately reported his real name; he obviously didn't wish to disclose the real purpose of his visit, and cleverly chose to use Hai Chen Feng's treatment as the purpose of his visit.

Even though the 'Eighth Great Master' wasn't ashamed of asking for advice, and was rather determined to seek help, but it would've been rather odd for him to state it publicly in front of so many people that he was here to seek advice from a child.

His arrival had completely shook the Jun residence, so much so that Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi had personally ran out to greet and welcome him and the half-dead Hai Chen Feng, leaving all their tasks unattended, and had cordially invited them into the

dining hall.

After hearing that the Third Young Master of the Jun family hadn't yet returned from his outing, the Solitary Falcon generously stated that it was "quite alright", and proceeded to tasting the Jun Family's homemade tea while warming up to Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi's chatter.

Jun Zhan Tian, being a highly experienced war veteran, lived up to his reputation of being one of the best military generals ever born, and was quick to pacify his shocked state of mind, and was able to greet the Solitary Falcon in a very calm and casual manner, making this unusual incident seem very normal.

Old man Jun deliberately established his Family's reliability in front of his guest quite early on: "Wu Yi, you must go and see if Mo Xie has returned yet or not; once he returns, you must quickly bring him here. Saving lives is like fighting a fire; one simply cannot afford the slightest of delays."

Jun Zhan Tian obviously meant something entirely different: [the Solitary Falcon has arrived to our residence in search of medical assistance, but is my grandson even capable of treating his companion? My beloved grandson might have indeed cured my Son's deep-seated ailment, but we haven't really seen much of his medical expertise since then ah, and it will be very detrimental to our cause in case he's unable to live up to the Solitary Falcon's requirements.....]

Having understood this, Jun Wu Yi naturally didn't mind waiting for his nephew at the door since he anyway wished to know the matter, and didn't wish to allow his nephew to hastily start the medical treatment in case he wasn't equipped to handle it all the way.

However, the real reason why the Solitary Falcon didn't mind these delays is because he needed to find more about Jun Mo Xie before meeting him in person since he had already been informed

that the youngster was quite a handful, and was hoping that he'd be able to get a better assessment about the young man's temperament from his family.

"I was asked to come and seek out the young master Jun." the Solitary Falcon's words were enough to make Jun Wu Yi and Jun Zhan Tian realize that this wasn't just an accident, and they were both left thinking, [So that's what's going on!]

They had long guessed that their heir must've had some secret dealing since the youngster was already quite powerful, but had remained very tight-lipped about his whereabouts recently. This incident was enough for them to assess that their youngest-generation-heir was indeed a very influential character. [No wonder that he wasn't afraid of facing off against the Xue Hun Manor.... And this is the reason!]

Old man Jun had actually gone one step further in his assessment and had estimated that his grandson was even more influential than their initial estimate since the Solitary Falcon had been 'Asked to come and seek out'his grandson!

[The Solitary Falcon is publicly recognized to as one the strongest men alive; so who could have the power to tell him to 'come and seek out' my grandson? Who's the man pointing him in our direction?]

[And will this person also reveal himself in the future?]

Moreover, the Solitary Falcon's attitude at the time of addressing Jun Mo Xie's name was extremely polite and respectful; this was naturally enough to tingle their imagination even further: [the Solitary Falcon has always been known for his rebellious nature, and I believe that even Li Jue Tian wouldn't be able to gain so much respect from such a man!]

[Well, then who's more powerful than Li Jue Tian in this world? Someone so powerful that even this man admires and respects him?]

[What does this indicate? This must obviously be the doing of Yun Bei Chen ah!]

[No wonder ah, with Yun Bei Chen's backing, it's no wonder that Jun Mo Xie wasn't afraid of Li Jue Tian ah! Li Jue Tian is nothing compared to Yun Bei Chen.....]

[This kid has been keeping too many secrets, and has even managed to win over Yun Bei Chen's admiration, but if Yun Bei Chen finds out that he was unable to heal this half-dead man, then things might go backwards for us.....]

Old man Jun and Jun Wu Yi were even more delighted to hear the Solitary Falcon admitting that he isn't as strong as Yun Bei Chen, but when it comes to respect, even the strongest man in the world doesn't deserve his. They simply attribute the second part of his statement to his arrogant and brassy nature rather than his ambition of challenging Yun Bei Chen when he was ready for the fight!

Therefore, the Solitary Falcon and Old man Jun continued to smile at each other in tactic understanding, completely unaware that they were thinking completely different things!

At this time, Guan Dong Liu also heard about this visit; upon knowing that the Solitary Falcon had personally come to visit the Jun Family's residence, Guan Dong Liu was left wiping the sweat off his forehead, [the Jun Family has such a powerful backing, no wonder ah; the Xue Hun Manor is just an organization, and Li Jue Tian is never really there to help them..... they just use his name because he's associated with them; the Jun Family however, can summon the Solitary Falcon to their residence in person - that shifts the balance, right?]

[Fortunately, I made the lesser choice at that time under the impulse of my emotions; else I would've rolled onto the wrong side by siding with the Xue Hun Manor, and would've ended up provoking the combined strength of the Jun Family and the

Solitary Falcon ah!]

[It seems that the Jun Family is very wise, and their strength is still as unwavering as ever.....]

He continued to sweat for a long time, and then joined the gathering.....

Each man was carrying a completely different idea in their head, but each man had already guessed that they were being shielded by some 'divine strategy and wonderful planning', and were reassured in the belief that they were being protected well.

Therefore, the host and the guest were both in a very joyous mood.

By the time Jun Mo Xie returned home, everyone was chit-chatting busily in the dining hall. Everyone, including the Solitary Falcon, seemed to be in high spirits.

Jun Wu Yi immediately caught hold of his nephew: "What are you up to? Did you know that the Solitary Falcon has come here looking for you? Can you really heal his companion?"

Jun Mo Xie was rather anxious to return to his room at this moment since he wanted to put on his underwear first - he felt rather uncomfortable without one.

"Never mind, let him wait. I'll go and change my clothes first, and then I'll go and see him." Jun Mo Xie hastily proceeded towards his room.

Jun Wu Yi caught ahold of him again: "What's wrong with these clothes? They look clean enough to me. Now come!" He half-carried, half-pushed, half-hurried Jun Mo Xie rather barbarically into the dining hall in that state of private discomfort.

"It's you!" the Solitary Falcon looked up and immediately recognized the man whose wine he had enjoyed so much just a couple of days ago. This obviously came as a big surprise to him: the man he was seeking had turned out to be a friend, and was

moreover someone he had found to be very respectful in the past; since this kid wasn't someone he had found to be rude during their past meeting, he immediately let go off his worries!

"I loved your wine kid; I quickly finished those two jugs of wine, but I've been very impatient since then because I can't think of a wine that can equal yours, and then I wasn't even able to track you down afterwards!" the Solitary Falcon's saliva almost flowed out of his mouth as the thought of that wine crossed his mind; in fact, he completely forgot about the true purpose of his visit.

"You will have to pay me ten thousand taels of silver if you want to drink more of my wine." Jun Mo Xie's reply left Jun Zhan Tian and Guan Dong Liu completely shocked, and their faces immediately turned red. They were rather amazed to know that the Solitary Falcon had an interest in their kid's wine, but his bold reply left them puzzled and angry soon after.

The two men were left complaining in unanimity to themselves: [That's the Solitary Falcon, one of the 'Eight Great Masters', do you even understand the gravity of this situation kid? He said that he likes your wine, and instead giving him a bucket of it, and then using it to build a solid relationship with him, you actually opened your mouth to ask him such a big price?! What is wrong with you?!]

[Do you want to piss him off?]

Completely contrary to the expectations of these two men, the Solitary Falcon not only didn't take this matter to his heart, but actually broke into laughter, almost as if it was a funny joke, "Damn that, I'll pay you whatever you want, but first give me the wine!"

Then he laughed some more: "I have some money on me right now, but it certainly won't be enough, so let me owe you for one night, and then I'll go about robbing several wealthy families in the morning, and I'll get you a few hundred thousand taels instead;

that amount should be enough to repay my debt with interest, right? Now let me have my drink!"

Everyone was left sweating bullets! [The 'Eighth Great Master' is talking about robbing people for money like a common criminal?!]

"You probably didn't understand my words properly; I decline that bargain since I operate a small business, and small businesses operate on cash transaction, and hence I can't afford to give out debts; forgive me." Jun Mo Xie's tone seemed devoid of any room for accommodation, and then it became even more straightforward: "If you don't have any money, then I won't sell you anything!"

The young master Jun was acting this bold since he knew he was holding all the cards in this game, [you're here to learn from me, and then you also need me to help you with a medical treatment, and now you also want my wine for free?]

[That's three things! If I don't ask you pay for some of it, then it would simply be defying the natural orders of things!]

The Solitary Falcon's face immediately turned bitter, almost as if he'd started pleading at any moment, and then suddenly his eyebrows shot up as he angrily retorted: "You're extremely annoying, I, I, I'll go out and rob people right now; you'll regret this later!"

"Please go ahead!" Jun Mo Xie replied sloppily: "Go left, and go about seven hundred meters straight, and then turn right; you'll find the Empire's most wealthy Family's gates there, the Mu Rong Family; although there's a lot of money there, but I believe that it will be a tough task, and if it's too much to handle, then I suggest that you don't take the right, and keep walking straight until you see a tacky copper-colored gate. Go in there and you should find enough money; that's the Wealth Minister's house, and you'll find the houses of several nobles around that vicinity as well; in fact if you search the area properly, you'll find that several wealthy

businessmen and officials live in that area, and you should be able to rob enough money there."

"I'll be here to welcome you once you've robbed some." Jun Mo Xie smiled and said: "Old Falcon, I wish you the best of luck; as long as you are able to rob that circle, I'll give you enough wine for the rest of your life; in fact if you wish it, I won't just give you enough wine to get drunk each day of your life, I'll give you enough to bathe in it!"

Chapter 212: You want me to save him? Let's talk about the conditions first!

The Solitary Falcon was left stupefied, [what is this boy saying ah?]

It seemed from the expression of the other people present on the scene, besides these two men, that their eyes would pop out of their sockets and would fall to the floor at any moment! [That's the 'Eighth Great Master' ah, and just look at the manner in which the Third Young Master Jun is speaking with him; but even then the Great Master isn't losing his temper.... What is going on?]

[Has this world gone crazy all of a sudden?]

"Well, I will not face that disgrace; I don't want your wine, I will not drink your wine, not even one broken cup of it; this Old man will not submit to your ridiculousness, and I won't ever drink your wine till the day I die ah!" The Solitary Falcon sunk back down in an empty chair with a look of gloom spread across his face, [I really wish I could get some more of that wine ah.....]

"I heard you came here looking for me?" Jun Mo Xie smiled: "What's that matter?"

"Your foolish old master asked me to find you; he's asked you to cure this man, and then there's one more trivial thing he wants you to do, but we'll keep that for later." The Solitary Falcon's choice of wordings to describe the 'mysterious experts' almost incited Jun Mo Xie into a laughter riot.

"Let me be clear, curing this person will cost me, and I'll get no benefits from it; that's never a good thing to do in business." Jun Mo Xie shook his head from left to right with a look of disapproval on it: "So why should I cure him?"

"Because your master told you to!" the Solitary Falcon was a bit angry at this point, but was finally beginning to understand the

true meaning behind the 'Mysterious Expert's' warning.

"Why, you think that means something ah, and you just came looking for me because he said so? He is he, and I am me, so why should I listen to him?" Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes: "Why would I let him govern me? Don't I have a say in my actions?"

The Solitary Falcon was left staring at Jun Mo Xie speechlessly, [I've never seen such a shameless apprentice before!]

According to the commandments of the five cardinal relations, the words of one's parents and one's masters are words of the law; once a master appoints his disciple a task, the disciple must do whatever it takes to accomplish it without refuting a word of it!

Moreover, Jun Mo Xie's master was a man worthy of respect, even in the eyes of a man of the Solitary Falcon's caliber and arrogance! [If any other man had received such a great master, then the man would've taken any order of that master's as a law of the heavens; but this guy is actually pretending as if he's even greater than his own master!]

[Has the world turned upside down?]

"Why don't you just state your conditions clearly?" as he stated this sentence, the Solitary Falcon felt as he was a lamb on the way to the slaughter house.

"I want him! And I want you to give the security!" Jun Mo Xie smiled as he pointed towards Hai Chen Feng: "If I heal his injuries, then it would be equivalent to saving his life. I want him to run my errands for three years! That really isn't much to ask for in return, is it?"

"I can't promise that on his behalf! This man is a Sky Xuan, and is considered a master in his own right; he's one of the leading figures of his generation!" the Solitary Falcon shook his head: "You must ask him for this."

"You ask him!" Jun Mo Xie drooped his eyelids, picked up a cup of

tea, brought it up to his face, and gulped down a mouthful: "You can take as much time as you need; I have a few days of leisure at hand, so I really don't mind it."

[You may not be worried, but I am!]

[And at the rate you're dragging this..... you may have the time, but this man may just die!]

The Solitary Falcon gnashed his teeth and it almost felt as he wanted to roar out, [boy, you will heal his wounds, and then you will vomit out the secrets to improving my technique, else I'll beat you up! You may be a supreme master's disciple, but I'm the Solitary Falcon, the 'Eighth Great Master' of this world, and I could practically pinch you to death; hell, I could bury you anytime I wanted!]

[Just look at that arrogant expression on this kid's face!] The Solitary Falcon squatted down to the ground to ask Hai Chen Feng, but accidentally found his eyes catching a glimpse of the scene under Jun Mo Xie's gown from his lowered altitude.....

The Solitary Falcon almost vomited, [Damn me! Just look at how straight his needle is right now! This boy didn't just crawl out of a brothel, right? This boy is a dog.]

Although he didn't have the energy to say it in words, but Hai Chen Feng's unusually firm and unyielding eyes were expressive enough to let the Solitary Falcon know that he wouldn't submit to such terms. Had he been able to open his mouth and speak, he would've said, [How can anyone expect a Sky Xuan expert to give himself to such a young kid for three years just to save his own life? I would rather choose to die like this.]

The Solitary Falcon's tongue kept moving in persuasion, but Hai Chen Feng didn't budge. The Solitary Falcon seemed so anxious that it seemed as if the corner of his mouth would start foaming at any moment.

"Persuasion will never persuade an individual! You might be considered the 'Eighth Great Master', but your reputation doesn't compare to meeting you in person." The young master Jun stated disdainfully: "Now watch me!"

The Solitary Falcon moved out of the way as Jun Mo Xie walked towards Hai Chen Feng, came to a stop next to him, lowered his body down to the ground, whispered a short sentence or a word in his ear. His voice was so soft that no one heard his quick words.

Hai Chen Feng's eyes suddenly lit-up even though his injuries was extremely severely, and he had only survived this long owing to his tough physique, and the first-aid treatment Jun Mo Xie had given him earlier, else he would've died a long time ago. Although he had been unable to speak until now, but he suddenly found his strength from somewhere the moment he heard Jun Mo Xie's words, and spoke up with difficulty: "If that's true, then forget about..... three years, I'll follow you for.... A lifetime!"

Jun Mo Xie pretended to be "Chic" about it as he stood up again, and brushed his hands as he shot a gloating-side-ways glance to the Solitary Falcon.

The Solitary Falcon's eyes almost popped out as he shouted: "Damn it kid, what did you say to him? How did that stubborn cow suddenly agree to it? What kind of evil sorcery is this?" The Solitary Falcon simply couldn't understand what words could've possibly gotten Hai Chen Feng so excited that he not only agreed to the terms, but also suddenly started glowing with a fresh wave of vital energy; he could clearly tell from Hai Chen Feng's expression that the man was actually willing to follow Jun Mo Xie to the end of the world.

"Hmmm, the secrets of the heaven mustn't be revealed; this young master has always been unpredictable, but you're free to speculate!" Jun Mo Xie's lips curved into a nasty smile.

"You said something to him, and I want to know; so tell me?!" the

Solitary Falcon's face was blank, his neck was red, while his lips were parted in shock; he had tried very hard to convince Hai Chen Feng, but the man had ignored it all; and then Jun Mo Xie barely spoke, and Hai Chen Feng excitedly agreed to it; this was a clear indication that there was a huge gap between the two men! [These two have certainly met for the first time today, so how could this be happening?]

Jun Mo Xie smiled mysteriously as he said: "I just told him one word: as long as he's able to follow it, I can guarantee that his strength will surpass the point where he could just swat any Falcon out of the sky!"

"Balls!" the Solitary Falcon retorted furiously: "What was that absurd word?"

"Just one, and he agreed." Jun Mo Xie folded his arms as he continued to smile.

"Like hell! He can practice his entire life, and he'll never be able to do that!" the Solitary Falcon contemptuously looked at Hai Chen Feng, simply unable to control that flame of anger in his stomach which was steaming his gastric juices now.

"I guess we'll just wait and see for ourselves!" Jun Mo Xie stated confidently.

Seeing Jun Mo Xie's expression, the Solitary Falcon suddenly found himself lacking in confidence: [will this kid really be able to achieve what he says?]

Jun Mo Xie sized up Hai Chen Feng's injuries, and then suddenly stated in a thoughtful tone: "He seems badly hurt, but his injuries seem internal rather than external; how did that happen? What led to these injuries?" he spoke as he glanced at the Solitary Falcon for solicitation.

The Solitary Falcon's face turned red; red and hot, but with a hint of awkwardness encompassing it, and the man was left

stammering speechlessly.

"How did this happen?" Jun Mo Xie's tone was clearly intended to beat a drowning dog as he glared at the Solitary Falcon questioningly.

"Don't ask me! And stop chattering like a little girl!" the Solitary Falcon roared back angrily: "Quickly heal him!"

"He he....." Jun Mo Xie shrugged his shoulders provocatively for a while, and then suddenly put on a serious face: "Pick him up, and follow me!"

"Are you giving me an order?" It seemed as if the Solitary Falcon would explode at any moment: "You dare have such courage, kid!"

Jun Mo Xie paid absolutely no attention to him as he turned away: "If you want to save him, then you will happily carry him for me; if anyone else touches him, then I'll simply strike him and kill him. You can try if you wish to see how serious I am!"

The Solitary Falcon's eyes turned as cold as ice seeing Jun Mo Xie's figure disappearing out of the hall, while his hair automatically rose up in the air, clearly depicting the formation of a vortex of anger inside his heart.

He turned around and realized that Old Man Jun and the others inside the hall hadn't moved one step from their initial positions, and had been excitedly spectating this scene the entire time.

The Solitary Falcon angrily stamped his foot on the ground, which sent the entire hall shaking with tremors, almost as if the hall had been struck by an earthquake. The Solitary Falcon obviously picked up Hai Chen Feng in his arms after being deflated by Jun Mo Xie in this manner, and could tell that the half-dead man was deriving pleasures from his misery.

The Solitary Falcon smiled gloomily as he fiercely whispered: "Are you happy now kid? You're almost dead, so enjoy each moment like it's your last because you're literally hovering

between life and death right now!" Then, he walked out of the hall, and followed after Jun Mo Xie.

Everyone inside the hall had clearly felt the vibrations, so much so, that even the ground under everyone's feet had suffered a few tremors, which had obviously left Jun Zhan Tian, Jun Wu Yi, and Guan Dong Liu smacking their lips.

"He is indeed abnormally strong! Just one stamp of his feet was enough to produce such amazing power; this is simply amazing!" Guan Dong Liu praised out loud, but his real amazement wasn't owed to the Solitary Falcon's strength: "Old Man, you're lucky to have such an excellent grandson; he can even forge such relations with the Solitary Falcon and a disciple of the Blue Master..... the Jun Family indeed has a successor worthy of carrying its name to a prosperous and flourishing future. The Jun Family's road to fame is just around the corner!"

He had just stated something similar a couple of days ago at the time when he had arrived to the Jun residence, but had only said it perfunctorily; however, this time he had meant these words from the bottom of his heart, and Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi could clearly tell that from his expression.

Grandfather Jun stroked his beard as his aged eyes narrowed into a modest smile: "We really don't deserve the Guan Master's words, you really speak too highly of us ha ha ha...." Even though he replied in modesty, but the smile on his face was stretching from one ear to the other.

Guan Dong Liu's heart was obviously left feeling a sense of disdain: [Your mouth is blanketing a hippopotamus-like smile, and you're still pretending to be modest..... Your pride and arrogance is simply unbearable.....]

Then, Guan Dong Liu sighed: [Why don't either of my sons have such abilities? Why haven't they gotten such opportunities? What would one have to do to get such an opportunity ah? How can one

make one of the 'Eight Great Masters' obey them in such a manner?]

[Let alone making the man obey them, if my two boys came face-to-face with the Solitary Falcon, they probably wouldn't even be able to whisper their words, and would probably be left trembling in their spot.... They would probably remain paralyzed rather than roving about carelessly like Jun Mo Xie.... Even if they pretended to have such courage, then still wouldn't be able to pull this off!]

[This is their level ah..... this is their power..... this is their heritage ah.....]

The Lord of the Guan Family resigned to staring up at the heavens.

Completely blown away.....

Chapter 213: Join me, you won't regret it

As he stepped into the small courtyard, even a man of the Solitary Falcon's experience wasn't able to prevent himself from being shocked.....

A huge meatball was trotting about in the small courtyard, and it was a while before the Solitary Falcon was finally able to determine the truth: [this meatball looks like a person! This thing is actually a real human!]

[My god!]

The Solitary Falcon couldn't help scolding the man within his heart, [I have heard about it a lot that the life of these young masters are quite easy, but how can one allow themselves to eat so much!]

[This is simply too much!]

Tang Yuan's injuries weren't as serious as they once were owing to the meticulous nursing by the young master Jun, and he had already started moving about a few days ago. Moreover, he couldn't afford to be bedridden these days since his appetite had almost doubled up ever since Jun Mo Xie's treatment had started!

So much so, that even his old clothing wasn't fitting him nowadays.....

Tang Yuan's belly used to drop down to his knees earlier, but nowadays, his belly was almost falling down to his feet; Tang Yuan naturally sensed the enormity of the situation upon realizing the condition of his belly, and had started to panic thereafter: [I need to lose weight!]

The young master Tang was naturally very worried about the future of his intimate-life: [How will I be able to get intimate if I don't lose weight? I will be completely helpless ah. The gun may have the ammunition, but it can't fire if it's blocked. Besides,

pretty girls won't like a body this fat.....]

As a result, Tang Yuan had taken up another task apart from planning his business activities these days: jogging. However, the more he worked out, the more tired he'd get, which obviously increased his appetite.....

And then.... His weight obviously started to rise again.

As a result, Tang Yuan found himself caught in a vicious circle, and was finding it very difficult to break out of it.

Naturally, one couldn't blame the Solitary Falcon for getting shocked upon seeing the humungous meatball 'squirming' about in the courtyard.....

Tang Yuan felt an inexplicable sense of cold on his entire body as he came face-to-face with this black-robed man, and couldn't help feeling a shivering sensation running up his spine upon looking at the man's cold facial features and eyes.

Tang Yuan's mood was already out of sorts at the moment, and coming face-to-face with this coffin-like face made him even more uncomfortable, and hence he stared back at first and then shouted: "Old man, what are you looking at? Never seen a handsome guy before, have you?"

The plight of the Solitary Falcon's facial muscles was a misery like no other. [I've certainly seen many handsome guys in my lifetime; in fact, I've probably seen the most handsome of individuals..... but I've never seen someone this fat calling themselves handsome before.]

[I'm not certain whether you'd qualify as handsome, but given the thickness of your skin and body weight, I'm sure that you'd qualify as the fattest person alive.....]

"Nothing at all." The Solitary Falcon wasn't offended by his rebuke since the young master Jun's temperament had made him immune to curses lately; moreover, he found Tang Yuan's round

body a rather interesting sight.

"Boy, how much do you weigh?"

Tang Yuan continued to "jog" in high spirits, and completely ignored the Solitary Falcon's question: "Roll aside, this young master needs to lose weight! And don't ask me questions which dispel my enthusiasm!"

Tang Yuan obviously didn't know this Old man's identity; if someone ever told him that the man he just shouted at was the 'Eighth Greatest Master' of this world, and was known for his ruthless nature..... it is estimated that Tang Yuan would probably have accomplished his goal in a very short period of time - the amount of sweat he would've precipitated would've directly reduced his weight by a few kilograms in an instant.

"Good, kid, that's good. Once this Old man has finished his business here, I will assist you in losing some weight. My tricks will certainly help you in slimming-down by a lot." The Solitary Falcon stated out of goodwill. Tang Yuan heard this sentence, and simply rolled his eyes ignoring the help, [you think that losing weight is that easy? You think I haven't already tried out the 'tricks' ah? There is no shortcut for losing weight!]

"Hey, you're holding a half-dead man in your arms, and you're actually still interested in chatting about?" Jun Mo Xie cried out in impatience: "Solitary Falcon! Your composure is truly worthy of making you the 'Eighth Great Master'; it's really very admirable ah!"

The Solitary Falcon roared back angrily: "Damn it, I'm not stupid okay!" Tang Yuan's attitude suddenly disappeared after hearing this exchange of words.

"Who? Who is that man the young master Jun was talking to? The Solitary Falcon? The 'Eighth Great Master'?"

It was as if a giant landmine had exploded inside Tang Yuan's fat

head; Fatty Tang staggered for a while on his feet first, then his face turned pale, and then he fell to the floor with a 'plop' with his big mouth opened wide in a desperate attempt to inhale more air, while his head, arms, legs, and the rest of his body started to sweat like a fountain, wetting the entire ground around him with rivers of sweat.....

[I, I, I, I actually just pointed a finger at the 'Eighth Great Master', and then I cursed him.....] Tang Yuan's head started feeling dizzy upon realizing the gravity of the situation, and he soon found himself lying on the ground paralyzed, unable to find the strength to get back up to his feet.....

Since his assistance was directly refused, the Solitary Falcon carried the half-dead Hai Chen Feng into the medical room as per Jun Mo Xie's directive. The young master Jun had recently ordered a new room to be built behind his bedroom for medical purposes.....

'The Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune' was far more advanced than any of its counterparts in the world of medicine, which is why dealing with Hai Chen Feng's internal injuries was quite an easy task; in fact, Hai Chen Feng was even able to talk in less than the quarter of an hour.

"Can you really do it? What you promised me before? My opponent really is one of the 'Eight Great Masters' of this world!" Hai Chen Feng asked.

"You still doubt it? Haven't you already seen enough?" Jun Mo Xie replied back.

"At least I have some hope now. I witnessed your master's skills, and it really isn't anything short of supernatural! I may doubt you, but I will never doubt your master's abilities!"

"So, what do you intend to do now?"

"I've decided to stay!" Hai Chen Feng replied: "Anyway, I really

have nowhere to go. I just wanted to travel away from the mainland in order to enhance my strength, but if I can do that by staying here, then what's the point of running around the whole world, ah?"

"If you join me, then you simply won't be able to leave whenever you feel like; are you sure you understand this point clearly?" Jun Mo Xie asked in a serious tone.

"That is only natural!" Hai Chen Feng's face reveled in shade of resolve: "Since I'm joining you, then I will do as you ask; I will follow you as I have promised, and I will not go back on my word as long I get what I've been promised."

"That's good!" Jun Mo Xie continued to pour more and more Aura smoothly into his body: "I'm short of people, very short."

"I understand!" Hai Chen Feng could feel his meridians constantly being replenished with energy, and could distinctly sense his body's vital force returning to its health at a very good pace. "I also know a bit about the Jun Family's situation."

"That's good!" Jun Mo Xie grunted twice: "Hai Chen Feng, I wish to control the underworld powers of the capital; after I'm done curing you, you must set off to undertake this task. I can't accomplish my goals unless you can do this!"

"No problem!" Hai Chen Feng's eyes didn't even blink as his mouth slowly curved into a cruel arc. To him, a peak Sky Xuan expert, even dealing with a man of Jun Wu Yi's strength wasn't an issue; with such strength at hand, and the Jin Yang gang's support behind him, bullying the Capital's underworld was as easy as slicing a chicken's throat.

"You may have misunderstood my intention. I just want this force for intelligence, and I cannot personally control it! However, since I wish to control it, I need you."

Jun Mo Xie's face was carrying a profound expression on it, while

his eyes seemed a bit gloomy, "No matter what happen, you'll have to deal with all the problems on your own. Moreover, according to my intelligence network, the Mu Rong Family, and the Li Family are also joining hands with several of these gangs nowadays, and with the affiliations of such powers, some of these gangs are building a very solid backbone, so their strengths definitely won't be weak either."

"I believe that they might even have a few people whose strength will be as strong as yours." Jun Mo Xie added.

"That won't be a problem!" Hai Chen Feng reassured Jun Mo Xie, and then kept his mouth shut. As far as he was concerned, he would at most have to ask the Jin Yang gang to assist him, and once he had reined the Jin Yang gang in, the gang's name and force would be enough to control the underground forces of the entire city; after all, the Jin Yang gang was the strongest underground faction of the capital, and could easily expand its forces if needed.

Hai Chen Feng was confident that he and Jun Mo Xie could accomplish anything together. After all, the two of them were being backed by a very powerful family, the Blue Master, the Solitary Falcon, as well as a man of Jun Mo Xie's master's strength, who was seemingly even stronger than the greatest masters of this world!

[What kind of force could stand against such a powerful union? If the competition gets tough, then I can always ask my master to help us. And after today's matter, the Solitary Falcon also owes Jun Mo Xie a favor, and will certainly not sit back if asked to assist. Anyway, even if the situation still gets out of hand, then it still won't be a problem if Jun Mo Xie's master appears in person to lend a hand.....]

With these thoughts to assure him, Hai Chen Feng obviously felt very confident about his position.

"I will not interfere with your operations and your decisions."

Jun Mo Xie stated as he closed his eyes slightly: "However, you yourself will have to operate with some sense of order and responsibility." Jun Mo Xie stated these final words in a heavy tone.

Hai Chen Feng nodded in a serious manner.

"Once I receive any news of it, I will get in touch with you as soon as possible! My master is working on refining a medicine for enhancing one's Xuan Qi, and I've its very effective! That I can assure you! Once it's ready, you will be able to defeat your opponent!"

Jun Mo Xie smiled: "You will not regret joining hands with me!"

Jun Mo Xie had just tossed his biggest bargaining chip. Naturally, the young master Jun himself was this so-called master.

Hai Chen Feng's eyes brightened, and soon started reveling in a color of excitement. [One of the strongest masters alive is refining a medicine, how can the product be bad, right?]

Hai Chen Feng simply couldn't help smiling mischievously as he started fantasizing about growing stronger one day, and then beating up the Solitary Falcon.....

....

The doors to medical chambers finally opened several hours later, and a rather exhausted looking Jun Mo Xie came out.

"That man?" the Solitary Falcon asked anxiously.

Jun Mo Xie sighed, and then shook his head.

"Is he dead?" the Solitary Falcon asked as his face suddenly turned gloomy out of sheer despair.

Chapter 214: Allow me to be your host for one year!

"You should be dead!" Jun Mo Xie glared back at him: "A genius was looking after his injury, and you have the courage to ask if he's dead?"

At this moment, Hai Chen Feng calmly walked out of the medical room.

The Solitary Falcon had just opened his mouth to shout back at Jun Mo Xie, and was now left staring wide-eyed, and open-mouthed at the marvel in front of his eyes.

[He was half-dead when I brought him here, and now it's barely a few hours later, and he's actually walking out like nothing ever happened? Even a miracle-doctor can't heal people that fast, right?!]

[This world has turned upside down, right? And I'm standing in hell today, right?]

"Well?" the Solitary Falcon rubbed his eyes in disbelief: "All good? Your strength has also been restored?"

"All good!" Hai Chen Feng's sullen reply was clearly indicative of the anger within his heart: "Never better Master Falcon; the miraculous doctor has restored Chen Feng's body to normal."

"What were you trying to do? Do you know how costly your silly little trick was? Do you know how many insults I've had to bear in order to save your life? No, you have no idea!" All the anger that the Solitary Falcon had been holding inside his heart finally broke out like a volcano now that he finally had someone he could take it out on.

The composed Hai Chen Feng wasn't even able to reply back when he found his body tossed onto the ground by his master-brother, and moments later found his own body becoming the

target of a rainstorm; of kicks and punches.

This maltreatment was clearly visible to the "paralyzed" Tang Yuan, who was still lying on the ground; whatever little strength his legs had mustered in this interim was lost again, and he found his body sweating even more profusely than before, while his head started to spin.....

As he continued to watch this scene, Fatty Tang's facial muscles started to twist in panic.....

A while later.....

"Are you guys done playing around?" Jun Mo Xie called out.

"Just a couple more, and then I'm done." The Solitary Falcon finally got up, kicked and punched Hai Cheng Feng a couple of times more, and then stepped backwards, leaving the multi-colored panda-eyed, Hai Chen Feng singing a painful opera song while rolling on the floor.

"Don't touch him again; he needs to go out in a hurry so he can do some work the master needs done." Jun Mo Xie stated in anger. Hai Chen Feng was his comrade now, and watching his own comrade being beaten up so badly wasn't a very pleasing sight to his eyes.

Hai Chen Feng had just been thrashed very badly, but he quickly climbed back onto his feet regardless of the pain, and then swiftly disappeared out of sight.....

Jun Mo Xie turned around and glanced at the Solitary Falcon, and just when he was about to say something.....

"Ah!!!!" a sharp scream pierced through the courtyard, leaving them both shocked.

The little Lolita had carried a tray of tea into the courtyard, but had suddenly found something very disturbing.....

"Young master, this isn't good, this isn't good...." The young

Lolita was panicking.

"What happened?"

"Young master Tang, young master Tang, he.... He fainted....." the young maid pointed towards the big piece of fat. Tang Yuan was lying paralyzed on the ground, and based on the lack of movement of his fat body one could clearly see that the man had fainted.....

"How did that happen?" Jun Mo Xie stepped forward to assess the situation since no one had any clue as to how he had fainted in the first place.....

A closer look at his face, followed by a quick reading on his pulse, and Jun Mo Xie's facial expressed suddenly became rather exciting, and therefore he quickly examined Tang Yuan's mouth and then muttered to himself: "This makes the headlines, doesn't it? He is actually sweating out of dehydration..... that's extremely rare....."

[Sweating out of dehydration... Fatty is really very talented.... He'll surely lose some weight this time around.....]

This was first case of this condition that Jun Mo Xie had ever seen in his two lifetimes.....

Lucky or unfortunate, but Tang Yuan would be weighing his body the next day, and would find that he had suddenly lost over ten kilograms; ten kilograms in one day could only be described as a miracle in the history of the world of 'weight-losing'!

Thanks to his recent breakthrough, the young master Jun was somehow able to carry the young master Tang up in his arms; a feat he previously wouldn't have been able to owing to the fatty's body weight.

The fatty's weight was indeed commendable, but the same couldn't be said about his courage; watching the Solitary Falcon's ruthless nature was enough to make him faint.....

The young master Jun was sure that the man was in no danger

whatsoever, which is why he simply opened the subconscious meatball's mouth, and poured a mixture of salt and water into his mouth. [Giving this fatty something nourishing will be counter-productive, so a pinch of salt in water is the best way to go about it; it won't give his body any nourishment, but it will still have the same effect on his state!]

Once he had resolved this 'dehydration crisis', he tossed the fatty's body down to the bed, and then decided to focus his attention on the Solitary Falcon instead; After all, the Solitary Falcon did have something very embarrassing and very interesting on his mind.

The Jun Family's honored guest did happen to be one of the strongest men alive, and it wasn't advisable to make a man of his status wait for too long.

Besides, a dignified master of his caliber was just about to ask a young martial artist for advice....

The world indeed was about to turn upside-down!

"Well, what else do you want?" the young master Jun already knew the answer, but he just wanted to hear the Solitary Falcon ask him for his own advice.

"Today I had the great fortune of meeting your master, ha ha, and his cultivation and skills are really superb, and his medical knowledge is simply a gift from the heavens! The Old man and I talked for a long time, and we suddenly developed the warmth of old friends; he is a very interesting man." The Solitary Falcon opened his mouth, and inhaled a huge volume of air since he managed to script a prologue worthy his worldly status.

Of course, he was completely unaware that it would only be counter-productive in front of Jun Mo Xie!

"Oh?" Jun Mo Xie used up every bit of control in his mind to prevent himself from breaking into laughter, and somehow

managed to pull up a "Is that so" look on his face.

The Solitary Falcon seemed rather delighted by this, and continued in high-spirits: "We continued to talk happily, but then your master mentioned that he has you as his apprentice, and he seemed rather helpless about it since he had taught you a few "pouncing eagle" laws' strokes, and it's not yet up to the mark because of your lazy attitude. However, fortunately for him, he bumped into me today and as everyone knows that there is no one more knowledgeable than myself in "Eagle fighting" methods, and so he asked me to find you, and then help you with your training."

The Solitary Falcon's voice started growing more and more confident, and it almost felt as if he was even beginning to convince himself of his words: "Although I'm quite busy, but it's very rare to make such good friends these days, and so I reluctantly decided to agree to his request, and decided to help him in teaching you."

The young master Jun stood there with his head hung low in thought, but in reality he was just trying to muster every ounce of control in body to prevent himself from breaking into laughter, and was simply trying to focus his attention on his breathing; his right hand was placed right over his stomach to soothe the internal pain his body was suffering in order to endure these words with a straight-face on the exterior.

The Solitary Falcon's body curved into a pious posture as he waved his hand and stated in a casual tone: "Now that you're free, show me what your master has taught you so I can correct it, and then leave this city as soon as we are done. I need to return to my business as soon as possible, and I don't have much time to tarry here anyway."

"Old Falcon, that can't be right!" Jun Mo Xie opened his eye-wide and stated in an authentically surprised tone: "Just last month, my master told me that my skill set with regard to the "Pouncing Eagle", "Eagle claw", "Eagle paw", and "Eagle blade" has already

reached the pinnacle of this world's knowledge and expertise, and even he doesn't have anything left to teach me in that regard, so why would he send you here? Although my innate talent is poor, but I've always been very hardworking; in fact, that's what my master fancied about me when he took me as his disciple, so why would my master tell you otherwise?"

The Solitary Falcon was just left staring blankly, completely aware that his lies had been caught, but then he suddenly glared back, and said: "Your master was probably just being humble, and I might have simply misunderstood his words as a result, but if you're a mountain of unpolished stone, then I can carve you into jade; therefore in that respect, it would be better if you allow me to help you! Don't you admit that?"

Jun Mo Xie's expression transformed to indifference: "Okay, but I no longer practice those "Eagle" laws that my master taught me nowadays since that practice will only slow down my progress, which is why my master gave me new laws to practice, and I've already started with them now! Maybe my master just pointed you towards me for the sake of medical assistance, and didn't really mean for you to assist me with my training, right? So I think I'll go and relax now, and you should also save your strength; that way we all go about our conveniences, okay?!"

The Solitary Falcon stared blankly for a long time, completely unable to find his words.

[A Great Master is offering help, and this kid is actually refusing!]

[What wrong with the ways of the world ah? Is there no heaven anymore?]

The Solitary Falcon felt as if the whole world had turned upside down all of a sudden! He could clearly recall the days of his youth, when he and his counterparts would have to struggle for lengths of time just to get a strong expert to point out their flaws, and then

they would carry those word or two of advice they would receive from an expert in their hearts for a long time as treasured laws; it was time when even imagining a man of his 'current-status' to mentor young martial artists was nothing short of a laughable day-dream!

[What has happened to the world ah?]

[Has it suddenly become fashionable to turn down a world-renowned master to teach you a trick or two these days?]

"He he, in fact, the truth is as such -....." The Solitary Falcon quickly realized that he had no other option left, and hence told him the truth; almost succumbing to his demise out of sheer embarrassment in the process.

"So that's what's going on ah, you should've just said that earlier ah." Jun Mo Xie finally nodded his head in understanding, while inwardly chuckling at the same time: [Did you really think it was that easy to take advantage of me, huh?]

"Then can you wait for a little while? I mean, you're not busy or anything, right?" Jun Mo Xie's tone conveniently changed.

"I have time right now, so why don't we start right now?" the Solitary Falcon suddenly felt elated upon sensing a breakthrough.

"I did say that I'm free now, but I'm quite tired after that exhaustive medical task ah!" Jun Mo Xie replied: "Besides, since you and that Old guy are really good friends, then why don't you just ask him to teach you himself? Why would he send you to me? He is obviously goofing off somewhere! He is simply misusing my labor to gain a favor! This is to say that he simply just wants to use my effort and then gain some credits.... That old man is so treacherous, hmmm... I won't do it."

The Solitary Falcon just stared on dumbstruck after having his hopes crushed once again! [I didn't expect that this kid would not only be a cheat, but wouldn't have any soft spots either..... now

what am I supposed to do?]

"I understand your difficulty, and I understand your feelings." Jun Mo Xie stated in a reasonable tone: "But you should try to see my side as well... It's in my nature to not do anything that doesn't give me any returns."

"What do you want from this kid? Just say what makes you happy, will you?" The Solitary Falcon once again found himself biting his teeth.

[This kid will drive me mad in just one day!]

However, just then, the Solitary Falcon's eyes popped out of their sockets.....

Because at this moment, Jun Mo Xie's right hand made an action, and even though this action seemed very simple in its make, it was a far cry from being simple in reality. The five of his fingers were bent in half, almost resembling the claws of an eagle, while his arm seemed to be changing positions from below the elbow; his wrist was bend, while his fingers looked unpredictable, and one could clearly tell that each change in his arm's movement would increase the power of this claw! However, the most bizarre thing was that: the rest of his arm above his elbow was actually completely motionless!

Even a man of the Solitary Falcon's experience and knowledge had never seen such a trick in his entire life span! However, his knowledgeable eye-sight could clearly tell the true power of this maneuver! He could clearly tell that once he was able to master his technique, then this one single technique would easily become the best this world has ever known; this one technique would easily be worthwhile of his entire trip and all the humiliation he's had to face in order to learn it!

"This is one of the 'Nine basic formations'." Jun Mo Xie smiled: "Good, right?"

The Solitary Falcon's eyes lit-up as his mind gradually comprehended the maneuver, while his heart started to revel in the aftertaste of its visual; the more he pondered over it, the better he felt, and the more his knowledge increased, but he simply couldn't help the itch to learn more, and was forced to ask the same question once again: "What do you want from me kid?"

He had asked the same question once again, but the tone was a world-apart from the previous time. Both sentences were impatient, but the current one was far more urgent than the previous one!

"I don't want anything from you in return, but I do want to give you somethings from my side." Jun Mo Xie grinned like a fox: "I will help you in improving your technique, and I will help you increasing your strength; however, you will owe me a favor. It is to be noted that you will not owe my master a favor; you will owe me a favor! They are two completely different things!"

[I already owe your master, and now I also have to owe you?! I have to owe two people for one thing?] The Solitary Falcon's forehead creased in anger, but then soon eased down as he realized that it would still be worth it.

"Moreover, being a great researcher yourself, I'm sure that you can understand that the study of a law as advanced as these ones, especially the more profound maneuvers cannot be done overnight, which is why I will have to ask you to stay in the Tian Xiang City for some time so we can slowly and carefully explore your skills and calculate our progress properly....." Jun Mo Xie's fingers mimicked his words with actions.

"Stop!" the Solitary Falcon cut him in between: "The first half of what you just said makes sense, but the second part was bogus. Stop beating around the bush kid, and just clearly tell me what you really want from me!"

"Allow me to be your host for one year, okay?" Jun Mo Xie's lips

curved in an innocent and adorable smile: "I'm not asking too much off you, and in this one years' time, I will provide you everything, whether it is lodging, or food or wine.....I'll take care of everything." The young master Jun continued to lure the man in: "And what's even better is that I will give you all the wine you want during this one year.... for free of charge..... you can drink as much as you want without even paying me any money!"

"Even if you wish to go and have some fun in the Spirit Fog Lake, I will take care of it! I will not only pay for your fun, I'll even pick out the best delicacies for you....." the young master Jun smiled as he raised his eyebrows: "You've traveled the world, haven't you? Where else would you ever find such a great deal, huh?"

Chapter 215: Accomplishing the ultimate objective

The Solitary Falcon's temper had already risen sky high, and so he continued to stare blankly and silently at Jun Mo Xie for a long time before he finally gritted his teeth and asked in a fierce tone: "You mean that you want me to be your 'hired goon' for a year? Get rid of your wild dreams right now! Or I'll show you what a nightmare looks like! You damned little bastard, how dare you even say that ah?!"

"No, no, not a goon; you misunderstand me." Jun Mo Xie repeatedly shook his head again and again: "You only need to live here with us; you're not required to do anything at all. Although I have one request....."

"What request? Be straightforward!" The Solitary Falcon's chest was rising and falling in rage, and he really couldn't help cherishing the idea of kicking Jun Mo Xie's buttocks.

"In case the Jun Family is threatened with a grave danger, for example, the Family is faced with extermination..." Jun Mo Xie's tone suddenly transformed to a very earnest one: "I hope that you promise that you will help us in resolving such situations over the course of this one year, but once this one years' time is over, we won't bother you. However, I cannot control the number of times that may happen in this one year, and hence can't make any promises; however, this is only for one years' time."

"Your practice of the Eagle-derivative laws will also take time, and you will need a dedicated space as well! And you'll also need opponents! Moreover, you will need the basic resources of survival." Jun Mo Xie continued in a serious tone: "These... I can provide for you, and in return I just want to use your name to ensure the safety of the Jun Family for one years' time; nothing more!"

The Solitary Falcon's enraged expression slowly turned to a thoughtful one as he listened to Jun Mo Xie's words.

"As long as you agree, you will be the Jun Family's most esteemed guest for the next one year; your position in the family will be higher than that of my Grandfather here! No one, including me, will ever command you into doing anything, and if the Jun Family isn't faced with any crisis during this one year then you can just leave with a pat on the back from our Family because we will owe you for this! And you'll become a hero in my Family's memory!"

Jun Mo Xie continued to glib: "Moreover, I expect that my master will be visiting us quite often this year."

This last sentence was a rather meaningful bargaining chip against the Solitary Falcon!

Regardless of anything, arranging a dedicated space, opponents, and the basic necessities of life wasn't a difficult task for a man of his caliber, but finding the guidance of such a world-class expert was extremely hard! Encountering such a man even once-in-a-lifetime in itself could be regarded as a blessing from the heavens above.

"Well, since your master and I hit it off, I....." the Solitary Falcon sharply glared back at Jun Mo Xie: "I promise you!"

"Wonderful!" Jun Mo Xie's lips curved into in a wide smile: "How about we head off to the Spirit Fog Lake and formally seal our arrangement with a night of entertainment?"

"F**k you!"

A kick, and Jun Mo Xie found himself dancing in the air like a trapeze artist.....

Jun Mo Xie had been planning on this since the beginning, and had been feeling as if the heavens were siding with him ever since he had laid his eyes on the Solitary Falcon again in the Maple forest.

Although his con to allure the two Xuan Beasts was likely enough to sort out the Xue Hun Manor for now, but the Xue Hun Manor was a huge organization at the end of the day; moreover, their real background could be completely unknown to him at the moment, which made them even more dangerous. Even if they were forced to take a step back after Li Jue Tian's son was crippled, they could always bounce back in a while since the youngster could always marry even if he was half-beaten to death, enabling the Xue Hun Manor to rise back in time.

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie needed to protect his family against them, and he needed to perfect this protection.

Moreover, even if the trouble with the Xue Hun Manor was resolved, he still couldn't neglect the fact that three of the Silver Blizzard city's Elders were now inside the Tian Xiang City's territory. Given his enmity with Jun Wu Yi, Xiao Han was unlikely to let this opportunity slip by. This would obviously provoke a rivalry between the Magnificent Jewel Hall and the Jun Family, which would obviously cause a storm. Even if the opposition wasn't capable of exterminating the Jun Family, they still had enough strength and influence to humiliate them. Grandfather Jun, after all said and done, is one of the most important men in the country, and it would be awfully difficult for him to bear this insult at his present age!

Jun Mo Xie had already taken all these aspects into account. In fact, he had always been most worried about the Silver Blizzard City and not the Xue Hun Manor. After all, the Silver Blizzard City's people were in close proximity to the Jun Family at the moment, and in case they were to make a move, the Jun Family would find itself in no position to deal with their Spirit Xuan-strength experts.

Therefore, he needed to find a solution; and he was running out of time.

He had initially intended on using his medical expertise to heal

Hai Chen Feng in a very short time, and then show off his skills to Solitary Falcon to entice his curiosity, and then slowly improvise from that point onwards. Having proven the skills of this "Mysterious master" in front of the Solitary Falcon would've easily improved Jun Mo Xie's status in the Solitary Falcon's eyes.

However, the plans of the Heavens above always supersede our own, and he ended up being placed in a situation of his making his own breakthrough, and as a result found himself completely helpless, and was forced into opting for the second best choice available. Left with no other option, he was forced to flee into the ground, and was then forced to plan everything all over again.

Since Jun Mo Xie had somehow been able to accomplish everything he had initially ended, one could consider that his basic purpose had mostly been achieved now. Moreover, since the Solitary Falcon would bear witness to the Jun Family procuring some very precious herbs in order to enhance the strength of some of their finest family members, a man of his ambition was unlikely to sit idly and not participate.

Therefore, the moment he had discovered that battle in the Maple Forest, the young master Jun had realized that he could easily formulate an entire feasible plan which would end up sorting all his problems in one single shot. Moreover, the success of this plan would achieve much more comprehensive results in the future.....

From this moment onwards, the young master Jun had effectively elevated the Jun Family's position in this situation of crisis. Now he intended on using this next year on focusing his attention on developing and increasing the Jun Family's strength and influence!

This entire scenario is what the young master Jun had been painstakingly calculating ever since he had provoked the competition for the Xuan Core. At last he had finally accomplished his ultimate objective!

.....

The young master Jun was in a very happy frame of mind now that his exhaustive efforts were finally bearing fruit, but the atmosphere in the Magnificent Jewel was shrouded in a mist of gloom.

"What's going on?"

The three Elders, Mu Xue Tong and Xiao Han had been sitting in discussion of some important matters, with Mu Xue Tong and Xiao Han wearing the looks of honest and dedicated men; Xiao Han's demeanor especially, was poles apart from his arrogant and bullish one at the Jun residence since he was wearing the look of the most well-behaved little baby on land in front of the three Elders.

These five people were representatives from the Silver Blizzard City, and were presently visiting the Tian Xiang City on business, so it was only natural that ordinary men such as the people of the Magnificent Jewel Hall had no place amidst them. At such a time, they were faced with an extremely surprising sight when the Little Princess flew into their discussion chamber, carrying a half-dead Xiao Feng Wu with her. Even the weakest of these five men was a Sky Xuan expert, but even then these men were left alarmed to see the condition and severity of Xiao Feng Wu's injuries!

They were obviously aware that Xiao Feng Wu and the Little Princess had slipped out of the Magnificent Jewel Hall to amuse themselves on the Little Princess's persuasion, but since most of the powerhouses had left the capital after the Xuan Core was taken away by those mysterious characters, and the City's state of affairs had largely restored to its usual calm, and so these five men happily allowed these two youngsters to take a stroll around the city, fearing that they would end up quarrelling with a nagging Little Princess in the opposing scenario.

Moreover, since the City's situation had quickly reversed to normality, these two Gold-Xuan-Strong-Youngsters would be

regarded as first-class experts by the City's standards, an assurance which comforted them into turning a blind-eye towards their mischief; as it is, Xiao Han was quite happy to see his nephew's growing closeness to Princess Han Yan Meng.

However, they never expected that this little outing would end with the two of them returning with Xiao Feng Wu beaten half to death. His injuries were visibly very serious, but it wasn't just his injuries which made the situation so appalling, Xiao Feng Wu's clothes were completely torn to the point where his lower clothing could barely conceal what lurked beneath. Moreover, his protective armor had also been stripped off his body. Xiao Feng Wu was a member of the Silver Blizzard City's upper-class and neither of these men could comprehend that anyone would ever exhibit such hatred towards the youngster that the attacker would even strip the boy of his clothing!

Han Yan Meng was quite surprised on seeing these five men waiting there for them, but upon seeing her loved ones, all the negativity and fear of her heart exploded in an instant, and she immediately ran into the Third Elder's arms, stomping, crying, and sniveling. This young girl had been so treasured by these men that they had never even allowed the prospect of dangers to lurk around her all her life, but today the Third Elder was having to pat her back in order soothe her; naturally his anger had surpassed all boundaries!

[Who would have the courage to torment the Little Princess of the Silver Blizzard City?! Even our master, Han Feng Xue doesn't talk rudely to this little girl, for the fear that she may throw the most insane tantrums! I would've never thought that there would be a creature in the Tian Xiang City capable of doing something like this to her!]

Moreover, he could clearly see the palm-prints on her face, which when accompanied by her inconsolable and endless tears filled his heart with an aching sadness, adding to his anger in no other way

possible.

The five men peeked over and frowned as they saw the condition of Xiao Feng Wu's injuries.

"His Xuan Qi strength is still completely intact even though his body is so seriously injured." The Ninth Elder approached Xiao Feng Wu and placed his hand over the youngster's body to impart his own Xuan Qi in order to heal the boy's injuries, and was left frowning as he shared his finding with the rest of his companions.

The other four men were also equally surprised upon realizing this. The Little Princess however, continued to sob, and sniffle, simply unable to understand the meaning of this sentence, which is why she sobbingly asked out of curiosity: "What do you mean... from the combat?"

"This wasn't the work of someone's Xuan Qi; the attacker used pure force to do this!" The Third Elder carefully looked at the youngster's body, and stated with a heavy face: "Judging by his injuries, I reckon that the boy would've lost nine lives in case the attacker had used his Xuan Qi. It seems that even though this person's actions were extremely sinister to begin with, but they were just as measure and as calculated as his hatred."

The five of them frowned almost simultaneously since they all realized that it would take someone much stronger than Xiao Feng Wu to beat him up so badly. In fact, they could all clearly sense that the man must've at least been a Jade Xuan, but was probably higher since Xiao Feng Wu was a rather skilled fighter, which meant that an ordinary Jade Xuan might not have been able to injure him this badly with ease. Although the fact that the youngster's clothes had been ripped off, and the fact that even his armor had been taken away with no signs of visible modesty left behind, was clearly indicative that the attacker was probably much stronger than their anticipation!

However, in either case, it was evident that this was a case of

revenge more than anything else!

"Little Princess, please don't worry; you can breathe easy now, you're safe. Slowly tell us what happened...." Mu Xue Tong stated.

Chapter 216: Operating separately

"Yes, that's what happened...." Han Yan Meng continued to sob, while her voice even stammered as she recollected running into that naked man in the Maple Forest, and the fight which followed soon after. Her audience, old and experienced enough in worldly matters had already understood that this was probably just a misunderstanding and nothing more!

Based on the their evaluation of the man's Xuan Qi level, they could clearly sense that the man was probably running around naked inside the forest in order to practice some sort of martial technique when the Little Princess and Xiao Feng Wu disrupted his practice, forcing the man to halt his activities, which probably provoked the man as a result!

Given the manner in which things had happened, one must give credit to their wisdom since their guess was partially correct from one perspective.

"Did that man know your origin?" the Sixth Elder asked the most crucial question.

"Did he know....." Han Yan Meng wiped her tears, and then said: "He didn't seem to know about us in beginning, but just when that man was about to leave, Brother Xiao said something and that man immediately became very furious.... Then he grabbed Brother Xiao, and started beating him up, and then..... Brother Xiao ended up looking like this!"

"What did Feng Wu say to him?" the five men anxiously asked at the same time. These five men had already assessed that this one particular sentence must have enraged that naked man; and hence, knowing this sentence would clearly explain the problem that aroused this incident.

"Brother Xiao said: 'The Silver Blizzard City will not let you get away with this. We will exterminate your entire Family!'....."

Little Princess had obviously learnt how to mimic people because her impersonation of Xiao Feng Wu was very accurately animated. Her tears still lingered on her eyelashes as she finished narrating this sentence, and could sense from the reaction of the three Elders that there was something probably very wrong with this one sentence in particular.

The three Elders sighed at the same time.

[This is just bad luck, isn't it? It only common sense to exit in peace when you can clearly see that the other side is far stronger than yourself, especially when you're stranded alone, and without any backup. Instead of retreating, he actually started threatening the man, and then went one step ahead and threatened to destroy his entire Family? Even if he really wanted to take revenge for the incident, then he should've left that to a time later on in the future ah.... This kid is really very inexperienced in life!]

The three Elders were evaluating this scenario with a lot of care, and firmly believed that they themselves would've retreated if ever faced with such a circumstance. The three men were in agreement that Xiao Feng Wu's life had actually been spared by the mercy of that mysterious naked man.

"Silver Blizzard City is of course the most powerful faction of this world, and everyone is afraid of our prowess. However, openly bragging about our name can sometimes be enough to get you into mortal danger!" the Third Elder sighed, "This person may have acted mercilessly, but he's definitely not a murderer....." his facial expression suddenly changed, and suddenly became very unsightly as he stated this sentence. Even though he hadn't finished his sentence yet, it seemed obvious that he was finding it very difficult to continue.

The Third, the Sixth and the Ninth Elder had been working together for many years now, and had a very clear understanding of each other's thought processes. The faces of the three men changed to the same ugly shade since they were evaluating and

assessing the situation with a similar mindset.

The three men were thinking the same thing at this moment: [if this person is in a position where he isn't even afraid of provoking the Silver Blizzard City, then that leaves us with only one option if we wish to avoid any future problems: We'll need to silence the man!]

However, the three Elders weren't completely willing to make this choice either....

Because the man could've made the same; but he didn't!

Not only had he not made this cruel decision, and had actually spared the lives of their two younglings, the man had even refrained from causing direct harm to the Little Princess. However, the man had knowingly left Xiao Feng Wu in a very embarrassed physical state after beating him up to near-death! This was sure to ignite an insuppressible flame of hatred in Xiao Feng Wu's heart, which wouldn't simmer down until the man was dead!

The man didn't kill Xiao Feng Wu, but made sure to provoke him in the most outrageous of ways; and such an action could only be explained in one way: that man wasn't bothered with the Silver Blizzard City's strength!

In other words, the man was so sure that not only did he not seem afraid of the Silver Blizzard City, he was actually considered himself to be strong enough to contend against them! Basically, if the word of this incident was ever to become public, the reputation of the Silver Blizzard City would suffer a lot of harm.

The next step would obviously be to assess the man's strength; and that of his backers!

However, in present times, there weren't too many factions which were capable of carrying out such a brazen act of insolence against the Silver Blizzard City!

"The Xue Hun Manor is unlikely to be behind this...." The Third Elder and Xiao Han were in agreement on this, however, the latter was working a completely different angle in his mind: "The Xue Hun Manor's people didn't even show up for the Xuan Core, so it is unlikely that this was done by one of their people. Anyway, if this was done by one of their people, then given their world-renowned arrogance, the man would've obviously left a mark behind. They like their boldness to be recognized by the world, but this was done in silence and seclusion, so it is unlikely that they have anything to do with this."

"So who do you think was behind this?" the Six Elder raised his silver-ish eyebrows.

"I believe that there's only one Family in the Tian Xiang City that harbors a hatred deep enough to do something like this." Xiao Han's eyes flickered coldly: "And that Family is the Jun Family! Only the Jun Family would be so sensitive to the "Xiao" Family's name, and therefore I believe that this must be their doing!"

"According to the Little Princess's description, the man had said: 'I hate the Family name 'Xiao'!' This sentence clearly indicates that the man harbors an enmity against the Xiao Family, and later on, once Feng Wu revealed his identity, the man violently thrashed him; the one basic point that we can deduce from this is that this person may not be an enemy of the Silver Blizzard City, but he certainly hates the Xiao Family! And on this point, I'd like to state the obvious: most Families who harbor such sentiments against the Xiao Family are dead, and the very few that still remain are not currently based in the Tian Xiang City. Hence, the only Family that complies with all conditions at hand is the Jun Family; and Jun Wu Yi!"

Xiao Han obviously considered Jun Wu Yi to be his greatest mortal enemy.

Therefore, it was rather obvious that he wouldn't miss on any chances to blame his enemy or the man's Family. Although the

manner in which he had stated his argument made his reasoning sound very plausible, but even he was well aware that it was highly unlikely in reality; moreover, framing and acting against both Jun Wu Yi, and the Jun Family for this incident would be a very hard task.

However, he had never imagined that the irrational villainy of his heart would actually be supported by the facts-in-reality! He could've never imagined at this moment that this act was actually the doing of a Jun!

"Xiao Han, I've always known your villainous nature, but I had never taken you to be such a despicable character! These are two completely different things, and yet you insist on blaming this upon Jun Wu Yi's head? Even if you have an old feud with the man, slandering his name in this manner isn't justified."

"Then why don't you tell me the reason behind the hostility exhibited by this person? And that too against the Xiao Family alone?" Xiao Han was obviously not willing to give an inch in this argument.

"Hostility? Maybe you don't understand this, but everyone else here does; this was plainly just a case of misunderstanding, and nothing else! Anyway, if your nephew hadn't been so arrogant, then none of this would've happened to start with, and in case this incident was incited by feeling of revenge, then do you really think that the man would've acted with mercy?" Mu Xue Tong spoke up furiously.

"Acted with mercy? This man was so merciless and devious that he left Feng Wu in a far worse condition than dead. Apart from the Jun Family, I really can't think of any faction in the Tian Xiang City that would exhibit such hatred towards the Xiao Family, and would actually dare to act so arrogantly and murderously even when threatened with retaliation from the Xiao Family and Silver Blizzard City!" Xiao Han's arguments had started increasingly plausible at this point!

"Then why don't you tell me this... who would have such strength in the Jun Family, huh?! Are you telling me that there's a person in the Jun Family whose talented enough to be at least a Jade Xuan expert at such a young age?!" Mu Xue Tong laughed angrily in hysteria: "Our intelligence has gathered a complete profile of the Jun Family's strength, including the entirety of their secret connections; so why don't you spot someone who actually fulfills all the requirements to be our culprit?"

"That Old Man, Jun Zhan Tian.... Isn't he a Sky Xuan? This would've been an easy task for him, what's the guarantee that he didn't do this?!" Xiao Han argued back.

Everyone present on the scene looked at him as if they were all staring at an idiot, [Are you actually suspecting that Old Man? Have you really lost your mind? Forget about everything else, even if that Old Man was presented with an opportunity to kill off the entire Xiao Family, I reckon that the Old Man Jun would still refuse to run amok naked publicly.]

"That..... that man was very young, and was in fact too young to even be the Old Man Jun's son; let alone the Old Man himself!" The Little Princess spoke up at this point. The Little Princess had often heard about the romance between her elder sister and Jun Wu Yi, along with several tales of the Jun Family, and had formed a very favorable impression of the Jun Family as a result.

"Little Princess, you do not know of this, but this world has several methods by which one's appearances can be completely transformed to that of another person's..... " Xiao Han knew that it would be hard to win over everyone's trust with his fallacious arguments, but he was determined to hold up a strong defense nonetheless, "Yes, moreover, Jun Wu Yi's strength has also reached the Sky Xuan realm, and he surely wouldn't refrain from running around naked in order to extract revenge against the Xiao Family....."

"You've gone mad; you know well of Jun Wu Yi's immobile

condition, and yet you continue to argue this point? What motive do you wish to extract from this?" Mu Xue Tong retorted angrily: "Even if we blame and kill Jun Wu Yi for the occurrence of this incident, then I'm afraid that the Eldest Princess will probably throw herself off from the tallest mountain peak of the Silver Blizzard City, and commit suicide to meet her love in the afterlife. What motive could you possibly achieve from forcing these two lovers to do such a thing?!"

Xiao Han's eyes redden in rage while his breathing un-evened in anger, and although he tried to speak up a few times.... he eventually didn't.

"I'm certain that this wasn't the Jun Family's doing because there is one more thing that I haven't mentioned yet!" The Little Princess's face revealed a color of horror as she recalled something.

"What else?" everyone present on the scene questioningly redirected their gazes to her unusually terrified face.

"After that man left us alone in the Maple Forest, the forest suddenly.... It suddenly disappeared..... " the Little Princess's eyes were opened round-and-wide in horror as she narrated the scene in a rather terror-stricken tone: "The entire forest turned ash-gray, and then the wind blew... and the entire forest..... became nothing.... And there was just an open space left... a bare and open land.... Nothing else!"

The three Elders immediately stood up after hearing this; even the Ninth Elder, who was busy providing first-aid to the injured Xiao Feng Wu was no exception, leaving the injured youngster to spray out more blood from his mouth.

"Is this really true? Are you sure that you're telling us the right thing?" the three Elders opened their mouths at the same time. One really cannot blame the three Elders for being so alarmed upon hearing such a thing since even men of their experience and knowledge had never heard of such an occurrence; not even in a

distant legend!

This incident had already surpassed the damage Xuan Qi is capable of causing!

The Silver Blizzard City had spent generations of effort into collecting all kinds of objects and treasures, assessing their usefulness, usability and had been studying and exploring such rare treasure with just one objective in mind; ridding the human body of the shackles imposed by Xuan Qi!

Thus, the reactions of the three Elders were obviously warranted upon hearing the existence of someone with such abilities!

"I'll immediately accompany the Little Princess to the forest to see this for myself. Xiao Han, you will immediately contact the Tian Xiang Royal Family, and you will thereafter request for their imperial physician; use any and all resources available in the Magnificent Jewel Hall to ensure that this boy's injuries are cured. Ninth Brother, you will stay here and watch-over the Magnificent Jewel Hall; moreover, you will send a messenger-pigeon back to the Silver Blizzard to enquire if this was the Xue Hun Manor's doing... even though it probably isn't. Mu Xue Tong, you will follow your Sixth Uncle to the Jun Family's residence, and you will assess their reaction to this situation in order to check if they actually have such an expert in their Family. Although it is unlikely that they were behind this, but they are an entity under suspicion here. This needs to be taken care of immediately, and we will have to operate separately and simultaneously." The Third Elder commanded in a calm and composed manner.

Chapter 217: The Riddle of the 'Throwing Knife'

"Yes!" everyone responded in agreement at the same time.

One must agree that the Third Elder's planning was very rational; he had intentionally sent Mu Xue Tong to the Jun Family instead of Xiao Han since Xiao Han was likely to incite trouble at the Jun residence by making rash accusations.

The Third Elder had been bestowed with a very important and sensitive responsibility by the Master of the City at their time of his departure: [Do not cause any trouble with the Jun Family!]

The Third Elder hadn't been a participant in that matter in the beginning; in fact, the entire affair surrounding the Jun Family had been carried out very secretively, and only the Xiao Family was involved in it, while the others got know about this situation much later on, and although the situation had already calmed down quite significantly by then, but it had already brought upon some very serious consequences. When it came to this matter, even the Silver Blizzard City was internally divided into two different factions, each with its own set of arguments, which hadn't been resolved even now.

Personally, the Third Elder carried no malicious sentiments towards to the Jun Family; but he carried no favorable impression of them either. However, he did carry a sense of sympathy when it came to the Eldest Princess, which in his heart, had led to an unfavorable impression with regard to Old Shi Xiao Han's stubborn attitude.

In his personal opinion, [what would such pressure from the elderly bring? Even if they are able to arrange a profitable marriage, but in case the bride doesn't consent, then the groom would be nothing more than a licensed stalker! Even if the couple was forcefully tied in the knot of a marriage, it would only bring

discontent and would only lead to an unhappy married life.]

However, he was still quite furious with Jun Wu Yi and the Silver Blizzard City's Eldest Princess for finding their match away from their dominions. It was because of them that the Silver Blizzard City found itself internally divided into two opposing and mutually hostile factions, whereas the Princess was now found either practicing as hard as possible to increase her strength, or lost in her own thoughts and fantasies, meanwhile Xiao Han's nature was becoming more and more violent and distorted with every passing day, and the distances between the Xiao Family and the City's Family was continuously growing apart..... this as a result was obviously leading to even more destruction for the Jun Family in return!

The Third Elder's speed was so astonishingly fast even though he was carrying the Little Princess, Han Yan Meng that they arrived at the scene in a matter of moments. The Third Elder found himself completely dumbfounded now that he was standing at the spot where Jun Mo Xie had ruthlessly assaulted Xiao Feng Wu since he saw nothing more than an empty piece of land around him.

"Girl, are you sure this is the place? You didn't bring us to the wrong direction, did you?" The Third Elder asked in astonishment.

One really couldn't blame him; this piece of land was so clean that even a single weed didn't seem to be growing here. The entire radius of this dozen or so acre of land was completely devoid of even the Maple leaves, let alone the trees.

[There was a Maple Forest here just moments ago?]

[Are you kidding me!]

[Even if this place was set ablaze, the ashes would still be here ah.
]

[This place is completely devoid of everything.... It's just too

clean!]

"This really is the place!" the young girl nodded hard with surety: "Third Grandpa, you come and see.... this is where Brother Xiao was lying bleeding; I can never forget this!"

The Third Elder continued to look around for a while, but still couldn't believe the truth, and hence decided to seek out a few locals to inquire about the fate of this place, and all he saw was people running about in hysteria with incense sticks in their hands, offering prayers to the heavens above.

[This is simply a miracle ah! The entire forest has been obliterated...] he asked several people one after the other, and was finally left to conclude this immensely shocking finding: [This piece of land was once home to a Maple Forest! However, for some unknown reason the entire Forest vanished moments ago....] At this moment, the Third Elder suddenly remembered another point: "Girl, you said that the man was naked when you saw him, right? Was he completely naked?"

"Grandpa, why do you ask this?" Although no one had pinched her cheeks, they were still flushed-red as if someone had.

"Just answer me; was he naked? He wasn't wearing anything on his entire body, top to bottom? And he hadn't even realized this when you spotted him? Isn't that right?" the Third Elder asked once again in a rather imposing and dignified manner.

"Yes ah!" The young girl carefully recalled the scene, and then answered with certainty.

The Third Elder's face suddenly became deathly pale!

[It seems that this person was here to practice some very unique martial law, and his practice must have been so powerful that he might have unintentionally burnt away all foreign objects, including his own clothing. However, he must have been so involved in his own practice that he may not even have realized

this at the time when he ended his practice, but as chance has it... he encountered Xiao Feng Wu and the Little Princess soon after. Xiao Feng Wu would've made some very rude remarks.....and a person with such abilities obviously wouldn't have taken well to such insolent remarks from such a young boy.... That being said, Xiao Feng Wu's life was actually spared by this man's mercy!]

[But.....what kind of strength would it take to burn off an area this large?]

[It's not very surprising that this man pays no regard to the Silver Blizzard City. If this is what he is really capable of, then I reckon that he probably wouldn't even be intimidated by the combined strength of the Silver Blizzard City and the Xue Hun Manor. Would the combined strength of the Eight Great Master be able to produce such a result?]

[The Eight Great Masters could easily destroy a Maple Forest if they wished to, but they wouldn't be able to erase all traces of it; and they certainly wouldn't be able to do it so silently!]

[What kind of terrifying power does this person possess?]

[And now this person has chosen to stand against the Silver Blizzard City!]

At this moment, the Third Elder's mind was least bothered with extracting revenge for Xiao Feng Wu's injuries or the insults caused to him, and was actually more bothered about the possible consequences that the Silver Blizzard City might have to face because of Xiao Feng Wu's arrogance!

If he had actually provoked an enemy they simply couldn't match.... Then this would end very badly for the Silver Blizzard City!

"Let's go! We have to head off to the Jun Family now!" The Third Elder acted decisively since this matter needed to be resolved immediately. [In case this mysterious master was to actually

investigate and find out more about my people, then I reckon that nothing will be able to withstand the madness of his fury. I'm afraid that he could destroy everyone and everything; even if we were to flee to the Silver Blizzard City, the end result would still be the same.]

Even though the Third Elder was maintaining his composure on the surface, he was inwardly cursing Xiao Feng Wu in a hundred different ways; [that Little Brat claims to be the leader of the Xiao Family's young generation, but he is completely failing in accomplishing anything. He has never accomplished any serious feats apart from the rapid speed of his cultivation, and has actually been landing us in a world of trouble all along! And this time, his arrogant nature has landed us against a Godly-being!]

[It seems necessary to return and limit the movements of the Silver Blizzard City's experts, and ensure that they maintain a low-key profile from here on; their presently prevalent arrogant and despotic behavior simply must be curtailed.]

[Such a Godly-master actually exists in this world of mortals!]

Though the environment in the Silver Blizzard City's party was quite gloomy and unpleasant, but the one in the Li Family was far gloomier and far more unpleasant in comparison; in fact, it was the gloom of death....

One man had been injured to the point of an almost hopeless existence, while the corpses of their four fallen comrades hadn't even been buried yet. Li You Ran and the five remaining of his seniors were sitting together in a circle, with each person bearing a grief-stricken look on their face! Their entire attention had been focused on nabbing their culprit, the owner of that odd and mysterious 'throwing knife' in these recent days, and they had already investigated more than half the capital city, but hadn't been able to find any solid information as of yet.

"The Sixth Brother has recovered his consciousness now, but....."

Li You Ran's calm face was reflecting a subtle hint of pain, "but, I'm afraid he'll never be able to stand up on his own feet again in this life!"

"Solitary Falcon! This was far too ruthless! The enemy of our Brothers must not be allowed to exist in this world!" Lei Jian Hong was gritting his teeth so hard that one could clearly hear the clattering sounds they were making; the veins of his forehead had turned green with rage, while his eyes seemed to be spraying fire.

"This is all because of me... it is because of my wishful thinking, and my delusions about seizing that Xuan Core which has led to this state of disability for the Sixth Brother, and has delivered four more of my Brothers to the doors of death at such a young age....." Even though Li You Ran's face was still quite calm, his eyes clearly revealed the underlying tears as he suddenly knelt down to his knees with a 'thump': "Big Brother..... I'm.... at fault! I've wronged you, and I've wronged my Master.... I..... I'm damned!"

Lei Jian Hong hurriedly stood up: "Get up young one, this isn't your fault!"

Then he sighed and said: "Even though you were the initiating cause, it's not entirely your fault. An uncountable number of people have died at the hands of their enemies ever since the beginning of martial activities; this is doomed to be the final destination in our line of work. If martial experts didn't have the fear of dying by the blade of another man, then they would simply and aimlessly roam about the land with no fear or meaning in life; had we managed to win over the Xuan Core this time, then someone else would've lost the lives of their brothers, and someone else must've been left lamenting their fate. Moreover, this loss is also attributed to our miscalculations, and so you mustn't blame yourself for this, young one."

"Yes, that correct, the Elder Brother is right. The fate of any martial artist ends with the blade of another, and even though it may be a harsh and saddening truth, but there is no point in

lamenting the deceased." The woman wiped her eyes as her voice choked on her tears: "We must take revenge at all costs; we must recover the debt of their blood!"

"Yes! We must recover the debt of their blood!" everyone shouted in unison.

"The Sixth Brother's enemy is someone as powerful as the Solitary Falcon. When it comes to this, I believe that I will have to personally come forward to solve this problem; although I don't believe that I will be able to avenge him right away...." Li You Ran stood proudly staring at a distance: "But I will not spare any effort within the reach of the Li Family in order to resolve this matter!"

"As for the four of my deceased brothers, I've searched all archives and libraries for that throwing knife's origin, and I had even launched a full-scale investigation into the Capital City, but none of it bore any fruit for a long time. However, I overturned a new leaf when I found a very special incident which had previously occurred in the city, and I believe that this incident is that only thing we can link this throwing knife with....." Li You Ran stated with a very serious look on his face.

"What incident?" Lei Jian Hong and the others asked in unison.

"I have determined that this throwing knife has never been seen in this land before!" Li You Ran stated with a sense of surety: "However, I have heard that the last time there was an assassination attempt on Princess Ling Meng's life, some unknown and strong expert timely released an odd and mysterious looking throwing knife which helped Princess Ling Meng in escaping away. However, that knife remains in the Princess's personal collection of treasures since that day, and since no one has seen it, no one knows what it really looks like....."

Some people had obviously seen knives similar to that one, but they were now residing within the hell beneath. The Hitman Jun created his own unique throwing knives, and the vast majority

of the people who had ever come in contact with his blades had died moments later, with the Princess Ling Meng and Ye Gu Han being the only exceptions, and Princess Ling Meng had never allowed that knife to be separated from her ever since the day she had seen it.

"Young one, you mean.... Princess Ling Meng may have a knife similar to this one in her possession?" A cold awn flashed in Lei Jian Hong's eyes.

Chapter 218: Remarkable Coincidence

"I suspect so; therefore I've been planning on going to the Imperial Palace so I can take a look at that knife and see if it's similar to this one!" Li You Ran's eyes blatantly revealed his intentions as he continued: "If it's not the same, then we won't have any clues."

"Yes, if it's similar to this one then that would mean that this sly bastard probably has an association with Princess Ling Meng, and since he helped her out once, I doubt that he would sit idly and watch if the Princess was to be met with danger again. If we can control such a situation then we could force that despicable bastard to show up again!" Lei Jian Hong fiercely nodded as an ominous glint flickered inside his eyes.

"However, young Li is trying to woo Princess Ling Meng and therefore we must consider Young Li's personal interests in this matter as well. Big Brother, you have to measure all proportions here... if we act rashly and hurt the Princess, then it would be very detrimental to our Little Brother's marriage." The woman quickly glanced at Li You Ran, and leisurely stated as she re-adjusted her gaze to the ground.

"Yes, the Third Sister is right; we'll have to give this matter a lot of thought." Lei Jian Hong nodded. One has to admit that this man wasn't very assertive by nature, and was willing to take everyone's interests and opinions into his evaluation.

"I disagree with the Third Sister." Li You Ran stated in a self-righteous tone: "Although her appearance and status are impressive, but she is still an outsider at the end of the day; even if she was to really come into the Li Family someday, we are still Brothers first, and hence I will only agree with whatever the Big Brother decides when it comes to avenging the deaths of my four elder brothers. I won't object to Big Brother's decision, nor will I spare any effort to meet his orders! If a bit of blood is necessary to

avenge our four brothers, then I'm willing to shed it; whether it is Ling Meng's or my own!"

"Little Brother!....." Lei Jian Hong was already quite moved, and seeing the look in Li You Ran's eyes only made him more excited: "Little Brother's remarks will not go in vain, and will take us a thousand miles forward! Although our four Brothers are dead, but they will now sleep peacefully in the hell below!"

Everyone nodded in approval upon seeing the look on Li You Ran's face, and then slowly turned soft and affectionate towards him.

"Master has stated that he will come in person to deal with the matter surrounding the Sixth Brother, but I'm afraid that it will take a few days' time for him to arrive in the Tian Xiang City. Brothers and Sisters, please suppress your sorrows for the time being, and don't act rashly. As for the matter regarding that 'Throwing Knife', kindly leave that to me." Li You Ran sighed: "However, I feel most guilty for disturbing Master's practice.... It's a crime that I cannot even be punished for with a thousand deaths....."

"Little Brother, don't you know that the Master has always pampered you more than any other disciple?" everyone warmly spoke up together to comfort Li You Ran; the atmosphere had suddenly changed to a very harmonious one.

The Li Family had been supplying for the livelihood and all other necessary resources of Lei Wu Bei's school ever since Li You Ran had been accepted as his disciple. Given the amount of patronage he had shown to his Master over the years, Li You Ran's relationship with his Master had changed to that of a family member, and although they were separated by mountains and valleys, Lei Wu Bei would act like a Family member would in case the Li Family required it; in fact, he'd probably do more.

It could be said that Lei Wu Bei had really over-pampered Li You

Ran, and had played an even bigger role in spoiling the young man's temper than his own grandfather had.

"However, we cannot sit idly before the Master's arrival." Li You Ran's eyes revealed the blatancy of his desires: "Brothers, you know that the current sources of our information are very limited, and our people are facing severe restrictions even within the scope of the Tian Xiang City. Thus, your Younger Brother is now in need of a very urgent help from you, but I've already failed you once, and to ask you for this now... I don't have the words....."

"We are brothers, so how's your Family matter not ours? Tell us, what bothers you?" Lei Jian Hong asked in a genuinely dissatisfied tone. He was already quite emotionally moved at this point, and therefore, he was likely to promise Li You Ran for anything that the latter asked for!

"Thank you Big Brother." Li You Ran's face seemed to be covered with state of difficulty and distress: "My problem resides with the underground world of this city. I had been using the City's underground gangs to control the northern part of the Capital City, but a freak combination of factors ever since the incident at the Tang Family have resulted in my networks going idle, which is causing me a lot of inconvenience. Even if I could still get the news in a timely manner, but I still cannot....."

"A few underground gangs? Ha ha, what kind of a problem would they be!" Lei Jian Hong smiled fiercely: "These last few days have been very depressing for us since we cannot provoke a foe of the Solitary Falcon's strength, but these shrimps would act as a good way for us to vent out our anger, so don't worry Little Brother, we will unite the City's underworld for you before the Master arrives in the City! And then we'll hand it over to you!"

"Thank you for your help Big Brother! Now I can finally remove this big rock I've been carrying on my heart! The Li Family's strength will rise to new heights because of your help my brothers and sister!"

Li You Ran thanked his companions in joy, and then gnashed his teeth with grief and indignation: "I shall immediately focus on getting into the Palace to investigate the enemy of our Brothers, but each day will now pass like a year for me.... If I can't even find out about the enemy who took the lives of my Brothers, then what good would I be?"

"There's no need to be so formal with your family, Little Brother! Since you'll be entering into the Palace with such a big objective in mind, I urge that you be very careful while exploring and investigating this matter surrounding the 'Throwing Knife'; we will wait for you to come back with the good news upon your success!" Lei Jian Hong and the others stood up; their faces revealing a very earnest and concerned expression.

"Yes Big Brother. Although we want this power, but the Li Family cannot come out in the open in this regard, and we can only manipulate the scene from backstage...." Li You Ran smiled as he warned his companions of this very critical point: "Therefore the actions taken in this matter must be cautiously evaluated."

"Indeed, we clearly understand the nature of this task! Little Brother, don't look so serious; we will take care of this." Lei Jian Hong broke into laughter.

Once has to note the remarkability of this coincidence!

Li You Ran and Jun Mo Xie, two potential opponents, each mutually unaware of the other's involvement, had decided to pick the same option and at the same time! Moreover, they had both chosen the same goal!

The Capital's underworld!

Moreover, the means of these two youngsters were also surprisingly similar!

Jun Mo Xie had lured and enticed Hai Chen Feng with favors, and had then decided to take advantage of the situation; then, he

made very cumbersome calculations to gain favors with the Solitary Falcon, and had chosen to use his identity to safeguard the Jun Family's position and managed to achieve his goal somehow.

Li You Ran on the other hand, had played on the emotional sentiments of his fellow apprentices to achieve the same objective.

Although the means used by each man had its own merits and demerits, with neither method being superior or otherwise, but both sets of strategies were equally shameless and despicable in nature.

Jun Mo Xie had achieved his goals by hook or by crook.

Li You Ran had achieved his' by being self-centered; leaving no space for the needs of his own friends!

Another surprising coincidence would be in the fact that both men would unleash a bunch of Sky Xuan experts in the capital city! The difference is that Jun Mo Xie's soldier, Hai Chen Feng would have a higher starting point, whereas Li You Ran's side had better numbers. At this point, the game resided in balance.

Both men were abundantly confident of their position at this point, already feeling that they had achieved their objective!

The shadows of these two youngsters had been associated with most of the major events that had taken place in the city in recent times, and one could sense that their actions would inevitably lead to several more. Had any man been lesser than the other, the storm wouldn't have been this terrifying! However, even though these two men were provoking such a huge storm inside this paradise, neither man had any knowledge of the other man's involvement.

In fact, these two men were thinking the exact same thing: they both wished to manipulate the circumstances from behind the scenes, but neither man seemed willing to appear in flesh. Even though Jun Mo Xie was aware of Li You Ran's existence, and was

fully aware that Li You Ran was the Li Family's protégé, but he'd never consider Li You Ran to be his opponent since Li You Ran didn't deserve that position in his mind!

What would an insignificant man like Li You Ran be worth in the eyes of a proud man like Jun Mo Xie?

On the other hand, even though Li You Ran was also aware of Jun Mo Xie's existence, Jun Mo Xie's worth was even lesser in Li You Ran's eyes.....

How could a debauchery be a worthy opponent in the eyes of the Young Master Li? He too had obviously completely ignored Jun Mo Xie!

Even though they were unaware of each other's actions, they already despised each other; however, they were both doing the same thing, and that too, using similar methods. The first real battle between these two men was just about to begin.

And even though this real collision between these two men was about to take place, it was destined to take place in the dark, with both men already having chosen to remain hidden.....

Even their Xuan Qi's were at the same level; the peak of the Gold Xuan Realm, and yet both men had mobilized Sky Xuan experts in their support. Jun Mo Xie was being supported by Hai Chen Feng, with the Blue Master, Meng Hong Chen standing behind them, whereas Lei Jian Hong was being supported by the Cold Blooded Master, Lei Wu Bei.

Even in this regard, the playing field was again leveled!

Who would win? And who would lose?

Irrespective of the victor and loser, two of the Eight Great Masters, Lei Wu Bei and Meng Hong Chen were destined to a path of hatred in all this confusion!

The scramble for the control of the City's underworld between these two Young Masters was about to unleash a plethora of earth-

shattering characters, which would obviously trigger a huge storm; one has to say - such a wonderful act can only be choreographed by the heavens above; this had to have been an act of providence!

The Jun Family

Hai Chen Feng had already snuck out after receiving his treatment, and was already flexing his muscles to unite the City's underworld.

The Solitary Falcon had taken residence with the Jun Family, and Hai Chen Feng was unlikely to come looking for trouble with him unless he was strong enough; this of course was one aspect Jun Mo Xie could control at his whim.

The Solitary Falcon had already completely immersed himself in his practice, and even though Jun Mo Xie had tried to incite him a few times, the Solitary Falcon had paid no attention to any of it since his practice had taken him over like an obsession; to the point where he didn't even care about his own bodily weaknesses.

The Little Lolita would serve the tea, and would then tip-toe her was backwards; Fatty Tang was doing his best to lay low next doors, so much so that he would even try to control the sound of his own breathing, let alone find the courage to cough or fart, fearing that even the slightest of movement may provoke a disaster and might land him a one-way ticket straight to hell.....

Things had momentarily calmed down at the Jun residence.....

The reason being that none of this involved Jun Mo Xie's exceptional talents.....

Chapter 219: Guan Qing Han's doubts

The young master Jun had already grown bored and edgy by now. After teaching the Solitary Falcon some moves of the 'Nine Eagle Transformation' law, clearing his doubts, and watching him practice them once, the young master Jun simply took off, leaving the Solitary Falcon to his own measures.

[I'm not cut out to be a teacher!] The young master Jun muttered to himself as he left.

Guan Qing Han stood in the middle of his small courtyard, wearing a cold and complex expression on her face, while her desolate frame resembled a solitary snowflake in contrast to the flowery setting of her surroundings owing to the white dress she was wearing at the moment.

"Sister-in-law, when did you come over? Why didn't you allow Little Ke to notify me?" Jun Mo Xie approached her cautiously.

The Solitary Falcon's coffin-like expression was a stark contrast to this ice-cold expression of Guan Qing Han's, which seemed to resemble the snow-capped mountains instead. Although Jun Mo Xie had grown accustomed to dealing with the Solitary Falcon's expression, but Guan Qing Han's expression seemed to igniting the visual of an infernal ocean of blood amidst this flowery paradise within his mind.

[This is a really marvelous and pleasing sight ah.]

"You were busy earlier, so I didn't disturb you!" Guan Qing Han's expression had always been quite cold, but it seemed far more complex today. Her cool, melancholy and preoccupied eyes were gazing at the flowers in the courtyard as she spoke in a faint voice: "One could search the entire Capital, but you still wouldn't find any plants lusher than the ones in the Jun Family's courtyards. Its late autumn now, and these plants should've already withered by now... it's a wonder that they still bloom."

"And even amongst the Jun Family's courtyards, yours, mine and Third Uncle's courtyards have the most lush flowers when compared to the rest; and amongst these three courtyards, yours's is much better off than mine and Third Uncle's..... I take very precise care of my plants, but you're not even here to look after of your plants.... I have no idea how you manage this.... Isn't this one big mystery?"

Jun Mo Xie was left completely dumbfounded.

He had long been aware of the observations Guan Qing Han was making at the moment, but he hadn't been able to conceal this flaw! Anyway, her words seemed sure rather than being a casual observation.

He was always practicing, whether it was gathering aura from the surroundings around him, or circulating the pure Aura from the Hongjun Pagoda. Although humans were unable to feel this aura, but plants are very sensitive to it. Moreover, this aura was very beneficial for their growth, and although it was already late autumn, the plants which dwelled within a certain range of the young master Jun's courtyard still blossomed, making the area a paradise for the human-eyes whereas the flowers elsewhere withered; this aspect obviously opposed the common understanding.

The young master Jun had been aware of this fact for a long time now, but couldn't control it nonetheless.

Everyone had already grown accustomed to this since they believed that flowers could blossom even in autumn if given the proper care. However, this setting was doomed to be too attractive to the human-eye in case these courtyards were to continue looking lush and full of life even in the winters..... when that time came, even a fool could tell that something was amiss.....

"There's nothing weird about them, this is just the byproduct of our Family's excellent geomancy, ha ha..... so I suppose that it's a

good thing that you came here to enjoy the happy and joyous life within our Family, Sister-in-law ha ha....."

Even though Jun Mo Xie was laughing on the exterior, his mind was already contemplating means to alter this situation; [this won't work; I'll switch the flowers here to Plum Blossoms; Plum Blossoms can grow and thrive openly in the winters without any problems.....]

"Ah, I live a happy and joyous life....." Guan Qing Han's eyes were still staring at a green leaf in front of her as she continued in a faint voice: "Yes.... I'm really blessed....."

Jun Mo Xie immediately sensed the mistake of his words, and felt like slapping his mouth for uttering them! Irrespective of her "Daughter-in-law" status and the respect that came with it, Guan Qing Han was still a widow in the Family at the end of the day; what enjoyment would there be in that?

"You've had a very hard and exhausting time these past few days." Guan Qing Han cleared up her mind a bit, and a faint but rare smile surfaced on her usually cold face: "Third Brother, I wish to ask you a few questions... if it's okay?"

"Please ask Sister-in-law, and I will answer anything that I'm capable of answering." Jun Mo Xie immediately replied back.

"Although I don't know how you did it, but I heard Third Uncle say that you claim to have already resolved the matter surrounding the Xue Hun Manor. Even though the Third Uncle seemed convinced, but I really cannot believe it yet; therefore now that you're here in front of me, tell me... have you really taken care of it?"

Guan Qing Han's head was still hanging down while her eyes were still fixed at the flowers in front of her. A breeze rolled-in and softly brushed aside her hair, exposing her delicate skin and half of her fair neckline and face.

"Let's say.... It's at least been temporarily taken care off....." Jun Mo Xie unintentionally discovered the beauty of her skin; and not because he wanted to look at her, but he still stole a glance since such opportunities were quite rare.

"Since you're so sure, then I'll just have to wave aside my doubts and believe that even though I don't know where and why you keep going out all the time these days, but it is only for the betterment of the Family, and that you just do this in order to make preparations for dealing with the Silver Blizzard City and the Xue Hun Manor, right?"

Guan Qing Han smiled: "When I heard the Third Uncle speak of this, he sounded very impressed. By my understanding, the Third Uncle has only ever admired Grandfather and Father-in-law in this manner; and no one else. You're the third man he admires so much!"

Jun Mo Xie's belly puffed to control his unspoken criticisms; [Uncle, why did you open your mouth so big and leak out so much.... And admire my means? You might as well list out the things I do.....]

"This....that....it's.... he he, in fact it was just a matter of chance." Jun Mo Xie touched his nose, completely unaware of what he was saying since the sight of her delicate skin was still whirling around in his eyes. Guan Qian Han on other hand was completely unaware of her Brother-in-law's unscrupulous gaze since her head was still hung low.

"I also heard Uncle say that you allowed me to win the last time we contested; he said that your skills are far superior to mine and that you were simply exercising control to avoid hurting me....."

Guan Qing Han simply didn't know what to think anymore, and her fair skin suddenly turned a beautiful pink in shade. This hint of blush on her fair skin was especially very tempting for Jun Mo Xie, and he simply couldn't stop himself from stealing a glance of

this visual feast.

Jun Mo Xie swallowed down a mouthful of saliva and then replied with difficulty: "Uncle was just bragging; don't believe him... I really don't have that kind of skill....."

"I am willing to believe it. If you can single-handedly relieve the Jun Family from its difficulties, then it's only reasonable that your strength is far superior to mine." Guan Qing Han sighed in comfort: "Mo Xie, you've really grown up... you're no longer that....."

Jun Mo Xie was already sweating bullets!

His elder Sister-in-law was only twenty-two years old in age, but she looked far-older than even the thirty years olds he had met in his two life-times when she spoke up: "You've really grown up....." Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt as if something had short-circuited inside his head.

"Sister-in-law, you're only in your twenties..... it's difficult to listen to your words when you talk like old people." Jun Mo Xie's face shriveled up; if he was to revert back to being the assassin he had been in his previous life, then such words would've provoked an unstoppable storm of bloodbath!

"Uncle said that you've been concealing your strengths to bide more time, and that we've all misunderstood you....." Guan Qing Han chuckled for a moment, and her face immediately melted like ice, and seemed as if a glacier had suddenly melted and had given way to blossoming flowers. She tilted her head slightly and glanced at Jun Mo Xie with a meaningful glance as she said: "However, there's one thing that I just don't understand..... that previously ridiculous behavior of yours, was that also a part of this low-key profile you were trying to keep?"

"Uh, Sister-in-law, you know, this..... that our.... I was forced to do all this because of our Family's situation, ah..... he he...."

"The Family's situation is one matter, and that I naturally understand that aspect, but what relation did that have to do with the rubbish behavior you were exhibiting in front of me?" Guan Qian Han's face suddenly turned cold as she turned to face Jun Mo Xie for the first time today, and stared at him with eyes as sharp as a phoenix's.

"This... that... it was also..... just a part of.... the camouflage....." Jun Mo Xie had already started cursing the original Jun Mo Xie in his mind; [that bastard and his behavior....and now I have to answer for him.....]

"Camouflage? Hmmmmmmm!" Guan Qing Han looked at him coldly: "If there's ever another one of these 'camouflage' activities then, I, I I'll leave the Jun residence forever, and I'll never come back!" Guan Qing Han wanted to say 'I'll beat you up', but instantly thought that he'd be stronger, and hence hastily changed her words; these change of words however, were no reflection of her actual meaning.....

"Yes, yes! From now, I won't ever dare....." Jun Mo Xie immediately opened his mouth to say that he wouldn't, but anyone could tell that he hadn't even thought it through.....

"Hmmm, a woman's honor and integrity..... is that just a joke for you to make fun of?" Guan Qing Han was clearly very angry at this moment.

"That... what else can it be used for?" Jun Mo Xie opened his mouth and blurted these words out in a moment of pure muddle-headedness, and then immediately realized how ill-intended his words sounded.

This sentence was naturally a big taboo; and he knew that he'd be damned to say them in this life... or the previous one....

"You!....." Guan Qing Han's anger boiled up in an instant and her eyes suddenly redden with rage. Then, she took a deep breath as her face hardened again: "So you haven't changed at all!" she stated

as she turned around and left.

[I need to watch my mouth!]

The young master Jun stood stunned at his spot for a little while with a dejected feeling in his heart, and then suddenly yelled out: "Damn it Fatty Tang, do you think you're here to enjoy a life of retirement? When am I going to see those plans? I'm not in a good mood today, so make sure that you make me happy... else don't ask me to help you in losing weight again!" left with no other choice, he decided to vent out his anger on Tang Yuan.

Tang Yuan crashed out his room: "Well, well..." waving a pile of papers in his hand: "You see boss, I've already sorted matters out in accordance with what you said; see, take a look... this should be okay."

Jun Mo Xie grabbed those papers, and stared at them as he flipped a couple of pages, and then stuffed them back into Tang Yuan's hand: "Yes! Yes, yes this is good!"

"But you haven't even looked at this properly....." Tang Yuan felt a bit wronged upon seeing that his hard work had been ignored in this manner.

Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes; it is not that he didn't wish to look at those papers carefully, but he saw nothing more than incomprehensible matter in them, and simply understood that it was already beyond his knowledge... the young master Jun had never anticipated that all the unlinked gibberish he could remember from his previous life would actually transform into such a thick pile of business plans in Tang Yuan's hands; [this Fatty is just too talented.... Why didn't I find him in my previous life....]

Chapter 220: A plan to make a fortune

"I believe in you, I really believe a lot in you!" Jun Mo Xie encouragingly patted on Tang Yuan's shoulder: "No matter what you do, I will support you because I believe in you! Therefore I don't need to see this, or give any opinions on it since I know that no matter what you do, people will come and buy our products!"

"Third young.....hum....." Tang Yuan was already moved to tears; in fact even his nose had started to snivel tears: "I had heard people speak about friendships to the death, but today I've understood what it really means.....this feeling of being trusted is simply amazing.... I'm so moved.... I swear that I will work as hard as it takes, and I'll work with great care, and I'll spare no effort till death puts an end to my life.... I'll be loyal and I'll do whatever it takes to make our project a true success.... I'll willingly die a thousand deaths if I cannot live up to it....."

The young master Jun had already grown accustomed to the Fatty's powerful and excessive boot-licking by now, and had in fact become immune to it. Therefore, he simply stood there smiling and nodding as he gracefully listened to this extremely nauseating boot-licking, pretending as if he was actually enjoying it.

A fat pile of flesh was constantly flattering with tears in his eyes, while the other man was peacefully smiling and listening in silence with an intoxicated look on his face - the image of this scene fell into the Solitary Falcon's line of sight, and the master simply wasn't able to stand the sight of it. His ears suddenly stiffened up in disgust, while the expression on his face clearly depicted the trauma of his mind....

"I think I'll vomit....." the pale-faced Solitary Falcon whistled out of the courtyard: "This Old Man needs to find a more appropriate place....."

He didn't even turn around to take another look back at the scene

since it had already transcended the degree of disgust even a Great Master could tolerate.

"Aha!" the young master Jun narrowed his eyes, and exerted himself as he forcefully patted Tang Yuan on his shoulders once again, almost throwing the Fatty down to the ground in the process, and then arrogantly shrugged his shoulders as he laughed: "Fatty, you're really awesome! You're turning into the Solitary Falcon's nemesis ah, ha ha...."

"I, I... what did I do?" Tang Yuan blankly wiped his tears, and instead started sweating from shock and fear now upon realizing that he might have offended the Solitary Falcon somehow.

"You did well, very well! Really, really good ah!" Jun Mo Xie wantonly praised Tang Yuan since he had never expected that his biggest headache would actually leave after feeling nauseated by the Fatty's excessive flattering....

[I've been trying to plant flowers for relief against the sun, but this accidental willow actually did the real trick, didn't it?]

"We're going to do an exclusive auction for that fine-wine you've been drinking these days. Fatty, your first job is to use that wine of mine to make us a lot of money! Do you understand what I mean?" Jun Mo Xie raised his eyebrows as he patted the Fatty's shoulders again with a sense of joy in his heart.

"That's not an issue. Wine as good as this one is rarely ever put up for auction, and since we don't have much of it either, I believe that setting up a reserved price of even five hundred taels per jar won't be a problem." Tang Yuan stated with surety, completely aware that this price was much higher than the market price of the currently available wines.

"A reserved price of five hundred taels per jar? Was that a joke?!" Jun Mo Xie shook his head as he mercilessly rejected the idea.

"Is that too high? Although it could also be set at three hundred

taels, but that price would be less for a wine of such high quality. Although I haven't done much research on wines, but the wine you've come up with is of much higher quality than the ones available in the market, and a price of three hundred taels would be a pitiful price to fetch for this wine since this wine is much, much better than the ones I'm used to drinking! The final price of this wine should be very substantial though, and I calculate it to fetch a price of around three thousand taels per jar!" Tang Yuan smacked his lips even though he sounded a bit unsure of himself.

"No! A final auction price of three thousand taels per jar? Fatty, it seems that you really haven't done much research on wines... my goal is twelve thousand taels per jar! And not a penny less!" Jun Mo Xie stuck out his finger and shook it while biting his teeth to show his seriousness.

"Balls!" Tang Yuan suddenly jumped up, and leapt almost three feet above the ground! Then, his body's fat suddenly crashed down to the ground upon his landing, and flapped a few times as it hit the ground while his belly reverberated up and down twice.

Jun Mo Xie had never seen Tang Yuan jump like this ever since he had first met him, and had hence never imagined that the Fatty could be capable of jumping three feet in the air in this manner! [This Fatty is truly a peerless talent ah!]

Tang Yuan's mouth made a hissing sound as he sucked in some air, feeling a bit out of breath after jumping up, while his face was twitched in pain under the impact of the collision between the ground and his body's fat. "You think that this wine is some sort of a fairyland drink, ah, just drink one cup and you live on forever? Are you joking with me Boss?! This is impossible... it is simply impossible!"

"I wasn't joking with you, and this definitely isn't a joke!" Jun Mo Xie waved his hand, smiled and then said: "That's right, twelve thousand taels per jar; yes. And I said that the reserved price would be twelve thousand.... not the final one!"

Tang Yuan was left speechlessly staring at Jun Mo Xie, seemingly ready to faint at any moment.

"Don't worry Fatty, I've developed an excellent strategy." Jun Mo Xie smiled mysteriously, turned around and then said: "I've found a good place which is located right opposite to the Magnificent Jewel Hall. Fatty, you're going to be a very big shopkeeper soon, so you better get ready for it. There is an auspicious day three days ahead, so we'll open our shop for business then!"

"That fast?!" the Fat man was a bit startled: "Third young, isn't there a brothel opposite to the Magnificent Jewel Hall? When did you commandeer that place? Isn't that place a little too... and it's opposite to the Magnificent Jewel Hall in particular..... I don't know if your Family's elders have told you, but my Family's elder, especially my Father in particular has repeatedly told me that I simply cannot go about provoking the Magnificent Jewel Hall's people....."

"You're a little too terrified, aren't you? Did you forget what we did to that Li kid?! We have plenty of tricks in our bag; you just finish the decorations." Jun Mo Xie continued in a contemptuous tone: "You'll just be a wooden club! Just make the arrangement like I've told you, and you'll be alright!"

Fatty Tang was at a loss for a while, and then he suddenly patted his thigh: "You got it Boss; there's actually no place better than the ones near the Magnificent Jewel Hall ah; I'll show them who the daddy is!"

Right after making this bold remark, the Fatty suddenly broke into tears again: "Third young... you have to help me with one more thing....."

"What happened?" Jun Mo Xie asked in a vigilant tone: "First tell me."

"My Fiancée and her Family wish to see me; in fact, the Eldest of their Family is coming to see me with her...." Tang Yuan was

still stroking and comforting his belly from previously falling to the ground: "They've heard that I've been kicked out of my house, and she wishes to comfort me, but I... it is actually....."

"Your Fianc❖❖ is quite open-minded... I've really never heard of an arranged couple meeting in this manner before their wedding. This isn't a good thing Fatty... this woman isn't working up to the expectations of the society!" Jun Mo Xie scratched his chin, and then smiled: "What help do you want from me?"

"I just want you to accompany me when I go." Fatty Tang's spirits seemed to have lifted already: "I just want you to carry me back in case I get beaten up tomorrow.... I've heard that their Eldest has quite a temper....."

"Are you joking? This is your first meet as a couple, which is equivalent to a blind-date.... So what are you pulling me along for? Why would you want the red lined-leaves to appear together with greener ones?!"

Jun Mo Xie was looking down at his chest indicatively, and so Tang Yuan also leaned in to watch: "You look at my body, and then you look my face." He said as he patted his body: "Well, do you understand?"

"Understand what?" Tang Yuan blinked his eyes, completely at a loss with regard to Jun Mo Xie's words.

"What I'm saying is obvious, but you just don't understand it. You already cut a very sorry figure, and then you wish to take me, a graceful looking handsome young man straight out of a girl's dream. Who will look at you when you're being accompanied by a man like me?" Jun Mo Xie's mouth spat out some saliva since he finished his entire sentence in one single go, focusing entirely on admiring himself while making no effort to restrain his pride either.

"Why would they look at you? You're just there to help." Tang Yuan looked at him in disdain: "And now that you've said it, how

does the word 'narcissistic' sound as your new nickname?"

"Whether I'm narcissistic or not is not of importance here; the key here is that, what if your Fiancée starts to fancy me tomorrow? It really wouldn't be very alarming.... Put yourself in her shoes, what you would choose, a beautiful tree or dirty mud?" Jun Mo Xie stated as he tilted his eyebrows in a meaningful manner.

"That could happen." Tang Yuan scratched his chin in serious consideration, and started contemplating means to eliminate any possibilities of it: "Maybe you could put on some makeup again? You could paint a few pockmarks on your face, and perhaps a few scars as well! Then you won't look this handsome, right?"

Jun Mo Xie completely crumbled and then retreated in defeat: "I'll go and find Uncle so we can send out those business invitations for the start of our first business day. Don't come looking for me even if you have something important; I'll be very busy."

"Don't forget to accompany me for tomorrow's meeting ah, this is a very important thing ah!" the Hitman accelerated his pace when he heard the Fatty shouting behind him.

After departing from the young master Jun's courtyard, the Solitary Falcon went to find Jun Wu Yi to request a more appropriate training quarters, and was soon after accommodated within Jun Wu Yi's courtyard. Jun Wu Yi's temperament was far more courteous than his nephew's, and even though he was at a fairly advanced stage in his own personal training, he didn't understand many of the problems the Solitary Falcon was facing. Therefore, he decided to allow the Solitary Falcon to commandeer his courtyard and moved himself out of there.

As Jun Wu Yi moved out his training area, the Solitary Falcon took control of it, and set about to his tasks once again. He'd try to mimic the tricks Jun Mo Xie had taught him, and would then he'd sit down on the ground feeling that he'd made a mistake

somewhere, and would then resolve to frowning for a little while as a result before getting back to it.....

This was an obvious case of the turtledove taking control of a pigeon's nest!

However, Jun Wu Yi didn't seem to be minding it at all, and seemed very satisfied in just enjoying the autumn sunlight on the contrary when the young master Jun walked in.

"The invitations? Auspicious day for opening business?" Jun Wu Yi saw the thick pile of invitations, looked at them one by one, and couldn't help but sigh: "Mo Xie, you seem to really favor the rich and despise the poor ah. You've only included the nobility and the rich families in this, and you've completely left out any ordinary families from your list."

"Third Uncle, our auction house only has expensive items on sale, and so only the rich and wealthy would be capable of purchasing them, while the common people would actually be even afraid to enter such an expensive shop. Think about it, if one jar of wine was reserved at twelve thousand taels, then could a common person afford to drink it?"

Jun Mo Xie flapped his eyelids: "I've already included the names of every rich person in the Tian Xiang City, and I will peel off every penny from their hide this time. Although money isn't everything under the sky, but it is still an entity of significance."

A chill ran down Jun Wu Yi's spine. His own nephew's thoughts were sounding a little too crazy to him!

"Hum, Uncle, don't you worry, this is only the start! I'll let them drink all the wine they want before the auction ends, and then I won't give them anymore! Then, I'll wait till they have to go back to drinking that awful wine they had been drinking earlier, ha ha ha.... Then we'll gain a complete monopoly over the market, and we'll only sell a very limited number of wine jars in each auction.... So if they have to drink it... ha ha ha, they'll have to come up with

some real money for it! And the prices of my wine will shoot sky-high! Ha ha ha...." Jun Mo Xie burst into laughter.

Chapter 221: Tyranny

Jun Wu Yi's mouth gaped wide-open, and he couldn't help recoiling under shock for a second.

[This kid is insane.....]

At this precise moment, someone came in and reported: "Third Master, Mu Xue Tong has accompanied an elderly gentleman who claims to be the Sixth Elder of the Silver Blizzard City. He wished to seek a meeting with you Third Master, shall we send them in?"

After his previous visit, Jun Wu Yi had told the Jun Family's servants that Mu Xue Tong was like a brother to him, and that the Jun Family's servants mustn't neglect him or deny him entry unless he's being accompanied by someone potentially hostile.

Jun Wu Yi and his nephew both immediately prepared themselves to welcome Mu Xue Tong at first, but when they heard that he was being accompanied by the Sixth Elder of the Silver Blizzard City, their faces immediately and simultaneously started to reflect a plethora of possibilities that had started to emerge in their minds.

While Jun Wu Yi's facial muscles were twitching in thought, Jun Mo Xie's expression seemed a bit doubtful.

[Isn't this a bit too soon? It seems that they are a bit too efficient, aren't they?]

"Third Uncle, the Sixth Elder is a Spirit Xuan expert, and we won't be able to hide the recovery of your injury from him." Jun Mo Xie immediately thought of this: "However, since it's something we wish to avoid, do you want me to try and do something about it?"

"I don't have anything to hide! Anyway, they'll find out about this sooner or later." Jun Wu Yi shook his head: "The impact of my recovery may not be completely negative since my beloved Yao is

still waiting to hear about me. If Mu Xue Tong was to go back and inform her of my recovery, then just imagine the amount of happiness it will bring to her after all these years of bitter hardships she's suffered."

Jun Wu Yi's face reveled in a shade of gentleness, while his distant eyes seemed to be affectionately gazing at an imaginary woman who was silently staring at him from a distance.

Jun Mo Xie sighed, but didn't say anything. Even though Jun Mo Xie was very perspective in nature, but he could also understand the longing of his Uncle's heart, and the bitter taste of the man's reality, and so he didn't object even though he didn't approve of it.

"Ask them to come here." Jun Wu Yi controlled the tone of his voice, making his words sound reluctant.

Jun Wu Yi pushed his wheelchair forward, and proceeded to meeting them in the courtyard.

"Ha ha, we meet again Wu Yi; your complexion and strength seem a lot better than last times'." Mu Xue Tong smiled warmly as he made a strange signal with his eyes, seemingly trying to indicate a warning which only Jun Wu Yi could understand.

Jun Wu Yi hardened his heart as he cupped his hands in greeting, and then said: "The Sixth Elder has arrived in person, how could this fortunate Wu Yi be of help?"

The Sixth Elder's floating gaze sized up Jun Wu Yi from top to bottom before he spoke up: "Are you Jun Wu Yi?" His majestic voice seemed to be devoid of anger.

"Yes, I am!" Jun Wu Yi replied in a neither servile nor overbearing tone with the touch of a smile on his face.

"Good, good, you're not even forty yet, and your strength has already reached the Sky Xuan realm! Such progress is very rare from this world's standards given the youth of your years!" A cold light flashed in the Sixth Elder's eyes: "I heard that you had injured

yourself in the past, but it seems that you've been recovering very quickly, isn't it?"

The condition of Jun Wu Yi's injuries really couldn't have been hidden from a Spirit Xuan expert's piercing eyes! Jun Mo Xie's guess had been absolutely correct.

Mu Xue Tong was genuinely startled, and looked at Jun Wu Yi with a surprised expression on his face, waiting to hear his reply.

"Oh, Wu Yi was able to get rid of that toxicity with your blessings Elder, but my two legs still need a lot of conditioning before I'll be able to walk again." Jun Wu Yi's smiled faintly as a cold light flashed in his eyes: "This strange injury took away ten years of my life! I'll never be able to forget the bitterness I've tasted in these last ten years."

"Oh, the heavens help the worthy, and the god protects his beloved." The Sixth Elder smiled profoundly: "This is indeed a news worthy of celebration."

"Thank you!" Jun Wu Yi replied and then asked: "Shall we proceed for some tea?"

Jun Mo Xie silently pushed his wheelchair behind him.

"Isn't this your eldest brother, Jun Wu Hui's only son?" The Sixth Elder looked at Jun Mo Xie with an indescribable expression in his eyes.

"Yes!" Jun Wu Yi replied as the hint of a deep-seated pain flashed through his eyes: "He is my Brother's only son lucky-enough to survive till today, and the only descendant of the Jun Family's bloodline."

The Sixth Elder wasn't able to understand the meaning behind 'the only son lucky enough to survive'; but even though Jun Wu Yi stated his nephew's fortune in a plain and dull manner, the Sixth Elder could clearly sense the implied meaning of their Family's extreme misfortunes!

"Ha ha, the sole heirs to a bloodline are often very seriously pampered ha ha!" the Sixth Elder laughed in a gentle and kind manner: "I see that he carries a very well-cultured demeanor; the Jun Family must indeed be very proud of him ah."

"Elder, may I please be given the liberty of asking the Sixth Elder's name?" Jun Mo Xie had heard stories about this man, and hence wanted to know his real name.

The Sixth Elder's eyes ducked for a moment, but then smiled and replied back calmly: "This Old Man's Family name is Xiao. Xiao Han is my nephew."

"Ah." Jun Mo Xie smiled courteously as he quickly concealed that murderous aura which had flashed through his eyes for a moment, and somehow managed to prevent anyone from seeing it: "I really envy Elder Xiao's Spirit Xuan strength for you are strong enough to be counted amongst the most powerful men in this world, and ah, it's a real blessing for my Family that a man of your strength is visiting us today."

The Sixth Elder smiled warmly: "He speaks very decently even at such a young age."

The four men smiled as they walked inside.

Mu Xue Tong was walking on the side, and couldn't help wondering that the Sixth Elder had been working so closely with the Third and Ninth Elder ever since he had joined the Silver Blizzard City that no one had ever referred to him as "a Xiao Elder" in a long time, and as a result, over the years people had almost forgotten that he hailed from the Xiao Family.

Even though both the sides were talking in a very dignified and harmonious manner, it was evident that something was fishy. Moreover, even though the two parties were constantly exchanging very pleasant words with beaming smiles on their faces, the atmosphere was becoming increasingly depressing.

A thought suddenly arose in Mu Xue Tong's mind, and left him rather surprised: [Could it really be possible that the Sixth Elder didn't participate in all those activities at that time? If so, then the Sixth Elder's visit to the Jun Family today could mark the beginning of a new era of devastation for the Jun Family!]

Jun Wu Yi's courtyard, study hall, and living room were all connected, but since Jun Wu Yi had no intention of disturbing the Solitary Falcon, who was engrossed in his practice inside his study hall, he asked his servants to make seating arrangements under a tree in his courtyard.

"This tea is excellent!" the Sixth Elder inhaled the favor, gently sipped at it, and then leaned his body slightly backward as he closed his eyes and relished its aftertaste for a moment before praising it's quality. "Third Master Jun, I don't know of this, but have you come across our Silver Blizzard City's Xiao Family's young master lately?"

"The Xiao Family's young master?" Jun Wu Yi puckered his brows as he pondered: "I've never met him; my disease has only seen improvements recently, and I still can't move about freely since I've forgotten to walk over so many years of my disability, and hence I only have a very little exposure of the world outside the Jun residence, but still I have no idea why the Sixth Elder is asking me this? What's the Xiao Family's son named? Could you tell me his age and appearance?"

"Oh? The Third Master Jun hasn't met him?" the Sixth Elder's body was still leaning backwards, while his eyes were still faintly shut: "My Grandnephew accompanied the Little Princess out to the Tian Xiang City today, but was beaten up by a bold bunch of bandits; the conditions of his injuries are quite serious. This Old Man really can't think of any Tian Xiang City-based Family apart from the Jun, which would have the courage to act so audaciously against us."

"The Sixth Elder seems to be quite sure, but what evidence is

there to support that this was done by the Jun Family? Given the Sixth Elder is one the most experienced men in this world, I presume that the Elder would have some sort of conclusive evidence to support his words!" Jun Mo Xie interrupted in between since he felt a bit wronged by the manner in which the Old Man was accusing his family.

"It's against the norms for youngsters to rashly interrupt two elders when they are speaking unless you wish to make a mockery out of your Family's name. This Jun boy needs to be taught a lesson for the future!" Even though the Sixth Elder snapped back at Jun Mo Xie, his eyes were still half-shut.

The Spirit Xuan expert condensed his Xuan Qi into a muffled sound wave, and directed it straight towards the young master Jun, which drilled straight into his eardrum!

A Spirit Xuan's condensed Xuan Qi can never be taken as a joke; even though it was nothing more than a strong vibration for the two Sky Xuans who were sitting in close proximity, it was powerful enough to send Jun Mo Xie's world tumbling upside-down.

He felt as if a sharp needle had pierced straight into his eardrum, which then proceeded forward from that point and continued to ruthlessly advance forward until it had shaken his entire soul. If the intensity of this sound wave had been any stronger, then it could've possibly left Jun Mo Xie to bleed on the spot, and although this injury wouldn't have been fatal, it was sure to leave the young master Jun with a severe tinnitus; a tinnitus severe enough often carries the danger of causing deafness!

Jun Mo Xie cursed within his heart, [this Old Man is too violent and merciless!]

Even though the young master Jun felt as such, one could always argue that the Sixth Elder could've injured the young master Jun far more seriously in case he wanted to, and had only settled to

serving a deserved punishment for the youngster's breach of conduct!

The young master Jun hadn't been a part of this world for too long, and even though he knew how things worked in theory, he had still never personally experienced the ant-like value a low Xuan Qi martial expert had in the eyes of a Spirit Xuan master.

The Sixth Elder on the other hand hadn't practiced too much restraint at this point since finding about Jun Wu Yi's healing injuries had left him a bit unsettled since it meant more trouble for his nephew. In his eyes, such a lowly family didn't deserve to enjoy such a favorable position and treatment!

Since Jun Mo Xie was the sole heir to the Jun Family's bloodline, he figured that harming the youngster would be equivalent of harming the entire Jun Family!

Upon being suddenly hit by this unforeseen attack, Jun Mo Xie had immediately moved the 'Art of Unlocking the heaven's fortune' into action, and had silently organized its force into a seven-layered defensive structure against the attack. This ruthless sound wave had penetrated through the initial layers of his defense with ease, but found itself spent by the time it reached the last layer, and was eventually unable to pass through his final line of defense. One has to say that the 'Art of Unlocking the heaven's fortune' is a really unique and powerful trump card because even though the difference between the strengths of a Gold Xuan and Spirit Xuan is simply unsurmountable, the young master Jun was somehow able to withstand the attack with its help since the attack didn't carry too much force with it.

Jun Mo Xie was left groaning, while the veins surrounding his nose were visibly bloodshot. The trauma of this injury was partial real, and partly fabricated by Jun Mo Xie's presence of mind since he knew that if the Sixth Elder realized that he was able to withstand this attack.... then the next one would be impossible to deflect.

Chapter 222: The Great Master's rage

Being a Spirit Xuan expert, the Sixth Elder was far stronger than any member of the Jun Family, therefore if Jun Mo Xie exposed his real and unique abilities, then it was quite possible that the Sixth Elder might not hold back a second time. Hence, Jun Mo Xie decided against using his skills to heal his body from the inside, and deliberately allowed his nose to bleed.

The Sixth Elder was still taken aback a bit even then, "Ah?" He exclaimed lightly as he finally opened his eyes and studied Jun Mo Xie's body for a little while, nodded his head, and then said: "That's good!"

The Sixth Elder had always carried himself with the self-respect of a Spirit Xuan expert, and hence didn't attack Jun Mo Xie a second time. Although he was quite surprised by the Young Master Jun's strength, but felt that it wouldn't be very graceful on his part to attack a young Gold Xuan expert again and again.

The Hitman Jun sneered, wiped the blood off his face, and then mocked: "The old man's Spirit Xuan strength is indeed very overbearing!"

These words would've come across as a sincere praise had he said them upon being severely injured by this attack, however since he was able to withstand the attack of a Spirit Xuan expert despite his lowly Xuan Qi level, this sentence came across as an ironic mockery because he had only sustained very minor injuries!

Although the Sixth Elder had only employed a fraction of his true strength while attacking him, but a Spirit Xuan expert is still a Spirit Xuan expert, which meant that it would've still been impossible a Gold Xuan expert to resist the force of his strike under normal circumstances. Having said that, it would've been impossible for the Young Master Jun to withstand this strike if it hadn't been for the mysterious and unique powers which

supported his body!

“Have mercy Sixth Elder!” Mu Xue Tong’s mind had already started contemplating countermeasures to manipulate the Sixth Elder into leaving the Jun residence. Hence, Mu Xue Tong couldn’t help pleading for mercy the moment the Sixth Elder launched such an electric-strike towards Jun Mo Xie.

“Sixth Elder, may I dare to ask the meaning of this?” Jun Wu Yi raised his eyebrows as he asked in a stern voice. Even when the oppressor was a Spirit Xuan expert, Jun Wu Yi wasn’t going to tolerate watching his nephew being bullied in front of his own eyes! “Don’t tell me that attacking their younger in this manner is the normal demeanor of a Silver Blizzard City’s Spirit Xuan Elder?”

“No, but I was just stating the difference in position of the Jun Family and the Silver Blizzard City; if your Family causes us problems, then you will have to pay the corresponding price!”

Even though the Sixth Elder said these words in a very casual manner while looking in Jun Mo Xie’s direction, the real meaning behind his words was obviously unusually overbearing and unreasonable: “This boy actually dared to speak so rudely with this Old Man, hence this Old Man obviously felt like disciplining him once or twice in return! In case he was met with an unreasonable expert, then such words could’ve easily attracted his death, whereas this Old Man’s intentions on the other hand were pure and good since I’ve only done enough to muddle his head a bit, and caused him minor bleeding instead of instantly killing him on the spot! As far as the demeanor of my Family is concerned, the Jun Family isn’t qualified enough to receive my comment on such a question!”

Jun Wu Yi’s body trembled with anger: “What do you expect us to do when you’re blaming such wrongful acts on the Jun Family’s head? What do you have to say about that Sixth Elder? My Family will never submit to such shame! Today your Silver Blizzard City

will have to give my Jun Family an answer for this!”

The Sixth Elder replied leisurely: “If my Xiao Family’s off-springs happen to be in an accident involving the Jun Family ever again, then this is what the Jun Family’s off-springs will face! That was my motive; would you disagree with me? Well, the Jun Family anyway only has one heir in their youngest generation, so it really won’t be much trouble either!

“As for the answers you seek, ha ha... Do you really think that I will give you one?”

The tyrannies of his overbearing intentions were flowing unrestrained at this moment.

The wind produced a whistling sound as a white-haired old man flew into the courtyard carrying a young girl in his arms, but immediately calmed down upon seeing the Sixth Elder and the others sitting together, and drinking tea. [It seems that things haven’t yet gotten out of hand. They still haven’t provoked the tyranny of his anger yet.]

“What makes you come here Third Brother?” The Sixth Elder asked with sense of regret in his heart since he had just attacked Jun Mo Xie; even though it was only a very light attack. [I won’t be able to attack anyone in the Jun Family now that the Third Brother has arrived... The Master was very clear on this subject before we left the Silver Blizzard City.] However, his mind was a bit confused as well; [the Third Brother had decided to divide forces, didn’t he? Then why has he suddenly decided to alter things?]

The Third Elder hadn’t even had the time to respond when a rebellious voice resounded: “Damn it, the tea-sipping shrimp who just disrupted my practice is going to be one sorry bastard!”

“Who was that? How dare you speak so rudely to this Old Man?! Even your corpse won’t survive after this Old Man is done with you!” The Sixth Elder immediately spoke back in retaliation upon

hearing that sharp comment without even worrying twice about picking a fight.

However, he found himself regretting his decision very soon! Because this was one quarrel he simply couldn't afford to pick!

A black silhouette suddenly flew into the air, his black hair floating upwards in the air in his background, and then dived straight towards the Sixth Elder's body like an Eagle with his ten sharp, claw-like fingers angled in the forward direction. The flowers in the courtyard fluttered backwards under the massive force of this movement, while everyone present on the scene was left gasping for breath since the force of this person's advance was so powerful that it had created a vacuum in the area!

Moreover, the influence of this impending strike had already sent the entire area shaking!

It is entirely conceivable that this one incorrect statement of the Spirit Xuan strong Sixth Elders' might just become the cause of his immediate death, and even his corpse may not outlive the consequences of the wrath he had just brought upon himself.

The arrival of this figure had filled the atmosphere with an overbearing and tyrannical momentum! And this momentum was now coming crashing down on the Sixth Elder's head like the dark of a night sky!

The Third and the Sixth Elder exclaimed out in shock: "Solitary Falcon!"

[What's this god of death doing here?!]

[Oh God, did I just unknowingly threaten to kill him?]

However, it was too late to think about these things now, and the Sixth Elder was well aware that self-preservation was the only thing that mattered now. Therefore, he quickly got out of his seat, and then somersaulted backwards about five or six times while organizing his Xuan Qi into consecutive defensive layers in front of

his body in order to defend against this terrorizing force he was faced with!

The Solitary Falcon paid no attention to this heavy line of defense, and forced his body through the air as he tore through those defensive Qi fields; in fact his hands even managed to maintain their original posture as he cut through the Six Elder's defense like a hot knife through butter.

The Third Elder shouted, "Please have mercy Master Falcon!", as he rushed forward to assist the retreating Sixth Elder.

The Solitary Falcon ignored everything as the murderous aura in his eyes solidified into something far more real, and took form in the shape of his ten fingers which readied themselves to strike their target.

The Solitary Falcon was obviously very angry; very, very angry! In fact, it could be said that his rage had crossed all boundaries!

He had been studying the "Eagle Transformation" maneuvers for several decades now, and had been considering that he had reached the point of his next breakthrough a few years ago, but only to be forced into meeting with the insurmountable bottleneck of his own strength level. At this point he ended up meeting Jun Mo Xie, a youngster who was capable of guiding him forward. Moreover, this youngster exposed him to some maneuvers he had never seen before, and he found his mind completely immersed in researching them.

The Solitary Falcon's life had already been linked to Jun Mo Xie's fate by now! However, he had never thought that someone would actually try to harm Jun Mo Xie in his presence!

[I will never be able to grow stronger if this boy dies or even injures himself into disability, ah! In fact, even if the Mysterious Master was to rid me of the blame of not being able to protect this boy, and decided to teach me more anyway... I still would never be able to face him again...]

The Solitary Falcon had obviously noticed a change at the time when the Sixth Elder came-in to meet Jun Wu Yi, but he had decided to ignore all of it since he was struggling to explore the maneuvers he had just learnt...

In fact, it could be said that the Solitary Falcon was so engrossed with his research that he probably would've just ignored the Sixth Elder of the Silver Blizzard City even if the man had arrived to see him instead of Jun Wu Yi.

Although things went well for a while, but then Jun Mo Xie suddenly found himself under attack! Moreover, it was already too late for the Solitary Falcon to act at this point.

The Solitary Falcon almost hollowed under the shock and fear for a split second.

Fortunately for him, the Young Master Jun's extraordinary strength was enough to hold off the attack, else...

The Solitary Falcon would've probably died of a heart-attack!

[Since your actions were intended at stopping me from becoming a peerless martial arts master, the path you've taken is a path which leads you directly in front of my enmity and hatred!]

Even though Jun Mo Xie had been racking his brains to keep the Solitary Falcon inside the Jun residence, the young master Jun had never anticipated that the Solitary Falcon would act so strongly in his favor from the first day itself!

The Solitary Falcon's indomitable fingers had taken an awe-inspiringly murderous shape!

The Solitary Falcon's body continued to cut past the Sixth Elder's defensive layers like a hot-knife through butter!

The Solitary Falcon had already cut past the defenses by the time the Sixth Elder somersaulted backwards a seventh time, and then the Solitary Falcon suddenly accelerated his pace again, and crashed into the Sixth Elder's chest like a flying meteor!

The Third Elder had only just arrived to assist the Sixth Elder at this time, and found himself ramming into the Solitary Falcon's body with a thud.

Bang! The Solitary Falcon's body was taken aback a bit, while the Third Elder was sent flying backwards.

Meanwhile, the Xuan Qi strength of this Great Master had overwhelmed the Sixth Elder completely, and had hit his chest after breaking past all his defensive barriers!

A few "pop", "pop" sounds were heard, and it was rather obvious that the strike had broken a good number of the Sixth Elder's ribs, while the blood spraying out from his mouth dyed his white-colored chest clothing red. It was evident from the bleeding that the Sixth Elder's internal organs had sustained heavy injuries, in fact it wouldn't be surprising in case he had actually injured even five or six of his internal organs!

The Sixth Elder's body rolled backwards like a ball and he bounced over the blossoming flowers twice before finally coming to a halt upon hitting a tree. He struggled to his feet with a bitter expression on his face, taking support from the tree as his mouth constantly vomited more blood.

"Why?" The Sixth Elder opened his mouth to speak but only found himself vomiting more blood. He waved aside Mu Xue Tong with his hand as the man approached closer to assist him in standing back onto his feet, and bit his teeth as his body endured this terrible pain.

The Third Elder, Mu Xue Tong, and the Silver Blizzard City's Little Princess also wanted to ask this one question out loud, but were too stunned to voice their thoughts at this moment.

None of them could figure out why the Solitary Falcon would retaliate with such a grave strike even if the Sixth Elder had offended him with his words since taking the Sixth Elder's life in this manner would only forge an unresolvable hatred between him

and the Silver Blizzard City. [Was it really worth it?]

“This Old Man has always done as his heart desires. I can wipe away thousands of shrimps like you with just a wave of my hand! You should be proud to have lived this long without understanding this basic fact! And who do you think you are to ask me why I did this?”

The Solitary Falcon’s long hair was still floating in his background, while his eyes were still exuding an electric and arrogant aura. His black-colored robes were still swaying in the winds, clearly indicative of the fact that this Great Master’s anger hadn’t yet subsided!

Chapter 223: Do You Agree?

The Solitary Falcon had thrown the Sixth Elder's words back at him, but with a very high degree of satire in them!

The words he had said earlier started to echo in the Sixth Elder's ears, but still felt as they were a blessing compared to the humiliation he was faced with...

The Sixth Elder's face turned red with humiliation and it seemed as if he'd drop dead any moment!

"How dare a little shrimp like you run amok in this Old Man's territory?! You dare to disrupt my practice, you unworthy little fry! And then you actually ask me why I attacked you? Didn't you just say that you'd kill me? How could've I missed out on giving you a chance to do just that?! This is such a big joke! Mr. Xiao, do you really think that you and your Silver Blizzard City are invincible? Well, in my opinion your Xiao Family and the entire Silver Blizzard City are a complete waste with Han Feng Xue being the only exception!"

The Solitary Falcon took two steps forward as he folded both his arms behind his back. He looked at the grieving expression on the Sixth Elder's face and asked: "What? This is what I think; would you care to differ? I'm asking you, and I've already said what I wanted to; would you agree with me?"

The Sixth Elder fiercely stared back at the Solitary Falcon, but his lips remained tightly-shut and he didn't say anything in return. His eyes however, clearly illustrated the desires of his heart.

"Mr. Xiao, if your reply makes me unhappy, then I will immediately head off to the Magnificent Jewel Hall and behead all the Silver Blizzard City people who are inside the Tian Xiang City at this time! And that includes your two brothers, and your two Xiao Family's members, and even this little girl! Ha ha... Very good, very good, it really doesn't look like you've brought anything

worthwhile to the Tian Xiang City, so it really shouldn't be much of a trouble for me! Hey Shrimp, you tell me, do you think I wouldn't dare to do something like this?"

The Solitary Falcon laughed fiercely: "Stop playing deaf and dumb, and quickly get up to your feet right now. This Old Man is going to ask you once again: do you agree with me?"

The Solitary Falcon's eyes were clearly expressing the cruelty of his intentions.

"Master Falcon, let's not make too much of this matter... Our City's master has always been honorable towards all, and we might have to work with each other in the future someday, so let's not spoil our relations over this!" The Third Elder shouted out loudly.

"Bah! You stay out of this! That Old Feng's honor is the only reason I haven't killed this Shrimp already, but I'm not letting him off this easy after he insults by saying things like 'even your body won't remain after I'm done with you'!"

"Old Han has honor, but this Shrimp's mouth doesn't. If he hadn't seen me, then wouldn't he have done his will to the Juns? But since you're playing around in my territory, I'll naturally want to play along with you! How dare you have the courage to tell me otherwise? I'm going to do what I want, got it! And I'll do as I want until Mr. Xiao answers me!"

The Solitary Falcon waved his hand: "So now even your life depends on his mouth!"

"This Old Man has asked you a question, and I will not be asking a third time!" The Solitary Falcon asked sternly and slowly: "Now answer me!"

It looked as if the Sixth Elder would die of grief any moment! Such humiliation had already turned his entire body numb, in fact, his heart had already given up on life at this point but he was still being forced to endure more of it! The Solitary Falcon had made

his intentions very clear; the life all the entire high-class of the Silver Blizzard City who were presently inside the Tian Xiang City depended on his reply now.

The Sixth Elder was convinced that a madman such as the Solitary Falcon could actually do something like this! [In case my reply offends the Solitary Falcon, then he might actually bury everyone's bones right here and right now!]

[And even if the Solitary Falcon actually kills us all, the Silver Blizzard City may still not be able to catch hold of this monster!]

This humiliation was already too much for him to bear! Although he still hadn't understood why the Solitary Falcon was so offended by him, [but what did I do to make him so mad?] However he obviously knew that this wasn't the time to think about it either!

"I... I..." The Sixth Elder's lips moved a few times, and then he eventually closed his eyes shut and tear drops slowly squeezed out from the corner of his eyes: "... agree!" The Sixth Elder's eyes rolled back under his closed eyelids as he said this last word.

"Very good! Now that this Shrimp has understood this basic fact, I don't think I'll be interested in bothering with him much." The Solitary Falcon smiled in a brutal manner, and then slowly turned his eyes towards the Third Elder, Mu Xue Tong and the Little Princess: "Who else doesn't accept this?!"

"I'm not in agreement with this whole 'bully the weak attitude'... If you want to kill me for it, then I'd be happy to have the 'Eighth Great Master's' mastery as my last memory!" Mu Xue Tong stepped forward, glaring at the Solitary Falcon with big and round eyes which seemed completely devoid of all fears.

"I also refuse to accept this!" The Little Princess, Han Yan Meng also stepped out boldly glaring at the Solitary Falcon with a look of extreme dissatisfaction in her eyes.

"Ha ha, some of the Silver Blizzard City's people really aren't

afraid of death! That's very good!" The Solitary Falcon smiled: "I've just opened his eyes today, but the two of you are too young to understand it, and instead feel aggrieved by my behavior... do you really think that someone my age would take interest in bullying people from a younger generation? I'm not like some others who like to bully those younger than themselves! Don't worry, I consider this Sky Xuan boy and this little girl to be under Han Feng Xue's tutelage, but I'll tell you that you shouldn't dare to act so courageously in situations where you're too young to understand the reality!"

The Solitary Falcon finished his sentence and then completely ignored the two of them altogether. Then, his eyes readjusted at the Sixth Elder once again and a cold smile enveloped his face.

The Sixth Elder almost fainted with anger upon hearing the Solitary Falcon's words since they implied that he considered even a Spirit Xuan expert of the Sixth Elder's caliber a mere amateur.

Owing to the fact that his words almost made a Spirit Xuan expert faint with anger, one could say that the Solitary Falcon's ability to mock people, and enrage them as a result was only second to the young master Jun.

"Master Falcon, you've attacked my brother for no reason today; there was no justice in your murderous actions! You will have to give the Silver Blizzard City an answer for this!" The Third Elder spoke up angrily after finally having recovered from the shock.

The Solitary Falcon laughed mockingly: "You say that I tried to murder your brother without any reason... So, if you are right, then how's he still alive? Are you saying that I don't have the skill to kill him?"

The Third Elder couldn't help finding himself at a loss for words as he started realizing that the Solitary Falcon's aggression might have been provoked by some words or actions of his younger brothers'. He obviously knew that offending a man of the Solitary

Falcon's strength only had one end: death!

Seeing that the Third Elder had no words to reply with, the Solitary Falcon calmed himself down and then continued to elevate his position in this argument: "And then there's that part about the "Explanations"! What did this Shrimp say when Jun Wu Yi asked him for an explanation? And then you actually want me to explain my actions to you? Why shall I explain anything to you? And how shall I explain myself to you?"

Jun Mo Xie smiled from the sidelines: "The "so-called" explanation the Sixth Elder gave us wasn't very clear, but was still quite thought provoking to my ears. I believe that I must ponder over his words for at least two-three days before I'll be able to understand their meaning..."

"However, it seemed to me that when someone is not as strong as you, you don't feel the need to give them any explanations, and therefore when someone is stronger than you, they must not be required to explain their actions to you either! Basically, strength is an all-purpose explanation for everything! It seems to me that this is the guiding principle of the Silver Blizzard City ah! So now our strength is higher than yours, but you still want us to explain things to you? What makes you think that the Silver Blizzard City should get all the advantages? He he... this is strange..."

The Little Princess, Han Yan Meng heard the loud and clear words Jun Mo Xie had just uttered, and couldn't help looking at him; her expression seemed to conveying that she found Jun Mo Xie to be familiar, and was carefully looking at his body from top to bottom with her eyes opened wide, [I've obviously never seen this person before, but then why does he seem familiar?]

The Third Elder also suddenly turned around and looked at Jun Mo Xie, hummed twice, and then turned his face once again towards the Solitary Falcon: "Master Falcon, please extinguish your thunderous rage... and how about we step aside for a few words?"

The Solitary Falcon snorted, but didn't answer. His feet didn't even move as he drifted afloat like a cloud and made his way to a corner. The Third Elder first asked Mu Xue Tong to look after the Sixth Elder, and then whispered something else in his ears as well as he passed him by. He whispered his words so softly that even if someone had gathered the courage to eavesdrop, the said-person still wouldn't have been able to hear anything at all.

"Hey girl, what are you looking at? Have you never seen a handsome guy before? Have you started liking me?" Jun Mo Xie's heart skipped a beat as he realized that the young girl had been staring at him for sometime now, and quickly realized that he really couldn't afford allowing this girl to recognize him! [If she recognizes me then the justice won't be on our side anymore!]

"Hum!" Han Yan Meng's nose wrinkled as her face revealed a disdainful expression. She shifted her gaze away from him without giving him any answers. The last time she had seen Jun Mo Xie, the Hitman's body had just drilled out of the ground with dirt all across his face. Moreover, even if his face had been clean enough for her to recognize him now, she wouldn't have been able to since she had been too embarrassed to look at his body, or face because he was completely naked at that time. Then, by the time he had covered his body with a piece of cloth, his face had already been stained by so much blood that it was almost impossible to make out anything.

As a result, the Little Princess still hadn't been able to tell that the violent and naked man she had earlier ran into was the same youngster who was now standing in front of her.

"Is she Yao's sister?" Jun Wu Yi looked at Han Yan Meng as he asked Mu Xue Tong with a hint of excitement in his voice.

"Yes, she is youngest Princess of our City; her name is Han Yan Meng." Mu Xue Ting smiled and then asked: "Wu Yi, is your injury getting better just like the Sixth Elder said?"

“Yes, he was right!” Jun Wu Yi looked at Han Yan Meng again, sighed lightly and then replied: “Yes that’s right brother Mu, but I think that my legs still won’t be able to move about freely for quite some time.”

Jun Wu Yi naturally understood that Mu Xue Tong’s intentions were quite sincere, but still couldn’t tell him the truth at this time. [I can certainly trust you brother, but I can’t say the truth out loud in front of so many outsiders!]

[However, I must try and find an opportunity to tell Brother Mu about this later on in-person; but not at this moment, else the biggest secret of the Jun Family will become public knowledge.]

Han Yan Yao’s heart would finally be able to find some comfort as long as Mu Xue Tong was able to deliver this news to her. However, this was still the exact opposite of what Jun Wu Yi had originally planned on!

“Good! Very good!” Mu Xue Tong excitedly patted Jun Wu Yi’s hand: “I will immediately send a message to tell the Eldest Princess about this; I can imagine how much joy this news will bring her!”

Chapter 224: Starting an Enmity is Met with the Regrets of a Vengeful Compensation

“Thank you Brother Mu!” Jun Wu Yi replied in a soft tone.

“You are Jun Wu Yi, my Brother-in-law? You look very sensible and mature; I’ve listened to my sister talk about you every day hee hee...” Han Yan Meng tilted her head as she tried to size up Jun Wu Yi, and then asked: “My sister spends her entire day thinking about you, so how come you don’t go there to see her? In case you don’t have her address in the Silver Blizzard City, then I can just tell you right now.”

Jun Wu Yi’s face twitched with pain as the memories of his past came rushing back to him: “I want to go there! Over this past decade... there hasn’t been one day when I didn’t wish to see her again...”

“Oh...” Han Yan Meng nodded as if she had understood his meaning, but hadn’t in reality which is why she asked: “You can’t go there because of your legs? There’s a very good doctor in the Silver Blizzard City, and I can introduce you to him!”

“Little Princess, it’s not that Wu Yi doesn’t wish to go there, it’s just that he can’t go there unless he becomes tyrannically strong. Otherwise he wouldn’t even be able to come anywhere near the Silver Blizzard City; let alone enter it!” Mu Xue Tong sighed and then explained.

“Why?” The Little Princess asked with her big eyes opened wide: “Even I can come and go whenever I want, and his skills are obviously much superior to mine.”

“Idiot!” Jun Mo Xie grunted as he made no efforts to hide his opinion; [this little girl is simply too much work, isn’t she? She just called my uncle her Brother; that’s just too cheap and disgusting!]

“Your nephew is so impolite! Shouldn’t he be calling me ‘Aunt’?”

Han Yan Meng stuck out her tongue as she looked at Jun Mo Xie, and then turned towards Jun Wu Yi and complained: “I will go back and tell my sister about this. She will teach him a lesson once she comes to the Jun Family! Someone really needs to teach him some manners!”

“Your sister... is coming to the Jun Family?” Jun Wu Yi was stunned for a moment after hearing this sentence, and suddenly found his heart brimming with joy. However, even though his heart was jolting excitement all of a sudden, the traces of its previously rancid flavor still refused to subside. It was almost as if someone has dipped a cherry in acid.

“Ah, she would obviously like to marry you, and then she would naturally have to come to the Jun Family. The only reason my sister has been practicing so hard all this time is because she wants to marry you!” Han Yan Meng spread out her hands as her face exposed an ‘obviously’ expression.

“Oh...” Jun Wu Yi’s eyes numbed with moisture, while his excited heart left him unable to speak anything in return.

Ten years of separation, and he had finally found out her real thoughts, [she still thinks about me, still misses me, but I...]

“Will you tell me everything about your sister? Little Sister...” Jun Wu Yi’s body leaned forward while his eyes reveled in his eagerness and his tone clearly expressed the urgency of his heart.

“Of course, that’s not a problem, but...” Han Yan Meng proudly jumped up as her eyes and fingers pointed towards Jun Mo Xie: “But first you tell him to call me ‘aunt’. He is your nephew, and you are my future Brother-in-law, so that makes me his aunt. He should be calling me ‘Aunt’, right?”

“Like hell!” Jun Wu Yi hadn’t even had the time to respond when he heard this curse, and then turned around to find that Jun Mo Xie had already “whooshed” out of sight...

[Well, that little thing was burning my body; I had already suspected that she would be quite difficult to handle, but I never thought that she'd burn me out so quickly... this girl is simply mind-boggling. I was old enough to be your father in my previous life, and you want me to call you 'aunt'? She's such an annoying girl; I really feel like teaching her a lesson!]

Jun Mo Xie decided against returning to his courtyard after fleeing the scene in anger, and instead decided to leave the Jun Family's residence altogether.

The Solitary Falcon was residing at the Jun residence at the moment, which meant that his family would be safe.

Therefore, the Hitman had decided on doing something entirely different in order to change his currently gloomy mood.

Jun Mo Xie was a man of strong character, was quite hardworking and extremely stubborn, and always took things his way, but still kept his promises no matter what; these were some of his most remarkable features!

However, his personality was governed by another very major attribute; he simply couldn't hold back his grievances!

The Sixth Elder's previously bullish nature had angered Jun Mo Xie, and hence he had decided to take it out on the Xiao Family's people! [Overbearing people with tyrannical strength can often be bullish in nature, but you simply do not bully me!]

[And in case you do, I will get back at you for it; and a hundred times over at that!]

Although the Solitary Falcon had already taught the Sixth Elder a big lesson, but Jun Mo Xie being an evil monarch in his previous life had always had differing opinions from others. Even though the punishment the Solitary Falcon had imparted was more than enough in the eyes of most people... in Jun Mo Xie's eyes, it still wasn't enough!

In fact, it was far from being enough.

Starting an enmity is met with the regrets of a vengeful compensation!

How could an evil monarch just sit back idle after being offended by someone? Although he was in a different world now and even though his strength was weaker in comparison... and even if his culprit was one of the most powerful men in this world... the evil monarch was still the evil monarch!

[The Solitary Falcon's actions aren't the same as my own! You attacked me, and so I must personally pay you back for it! Having my anger find its outlet by the hands of another man isn't the Evil Monarch's style!]

As a result, Jun Mo Xie had decided to take revenge! Moreover, he had made perfect use of this opportunity and had left the Jun Family since no one would suspect him to leave at this time!

.....

The Third Elder and the Solitary Falcon had moved into one corner, and even though the two men seemed very calm and composed, but the bellies of both these men were filled with doubts.

The Solitary Falcon's main confusion was: [The Jun Family can be regarded as a very powerful and influential Family, but their might is limited to the Tian Xiang Empire. In terms of the entire continent, they would, at best, be regarded as a large Family, and obviously wouldn't be able to compare to such powerful super-organizations; But then why would such a Family deliberately try to provoke an organization as powerful as the Silver Blizzard City?]

He obviously understood that the Sixth Elder's words were natural for a man of his position, and could understand that by the virtue of being member of the Xiao Family, the man would

obviously wish to impose himself in a higher position with respect to the Jun Family. However, he simply couldn't understand why the Jun Family would try to provoke a Spirit Xuan expert into doing such a thing... Especially when this particular Spirit Xuan expert had an organization as powerful as the Silver Blizzard City standing in his support!

These thoughts had left the Solitary Falcon completely puzzled!

The Third Elder also had a bellyful of doubts.

[The Solitary Falcon is the Eighth Greatest Master, so why would he be sitting in the Jun Family's residence? Moreover, why would he try to protect the Jun Family even at the cost of offending the Silver Blizzard City? The Solitary Falcon isn't any easy character to win over ah!]

[The reason behind the Solitary Falcon and the Jun Family's association is simply too difficult to comprehend!]

[And then there's a lot more that I simply can't understand... If the Jun Family and the Solitary Falcon continue to work together, then the Jun Family will automatically be defended against all kinds of harm. In fact, Yan Han Yao and Jun Wu Yi would be able to forge their path to a happy married life from their current situation of fire and water; even if they have to cross an ocean of blood and corpses to get there...!]

"May I dare to ask why the Great Master is here?" The Third Elder's attitude was so respectful that one simply couldn't tell that he was talking to a man he now considered a personal enemy since this man had just insulted a high-class member of the Silver Blizzard City.

"Have I even asked you anything yet? Why are you here? How are the Silver Blizzard City and the Jun Family related? Why would your Brother disregard his status and downgrade to seeking out a quarrel with such a young boy?!" The Solitary Falcon snorted as he asked.

“You don’t know the cause-and-effect of this situation?” The Third Elder suddenly stared back. He was left standing dumbstruck in his spot, [he doesn’t know why we’re here?!]

“Know what? Why else would I be asking you?” The Solitary Falcon had already started feeling a bit hollowed inside, and could faintly sense that he had brazenly stuck out his foot and landed himself into some sort of trouble.

After recovering from the initial surprise, the Third Elder carefully recounted all the facts which had led to this grudge between the Jun Family and the Silver Blizzard City in detail. However, he obviously left out the internal conflicts of the Silver Blizzard City out of his story.

The Solitary Falcon listened to the story dumbfounded.

He stood dazed for a long time, and then angrily stomped about in circles a few times.

[Damn it, no wonder that kid tried everything possible to get me to stay here with the Jun Family, and even wracked his brains to ensure that I promised to protect the Jun Family for a year’s time...]

[This Family looked so cultured at first, but it seems that they have ambushed me...]

[I can be regarded as a thief in this pirate ship!]

[That goddamned treacherous little devil!]

[He cleverly dragged me into the waters, and I... now I don’t have much of a choice!]

After all said and done, the Solitary Falcon was still one of the Eight Great Masters, and even though ordinary people were afraid of the Silver Blizzard City because they were backed by Han Feng Xue, the Solitary Falcon wasn’t one of such people. However, although the Solitary Falcon’s heart harbored no fear of them, but he was still quite angry with Jun Mo Xie, [that little devil tricked

me into doing his will!]

[But then if I think about it... had I been in knowledge of this situation, then even I don't know how I would've reacted to his offer... even though I'm not afraid of the Silver Blizzard or Han Feng Xue, but I probably still wouldn't have wanted to provoke such troubles...]

As it stood, in case the Solitary Falcon was to go back on his word, then the world would assume that he was afraid of Han Feng Xue. Finding himself riding a tiger he simply couldn't get off now, he was left with no other option but to comfort himself: [I've never found Han Feng Xue and his Silver Blizzard City very pleasing, and this is happening just when I needed opponents to practice against... the Silver Blizzard City has plenty of them... I'll have to give that little devil this much credit. Moreover, he didn't just idly sit back and watch this happening to his Family... and this situation will also help me to greater achievements in the future...]

[However, when you think about it, the Silver Blizzard City has a myriad of powerful experts, and must easily have at least a dozen Spirit Xuan experts in addition to the continent's third most powerful individual in their ranks.] Even the Solitary Falcon couldn't help finding himself lacking in confidence when faced with such a powerful force.

[If the Silver Blizzard City wasn't involved in this, and this was only about the Xue Hun Manor, then I could've easily dealt with it because the strength of the Jun Family's enemies would've been very limited...]

He looked down upon himself as this thought crossed his mind: [Bah, the Silver Blizzard City and the Xue Hun Manor have never gotten along well, so why would they combine their strengths in order to deal with just the Jun Family? Is there anyone worthy enough of making these two hostile forces combine their strengths? They would never join their forces, and if you take things step by step, then that Little Devil's mysterious master

could easily deal with any trouble Han Feng Xue or Li Jue Tian can cause... these guys just don't know about that right now... but what if I had such strength?...]

“Don't say anymore on this subject.” The Solitary Falcon thought about the strength and knowledge of the young master Jun's master, and then flapped his eyelids with excitement as he angrily stated in an authentic tone: “I'm here with the Jun Family, so you'll have to deal with me in case you wish to come back looking for more trouble!”

Even though the Third Elder was a bit doubtful of it, he still couldn't help pondering over this threat. Quickly changing the subject, he carefully asked: “Master Falcon, are you aware that a peerless master resides in secrecy inside the Tian Xiang City?”

Chapter 225: Master Falcon's Gloom

“Who is this unparalleled Master?” The Solitary Falcon’s eyes narrowed, [the Silver Blizzard City’s people know who the Mysterious Master is? I thought I had an exclusive patent on him!]

“I don’t know what identity this Master disguises himself under within the Tian Xiang City... I only know that this Master’s cultivation is so high that it’s beyond anything the world has ever seen!”

The Third Elder’s eyes were still clearly showing the traces of a lingering fear: “For reason’s unknown, this mysterious Master created a Xuan Field a few days ago; it was so powerful that we were able to sense it miles away! And today we were able to locate another marvel of this Masters’...”

The Solitary Falcon pretended to understand these words only vaguely since he didn’t wish to disclose any knowledge to the Third Elder, but couldn’t prevent his eyes from reflecting a slight hint of respect for the Mysterious Master: “What marvels? Tell me, I want to know!” The Solitary Falcon had already understood that the Third Elder was actually referring to the Young Master Jun’s Master, and couldn’t help secretly laughing up his sleeve, [you don’t know this yet, but you’ve just offended that Master’s disciple today. Do you think that this will be good for you?]

The Third Elder on the other hand, was carefully watching the Solitary Falcon’s face with a conscious mind, [it seems that the Solitary Falcon is aware of this person’s existence, and it appears that this person’s strength is far superior to the Falcon since this Falcon will only ever admire someone far stronger than himself!] Left with no other option, the Third Elder continued: “The Maple forest in the south of the City has long been an elegant landscape, but for reasons unknown, this landscape was burnt away by this unrivalled Master in a fit of rage. This forest covered miles and miles of landscape in radius earlier, but all of it disappeared in

silence earlier today... that ground is now barren... so much so that one can't even find any grass there anymore..."

The Solitary Falcon puffed out some cold air.

[Did you just come here after inspecting the Southern Maple Forest? Is this the place to come after witnessing such a shocking and shattering sight?]

"May I dare to enquire the relation between this unrivalled Master and Master Falcon..." The Third Elder asked cautiously. The Third Elder had already determined that the Solitary Falcon and this unrivalled Master were linked somehow, but didn't know the nature of their association. In fact, this was all actually secondary since the most important thing which the Third Elder wanted to know was whether the Jun Family had anything to do with this mysterious and unrivalled Master. Naturally, the Third Elder was terrified of this possibility; [that would be really bad for us!]

"I don't know him! I don't know him!" The Solitary Falcon repeatedly shook his head in denial: "I have never ever heard of him before! Not even in the slightest!"

[Hum, you come here all the way from your Silvery City and start looking for trouble in that Old Man's town, and you actually thought that he won't even revert back in kindness?! I think there's a lot more for you to see in the future!]

[Its best that you just go back to the Silver Blizzard City and send back Old Han to deal with this man. In fact, I think that this man's one single strike would be enough to leave Old Han bleeding inside his armor! It's funny how even the Old Han seems like a joke now.] the Solitary Falcon hollowed in gloom as this thought crossed his mind.

"Are you sure?" The Third Elder's whitened eyebrows shot up since he had been looking to get some information from the Solitary Falcon, and hadn't anticipated that the man would simply

block him off.

“What? You don’t believe me?” The Solitary Falcon glared back.

The Third Elder started feeling even more dejected: [this man ah, you just put us through so much humiliation by beating up my Sixth brother, and now you actually want me to believe all these lies coming out of your mouth? Go make a fool out of someone else!]

“Master Falcon,” The Third Elder cupped his hands in greeting: “I won’t comment on today’s affairs since my strength isn’t as good as yours; however, Master Falcon has subjected the Silver Blizzard City to a great deal of humiliation today, and you’ll have to answer for this once we come back with our great Elders; and so it’s better if you leave before then!”

“Ha ha, are you talking about the Xiao Duo? Hum, do you really think that they can cause this Old Man any sort of trouble by themselves?! If you really want me to give you an answer for this, then you must ask Old Han to personally come and confront me! Ha ha, Xiao Xing Yun and Xiao Bu Yu, the two walls of the Silver Blizzard City; the two who soar above the mountains and the clouds... This Old Man would love to see those two Old bastards, and I certainly want to see what they are capable of soaring above!”

The Third Elder’s expression remained unchanged as he smiled and said “Master Falcon won’t be disappointed to meet them.”

The Third Elder finished his sentence, motioned Mu Xue Tong to pick up the Sixth Elder’s body, and then proceeded to the exit along with Han Yan Meng. Suddenly, he turned around upon reaching the door, and then looked back at the Solitary Falcon as he slowly said: “There is one more thing that I didn’t wish to say, but I doubt that Master Falcon’s tyrannical pride would pay any heed to it... According to our sources, the Xue Hun Manor’s master took fancy to a woman the last time he was in the Tian Xiang City,

and has been wanting to take that woman as his concubine ever since; and that woman happens to be the Jun Family's daughter-in-law, Guan Qing Han! She is living with the Jun Family at present! Since Master Falcon intends on staying here, he must start making his preparation early because I'm afraid that the Xue Hun Manor isn't as cultured as my Silver Blizzard City!"

The Third Elder smiled as he finished this sentence, and then left without ever turning back again.

Han Yan Meng flashed a clever smile in Jun Wu Yi's direction as she waved to him before leaving: "Third Brother Jun, if I ever get a chance to come here again then I will tell you some more stories. Also, tell your nephew that he must call me "Little Aunt" the next time he sees me! Otherwise, I will tell my sister that you and your nephew partnered up in bullying me!"

Jun Wu Yi smiled as he continued to wave back at her until they had exited out of the gate.

Meanwhile, the Solitary Falcon was just standing in his spot with a dumbstruck expression on his face!

In fact, he was completely taken aback!

[This is not just a pirate ship! I've directly fallen miles into an endless Abyss! Now it's not even possible for me to pull my feet out even if I want to...]

[The Xue Hun Manor from the South, and the Silver Blizzard City from the North! These two are considered the two most powerful forces in this world, and this tiny Jun Family has actually managed to provoke them both at the same time...]

[For a handful of strokes, I've managed to put myself into... Far too much trouble!]

[Damn this day!]

The Solitary Falcon stood dazed in his roots for a long while, and then suddenly roared out in anger: "That devil of a Jun! You little

bastard! Come out and face this Old Man!”

The Solitary Falcon flew across the Jun residence a few times but didn't find any traces of Jun Mo Xie. Left with no other option, he angrily returned back to Jun Wu Yi's courtyard murmuring: "... that Little Bastard, this Old Man is going to peel all that smartness off your skin once I catch a hold of you! You, you, you..."

Jun Wu Yi obviously excused himself silently, and decided to carry on with his own sword-play practice rather than hiding in his bedroom, leaving the Solitary Falcon alone in the company of his own sulky breathing... feeling depressed enough to kill someone...

In fact, he was so feeling so gloomy that he actually wanted to kill someone in order to vent out his grief!

As it happens, had the Third Elder proposed this threat early-on, then the Solitary Falcon would've simply neglected it by considering it a "fake" threat. After all, the Xue Hun Manor and the Silver Blizzard City are the two most powerful forces in the world, and both harbored a mutual sense of enmity towards the other. In fact, these two forces were unlikely to join hands even if they were opposed by someone like Yun Bie Chen...

However, the Third Elder hinted at the thought of this collaboration only after he described the Mysterious Master as "Unrivalled in the world" and "beyond anything the world has ever seen". Although his intention had been to extract information out of the Solitary Falcon, but he ended up reminding the Solitary Falcon of this Mysterious Master's strength.

[Even if they were to join hands... what could Han Feng Xue and Li Jue Tian do against this Mysterious Master especially since he is actually capable of making a vast expanse of forest disappear so silently?] The Solitary Falcon hadn't yet touched the young Master Jun until now out of sheer respect for his Master, but he didn't really care that much about it!

[His backing is simply too strong ah! They could make these two forces fade away in the wind and rain if the Mysterious Master decided to act in person...]

However, the Solitary Falcon simply wasn't able to locate his culprit, Jun Mo Xie; nor could he figure out where the youngster had slipped off to...

At this time, dusk had already begun to set outside the Jun residence.

The Silver Blizzard City's high-class were walking on the road, and no one seemed to be speaking much. In fact, even the Little Princess, who was usually a very lively presence, was awfully quiet at the moment which only added to the depressing atmosphere of their company.

While being carried on Mu Xue Tong's back, the condition of the Sixth Elder's injuries had already started seeing some improvements since the man had been constantly circulating his Xuan Qi within his body. This man was indeed a Spirit Xuan expert at the end of the day, which meant that no serious injuries or illnesses would ever be able to pose much of a threat to his life as long as his Xuan Qi was supporting his body. He had already wrapped his Xuan Qi firmly around his body, and was now working on reviving it to normal health; the recovery of his broken chest bones was only a matter of time and effort now.

However, the humiliation the Sixth Elder had just suffered today was something he had never experienced before in his lifetime!

One could tell from his face that the mere thought of the Jun Family would remind him of the moment he was forced to say the words "I accept", which would only bring back that grim feeling of "better-off-being-dead" once again!

Although the Sixth Elder hadn't said anything so far, one could clearly tell the desires of his heart from the manner in which he was biting his teeth, leaving his jaws to drip blood onto Mu Xue

Tong's back and clothes; even his eyes were as red as the blood dripping out of his mouth!

"Sixth brother..." The Third Elder tried to speak up, but eventually sighed and swallowed his words back. He had known the Sixth Elder for over three decades now and hence knew the man well enough to understand his thought process. The Third Elder was finally unable to help himself, sighed, and then spoke up in a heavy tone: "... that... but that man was the Solitary Falcon ah!"

"I know, Third Brother... I know what you're trying to say... That there is no shame for a man of my skill to be defeated at the hands of the Solitary Falcon! Is that it? In fact, if I had resisted him, I'm afraid I would've brought a greater disaster upon myself..."

The Sixth Elder's voice sounded low, while his face reveled in a mournful smile: "But... the dead do not have to suffer such shame... I... I..." the fact that a legendary Spirit Xuan expert had actually started to choke under his emotions was a clear indication of the indignation this shame had stimulated in the man's psyche.

"Sixth Elder, you have my respect! You only bore this shame in order to protect our lives! I'm very young when compared to you, but even I know how easy it would've been to say "no", and how difficult it was to say "I accept"!" Mu Xue Tong's emotions were automatically pouring out of his mouth at the moment.

These words were obviously very effective since the pain on the Sixth Elder's face subsided to a great extent after seeing the respectful expression on everyone's faces. However, the topic suddenly turned a full circle as Mu Xue Tong continued: "In fact, when it comes to shame and humiliation, even the Sixth Elder's actions in beginning weren't very wise from the Jun Family's perspective. I guess this was just the fruit those actions bore... If you hadn't been that aggressive in the beginning, then maybe..."

Mu Xue Tong was only speaking his thoughts. Mu Xue Tong had long been dissatisfied with the Sixth Elder's bullish and overbearing attitude, but had always forcefully subdued his opinion since the man occupied a much higher position and status in society in comparison to his own. However, he seemed to have already lost control over that restraining ability at this moment, which was clearly reflecting in the tone of his voice...

Chapter 226: The Unrivalled Master

“Xue Tong!” The Third Elder shouted anxiously. Although he too believed in the rationality of Mu Xue Tong’s words, but felt that it wouldn’t be best to provoke the Sixth Elder at this time since the man was already blaming himself for today’s misfortunes!

“Put me down! This Old Man isn’t dead yet; I can walk on my own!” The Sixth Elder shouted furiously: “This Old Man doesn’t need to learn ‘conduct’ from a young man like yourself! You need to watch your words! You can’t talk to this Old Man in this manner even if you’re an expert in your own merit! Measure your weight and qualifications before commenting on this Old Man’s way of going about things again!”

Mu Xue Tong’s face went pale with anger as he voiced his thoughts again: “You really have a lot of courage ah! You didn’t seem this tough when you were faced with the Solitary Falcon earlier, but now you’re taking it out on me? And do you really think that I’m enjoying carrying you on my back?!”

Even though Mu Xue Tong was a bit hesitant, the Sixth Elder had already struggled off his back and onto the ground. However, the pain from his injured and broken chest bones only aggravated further, leaving his forehead dripping cold-sweat.

“Indeed, you really are tough. Had you been this prideful in front of the Solitary Falcon earlier, then you might have actually earned my respect instead of being in this position!”

The Third Elder hadn’t even had the time to act as a mediator when a cold and sharp voice sounded rather unexpectedly; blatantly mocking them with its words. An enormous Qi Field came into existence out of nothing almost simultaneously as a masked black-robed man descended from the heavens in the same manner as a deity would. However, the unusually strange manner in which this person had suddenly appeared in front of everyone,

coupled with his cold eyes which seemed to be flickering with an even colder radiance, made him seem more like a monster in contrast.

“It’s him!” Little Princess Han Yan Meng screamed as her trembling body ducked behind the Third Elder’s, while the manner in which she clutched onto the Third Elder’s robe clearly expressed the fears she couldn’t state in words. The sudden appearance of this black-robed man had apparently terrified her to the core: “He’s the man who beat up Brother Xiao before hitting me as well!”

The Third Elder’s heart sank!

His biggest fear had arrived in flesh! The real trouble... had finally arrived!

And this horrifying nightmare was far more terrifying than any threat the Solitary Falcon posed to them.

The Silver Blizzard City’s nobility clearly felt the overwhelming pressure of this insurmountable strength, and were left trembling as a result. Of the four of them, the Little Princess was only afraid of this person due to ferocity of this person’s nature since the abuse he had dealt on Xiao Feng Wu had left a very deep impression in her psyche. Moreover, upon recalling the attitude this person had exhibited at the time, and finding it similar to his present one only made her fear this “ignorant and fearless man” even more!

In contrast, the fears of the other three people in her company were far more real in comparison. Being more knowledgeable than her, they had already understood that this person was extremely furious at the moment which was being clearly demonstrated by his exploding momentum as well as the malice in his eyes. They could clearly understand that such a person wouldn’t ever allow his momentum to reach a point where it could devour the heavens and earth unless the said-person was trying to demonstrate the

destruction he was capable of causing!

In fact, this Aura was exactly the same as the one they had felt at the time they were entering into the Tian Xiang City. Moreover, this Aura was just as vast, boundless, transcending above the heavens, and deeper than the oceans as the one they had felt earlier; a fact which only added to their fears!

[Overbearing! Unparalleled! Irresistible!]

[This person is certainly the same one who released that massive Qi Field a few days ago, and definitely the one who destroyed the Southern Maple Forest today!] Even though he had just appeared moments ago, the Third Elder and the others had already identified as much!

They were completely unaware that this massive Qi Field wasn't being controlled by Jun Mo Xie, and was merely due to the Hongjun Pagoda which resided in his body. However, even the wisest of men wouldn't be able to tell the difference since the Hongjun Pagoda resided inside the young master Jun's body, making the Hongjun Pagoda's Qi Field appear the same as Jun Mo Xie's.

However, even though the young master Jun had the capability of starting the Hongjun Pagoda at his will, he didn't have the ability to control it since his cultivation level was still extremely low. As a result, the Aura emitted from the Hongjun Pagoda would always feel the same to a bystander, irrespective of Jun Mo Xie's mind-frame; whether it be angry or happy!

However, the surging momentum this mysterious Master was exhibiting was enough for the Third Elder and others to determine that this man was extremely enraged at the moment.

Moreover, the earth-shattering momentum being exhibited by this mysterious Master was far higher than any of the Eight Great Masters were capable of displaying!

The three of them were left even more horrified than before when they mentally compared this person's strength to that of their City's Master, Han Feng Xue and discovered that even the publicly accepted third-strongest person alive in this world would be nothing more than a mere ant in front of this man, and would at best simply be a strong beginner; and nothing more!

The three experts immediately lost the courage to resist this man as this realization dawned upon them, while the Sixth Elder's face turned ashen with fear.

[I'm afraid that such a high cultivation level is already beyond the reach of humans. Am I just a lamb waiting to get slaughtered by a sharp knife?]

The black masked man coldly stared at the four people who stood in front of him as he slowly moved closer to them, one step at a time, while his footsteps made slight sounds as he moved.

But, the lacking silence of these footsteps left the Third Elder and the others even more surprised than before!

[Given his cultivation level, this person ought to be strong enough to cross the waters, the mountains, and soar above the clouds in silence, but instead his footsteps are making slight sounds as he moves... this means that his anger must've already reached insuppressible limits.]

[It seems that the four of us are unlikely to get out of this alive!]

"Do you all belong to the Silver Blizzard City?" The man in the black mask asked with his hands folded behind his back and head held up high, almost as if he was floating with the winds while his voice sounded extremely bright, clear and devoid of any kind of fireworks.

"Who... may I ask the Sir's introduction..." The Third Elder stood up perfectly straight as he respectfully asked this question while cupping his hands. Giving respect to another man never

brings any harm; anyway, one really couldn't blame the Third Elder for being overly respectful at this time since any sort of courtesy would be deemed as necessitated when faced with a man of such strength.

“Oh...” The masked black-robed man issued a long ‘Oh’ sound which was completely devoid of any traces of anger or joy, and rather made it seem as if he'd just woken up from a long dream: “Think of it this way; this Old Man has had relations with the Old Silver City's Masters for several generations, dating back to a time when that Han Feng Xue's services used to be at the fingertips of the Old City's Master. Anyhow, that time has long past, but still... I had never thought that the Silver Blizzard City would fall to this point! Is it just bad luck? Or do the riches and wealth really don't survive more than three generation?”

He shook his head almost as if he was feeling extremely sorry, and then sighed as he said: “Sad, very sad!”

“Since the Old Master and our Old City are friends of old, then we aren't really foreigners to each other. Ah...” Even though the Third Elder replied politely, his mind had already taken a different direction: [What did he mean by the City's previous Masters? He knew our second generation of Masters? Or was it the First?... my god, this man's age may have already surpassed more than two lifetimes...]

“A small punishment needed to be delivered since the younglings broke into my territory and disrupted my practice; and as for you Elders, instead of teaching mannerism to your descendants, you allow them to act as audaciously as their heart desires, and then you go about wantonly implicating others for the situation? Is this what the Silver Blizzard City has been passing down its generations?” The black masked man's voice gradually became stern.

The hearts of the Third Elder and the others started drumming with fear, while Little Princess was left muddleheaded in the face

of this crisis. She was finding it extremely strange that a violent man who was previously running amok naked, was now portraying himself as a highly respected member of the society and was actually being received by his Elders as such...

[Is it really that same person? His entire body was covered in mud at that time, but I can still sense that violent streak in him... but, if it is the same person, then why is there such a big contrast now? Is it just because he's wearing clothes now?]

The black masked man didn't say anything for a while, but it seemed that he was only getting angrier and angrier. Finally, he hummed and said: "I've heard that you are tracking me down? And that you wish to extract your revenge from me? So I decided to come here voluntarily in order to give you that opportunity!"

"Ha ha, please forgive us Sir for our younglings were unaware of the factors surrounding this situation. We understand this matter quite well and will teach them as well, but by the virtue of being their Elders, we still can't completely ignore this matter. Moreover, our Old City's Master had entrusted this task upon us before we left the City... I request the Master to ignore this matter in case they've offended you." The Third Elder smiled as he explained the situation without denying anything.

[Parents shouldn't even be allowed to ask questions if their children were bullied outside their house? Even if the parents are fully aware of the situation, they must still be allowed to discuss the matter!]

The Third Elder could be described as a true master of words; even though he had been very respectful with his reply, he hadn't left any weak spots in his argument for the man in the black mask to exploit.

"Is that so? If that's the case, then I will not pay any mind to this. However, you also went to the Jun Family in order to investigate my identity! And since you've insulted the Jun Family in the

process, wouldn't I be the one to be blamed for all of it? On top of that, a dignified Spirit Xuan expert actually attacked a young child?!"

The man in the black mask started becoming even more furious, and soon shifted his gaze towards the Sixth Elder: "An experienced Spirit Xuan expert actually hurt a little child! Is this a good way to demonstrate power?! I'm afraid I find such people excessively pathetic and evil spirited!"

"Sir, I'm afraid that your words are very subjective in nature since the Jun Family and the Silver Blizzard City, both have old resentments of their own which are rooted very deep within our paternity. Since this matter is difficult to explain in words, I request that the Master mustn't interfere since it may cause damage to his name..."

The Sixth Elder still hadn't been able to recover from that choking sensation after suffering that humiliation at the hands of the Solitary Falcon, and was still feeling rather ashamed of himself. Then, soon after leaving the Jun residence, he unfortunately ended up running into a peerless Master, who too had simply showed up in order to question his actions as well.

The Sixth Elder was almost on the verge of collapsing again!

The Sixth Elder was left thinking that all the bad things under this heaven were his to encounter today, [what good will I have to do in order to get out of this? One humiliation after another... this Old Man has had enough already...]

[I really can't take it anymore! I'm not going to endure everything that comes out of your mouth, not even if you're strong enough to kill me at your whims and fancies! You think I was wrong? Well I feel the same way about you!]

"Are you trying to say that I'm being nosy?" The black-masked man's face suddenly became very serious, and then his body simply disappeared into thin air with a sudden flash, leaving no traces of

existence behind.

A man, who was standing in front of their eyes just moment ago, had simply disappeared now; it wasn't enough to say that they had never thought it possible, for this was something they hadn't even heard of; not even in a distant myth!

The Third Elder was the first to react since his cultivation level was the highest within his company. However, left with no other option at this time, he resorted to shouting with all his strength: "Mercy, Sir!"

Chapter 227: A Special Picture

The Third Elder felt extremely wronged by the Sixth Elder's actions since it wasn't even possible for them to defend themselves when faced with the overbearing strength of this Mysterious Master, to a point where it wasn't even possible for them to extract any kind of revenge later in the future!

Pop! Pop! Two rather unexpected sounds were heard as this black-masked man once again resumed his earlier position. It seemed as if there had been no change in the situation... apart from the five fingerprint marks on both cheeks of the Sixth Elder!

For a man of the Sixth Elder's status, and Spirit Xuan strength, the ravages of such an insult were far more terrifying than any physical injuries!

No one saw how this Mysterious Unrivalled Master moved, nor were they able to see the technique he used when slapping the Sixth Elder in the face! Everything seemed to have happened out of thin air, just as the emergence of this Mysterious Man previously had!

The four of them could only use one word to describe this entire incident – Miraculous!

Even though the Sixth Elder wasn't injured seriously, he couldn't help finding this incident very inconvenient since he was a Spirit Xuan expert at the end of the day! Left with no other option, he silently stared back at that bizarre man in the black mask with his dark eyes opened big and wide! At the time when the Solitary Falcon had attacked him, he had at least had the time to react even though he wasn't able to dodge it. However, the Sixth Elder wasn't even able to move in response to these two slaps!

[What else is this man going to do?]

However, the black-masked man's bodily gestures made it seem

as if he was already done.

“This Old Man only did this with the intention of letting you know that you mustn’t trouble me again by venting out your anger on others! I will not forgive you younglings if you go to other people’s houses and profane my name again!”

The black-masked man seemed indifferent as he continued: “I’ve only tried to teach you a small lesson since you’re already quite seriously injured! Those two slaps from this Old Man were intended with a deep and profound meaning behind them: There are many people in this world whom even a Spirit Xuan expert cannot afford to provoke! This knowledge will prevent you from losing your life one day! I’m only squandering my words on you because I have had an old acquaintance with the Silver City!”

Listening to the other side stating something like “I’m only doing this for your own good” as an explanation, made the Sixth Elder mad with anger. Blood suddenly sprayed out his mouth as the anger inside his body boiled, intensifying the condition of his previous injuries, leaving him gasping for his last breaths!

The slaps in his face weren’t meant to be lethal in nature, but humiliating. It was obviously not a big deal for a normal man to receive such treatment from a far more powerful figure than himself; however, the Sixth Elder was left feeling extremely angered by this.

Not just because he had been insulted, but also because all of it seemed far too familiar!

Previously, he had said something very similar after attacking Jun Mo Xie at the Jun residence post teaching him a lesson. Now, something very similar had happened to him the other way round! Even the gods couldn’t prevent themselves from losing their mind in the face of such irony...

This one sentence suddenly gave rise to a plethora of thoughts in Mu Xue Tong’s head: [this Master was clearly sent here by Jun Mo

Xie and the Jun Family so they could vent out their anger, else he wouldn't be saying these words.] Suddenly, he was no longer worried about their well-being anymore...

After all, having the strength of a Sky Xuan expert, he was well aware that killing an ordinary person, even by accident, was rather easy for him, and could hence understand how easy it would be for a man of such strength...

[However, in case this Mysterious Master is a friend of the Jun Family, Wu Yi could derive a lot benefits with this man's help!]

However, the Sixth Elder was having an awfully dreadful day today. First, his mockery at Jun Wu Yi was returned to him in the shape of some serious injuries by the Solitary Falcon, and then the lesson he had taught Jun Mo Xie with the help of his tyrannical strength were repaid to him by this Mysterious Master in the shape of two slaps on the face. Moreover, the Sixth Elder was forced to choose against retaliation even after facing the two biggest insults of his life... anyone could tell that keeping his temper in check at this point obviously wasn't an easy task.

"Sixth Brother!" The Third Elder exclaimed as he hastily rushed towards the Sixth Elder, summoning the extent of his Spirit Xuan Xuan Qi. He immediately pushed something the Sixth Elder was wearing on his chest and suddenly a serene, white ray of light emerged from the Sixth Elder's chest, and enveloped his torso inside it.

The Third Elder sighed as he saw this and stood up straight once again. He had realized that the Sixth Elder's blood and qi were beginning to burst out due to his angered frame of mind, making his situation very, very critical!

If it hadn't been for this timely rescue action of his, the Sixth Elder would've probably died before being taken back to the Magnificent Jewel Hall. Therefore, he immediately took matter into his own hands, and did the forbidden!

It would've been an unprecedented incident had a Spirit Xuan expert succumbed to death due to his own anger!

"He cannot die!" The black-masked man's eyes flashed a "is that so" look as he looked at the serene, white, mist-like dense, light surrounding the Sixth Elder's body, before coldly stating: "This is the 'so-called' fruit of retribution by the law of the heaven. We must always prepare ourselves for insults from others when we go about insulting someone! There's no point in discussing this here since you're no match for me, but your experts from the Silver City are always welcome to seek me out for more trouble in case you disagree with my actions! No one shall be allowed to roam about doing their whims like they were a born blessing to the world. Everyone should have their dues repaid!"

"I don't know of the events of the future since that can only be decided by the Great Elders of the Silver City..." The Third Elder slowly stood up as a sense of resentment filled his eyes: "but still, I'd ask you to give me your name so I can give a proper explanation of these events to the Silver City!"

"Explanation? Do you really believe that you would be able to get away from this place if I hadn't shed off my anger?" The man in the black mask laughed, and then his body suddenly and slowly started to fade away from his current position, and then re-emerged in front of the Sixth Elder's body, seemingly grabbing something and taking it away, and then disappeared into thin air like mist...

But a voice rang out from this illusionary figure before it completely faded away: "Go back and ask Han Feng Xue how much pleasure he derives from breaking up a pair of lovers, and ruining his Granddaughter's happiness? Ha Ha..."

The sound of laughter gradually dispersed without a trace along with the body of that mysterious man as the curtains of night suddenly descended upon the sky. It almost seemed as if this masked man had taken away the last rays of brightness from this

world along with him.

“Sir, please leave the Xiao Family’s Soul Replenishing Jade behind!” The Third Elder shouted out, but heard nothing more than echo in reply since that black-masked man had already melted between heaven and earth...

The item which that black-masked man had grabbed from around the Sixth Elder’s neck was a jade pendant! Moreover, this treasure was so valuable that only two others in the entire Silver City were in possession of this item! On top of that, when it came to the Xiao Family, this item was far more precious than their own lives!

An ancestor of the Xiao Family had once found a warm and strange piece of jade in the snow-capped mountains. When worn on the body; this jade fragment would protect any wounds on the bearer’s body from harm, even if it was bearer’s heart that was shattered; meaning that the person could still be brought back to life! No one knew the origination or the mystery behind this piece of jade!

This piece of jade was then cut into three parts, and only the most talented members of the Xiao Family were deemed eligible for wearing it; the Sixth Elder was given a piece to wear. The second one was given to the Xiao Family’s youngest heir, Xiao Feng Wu, and the last one was presently with the Little Princess, Han Yan Meng since the lives of these two youngsters simply couldn’t be put at risk!

However, no one had ever imagined that this jade amulet would actually end up getting snatched right before it would get an opportunity to perform its designated function!

Moreover, who would’ve thought that such a powerful, noble, and unrivalled person would actually resort to stealing the valuables of others like a common criminal would...

[This is pathetic! I’ve never seen such a capable man talking

about himself with such grandiose, and then go on to act in such a despicable manner without shame.]

[This man is simply too despicable!] The Third Elder fiercely spat out his saliva: [such a qualified expert stealing...]

However, he was completely unaware that this “Unrivalled Mysterious Master” would’ve never stolen this jade amulet, had he been aware of the sentiments attached with it. No matter how angry he was, Jun Mo Xie would’ve never braved such dangers in case he had known that his actions would be shrouded in the threats of retaliation from the other side...

Because, this so-called “Unrivalled Mysterious Master” would’ve been immediately exposed in case any of these three individuals had tried to obstruct him, which would’ve obviously forced him to flee far, far away with his tail tucked between his legs...

The Third Elder however, suddenly found himself at a complete loss.

Anyhow, he was still a part of the Silver Blizzard City, a member of their higher-class at that. Moreover, an Elder; and though he wasn’t fully aware of the events that had happened in the past, but he’d always stand unwaveringly by the Silver Blizzard City’s side no matter what!

However, now it seemed that the Solitary Falcon had clearly exhibited that he would stand beside the Jun Family, and even though the Solitary Falcon was a difficult opponent, he wasn’t unrivalled.

In addition, today they suddenly ran into such a mysteriously strong person, who too, clearly seemed to be in support of the Jun Family. Moreover, the strength of this mysterious individual was simply too horrifying; horrifying enough to make the Third Elder desperate. There was no need to say anything else, just the manner in which he had attacked the Sixth Elder was enough to creep anyone out for it was simply beyond the wildest of myths!

[The Jun Family was very weak earlier, but mustn't be neglected now that they have two such strong supporters. Moreover, the intricate relationship between the Jun Family and the Silver City is going to be a headache!]

[I firmly believe that the Xiao Family would never allow the Jun Family to rise again! They were simply putting up with the Jun Family until now because they felt that the Jun Family is simply too weak, and hence an unworthy match for them; on top of that, two strong factions from the Silver City stand face to face with opposing views on the subject; and because of this, the harmony of the Silver Blizzard City's internal factions has been disrupted for the first time after hundreds of years of seamless collaboration, which has obviously been adding fuel to the intensity of this fiery situation!]

[Now that the Jun Family has suddenly improved their position, the Xiao Family will spare no effort to wipe them out! In fact, even the final decision of the Great Elders may not be hindered by any opposition they might have to face from the City's Master!]

[As it is, it would be quite troublesome if the Great Elders acted rashly and provoked the Solitary Falcon, but I'm afraid that they might end up provoking a force they simply can't match in case they were to poke this Mysterious and Unrivalled Master...]

[Moreover, it seems from this Mysterious Master's behavior that he is willing to have his way by hook or crook... such people have always been very difficult to deal with; and if such a shameless man was equipped with such skills and strength...]

[He could possibly become a headache beyond measure.]

The Third Elder sighed deeply, weighed down by his anxieties.

Chapter 228: Jin Yang Gang's Transformation

On the other hand, Mu Xue Tong and the Little Princess's thoughts varied rather significantly; they were both quite happy for Han Yan Yao and Jun Wu Yi. [Those two lovers were separated almost ten years ago, were forced to endure all sorts of bitter hardships for a decade... but now that they're receiving support from two such strong individuals, they'll finally be able to pick up the pieces and start anew! This is such a happy moment!]

The first thing the Third Elder did after returning to the Magnificent Jewel Hall was to write a long and detailed letter explaining the events which had occurred over these last few days. His letter was mostly focused on his personal opinions about the Solitary Falcon's involvement, along with that of the "mysterious and unrivalled Master"; he tied the paper to a messenger-eagle after he was done writing the twelve page-long report, mainly comprising of his views and opinions, and then stood alone atop the Magnificent Jewel Hall's roof, quietly watching the dark and ashen sky; he couldn't help but sigh since he could foresee a storm coming their way!

[I don't know how many people will be sent to their deaths after getting enveloped in this storm!]

[Especially now, that the Xiao Family's Soul Replenishing Jade has been taken away! This is one item they simply cannot bear to lose! And now they will go to any lengths in order to recapture it!]

[However, this jade amulet has now fallen into the hands of that mysterious man in the black mask!]

[So, how will they take it back? Even if the combined strength of all the experts in the Silver City was capable of recapturing it, not many would survive that final battle! We'd end up burning jade and the common stone alike...]

Two more messenger-eagles, each carrying a letter, were set off into the sky with the Silver City as their intended destination; these letters contained messages from Mu Xue Tong and the Little Princess, Han Yan Meng, respectively, with both individuals addressing their letters to the same person: Han Yan Yao!

[That poor woman has wasted away her youth, just so she could become the Jun Family's daughter-in-law someday; I cannot even imagine how much joy this news of her beloved will bring to her heart...]

“What?!” The rampages of Xiao Han's footsteps were covered by his angry roars: “Jun Wu Yi's injuries have healed? How's this possible? How did he recover! Nonsense! I will not allow this to happen!”

The Third Elder closed his eyes, [all this has happened because of you, Xiao Han! What else do you intend on doing now?]

As the darkness of night began to envelop the sky, the Jin Yang gang's main heads charged through the Tian Xiang City, quickly making their way towards the gang's headquarters.

The Jin Yang gang's heads, known as the “Jin Yang Illuminati” could only be summoned at the order of the gang's leader. The purpose of such summon wasn't just to help the gang's leader, but actually meant that the gang was faced with a situation as critical as that of life and death. This was the first time that such summon had been issued; in fact, this summon wasn't even issued when the helm of the gang was faced with a force as unpredictable as that of the Solitary Falcon's.

That being said, Jin Feng Lie had refrained from issuing this order at that time simply because the strength of that Old Man was far too horrifying for his “heads” to deal with, so much so that bringing them into the fold wouldn't have changed the outcome one bit, and hence he had found it more suitable to simply find his Elder Brother, Brother Hai; this situation however, was completely

different...

A blue-robed man stood at the top of the stage with his hands folded behind his back; his body language was as serene in depth as that of the ocean's, but his strength as high as the mountains, as he stood there personifying the patience of an endless ocean, seemingly in wait for the Jin Yang Illuminati to convene. Jin Feng Lei, the leader of the Jin Yang gang was sitting on one side with a very solemn and serious expression on his face. He could sense that his Elder Brother and benefactor's attitude had drastically changed since his return.

[He's full of... aggression! It seems as if a... desire is overtaking him!]

[This is very different compared to his previous "indifferent to the customs of the world" attitude...]

[Perhaps that is why Brother Hai has asked for the Jin Yang gang's control!]

[And what's even weirder, is that he's actually summoned a convention of the Jin Yang Illuminati...]

Jin Feng Lie stood up with a gloomy expression on his face upon seeing that about forty-two of his heads had entered the main hall, one after the other, and waved his palms at the crowd which suddenly quieted down, and affixed their gazes towards him in anticipation for him to speak.

"Today, the central authority has issued this summon so that all brothers could convene and witness the announcement of this major event!" Jin Feng Lie's cold and sharp eyes slowly swept the faces of each and every person present, "from today onwards, we, the Jin Yang gang, will not only welcome our new gang leader, Brother Hai, but will also take our first step in unifying the underworld factions of the capital city. We all know Brother Hai; Hai Chen Feng, and hence I don't feel the need to introduce him. Brother Hai and I have never differentiated between our

possessions, to the point where his status in the Jin Yang gang has always transcended my own, but from today onwards, Brother Hai will take over the command, and take the position of the gang's leader! He will be the commanding authority from now on!"

A sudden silence followed his announcement.

Jin Feng Lie quietly waited for a while after making the announcement, but then slowly made an opening since no one had spoken up: "is there any brother who differs in opinion?"

Hai Chen Feng's hands were still folded behind his back as this announcement was made while his eyes had been constantly scanning the people in front: [these people are supposed to be the Jin Yang gang's core... and now they've all turned to stone...]

"I have some opinions!" A big and burly man stepped out of the crowd: "I don't understand why the big brother is making such a decision? Brother Hai's martial abilities are unique and peerless, and naturally, we've all come to admire him for them; but would a guest of the gang be able to fill a position as demanding as the gang's leader? What are we having this transfer of control for? I don't know how to put this in words, but Brother Hai has always been detached from the roots of the gang, however, his status in the gang has always been a very esteemed one since he's always helped the leader from the outside... but why do you want him to take over the control?"

"All the major parties of the capital city are gathering their experts and it could be said that there is a storm coming for us all; the big Families seem to be making a move, and even we've been approached for the possibility of an alliance by the Mu Rong Family, the Li Family, and the Song Family... how far do you believe you'll be able to take us through this storm? Even though the Jin Yang gang brazenly calls itself 'untouchable', we are nothing in front of these major Families since they are capable of destroying the entire Jin Yang gang before the dawn of tomorrow's sun... what shall I do when faced with such a future?"

Jin Feng Lie sighed: “We are untouchable, yet some people still provoke us! Brother Hai will take on this heavy responsibility of leading us to what we don’t have at present. We need not ally with any of the major Families, we need not become their hunting dogs, and yet, we may continue to survive. I may have upheld the banners of the Jin Yang gang; however, Brother Hai was the true leader all along, even though he was just a guest in name. But since his description has been both unjust and undeserved, I’ve decided to retreat and hand the control over to him. Do you understand now?”

That burly man’s lips moved in silence for a while, but he eventually retreated back to his spot without uttering a single word.

“I have some views!” A thin man squeezed his way out of the crowd, pushing the other aside: “The gang’s strength in the Capital City has always been dependent on our collective forces, and not the power of a few people alone. If the Jin Yang gang doesn’t depend on the powerful once again, then we won’t be able to survive for long despite our current strength; in fact, we cannot even guarantee our survival for a day or two! Therefore, why don’t we each choose a powerful Family, and as long as we’re able to come to terms with them, ally with them while keeping our main interests as unified as possible so that we don’t become completely dependent on them either. And this way we’ll all have a strong patron, and we’ll also be able to assist each other in the time of need; brothers, please tell me which idea is better? Why must we stubbornly defend our little base in vain against such heavy blows?”

“So, which one is the most powerful, and appropriate in your opinion?” Hai Chen Feng’s hands remained crossed behind his back as his voice floated across the hall.

“The Mu Rong and the Li Family would suit us best in my humble opinion! Only, I cannot say the same about struggling for survival

since that would be a very unwise move!” The thin man stated loudly.

The blue figure suddenly turned around and charged forward, his movement seemingly resembling a sudden surge in the oceanic currents.

Bang!

That thin man’s chest was struck by Hai Chen Feng’s palm, and his body flew afar while the five main internal organs of chest immediately gave away; his body hadn’t even landed on the ground when it suddenly found itself torn-apart, mid-air.

He was already dead; even his corpse had miserably failed to remain intact!

“A man born between heaven and earth, who actually relies on others for his survival, is as good as dead!” Hai Chen Feng suddenly turned around and looked at the crowd: “If you live in fear, you don’t deserve to be a part of my Jin Yang gang! If you secretly accept assistance from others, you do not deserve to stand here! Now tell me, who else has an opinion?”

“We shall be willing to live and die together, so we can create a favorable atmosphere for all brothers of the Jin Yang gang; that’s the way forward!” Hai Chen Feng’s cold and detached eyes scanned the crowd with the precision of an eagles’: “from now on, I am the new leader of the Jin Yang gang! Everyone has one day’s time to consider it before getting back to me! If you stay, you do as I say! The Jin Yang gang will embark on a new journey tomorrow! And no one will be allowed to go against it!

“Anyone who violates the rules, dies!”

Hai Chen Feng had finally revealed his aggression, and his strength! The moment that thin man had objected to Hai Chen Feng’s orders, he had automatically gone against his order even if he hadn’t accepted any assistance from the other Families yet!

Bloody means have always been essential to impose a change in the power structure!

That man only had his own misfortunes to blame for his fate!

Everyone dispersed as the curtains of night descended upon the Tian Xiang City; they were all left trembling in fear after witnessing the appalling manner in which that thin man's body had disintegrated, and couldn't help increasing the pace of their departure as a result.

Hai Chen Feng had finally taken over the reins of the Jin Yang gang! The next step would obviously be to expand its reach!

Hai Chen Feng had finally taken his first step; the first step required in order to complete Jun Mo Xie's demand: [unify the capital's underground forces!]

However, this was just the beginning of things!

The lanterns had already been lit by the time Jun Mo Xie returned to the Jun residence.

The young master Jun was in high spirits all along the way back since he had not only managed to succeed in retaliating against the Sixth Elder, but had also gotten hold of a mystical jade pendant! However, the true abilities of this Jade pendant were yet to be explored by Jun Mo Xie.

The Hongjun Pagoda had been very active ever since this jade pendant had appeared which led Jun Mo Xie to believe that this was no ordinary piece of jade.

He could indistinctly sense that this jade piece was not even jade in reality, but something completely unknown altogether. Jun Mo Xie had already tossed this Jade pendant into the Hongjun Pagoda after getting his hands on it...

Upon reaching the Jun residence, Jun Mo Xie was informed that he had been summoned into Jun Wu Yi's courtyard by the Solitary Falcon, who lay waiting for his arrival in Jun Wu Yi's study.

[What's this old old up to now? This doesn't look good... no one in the house seems to be willing to poke him at the moment... who in their right mind would've recruited such a guy, huh?]

“You devil of a boy! Finally, you're back ah?! You've put me in a great deal of trouble ah!” The Solitary Falcon sprang out, grabbed Jun Mo Xie, and carried him straight into the study.

Chapter 229: You Were Using Me as Cannon Fodder!

The Solitary Falcon's sputter almost sprayed out on Jun Mo Xie's face: "Dammit, boy, you cheated this Old Man into staying at the Jun residence with your scheming tongue! Even when there was such a huge trap hidden inside?! First there was the Silver Blizzard City, and now there's the Xue Hun Manor... you little bastard, do you really think my old and weary bones can withstand so much? Why didn't you inform me of this earlier?"

"Inform you earlier?" The young master Jun blinked as he explained himself: "You would've left for the Prairie a long time ago had I told you about this earlier... would you have actually stayed here, huh? Do you think I'm that stupid?"

"You..." The Solitary Falcon seemed extremely gloomy, [yes ah, you're definitely not stupid, boy; in fact, you're extremely shrewd, but I'm not a fool either!]

The Solitary Falcon would've been duty-bound to leave after weighing the situation had he not seen Jun Mo Xie's "Eagle-form" technique and had instead found out about all these troubles that day. However, he was simply unwilling to retreat now, even though he was faced with two such powerful enemies since he had witnessed a maneuver which he could only describe as "the world's best technique"!

[How can I treat such an opportunity as a joke? Not to mention that this kid is being backed by a peerless Master!]

[Although he's clearly telling the truth, my heart is still not comfortable with this yet. My heart can't be at peace as long as he keeps exploiting this situation... because he's just too crafty! And although the benefits are amazing, but...]

[And the blatant manner in which this little devil is saying this, is

really making me very angry!]

“I see; kid, when does your master get here?” The Solitary Falcon asked: “This Old Man wishes to discuss the Xue Hun Manor and the Silver Blizzard City’s topic with him.”

In case the Solitary Falcon was assured of that Mysterious Master’s support, then he’d toss the Silver Blizzard City and Xue Hun Manor’s threat aside...

“My Master?” Jun Mo Xie started blinking again: “... because that Old Man is busy wandering around the world, his whereabouts are always uncertain; he’s dragon whose head and tail are simply impossible to get a sight of, so how do I know when he’ll come around? But, he always finds me once I’m done mastering his previously assigned tasks!”

“Do you think I can fight this battle alone?” The Solitary Falcon suddenly stared back at him, shivering with fear from head to toe.

“How come you’re alone?” Jun Mo Xie’s eyes opened wide with confusion.

The Solitary Falcon’s voice seemed completely hollowed: “Who else is there? It’s not that your Grandfather and Uncle are weak, but their strength isn’t enough to intervene in a dispute of this magnitude. So if your Master isn’t here, then who else is?”

“What are you trying to say? Are you saying that I’m not here?” Jun Mo Xie pointed his finger at his own chest, seemingly unwilling to part with his responsibilities. “I’ll fight alongside you!”

“Kid, you count for a fart’s worth!” The Solitary Falcon fumed back: “Even a fart makes a bit of noise, but you’re not even capable of making that! You’d die the moment someone blows one in your face! The Silver Blizzard City and Xue Hun Manor, each has tens of Spirit Xuan experts in their ranks, and this Old Man’s two fists can only deal with two a-time, which means that I can only block off

four or five of such experts at any given moment; what about the rest of them, huh? How will you defend your Jun Family against the rest, huh?”

“Well, just do your best!” Jun Mo Xie stated in a serious tone as he lowered his gaze to his own chin.

“I... damn you kid!” The Solitary Falcon couldn’t control his temper anymore, and started cursing out as a result. “What is the worth of my efforts if you have no strength? You really are a bastard like no other!” The Solitary Falcon was almost ready to turn around and leave.

“Don’t worry, the boat will go straight-ahead with currents once it reaches the pier-head, and there will be a way forward once we’ve reached the mountain.” Jun Mo Xie tried to reassure the man: “So what’s making you so anxious?”

“And what if it doesn’t go straight-ahead? What then, huh?” The Solitary Falcon opened his eyes so wide, that it seemed as if he’d simply swallow him down. [I’ve never met such a useless person before!]

“Then, it will get crushed, ah!” The young master Jun’s words didn’t help in the least in bringing the Solitary Falcon’s temper down.

“You’re shamelessly saying that it will get crushed?” The Solitary Falcon stared back, [there’s no point in arguing with him... he’s like that lazy dog who just doesn’t realize that swallowing a hedgehog would be very painful for his stomach...]

“I’m certain that it won’t get crushed; what about you?” Jun Mo Xie batted his eyelids like a half-dead person: “Let’s not forget that you’re one of the Eight Great Masters, so even if the Sky was falling, you’d still be capable of easily raising it back up. And I believe that as long as you have the courage to take a hit, you could easily deliver a crushing defeat to them. Even if you fail, you’re at least capable of burning both jade and common stone, and you

could easily damage them right down to their bones; then I can easily take advantage of that situation, can't I?"

The Solitary Falcon suddenly found himself in a bind!

He suddenly realized something: [trusting this kid was a huge mistake!]

[This kid has actually been planning on using me as cannon fodder all along so he could fish in troubled waters later on...]

[How can such a despicable person actually exist in this world? He's just too...]

[He has really opened my eyes today!]

"Kid, do you even know the Silver Blizzard City?" The Solitary Falcon stood up with the intention of leaving, [sticking around this kid will only make my life more difficult!] However, he still felt like beating-him-about before leaving: "Do you have any idea about the Xue Hun Manor? Do you even know what they are capable of? I don't know why you're going about talking so big! Kid, you don't know this, but you're destined to die sooner or later!"

The Solitary Falcon obviously wanted to leave immediately, now that he was finished, but knew that Jun Wu Yi was resting outside in the courtyard, after having finished his training for the day, and wouldn't let him leave this easily, no matter how much he insisted on it.

However, he was certainly very dissatisfied with this young master.

Jun Mo Xie wasn't very pleased to see the aggressive look on the Solitary Falcon's face, and hence, hadn't been talking to him in a proper manner. But now, after listening to the Solitary Falcon's tone, he realized that the man had already learnt most of the inside story. However, as opposed to expectations, the young master Jun couldn't help but feel excited since he realized that he could use

this to his advantage, if he was to share a bit more information with the man.

“Maybe I don’t understand that, but are the Silver Blizzard City and Xue Hun Manor so powerful that even one of the Eight Great Masters is afraid to stand up to their arrogance?”

The young master Jun had turned his attitude around with perfection as he continued with an earnest and honest expression on his face: “If that’s the case, then I won’t pay any attention to your departure; or to anyone similar. However, if you see it my way... why would I need to fear anyone when the Solitary Falcon is sitting inside my house? Ha ha... that’s why I’m so confident ah!”

The Solitary Falcon was just about to step out when he suddenly realized: [I see why this kid seemed to confident all along, ah, he was just using me as an illusion; his words do make a lot of sense... what would a man need to fear if one of the Eight Great Masters was watching over him? No wonder ah...]

[He was just using my fame!]

However, the Solitary Falcon was still a bit upset. [He has been using my name this entire time, and that’s been giving him all this confidence? ... it no wonder that he’s been jumping up and down without a care in the world, so much so that he’s boldly dared to face off with the Silver Blizzard City and Xue Hun Manor...]

[However, it will be very difficult if he maintains this mentality in the long-term.]

The Solitary Falcon’s mind was overcome with thoughts, and then he suddenly realized that the Jun Family had been at a lot of ease, simply because he was watching over them, [if the Silver Blizzard City and Xue Hun Manor were to come for them, would they... still be able to hurt the Jun Family?]

[No way, they won’t come, simply because my reputation is just too loud!]

“Boy, I might be one of the Eight Great Masters, but my ability to add more manpower into my fold has always been poor.” The Solitary Falcon’s tone had eased very significantly, but his eyes seemed to resembling that of a lamb overrun with confusion. Although he was still upset, but his tone made absolutely no attempts to conceal his prideful nature, which was an obvious indication that Jun Mo Xie’s words had affected him rather considerably.

“That’s exactly what I thought about;” Jun Mo Xie continued in a sincere and honest tone: “you see ah, although the Silver Blizzard City and Xue Hun Manor are both watched over by one of the Eight Great Masters each, but I doubt that these two men would fall from their status and personally take action against the Jun Family... and do you actually believe that we wouldn’t be able to deal with the others, as long as these two men stayed out of it? Especially with you present here?”

The Solitary Falcon opened his eyes wide as he nodded and smiled, before he said: “That makes sense, if you leave Li Jue Tian and Han Feng Xue out of it, then their other people are merely, he he... free-range chickens in my eyes... even their Spirit Xuan experts are no exception, for even they are too vulnerable...”

Jun Mo Xie had been running his mouth in the hope of brining this man back to reality, but had actually done the exact opposite of the intended...

[Really... is this the time for you to get all arrogant? Don’t be so full of yourself, this is a matter of life and death; quickly wake up to reality!]

“Exactly, so what do we need to be afraid of? Even if they all came here together, they would still find themselves under a world of pressure as long as you are here with us! You are Jun Family’s backbone, and an unbreakable one at that. As long as you were to retaliate, it would be like dropping a stone... on eggs; you would be like a giant hammer swatting away mere mosquitoes

effortlessly...”

“No, no, no, that’s not the case.” Even though the Solitary Falcon was arrogant by nature, he wasn’t arrogant enough to put his individual strength against that of the Silver Blizzard City and Xue Hun Manor. “The remainder of their strength still cannot be underestimated. It will still be very difficult for me to handle them all by myself.”

[You’re afraid that it will be difficult for you? You simply can’t match them!]

The young master Jun somehow managed to hold his vomit back as he smiled naively: “I think... you can! Just like today, didn’t they immediately calm down once you took things into your own hands? Couldn’t you easily handle several Spirit Xuan experts easily, if you wanted to?”

The Solitary Falcon crossed his hands behind his back as he started to walk back and forth about the room, slowly. But even though he was quite elated, he still maintained a serious and solemn expression on his face: “Don’t say such nonsense... you should never underestimate an enemy ah.”

[What kind of a bird are you, ah... I was holding you down, and not the other way around...] the young master Jun was completely dumbfounded, [I just gave you an example of a couple of situations where you simply couldn’t manage it on your own, and yet you’re still not down from your pedestal! You’re so full of yourself... Great Master, you may indeed be a legend of your generation, but you’re still a human... you bleed, when hit, right?]

“Uh, in fact, there’s something that I don’t understand; the Sky Xuan realm is above the Earth Xuan realm, and the Spirit Xuan is above that, which is also the highest level... but then why are you so much stronger than a normal Spirit Xuan expert, such as the Silver Blizzard City’s Sixth Elder? Isn’t he a Spirit Xuan expert, same as you? I’m really confused here; don’t tell me there’s

something more here? What's this all about?"

Chapter 230: The Twelve Levels of Spirit Xuan, Each Level Scaling to the Sky!

Jun Mo Xie had lost his patience after watching the Solitary Falcon obsessing endlessly with himself, and hence, blatantly asked the one question he most wanted the answer to.

[It seems that this guy just doesn't understand what a 'hint' really is! Mildly hinting at things is a complete waste of energy since he's simply blind to them... it's just better to be straightforward around him ah.]

“Who told you that about the Spirit Xuan realm? That it's the highest realm?” The Solitary Falcon batted his eyelids twice as he stared at Jun Mo Xie with a sour taste in his mouth. He was busy imagining defeating two of the most powerful factions in the world singlehandedly like a valiant hero, but was suddenly interrupted by Jun Mo Xie's question, like a soldier by a truce.

“That is just wrong! How is Spirit Xuan the highest realm? This is a big joke!”

“Oh... then... is there a realm higher than Spirit Xuan? Allow me to learn something from your vast experience and knowledge.” Though Jun Mo Xie was intentionally playing dumb, he really didn't know anything on this topic in reality either: “Are you telling me that Great Masters aren't Spirit Xuan experts? But then what are they?”

“You fool!” The Solitary Falcon's anger rose in resentment since the young master Jun was failing to meet his expectations: “A Spirit Xuan expert is a Spirit Xuan expert, and a 'Great Master' is a 'Great Master'! Get it? The strength of a Spirit Xuan is too mediocre, and hence your assertion is plainly baseless and muddled!”

“Oh?” Jun Mo Xie's eyes opened wide in surprise.

“Xuan Qi is the world’s most amazing thing!” The Solitary Falcon’s face turned as solemn as a pilgrim’s.

Jun Mo Xie heart secretly cracked a few contemptuous laughs: [Xuan Qi is the world’s most amazing thing? My ‘Art of Unlocking the Heaven’s Fortune’s’ Aura is a thousand times more powerful; what would you call that, huh?]

“Xuan Qi can delay aging, enhance physical strength, make people live longer, move mountains and drain seas, call the winds and summon the rains... with it, you can do anything you want!” The Solitary Falcon’s eyes were fanatical: “But people still use it just as a means of killing others...”

“Move mountains and drain the seas? Do anything you want?” Jun Mo Xie stood up, this time however, in genuine surprise! The young master Jun’s eyes were practically popping out of their sockets, while his chin had almost hit the ground.

“Hum, maybe this Old Man exaggerated things a bit...” The Solitary Falcon proudly added: “But your master is the most obvious example, he obliterated an entire Maple Forest with just one wave of his hand, tch, tch, I believe that this miraculous feat was still just a little peek into his true abilities ...”

“Oh ...” Jun Mo Xie sat down in discouragement, like a ball which had just been deflated.

The inference he had made from this, had left him paralyzed...

“A person with a Xuan Qi realm below the Ninth level is just an ant; even though this sentence is correct, it is still not completely true.” The Solitary Falcon continued: “The Ninth Level is so low that it can’t even compare to ants. The correct statement should be: A person with cultivation below the Spirit Xuan realm is an ant!”

“That would mean that only a handful of people are worthy of being called humans.” Jun Mo Xie muffled in an authentic

manner. “The rest would just be ants.”

“There are twelve levels above the Spirit Xuan realm; the normal people are just at the beginning of things; they are nothing more than a joke for someone at such high levels!” The Solitary Falcon’s body language was clearly exuding his pride and arrogance: “And the twelve levels of Spirit Xuan, each scales to the sky!”

“The twelve levels of Spirit Xuan, each scales to the sky?” Jun Mo Xie silently repeated the sentence, and then asked: “What does this mean?”

“Just the way Spirit Xuan realm is above Sky Xuan, these twelve levels are above Spirit Xuan; advancing each subsequent level from the first to the twelfth is just as difficult as ascending to the heavens! Moreover, the gap between each of these levels can only be compared to the disparity between the land and the sky! Therefore, each of these twelve levels scales to the sky!”

The Solitary Falcon hummed, and then said: “The twelfth level is the real practice of Xuan Qi in my eyes, and the only person who has entered into the twelfth level can be regarded as a real man! The difference between the twelfth level and a mere Spirit Xuan is so great that a Spirit Xuan isn’t even worthy of realizing it! In fact, he wouldn’t even be qualified to have any knowledge of it!”

“So you’ve already crossed a few levels?” Jun Mo Xie asked out of curiosity.

“This old man, and old Feng Juan Yun are currently at the fifth level, which is the minimum requirement to be considered a Great Master.” The Solitary Falcon went mute for a while after finishing his sentence. “Fifth level... I don’t know if I’ll ever be able to reach the sixth level... alas ...

“The fifth level... because anyone under the fifth level is unworthy of being traditionally called a ‘Great Master’ since such martial artists don’t truly have the desire to become ‘Great’; a Spirit Xuan expert isn’t necessarily a Great Master, but a Great

Master is bound to be a Spirit Xuan!

“The rise to the fifth level is the first of the large gaps! In fact, one needs to put a huge amount of effort to break into the fifth level, and only then are they able to comprehend the true abilities of the fifth realm; and this new understanding helps them in vaguely borrowing the power from their surroundings for their own usage... that’s what makes them ‘Great Masters’! And anyone under the fifth realm simply cannot fathom the power this level allows a person to derive from his surroundings... as a result, even a peak fourth level Spirit Xuan expert is still just a Spirit Xuan expert! And not a ‘Great Master’!”

“So, Yun Bie Chen and the Li Jue Tian are presumably at the twelfth level of the Spirit Xuan realm?” The knowledge of this new world had left Jun Mo Xie feeling as if his eyes had been opened all of a sudden.

“No, that’s not the case!” The Solitary Falcon shook his head, but didn’t give any justifications. Even though Jun Mo Xie asked, he remained silent. Following a long silence, he finally spoke up in a faint tone: “Yun Bie Chen has only reached the peak of the eighth level...”

“The theory about these twelve levels have been derived from a distant legend which states that there comes a huge barrier in-between these levels after every four, such as, from fourth to fifth, from eighth to ninth... for example, the difference between the fourth and the fifth levels is so massive that one goes from being called a Spirit Xuan expert to a ‘Great Master’!” Since he had already decided to tell the young master Jun about this, the Solitary Falcon saw no harm in explaining things in proper detail to further Jun Mo Xie’s knowledge and understanding.

“If that’s so, then what is above the eighth level of the Spirit Xuan realm? And since Yun Bie Chen is also only at the eighth level, the person who breaks into the ninth level first, will become the first one in the world to do so!”

The young master Jun had only mentioned this point since he was calculating the speed of his entry to the Spirit Xuan realm, [I should be able to reach the Spirit Xuan realm in about three to five years' time at this rate,] and hence he was naturally intrigued by the level even the Eight Great Masters hadn't reached yet!

“The eighth level of the Spirit Xuan realm is a new world altogether; and even I'm not qualified enough to have any knowledge of it... only Yun Bie Chen, Li Jue Tian and those people from the Tian Fa forest are qualified and eligible to speak on it, that is of course, if we don't take your master into account. Your master's realm is far higher than any of my generations', in fact, his cultivation is so high that even if Yun Bie Chen could confidentially claim to catch up with him someday, a man like myself can only dream of writing about it.”

The Solitary Falcon sighed, stood up, walked over to the bedside, pulled out a jar of wine from-under the bed, opened its seal, and drained a mouthful of it down his throat, in the hope that its embrace would help in soothing the desolation of his anxieties.

“This partitioning of the cultivation levels is very baffling!” Jun Mo Xie suddenly took a deep breath; [the differentiation in this world's strength levels is so strange, and harsh! In case you haven't reached the stage yet, you're not even qualified enough to learn about it...]

[The facts still aren't clear, in fact, even though the twelve levels are quite well differentiated, but if one were to follow this context, then all levels would appear the same on the surface... but the internal discrepancies between the levels would still be very strict. So basically, the lower levels would never be able to understand the higher ones, and even if the situation changes with respect to the levels, this basic fact would still apply universally...]

[Everything that I had previously heard from my Grandfather and Uncle were nothing more than worldly rumors. Perhaps there's more than what the others know, but it still means that a

Sky Xuan expert will never be able to withstand the strength of someone that strong!]

[And from what the Solitary Falcon just said, there's always a new world to be opened. So, will Yun Bie Chen and Li Jue Tian be able to attain these transformations? Although they are in the same realm as the Solitary Falcon, but they are still a few levels above him... so it really won't be surprising if he doesn't even have any knowledge of it yet!]

[But, where does the peak of this world's cultivation end?]

For a long time, Jun Mo Xie was so lost in his thoughts that he completely forgot to reflect over his precious 'twelve thousand tael's jar' wine...

"So, the Silver Blizzard City, and the Xue Hun manor... you're not aware of what they could be capable of?" Jun Mo Xie raised his head; his eyes gleaming.

"The only thing this Old Man can say is... the Jun Family is both bold, and extremely lucky!" The Solitary Falcon sighed in remorse; the mention of this matter depressed the Solitary Falcon's heart once again, and he couldn't help staring at Jun Mo Xie as a result.

"This is really bizarre! Your Jun Family is just a worldly Family, and yet you've survived for this long in front of the Silver Blizzard City; this is nothing short of a miracle."

The Solitary Falcon shook his head again: "Let's just leave the Xue Hun manor for the time being and talk about the Silver Blizzard city only; you simply shouldn't have provoked them just now! If I didn't know that you were being backed by a man of your master's strength, I would've simply patted you on your buttock, and left instead of accompanying you on this madness since this is practically like selling your life to the doorsteps of death ah; even though your offer is very attractive, I still value my life more!"

Even though the Solitary Falcon was being quite generous on the

surface, only he knew the effort it was taking to hold back his vomit upon realizing that he had stepped into a hornet's nest...

“Is the Silver Blizzard City really that powerful? So powerful that we just don't stand any chances of victory?” Jun Mo Xie frowned. [I'm still confused after witnessing the Silver Blizzard City's Third Elder's strength... although he's a Spirit Xuan expert, but he simply isn't strong enough to compete against the Solitary Falcon... I just don't understand why he's talking about this matter in such a serious tone rather than boasting his own status...?] The young master Jun's malicious mind simply couldn't fathom this calculation.

“The Third, Sixth, and Ninth Elder of the Silver Blizzard City are naturally of no concern, but now the problem is that you've provoked the Silver Blizzard City's Xiao Family! This is almost equal to going head-on against the Silver Blizzard City! Do you understand this differentiation?” The Solitary Falcon looked pitifully at Jun Mo Xie, and sighed as he thought, [the ignorant really are fearless.]

“Isn't the Silver Blizzard City's master surnamed 'Han', and if that's the case, then why are you saying that we're up against the Silver Blizzard City?” Jun Mo Xie still couldn't understand it: “Could you explain this clearly?”

Chapter 231: Silver Blizzard City's History

“The explanation to that... has a lot to do with the Silver Blizzard City's history... it is said that over three hundred years ago, there used to be a large alliance between gangs, known as the Supreme Alliance, which controlled more than half of this world's underworld factions. Their fame, might and strength were unmatched, and it is said that even Spirit Xuan experts would detour from their paths upon seeing the Supreme Alliance's emblem obstructing their way, afraid of the troubles they would provoke otherwise!”

The Solitary Falcon continued narrating, slowly: “As fate had it, one day, the Supreme Alliance's young master, Yu Ling Feng happened to meet a woman, a woman who's eyes were so beautiful, and style so magnificent that people used to call her the ‘Jade Phoenix of the Nine Firmaments’; her name was Kong Yan Luo, and she was regarded as the world's most beautiful woman...

“Yu Lin Feng was quite excited by the prospect of wooing her, and hence, he tried any and all means to win her heart over, same as countless other experts, but none of it bore any fruit. Seeing that Kong Yan Luo had repeatedly rejected his feeling, Yu Lin Feng was so pained that he ordered the extermination of the entire Luo Family, along with Kong Yan Luo, of course. However, just when Kong Yan Luo's fragrance was about to perish, three men suddenly showed up, rescued her, and then fled with her. She fell in love with the eldest of her three saviors, and they tied their fates in a bond of marriage soon after. It didn't take long for this news to reach Yu Lin Feng's ears. One day, he encircled the three men with the intention of killing them in order to extract his revenge, but was killed by those three men in the fight that ensued.”

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help himself, [doesn't Solitary Falcon's tale sound very similar to the situation between Guan Qing Han and the Xue Hun manor?]

“The eldest of the three men was named Han Xiao Yao; the second brother was called Xiao Xing Chen, and the third one was named Chu Duan Xiang; these three men were amongst the best warriors of that era’s younger generation, and naturally, very talented as martial artists! After killing Yu Lin Feng, the three brothers obviously made an enemy out of the Supreme Alliance’s master, Yu Zhan Yun, who ordered everyone under his command: [Spare no effort in tracking and killing those four!]

“The three men were well aware of their respective strengths, and knew they would be of no match to the Supreme Alliance in battle; the four of them decided to leave, and disappeared without leaving any tracks behind. However, no one knew that these four had found refuge in a faraway snow-clad land! Moreover, the four of them had secretly started creating their own forces atop those snow-capped mountains! These three men went on to become the three founding ancestors of the Silver Blizzard City, establishing its three founding families, the Han Family, the Xiao Family, and the Chu Family.

“A decade later, the four of them left the mountains once again after having accumulated a reasonable amount of force since they had decided to stir trouble for the Supreme Alliance. However, the Supreme Alliance was already in a lot of trouble at this time since the public was infuriated by their conduct. Thus, when the three of them launched their assault on the Supreme Alliance, they received a large and unexpected response from the rest of the world with several of the world’s finest experts joining hands with them. In less than three years, the world’s most powerful alliance was not only brought down, but completely removed from the setting.

“However, Yu Zhan Yun and Han Xiao Yao came face to face at a critical juncture during the final battle. Once the two men were worn out, Yu Zhan Yun issued one last desperate attack Han Xiao Yao simply wouldn’t be able to withstand; seeing this happen, Xiao

Xing Chen blocked off Yu Zhan Yun's killer strike from reaching Han Xiao Yao, using his own body as a shield, but took Yu Zhan Yun with him as he parted from this world!

“At that time, Xiao Xing Chen's cultivation had already surpassed Han Xiao Yao's, and was progressing further by leaps and bounds since he aspired to become the strongest in the world! He had a beautiful wife and son waiting for him at his house... and one could truly say that he was living the best years of his life... but had still chosen to die for the sake of protecting his sworn-brother! They say his face reveled in a spirit of brotherhood and heroism at the time of his death...

“Han Xiao Yao was so aggrieved by the death of his younger brother that he publicly took out his sword and cut his own two fingers, causing his blood to drip to the ground; his thunderous voice shook the entire world as he swore a blood-oath: [as long as the Silver Blizzard City remains, the Xiao Family's descendants will never perish!] And his descendants still uphold his vow to this day!”

The Solitary Falcon seemed a bit moved when he was narrating that incident of sacrifice and brotherhood, which was evident from the passionate note his voice had taken.

Jun Mo Xie heaved a long sigh. He had finally understood the meaning behind the Solitary Falcon's words.

[The Jun Family is very lucky to have survived for this long... very, very lucky!]

“Even though the Xiao Family isn't in control of the Silver Blizzard City, but their opinion is very critical when it comes to making the important decisions in the Silver Blizzard City! And no one can do anything about this! Moreover, the City's masters have been holding the Xiao Family's descendant very dear ever since, which has spoilt their attitude for the worse! Do you understand it now? If your Jun Family is up against the Xiao Family, then it also

faces the Silver Blizzard City! In fact, it's one-and-the same thing!"

After spitting out the entire story in one go, the Solitary Falcon opened his mouth big, and drank a few mouthfuls of wine before he sighed, and said: "One really can't blame Han Xiao Yao... I too would do anything in order to ensure a life of comforts for such a brother! For such a brother's love, I, Solitary Falcon would pay no mind to life and death!

"But because of this, it would become very difficult to protect your Family from the Xiaos'! Even I stand helpless in this regard; I have no idea how your Uncle's woman has been managing it for so long..." The Solitary Falcon heaved a long sigh, before continuing with a sense of desolation in his tone: "But I'm certain that no matter how she did it, the steps would've been extremely difficult! That girl's life must've become very, very bitter ah!"

The Solitary Falcon leaned to his side after finishing his tale, and started gazing at the dark of the night sky; his eyes were reflecting a strange, unknown, and complex emotion as they stared at the sky above, seemingly concealing the... pains of a very distant memory...

"So that's what's going on!" The young master Jun sighed; in both his incarnations, this was the first time the Hitman's mind actually felt over-burdened since this was first time he was up against a problem he couldn't find a solution to.

The Jun Family's previous situation had completely changed since several of its cornerstones had been destroyed, bringing the Family to a point of decline. The only survivor, Jun Wu Yi had lost both his legs to disability, aware that there would never be any hope of recovery. Although Grandpa Jun's heart was filled with anger over the loss of his sons, but he was still helpless; after all, one can't twist a thigh with a mere arm, and hence, he was forced to silence his anger as well.

However, even though the Xiao Family held a very powerful

position within the Silver Blizzard City's structure, they had still stopped mid-way in their goal of destroying the Jun Family; but why wouldn't they have cut the weed at its roots? There could only have been one reason behind the Xiao Family's decision to abandon their task half-way!

And this reason was most certainly a woman one could only take pity on!

Han Yan Yao!

[God knows what kind of a price she would've payed to keep the Jun Family from its doom...? And how much effort it must have taken...?]

[Only god knows what kind of a life that poor woman must be leading atop those snowy mountains... what kind of a miserable existence has she been enduring...?]

[The Jun Family's life has surely been very uncomfortable and miserable, but would it even remotely compare to that woman's?]

[Although the Jun, and the Xiao Family's mutual animosity won't allow them to coexist, but poor Han Yan Yao's credit cannot ever be overlooked since she's fighting against her own Family for the sake of the Jun Family, whilst still maintaining her Family's grace!]

[I need to ensure that Third Uncle and Han Yan Yao are reunited as soon as possible so that these lovers can finally get married!]

The Hitman Jun had suddenly started feeling anxious.

He had finally understood the plight Jun Wu Yi had been suffering this past decade... the pain and helplessness his calm face had been concealing...

However, the Hitman Jun could barely bear to imagine Han Yan Yao's plight, so how could Jun Wu Yi endure watching something like this happening to the love of his life? [This would've obviously thrown his conscious deeper into the abyss of depression!]

[If it hadn't been for the burden of this entire Family's future, if it hadn't been for the cause of his two brothers, if it hadn't been for an aged father... then Uncle would've already slit his throat with his own sword!]

[In such circumstances, even a bare existence must've been at least a million times more difficult than death! And also a million times more painful!]

[Moreover, the only confidante of his sacrifice still sits in wait far away, suffering in silence for just one ray of hope...]

[How could someone endure this?!]

The Hitman couldn't even imagine the pain Jun Wu Yi had been shouldering this past decade; [dragging a disabled body through the routines of life under such miserable circumstances, just for the sake of a father and the future generations... to live just for others... he is a hero!]

[In fact, death would've been very easy; even a knife would've sufficed... but to live like this, would be similar to enduring a thousand cuts to one's soul... every day, and every night!]

“Falcon, you just told me that you're presently at the fifth level of Spirit Xuan, and breaking into the sixth level wouldn't as difficult as the breakthrough from the fourth to fifth... but even though you wish to make that breakthrough, you can't because it's been very difficult for you to enhance your cultivation, and you haven't been able to overcome these difficulties as of yet, right?” Jun Mo Xie bit his teeth, while his firm eyes clearly demonstrated his heart's resolve. In fact, the Solitary Falcon had never heard him talk in such a solemn and slow tone before.

The Solitary Falcon could instinctively feel the power and unwavering determination of Jun Mo Xie's words, and couldn't prevent himself from being startled as he looked up at Jun Mo Xie, while his eyes suddenly started exuding a sharp and fierce aura: “Why are you saying this... you, you, what does this mean, boy...

what are you trying to say?”

Previously this would've been treated as mockery between these two men, however, at this time, the two of them were quite serious since they had clearly understood each other's intentions. In fact, the entirety of their surrounding had also suddenly tensed-up in accordance with this impending, and unusually serious discussion.

It was almost as if someone had uncovered a bow in the dark of night! With the arrow already touching the chord!

“My master was always obsessed with refining Dans, and as chance has it, a few years ago, he managed to develop a method to refine a very special Dan!” Jun Mo Xie's focused gaze met with the Solitary Falcon's eyes, and didn't leave them: “This Dan requires various precious and rare herbs, jewels, and other items as raw material. Moreover, this Dan's refining process is even more difficult. However, once it's ready, it will possess the ability to enhance a person's level, regardless of their strength, and without any side effects. Do you understand what that means?!”

The Solitary Falcon's hawk-like eyes motionlessly stared at him for a long time; Jun Mo Xie, too, didn't speak anything after, and simply continued to watch the Solitary Falcon in a calm and composed manner.

The Solitary Falcon was undoubtedly in need for this Dan! And, his requirement was urgent!

A desperation breeds in the heart of a person who has reached the extent of his ability, and still has people ahead he wishes to, but, can't chase down. Why else would a dignified man like the Solitary Falcon drop from his status and ask a kid to teach him martial arts; this itself was a proof conclusive of the fact that the Solitary Falcon had already reached his limits, but was still desperate to forge ahead!

The Solitary Falcon wouldn't shy away from going to any extent or expending any kind of effort in order to procure such a Dan; if

one such existed!

The Solitary Falcon was also aware that Jun Mo Xie wouldn't just present such a Dan to him, like a gift without costs. Thus, the next topic on the discussion table would obviously be the conditions! They both understood that well.

Chapter 232: Operation Begins

The Solitary Falcon was aware that he'd have to pay a huge price in order to obtain this Dan!

In fact, the Solitary Falcon was aware what this 'price' would be.

Thus, even though Jun Mo Xie still hadn't finished, it somehow seemed that there was no need for him to!

Both men were well aware of what the condition would be!

Even though the two pair of eyes were gazing into each other, seemingly in understanding, but the slight and quiet smile on their faces concealed the contest these two men were secretly having! A silent battle to see who's more impatient; to see who'd lose!

...and it stayed as such for a long, long time.

Suddenly, the Solitary Falcon shook his head, laughed, sighed and said: "All I can say is that you can put forth any condition, because this offer is so tempting that I wouldn't wish to refuse... in fact, I can't refuse; and then there's you... attaining and maintaining this sort of temperament at such a young age is nothing short of miraculous! I, Solitary Falcon, have traveled the entire world, but if you ask me, I've never seen anything comparable to the tiny monster you are. However, I'm glad that I met you today! But, this time, you've miscalculated!"

"Oh?" The Hitman's expression didn't waver in the slightest as he maintained his composure while slightly lifting his eyes.

"No one in this world is capable of resisting the temptations of this marvelous medicine you speak of. As far as I'm concerned, I'm simply incapable of even denying that I can resist the temptation of advancing to the sixth level of the Spirit Xuan realm from my current fifth;"

The Solitary Falcon smiled: "However, even though it's extremely difficult to resist, but this Solitary Falcon will never

allow anyone to look down upon himself! I would never agree to these terms; even if your master personally set them!

“Because... I am the Solitary Falcon! The Falcon of the Savanna!” A flame smoldered inside his eyes as he sneered: “I will only ever do the will of those gods who reside in the skies; never become the slave of mere men! And there shall be no exceptions!”

“Well said!” Jun Mo Xie gently applauded his words with a slight smile: “Perhaps Master Falcon misunderstands me; I’ve never asked for Master Falcon to become the slave of mere humans! But then, how could I be mistaken if I haven’t stated my conditions yet?”

“He he... young master Jun, it seems that I’ve underestimated you even now, however, you cannot deny that this sentence of yours was the complete reverse of your thoughts, can you?”

The Solitary Falcon was somewhat taunting now. “You’re that kind of person who’s willing to achieve his goals by fair means or foul, moreover, you’d stubbornly seek to maximize your profits in case you see any! This, I’m confident, I couldn’t have misunderstood!”

Jun Mo Xie was silent for a long time... had he really underestimated one of the most capable men in the entire world?

He had been manipulating everyone to his will ever since his reincarnation into this world, however, for the first time in this life, he found his confidence lacking, leaving him dumbstruck and speechless!

The young master Jun bitterly smiled as he said: “Master Falcon is right, I am such a person. You made no mistake in judging that about me, but... you do not agree with the words I haven’t said... however...

“I can still help you in enhancing your cultivation as long as you promise to do just one thing for me! And if you promise, I will

immediately try to inform my master to collect the raw material required for refining this Dan!”

“What’s the condition? I’m listening.” The Solitary Falcon didn’t seem even the slightest bit excited, but appeared somewhat alert instead. The Solitary Falcon had been in touch with this youngster long enough to understand that taking advantage of his treacherous mind was harder than reaching the sky! [Even though the benefits he provides are extraordinary, but he never acts without incentive and hence the price he usually asks for, are far above the market-worth of his products.]

And thus, the Solitary Falcon couldn’t help being on guard, however, unknowingly this turned his face gray in anticipation.

“I only ask that in case the Xiao Family comes seeking to end this dispute and the Jun Family goes to war with the Silver Blizzard City; you lend me a helping hand if I decide to rescue my Third Aunt!” Jun Mo Xie’s eyes shone brightly: “It will be a rescue operation, but you’ll be the killer on call.”

The Solitary Falcon paced back and forth about the room for a while as he pondered over it, and then finally clenched his teeth with determination: “Good! Just this one thing!”

“It’s a deal!” Jun Mo Xie’s smiled.

“However, at least a year after! If this happens before one year’s time, then the deal won’t be valid.” The Solitary Falcon smiled proudly: “I won’t help if you ask me to do this within a year after the Dan helps me make the breakthrough because I won’t have enough strength to execute this task! However, a year after, I will certainly be able to!”

Jun Mo Xie’s face revealed a heartfelt smile for the first time: “So be it!”

This one trait of the Solitary Falcon’s character was the reason he had been able to keep up with Jun Mo Xie for so long.

He'd never take advantage of anyone.

However, no matter what, he'd never agree to be at a disadvantage!

The Solitary Falcon walked away; with two jars of wine.

Jun Mo Xie retrieved that strange piece of jade from the Hongjun Pagoda and carefully observed it for a while, but put it back since he was unable to understand its particulars. However, Jun Mo Xie could distinctly feel the Hongjun Pagoda's odor becoming cleaner, fresher, and livelier as he returned that Jade pendant to the Pagoda, and could also sense the Pagoda's Aura becoming stronger and denser with the passage of time as the energies of these two strange artifacts continued to mix.

Jun Mo Xie tugged his knees as he sat down, and started gazing at the moon outside the window as he immersed himself in his schemes.

[I need to find those three Spirit Herbs as soon as possible in order to enhance Grandfather's cultivation level; Also, I need to figure out a safety-route for saving his life in case something goes wrong... that's first.]

[Second, this Dan's refining is also beginning to turn into a pressing matter now!]

[Whether it is Solitary Falcon or Uncle, their strengths need to be enhanced as soon as possible. Plus, I can't neglect those people from the Tian Fa forest either.]

[Third, I must urge Hai Chen Feng to start the unification of Tian Xiang City's underworld factions as soon as possible. We must be sure to get a grasp over the knowledge of all activities inside the capital city.]

... One task after another, none easier than the previous, had left the Hitman frowning as he blankly continued to stare at the bright moon...

As the oil lamp gradually started to set, the young master Jun's silhouette got even lonelier in the dark of this night ...

Suddenly, a distinctive white figure appeared on the courtyard's wall. Though looking from afar, one could clearly see Jun Mo Xie's puckered eyebrows, a sight sufficient to deduce that this handsome youngster had been exhausting his thought and ingenuity, day and night for the sake of his Family's future...

This beautiful figure tenderly watched for a long time and then eventually sighed as she left; leaving behind only a hint of her fragrance...

In the other partition of the courtyard, Jun Wu Yi sat leaning against the window; his eyes shut, and face hard with creases... his distressed eyebrows and unconsciously clenched teeth clearly exposed every tiny blood vein on his face, vividly illustrating the desolation of his heart...

... ..

Hai Chen Feng's entire body seemed to resemble the waves of the blue seas as he gently drifted through the crowd comprising the dozen or so of the Jin Yang gang's finest members: "The Operation begins! The management wants to see the results before tomorrow's first light!"

The gentle moonlight bathed the weapons they held as the crowd silently raised them in the air, virtually infecting the steel with a faint, yet dark layer of a lustrous... condensation of blood!

A few people swiftly climbed over the walls from within the Li Family's residence, divided into groups of two, and immediately disappeared into the dark of the night.

Tonight was destined to be another bloody one for the Tian Xiang city...

One of the six major underworld factions, the Spirit Dragon gang had brought a disaster upon itself.

Though the capital's six major underground factions had always been ranked in order of their might, but the disparity between the strengths of their primary forces wasn't much. Although the first ranked Jin Yang gang was obviously stronger than the bottom ranking Northern City gang, however, not by much; or at least, wasn't strong enough to overwhelm and subject them to its whims.

Moreover, these six gangs also had an unwritten understanding between them, which had allowed them to coexist in a peaceful manner since any conflict between these gangs could never result in one gang subduing the other; in case such an incident ever occurred, the remaining gangs would all team up against the aggressor.

Today however, the Spirit Dragon gang received a message in reply from the Jin Yang gang;

The situation of these six gangs was getting more and more detrimental to their sake since they were beginning to get surrounded by an increasing number of powerful families, which were constantly nibbling away the existing might of these gangs. In fact, the Northern City gang had recently been exterminated in its entirety by Old Man Tang.

Alarmed, anxious, and panic-stricken, the gangs were failing to carry out even the most basic of their operations. And thus, the Spirit Dragon gang took the lead in raising the proposal for an alliance between the major gangs, hoping that they could all sail the storm in the same boat. Naturally, they wanted the most powerful gang, the Jin Yang gang as their main partner in this alliance.

However, unfortunately, at the time they raised this proposal, the Solitary Falcon ran amok the Jin Yang gang, beating Jin Feng Lie black and blue in the process, forcing the "alliance" initiative on a temporary hold.

Today, however, the entire Spirit Dragon gang was overjoyed upon receiving an unexpected reply from the Jin Yang gang. But, the replying letter was shredded soon after the Spirit Dragon gang's leader Long Da Hai was done reading its message: [This letter demands that we surrender to their superiority, and bid allegiance to them!]

[This is simply too bold! Has he ever heard of a gang surrendering to another in these past ten years since we first established ourselves? Jin Feng Lie, did you even consider that the six major gangs have always been on equal footing? Why would you dare to propose this?]

Seething with anger, Long Da Hai immediately summoned the heads of his gang to discuss countermeasures. In fact, his personnel were so incited by this incident that a vast majority of them were even willing to fight the Jin Yang gang to death, while many others were clamoring to use this opportunity for taking control of the Jin Yang gang. However, the Spirit Dragon gang's leader was staidly taking his time for making the decision as he considered his options...

In this awfully noisy moment, the entrance door suddenly exploded with a 'boom', sending the wooden shavings flying in all directions. Several people were left wincing in pain as these wooden shavings cut their faces, drenching them in blood.

Everyone furiously looked towards the entrance.

A distinct blue light was radiating in the densely foggy night.

The wooden shavings settled down; one man stood at the entrance.

This, seemingly, blue-colored man, stood clad in blue-colored robes with his hands behind his back as his eyes calmly mapped the room in the radiance of his azure light; even this man's eyes were as blue as the oceans!

“A Sky Xuan expert!”

The Spirit Dragon gang’s members couldn’t help crying out in alarm upon seeing a Sky Xuan expert!

A Sky Xuan expert had arrived!

The entire Spirit Dragon gang was left shivering!

“May I dare to ask Sir’s...” Long Da Hai’s mustache trembled as he hastily stood up, and asked in a respectful manner.

“The Jin Yang gang shall rule the city’s underworld; you have two choices: pledge allegiance, or die!” The blue-robed man’s ice-cold eyes seemed a bit strange, like they were bathing in an inexplicable aura, as he slowly scanned the crowd again while making his statement.

In fact, even his words seemed to be reeking in an acute aura of death!

Chapter 233: Subduing the Spirit Dragon Gang

The blood of the Spirit Dragon gang members turned cold because of Hai Chen Feng's sharp Sky Xuan aura.; they felt like they were standing naked on the summit of a snow-clad mountain, in the midst of the winter season, and were beset by extreme cold... it was as if icy knives had penetrated their flesh and were piercing down their very souls...

So much so, that it would sap any man's willpower and even the strongest of souls could not hope to contend with such terrifying strength.

Long Da Hai's face turned pale as he stood facing Hai Chen Feng; it was as if the opposite party was a formidable mountain while he himself was just a small stone at its foot, which wasn't even qualified enough to fathom a means to look up at it. He took five or six step backwards so that he could breathe a bit easier, but as he did, his back hit a wall with a loud "bang!" only to realize that he had retreated from the middle of the hall, and all the way to the inner most wall...

[What kind of pressure is this!?]

"Who are you, sire? Why is a person of such high skill siding with Jin Yang against our Spirit Dragon gang? What is the need for your interference, sire?" Long Da Hai gathered courage and asked in a stern manner. "Where is Jin Yang gang's leader? Where is Jin Feng Lie hiding!? Since he is attempting to gain control over my gang, why does he hide, show yourself!"

Although his loud voice appeared majestic, and was intended to improve his position and make him look imposing, however, the slight tremble in it, made it seem like he was begging the man in front.

“The Jin Yang Gang’s boss is standing in front of you! When did I ever hide?” Hai Chen Feng focused his stare as he raised his eyes and looked directly across the hall at Long Da Hai’s face, shrouding him in a murderous aura.

Suddenly, Long Da Hai’s heart found itself shuddering.

Just looking at Hai Chen Feng’s eyes was painful for the Earth Xuan strong Long Da Hai! And even though there was a distance of about a dozen paces between him and Hai Chen Feng, the feeling of imminent death was very clear in his mind.

And even though several members from the Spirit Dragon Gang were present in close proximity, he felt that in that huge space there was no one now who could give him a sense of security; he would have to face that tyrannical and sinister expert all on his own!

A feeling of incomparable despair arose inside Long Da Hai’s heart; he felt his knees becoming weak with pain as he started to sweat profusely, feeling a sudden urge to kneel and submit...

Hai Chen Feng, who was looking at the other party like an eagle, suddenly waved his arm and gave his blue cape a whirl. At that signal, a sound similar to the stampede of thousands of horses, charging all full gallop some distance away, was heard!

“Kill!”

There was a loud rumbling sound and suddenly hundreds of men burst in carrying their glimmering swords in front of them, while on the walls several archers appeared with their arrows notched in their bows, surrounding the Spirit Dragon gang; the tip of the arrows shone like the teeth of a smiling angel of death, illuminating the hall.

Hai Chen Feng had stealthily eliminated the spies guarding the premises earlier on, without anyone getting to know about it.

“Swear allegiance now or die, if you do not comply, we will kill

you all. I will count to three and if Long Da Hai does not respond by then, you all will die no matter what you personally feel about this matter!” Hai Chen Feng’s eyes were cold as he said this and raised his right hand as a blue light appeared from the base of his raised finger.

“One!”

Everyone from the Spirit Dragon gang started moving in panic; altogether, they turned their eyes to look at Long Da Hai, pleading him to rescue them. “Boss...” their voices sounded like they were begging him.

“Two!”

Hai Chen Feng’s cold expression didn’t change even the slightest at doing this slovenly job as he sang the next number while raising his second finger, as if to the tune of some music.

“...”, Long Da Hai’s face turned deathly pale as his lips trembled open, his eyes were filled with despair and helplessness.

“Archers, prepare!” Hai Chen Feng, already looking furious, raised his arm as he gave the order in a tsunami like voice.

“ARGHH!” the archers answered in unison as they pulled the arrows on their bows, making them resemble a full moon; the moment Hai Chen Feng would say “three,” numerous arrows would rain down on their targets!

Like angels of death, sent from the heavens, to bring upon imminent death!

Now, resistance would only lead to death and the only way they could survive would be to...

“Slow down!” Long Da Hai bellowed suddenly, though a trace similar to that of weeping lingered in his voice. “I...I...I am willing to swear allegiance...” He seemed to spit out these words as he slumped into a soft ball. The sweat covered faces of his people showed utmost relief on hearing his words as they dropped their

weapons one by one, it was like they had received a pardon from the death penalty.

“Good!” Hai Chen Feng said approvingly. “Since you have surrendered, we will be family from now on, and you will abide by its law! You are now in-charge of the Spirit Dragon gang’s operations.”

“Yes, and comply with the boss’s orders sincerely!” A tall and sturdy silhouette came out of the shadows taking long strides; he had thick eyebrows, his mustache was like a dragon’s, his extravagant nose and wide mouth resembled that of a lion.

This man was no other than Jin Feng Lie.

“Jin Feng Lie, you...” Long Da Hai pointed at him unbelievably, at a complete loss for words.

“Ha Ha! Is it really that shocking that I have abdicated my position?” Jin Feng Lie laughed in a carefree manner.

Truth be told, Jin Feng Li did not really mind the fact that Hai Chen Feng had taken over his position as the gang’s leader. That position was not as important as his friendship with Hai Chen Feng and also, he figured that the Jin Yang gang would not risk any harm from Hai Chen Feng’s leadership, it would only benefit from it!

“Such impressive might and Xuan Qi! Conquering an entire gang just by using a few words, it is indeed very admirable of this Xuan expert; you are really extraordinary, Sir!” A solitary voice seemed to flutter in for a fleeting moment; it had an eccentric and sour tinge.

“Who is this?” Hai Chen Feng asked, his gaze sweeping around the hall. His figure, covered in blue light, quickly flew up and proudly stationed itself on the rooftop.

“It’s me!” one of the men said with a sardonic smile as several archers cried out in alarm, falling down, while two black clothed

men replaced them on the wall, ferociously staring at Hai Chen Feng. “The capital city is too big a pie for one gang to swallow whole on its own; even if you try, you’ll end up vomiting everything out!”

Hai Chen Feng’s aura rose sharply, spreading the gorgeous blue light even further. “Good that your distinguished self has made yourself heard, but the fact that the weak are eliminated by the strong is the basic rule of the game!”

Suddenly, his figure, bathed in blue light flew to the sky and then shot towards the two men, covering the distance to them in a blink of an eye, and attacked them, which they were just barely able to avoid.

The two men clothed in black laughed mockingly, “A sky Xuan Expert is quite hard to come by right?” In answer to that attack, the two men, also covered in blue light, shot up towards him and shouted in unison as they clashed together with their adversary; their clash culminating in fireworks.

The three people floated backwards a little, stopped mid-air at the same time, and then maneuvered towards each other in order to attack again.

Hai Chen Feng’s face was reveling in a tranquil smile as his palms incessantly attacked his opponents, his deep-blue Xuan Qi appearing similar to a half-moon.

Such attacks were like giant hatchets capable of cleaving mountains, and though these strong attacks left the two men struggling, they still weren’t powerful enough to force them to retreat by even a bit!

Suddenly, one of them retreated while hissing sharply, while the other man resorted to frantic counter-attacks. In the meanwhile, the man who had retreated was now standing on the wall, covered in blue Xuan Qi. Soon, his palms, along with the rest of his body turned black, and he pointed one finger at Hai Chen Feng, who was

still in the middle of a battle.

Hai Chen Feng had been confident of coming out victorious even when faced with the both of them at once, so naturally he was sure of being able to better just the one he was faced against now. However, making quick work of a Sky Xuan opponent wasn't possible for him as long as his own safety was a prerequisite. Thus, the fight was bound to continue a little while longer since he didn't wish to injure himself.

Hai Chen Feng had, for the time being attained a comprehensive advantage over his opponents and could easily win against them at any time he wished to. Then suddenly, a burst of cold air filled the atmosphere, staining the area with a pungent smell, which after assailing the nostrils, made everyone tremble fearfully. Then, retreating a bit after smelling the stench, Hai Chen Feng asked in a stern manner, "Is that the Merciless Cold Blooded Finger of Master Li Wu Bei's school?"

"Haha, how lucky we are that your arrogant self has recognized the Merciless Cold Blooded Finger." The men clothed in black smiled. "And since you are aware of it, why don't you hurry up and go down on your knees to ask for forgiveness?"

The men clad in black were the disciples of one of the 'Eight Great Masters' and they themselves were Sky Xuan experts, and hence, obviously weren't weak. Also, the bold way in which they were acting showed their master's backing in this endeavor of theirs'; Hai Chen Feng didn't wish to offend Li Wu Bei. However, if he were to retreat now, he would certainly lose control over both the Jin Yang and the Spirit Dragon gangs.

On the other hand, the two men in black had begun to count their chickens before they had even begun to hatch because they were sure of victory.

It is very unfortunate that such wishful thinking does not come true in this world.

“Come out with your nonsense!” Hai Chen Feng cursed in anger because of the arrogance of the words spoken to him. He moved his hand behind his back and unsheathed a long double edged sword, which came out with a ringing sound as he once again rushed towards his enemies like a crashing wave; it seemed like the sky blue waves of his aura were mixed with the silvery and snowy spray of his sword as he attacked them.

“The Blue Snow-Storm Sword! So you are the Blue master’s disciple!” laughed the men clad in black. “This is good, now we can finally see which of our schools is superior, and which is inferior.”

Hai Chen Feng got even angrier upon hearing this!

He was confident of defeating the two men on his own and had originally planned to leave them lying around, however they had used a formidable move, and he did not want them to recklessly attack and risk their lives as they were his brother disciples. Therefore, he had drawn his sword in order to deter them; though, opposed to his expectations, they continued to act arrogantly even after that.

He was unaware that Li Jian Hong had promised to help Li You Ran in unifying the capital’s underworld, and that these two men were his fellow disciples. They had made their first move tonight, though it turned out that they were a step behind. However, they couldn’t back away now, even if they had to face Hai Chen Feng as a result.

If they were unable to gain control over these gangs, they would not be able to face their elder brother, and perhaps even the little master, ever again. So even if they were aware of the relationship between the parties involved, they couldn’t give up.

Chapter 234: Silver Blizzard City!

Although the two men had judged that Hai Chen Feng was stronger than them, they had also guessed that he neither intended nor dared to act rashly. In fact, he was trying to avoid severely injuring them. As a result, he was being cautious and wasn't attacking them blindly; the two men simply couldn't believe their luck!

At the same time, Hai Chen Feng had realized that the two black-clothed men weren't remotely grateful for the mercy he was showing them. He couldn't help getting angrier each time he was attacked. His sword gleamed brightly, and his body shot towards his opponents like a comet as he shouted, "This place is not appropriate for fighting! Do the Master's cold-blooded disciples have the courage to follow me to a more suitable place?"

The two men laughed. "Good. Then the one who loses will desist from trying to conquer the capital's underworld." The three figures, covered in blue light, then disappeared from sight in the blink of an eye.

Long Dai Hai and Jin Feng Lie were both Earth Xuan experts who wouldn't be considered weak; however, they couldn't help but be dazzled at the spectacle of these three experts engaged in a battle above them. Seeing the three depart, Jin Feng Lie energetically patted Long Dai Hai's shoulders. "Let's go and discuss the arrangements to be made for our gang."

Jin Feng Lie was a veteran of the underworld, and although he could not discern which of the parties was weaker, he had known Hai Chen Feng for a long time. After hearing the dialogue between him and the two men, he felt no need to worry because he was confident that his friend had the upper hand!

It was only then that Long Dai Hai opened his eyes, which he had shut earlier due to fear. After understanding his counterpart, with

a grunt, he walked inside with him.

... ..

In the extreme north of the land lay the Silver Blizzard City!

There were snow-capped mountains in all directions as far as the eye could see!

In the middle of the vast and misty uninhabitable peaks was a magnificent, mysterious and unpredictable city of pure ice. It seemed to overlook the entire world from the secrecy of the clouded, snow-covered peaks!

It was not yet daybreak, and the sky was still dark when the bell to convene rang out. The loud echoes of the bell disrupted the seemingly perpetual tranquility of the place, and the many pure-white birds which were sitting in the area suddenly shot up like rockets, scared away by the sudden peals; their cries filled the sky as they continued to circle above.

The base of the main building was made of pure ice. Inside the hall, on a wall of snow-white bricks, was a portrait of people in white clothes. Each of their postures was different; however, they all revealed the same look of pride and cold power on their faces!

Their eyes were 'god-Like' and full of murderous aura, and it seemed like they had power over life and death, able to seize anything they wanted; in fact, they seemed so powerful that they considered everyone else below them!

They were the Silver Blizzard City's ancestors!

The hall was quite big, that even if hundreds of people were to dine in it, still no one would feel that the place was overcrowded.

A white-clothed old man, with white hair and beard, stood in front of the incense table with his hands behind his back. He silently gazed at the portrait of the ancestors, and on his face was an expression as tranquil as calm water and as cold as ice.

Even though his hair was white, he had a straight back and a firmly held chest. He stood erect like a shaft of a formidable blade, all the while emitting a cold, sword-like aura!

No one could doubt that this old man was hiding immense power within him!

In fact, it seemed that his strength could shake the earth, surpassing all his peers!

Then, the swishing sound of clothes overcame the silence in the hall as many white-clad people entered rapidly from all directions. They assembled in a manner that indicated that each already had a predetermined position. Even in that large crowd, no one bumped into each other, and only a word or two was spoken.

In a short while, everyone settled down in their respective positions, and all eyes turned towards the old man standing in the center. Though they were all a bit surprised at being called like this, no one uttered a single word.

Amazingly enough, blue lights emanated from their bodies! There were nearly a hundred people there, and all of them were at least Sky Xuan experts!

Just then, the sound of approaching footsteps was heard as seven old men entered in a line, walking unhurriedly on the floor that was made of ten thousand-years-old mysterious ice. Each and every step was very calm when they walked in, and they stationed themselves behind the old man who remained standing quietly in the center.

An individual clad in white paused at the door with a graceful poise. His eyes twinkled and a power radiated all around him as he appeared at the door and stood proudly. It seemed that all the land under the heavens, including everyone in the hall, existed solely to be his dominion!

At his side, his partner, a beautiful, middle-aged woman, was

nestled against him like a frail willow. Their looks were unrivaled. The man seemed like a confident hero who stood above everyone else, and the woman had a grace and style unlike anyone in her generation! The bystanders were admiring the couple, looking at them with envy for their perfect match!

Everyone inside the hall turned to the couple the moment they entered and bowed. “Welcome, our city’s master and mistress. It is a pleasure to see you!”

“You needn’t be so polite,” the two replied with a hint of a smile on their faces. They unhurriedly proceeded to the middle of the hall, where they sat down on the only two chairs available in this huge space that was capable of seating hundreds of people.

Only these two were qualified to sit inside this hall!

These two were the lords of the city: the Heavenly Sword of Ice, Han Zhan Meng, and his wife, the Far Soaring Frost, Xue Shuang Qing.

The old man then waved his hand and said, “You have been invited here because of a matter that is extremely important for this city’s future; everyone below the Spirit Xuan realm may go outside and stand guard; allow no one to come closer than fifty meters of this place. If anyone tries, kill them without exception!”

“Yes, we will sincerely obey the elder’s command!” they answered in a chorus, and after cupping their hands, slowly left the hall; less than ten of the initially addressed were left, and suddenly the hall seemed quite empty with less than twenty people present at the moment.

“Does this matter concern Tian Xiang city?” Han Zhan Meng smiled at the elder, “Otherwise, elder Xiao Xing Yun would not have taken such precautions!”

“It is just as the master has guessed, there is news from Tian Xiang city... see master, the Third Elder has sent a message, and

one of our snow eagles has flown through the night to deliver to us this astonishing news!” the elder replied as he opened a roll of parchment and handed it over.

Han Zhan Meng shook his head lightly and chuckled as he took the snow white parchment, while Xue Shuang Qing leaned in close to him to read as well, both curious to see what this astonishing news really was...

But as the two people sitting read the message, their calm expressions slowly turned serious, and soon their smiles also vanished!

The beautiful woman’s flowery face lost its color and became pale, though there was a hint of happiness present there as well. Still, her smile faded and was replaced by a worried expression, and she could not help but grasp her husband’s hands, as if to warn him about something.

“This is unexpected news; everyone, have a look and give your opinion.” Han Zhan Meng finished reading and closed his eyes as he felt Xue Shuang Qing grabbing his arm, seemingly cautioning him of something as he waved the letter for everyone to read.

“Solitary Falcon is watching over the Jun Family, and has severely injured the Sixth Elder... a mysterious master severely injured Feng Wu, and the latter also snatched away the Sixth Elder’s Soul Replenishing Jade . . . and no one could resist him? . . . This . . . how is this possible!?” everyone exclaimed in bewilderment, crowing around, each trying to get a better look.

“So many events have taken place in these past few days!” Elder Xiao Xing Yun smiled coldly, “also, that arrogant kid from the Jun Family, who thinks too much of himself, has somehow been cured of his disability; this is really a rare occurrence...”

Han Zhan Meng sat silently for a moment before looking at the Great Elder, and asked, “The elder has called everyone here today . . . thus, I’m presuming he has a plan?”

“This person could formulate many plans, but the final decision has always been up to the city’s master, and he decides how to act on such plans.” The elder bowed respectfully and retreated half a step.

“Great Elder is a very important member of the city, what does he suggest?” Han Zhan Meng did not beat around the bush and directly came to the point.

“Despite his status in the society, the Solitary Falcon has taken it upon himself to seriously injure and insult the Sixth Elder for no reason; this act must be punished severely! If this news got out, then what would happen to the prestige of our city? We cannot take this matter lightly!” The Great Elder said in an unhurried manner.

The Great Elder had, shockingly, suggested punishing one of the Eight Great Masters! However, all those present nodded in agreement because in the eyes of the elders of the Silver Blizzard City, even the Eight Great Masters, including the Falcon of the Savannah, were not very important; this clearly showed how terrifyingly powerful the Silver Blizzard City was!

“This is a given, do you have another plan in mind?” Han Zhan Meng nodded lightly, with a blank expression on his face.

“Yes, the Soul Replenishing Jade is an extremely important heirloom of my Xiao Family. Its efficacy is extraordinary and can be considered to transcend the mortal realms; therefore, it must certainly not fall into the hands of an outsider! The retrieval of this jade is absolutely necessary, and there can be no compromise on this! It is of supreme importance that we get it back!” The Great Elder’s eyes flashed and it was clear that he was very angry at the loss of the Soul Replenishing Jade.

“We must take our time to consider this point, because if what the Third Elder says is true then we cannot be sure of this mysterious person’s strength. And if such is the case, then even if

all of us go together to confront him, we may still not necessarily be able to retrieve the Soul Replenishing Jade. Thus, we must be careful not to jeopardize so many lives for such a mission.”

Han Zhan Feng lightly knocked on the chair’s armrest, his eyelids half-closed as he said this.

“The master’s concern in this regard is justified! We must certainly not give caution to the wind while deploying our people, and we should also avoid conflict with this mysterious man as far as possible. However, the Third Elder is not yet a first-rate Spirit Xuan expert, and his assumptions may not be necessarily correct; even if compared to the Solitary Falcon, the difference in their strength would be similar to that of heaven and earth. Therefore, his speculations may be far more exaggerated than the truth. Also, he claims that not only is the mysterious master stronger than the city’s old master, but also, Yun Bei Chen! How can this be possible? This shows that the information in this letter may not be entirely correct!”

The Great Elder knit his white eyebrows as he slowly spoke these words.

He then continued, “In any case, we should send someone to verify this news; if this person really is that strong and unpredictable, we will enquire more about him. However, if it turns out that he is not a threat, we must immediately recapture the Soul Replenishing Jade from him.”

“Great Elder is truly wise, and his suggestion is the best option in this matter.” Han Zhan Meng said while looking at the elder appreciatively. “Still, it seems that you have a third plan in mind?”

“Yes, I do!” The Great Elder raised his white eyebrows. “This Jun Family is just a worldly family, and yet it has repeatedly provoked our Silver Blizzard City! This cannot be tolerated anymore! I suggest that we completely wipe out that entire family as a warning to the rest of the world against making light of our Silver

Blizzard City's power!"

Saying this, the Great Elder extended his right hand, and made a decisive and destructive downward gesture.

Chapter 235: The Seven Swords of the Silver City

On hearing the plans for the Jun Family, Xue Shuang Qing immediately became tense, and clenched her husband's arm tightly, unable to bear it anymore.

"This cannot be done!" Han Zhan Meng's eyebrows suddenly arched like two sharp swords which had been unsheathed quickly. "I don't have any problem with the Great Elder's first two plans, but I will not agree to the extermination of the entire Jun Family! Moreover, wasn't the suffering we had to endure ten years ago, the first time this plan was put into play, enough?"

Han Zhan Meng looked coldly at the elder, and continued solemnly, "Ten years ago, many of the Xiao Family's Spirit Xuan experts secretly went off to deal with the Jun Family and involved themselves in the war of two other nations without even taking permission; and because of this, the Jun Family came to the verge of ruin! And even though I put a stop to all of it, the Jun still suffered three successive attacks; as a result, the only surviving member of their second generation was crippled, while only a debauchee was left in their third. It doesn't matter what you say, this is too much!

"No matter what, the Jun Family is good and faithful, and the grudge between your families is your personal matter, so why are involving the rest of us? Also, I could not understand the Great Elder's words from the very beginning; what did you mean when you said that the Jun family has repeatedly provoked my Silver Blizzard City, and questioned its power? The only one which seems to have been provoked is the Xiao Family! This matter will not be mentioned again! And if anyone else decides to go forth in order to deal with the Juns without permission, the same will be punished according to the city's laws; no mercy will be shown to them!"

“But, now the Jun Family has got two powerful individuals supporting it, and sooner or later, they are going to create big problems for the Silver Blizzard City. Anyway, even if we don’t take the initiative to deal with the Jun Family ourselves, they will certainly try to harm the Silver Blizzard City in order to avenge what they’ve suffered in the past, owing to our animosity! Whether it was right or wrong, we killed four important members of the Jun Family, and though it was a mistake, crippled one of them; nothing can change this fact. An animosity which is carried forward from generation to generation cannot be dissolved this easily. Will my Xiao Family have to stretch its neck and bear the Jun Family’s resentment for the Silver Blizzard City’s future, all alone?” The Great Elder’s face clearly showed his indignation.

“The actions taken by the Xiao Family, in the past, are the root cause of this problem. Does the Great Elder really wish to add to the list of mistakes which have already been made, and commit more wrongs thereafter? The Great Elder is willing to bleed us all, forever, simply because of the mutual feelings harbored by two young ones; you are completely mistaken! They are good men, and they will not be killed needlessly because of this; such madness will not be allowed in my Silver Blizzard City!

“This matter has been in dispute for ten years! And in ten years, it has only seen stalemates! I have no interest in discussing it again.” Han Zhan Meng gazed coldly as he looked up. “Great Elder, if the Jun Family truly, and seriously, attacks the Silver Blizzard City in order to extract their revenge, then you do whatever you feel like, and I will not meddle therein! However, unless the Jun Family attacks us first, we will not do anything!”

“The Jun Family taking on the Silver Blizzard City? That is a big joke; it is just another family, without any significant capability; will it not be akin to courting their own death? Even in a hundred years, the Jun will not have enough strength to pose a threat to the Silver Blizzard City!” A tall and thin elder snorted; he was named

Xiao Bu Yu, and was in fact, the Second Elder of the city.

“If the Jun Family is really that weak, then why is the Xiao Family so worried?” Han Zhan Meng stared coldly.

“The thing is that . . . your eldest daughter Yao isn’t young anymore, and is still unmarried, and if this continues . . .” looking at Han Zhan Meng’s stubborn resistance to his proposal, the Great Elder decided to change the direction of his argument instead of insisting upon the same thing.

“This matter requires further consideration.” Han Zhan Meng’s face appeared as if he was having a headache. “Great Elder, have you forgotten what happened ten years ago? Do you really want Yao to go mad; do you really wish to force her into torment herself to death again? You’ve always loved her like she was your own granddaughter! Are you really so heartless that you’ll do this to her!?”

On hearing this, the Great Elder sighed sadly, but didn’t speak anymore.

Ten years ago, when Han Yan Yao had returned to the Silver Blizzard City, she went mad, and destroyed her meridians in front of Han Zhan Meng upon finding out the treatment the Juns had received at the hands of the Xiao Family. She had sworn that she would live and die with the Jun Family; the image of her blood staining the entire floor was still very vivid in everyone’s mind! This was why Han Zhan Meng was so vehemently opposed to Great Elder’s plan to eliminate the Jun Family!

No one had forgotten the hardships that were faced to save Han Yan Yao from the clutches of her death. At that time, the Great Elder had presumed that given her weak physical condition, she wouldn’t be able to harm her meridians any further; and thus, he had decided to go ahead with his plan to deal with the Jun Family again. However, on learning this, that stubborn girl pierced herself with two swords, right up to the shaft, and stood covered in blood

from head to toe in front of the elders, and demanded that they immediately withdraw their orders!

As a result, the Great Elder was rendered helpless and was forced to cancel his secret plan to destroy the Jun Family. However, Han Yan Yao's recklessness had already put her life at a great risk; and because of that, the Old Master of the City had gone into a fit of rage, and even Han Zhan Meng and his wife were furious with the Xiao Family; it was then, that the first signs of dispute between these two families of the Silver Blizzard City had started to appear.

Naturally, only a very few important people within the Silver Blizzard City had any knowledge of this incident, while outsiders were completely unaware of what had happened.

"Tracking the conversation back, wouldn't teaching a lesson to the Solitary Falcon be a huge blow to the Jun Family? The Jun Family will not be able to rise again after that; and therefore, there will be no need to exterminate them anymore!" saying this, Han Zhan Meng sighed and his gaze swept the hall as he looked outside at a solitary snow-capped peak in the distance, and then wondered in his heart, [Yao, your father can do only this much for you right now. The rest . . . you can just hope . . .]

"In that case, I would like to make some arrangements." although the Great Elder did not agree with Han Zhan Meng, he had no option but to relent. "This time, the capable second brother will lead the fifth and the eighth Elder. And to make our efforts foolproof, I would like to request that the Old Master of the City shall allow them to take the Seven Swords with them as well. After all, if the mysterious person actually turns out to be that formidable, then wouldn't the Seven Swords provide extra assurance?"

"Good! It is decided then! As for the remaining matters, I give the Great Elder full authority to make arrangements." hearing this, Han Zhan Meng rubbed his forehead, got up, and started to move out of the hall with his wife. But just as he had reached the gate, he

turned his head and warned, "In any case, no one is to involve themselves with the Jun Family; and if anyone disobeys this order, I will make sure to send a report to my father. And I can promise, that man, will be expelled from the Silver Blizzard City! Without any exceptions!" after saying this, the two leisurely walked away.

This left the Great Elder standing there expressionless for a moment. And though he continued standing calmly rooted to his spot, a trace of anger could be seen flashing in his eyes. Then, he suddenly turned towards Xiao Bu Yu, "You will make preparations to descend the mountains this afternoon; act immediately and without fail!"

"Elder brother so . . . what about the 'Jun Family' issue?" Xiao Bu Yu asked wrinkling his silvery eyebrows.

"There will be many opportunities for you to make use of in order to complete that task." Xiao Xing Yun took a deep breath and replied in an expressionless tone. "And after you get down, do what you think is necessary!"

"Yes!"

Outside the hall, Xue Shuang Qing patted her stomach, letting go of some of her worries, though some concerns still lingering in her mind. "Thank you dear husband, if you had not insisted, then perhaps the Jun Family would have been annihilated . . . and if such a thing were to happen to them, I fear that Yao . . ."

"Even though I have stopped things from progressing any further for now, Yao's still got a lot of problems . . . we can only help her one step at a time." Han Zhan Meng sighed deeply and looked up to the heavens as he quietly said, "Our daughter has suffered a lot of pain in the last decade. And as her father, how can I let her last source of hope be extinguished?"

"No matter what, no one will ever harm my daughter! Nor my family!" Han Zhan Meng said in a low voice. And as he waved his arm from his sleeves, a huge ice rock suddenly shattered into tiny

pieces, which scattered into the air like snowflakes!

Xue Shuang Qing nestled against her husband, and suddenly felt a sense of security warming her heart. She felt that as long as her husband's broad and sturdy shoulders held the burdens, no harm would come to either of her two precious daughters; and thus, she could not help but smile satisfyingly...

.....

Inside a cave of a solitary peak not far from the hall stood a lone and frail woman, dressed in white clothes and a mask. She opened a letter with her lily white hands and read it very quickly; but the moment she finished reading the letter, her fingers started to tremble while her eyes started to brim with tears.

"Is he really . . . ! His injury has really healed; thank god . . ." The woman dressed in white, cried tears of joy as her slender body bent forward while her shoulders trembled like dead leaves in the wind. Her heart had become very cold during the past one decade; however, this letter had finally broken through that ice, and her now precarious mental state was clearly reflecting the weakness, and the helplessness she had been feeling all these years!

With tears in her eyes, the woman in white sobbed softly for a while; but then, she suddenly stood up and walked over to the mouth of the cave. She knelt down with her hands cupped in devotion and looked up to the heavens as she prayed in a soft voice, "Thank God, for he has completely recovered; thank God for he is no longer in pain . . . give him happiness . . . this woman will trade ten . . . or even twenty years of her life for his safety and happiness . . ."

"Even if we can't be together . . . I am still your Yao . . . forever!"

She gently prayed on the ground; and as her plea quietly faded in the blowing wind, a strong gale arose from the heavens above, and kept getting stronger and stronger; without relenting. The waves of snowflakes started becoming bigger and denser, and started to

fall down upon the mountains with much more ferocity than before . . .

And though this lone woman on that snowy peak was completely covered in snow soon, she remained motionless; kneeling in prayer as her unceasing tears fell on the floor and froze . . .

However, not long after this, ten shadowy figures shot skyward and flew out of the Silver City. They descended down the mountains; hidden by wind and snow . . .

.....

Inside the Jun Family residence, Fatty's ghost-like howls woke up the Young Master of the house very early in the morning; he was dragged from his bed by Fatty. And when he opened his eyes, he saw that the Fatty was covered in black clothes from head to toe, and surprisingly, seemed to be in good spirits. Moreover, the fatty also appeared somewhat thinner than before; now he looked like a man . . . at least a little bit.

And not just that, his face was scrubbed clean and his hair was unexpectedly neat, while his body was giving off a faint hint of a honey locust's fragrance. After looking at his face, one could see that he had applied a lot of cosmetic powder . . . this Fatty had actually covered his face with cosmetic powder, and that too, with a very thick layer . . .

"Bleuuurgh . . . " Jun Mo Xie burst out retching. "Fatty, that much powder on your face looks scary because of your body type; you know that right? Are you trying to play the role of a ghost with such a thick layer of cosmetic powder on your face? And why did you wake me up so early in the morning?" he looked out the window to see the early glimmer of dawn.

"Third Young Master . . . brother . . . ", Tang Yuan was being uncharacteristically bashful, "did you not promise that you'll accompany me to meet the Sun Family's Young Miss..."

“Miss Sun . . . oh, that Miss Sun?” Jun Mo Xie realized suddenly, and stood up. “Isn’t she your fiancée? The one you had once lost while gambling?”

“Bullsh*t!” Fatty retorted in a somewhat fiery manner. “Is it possible that you wouldn’t mention that matter before her? Haven’t I always stayed away from such despicable things since then?” he said as sized himself up; looking quite satisfied. “I look thinner; pretty good right?”

“Uhh yes . . . really slim. In fact, you almost look like a person.” Jun Mo Xie whipped out from the corner of his mouth. “You really are looking very slim. In fact, I am truly confused . . . ”

Tang Yuan opened his big mouth and let out a loud and narcissistic laugh. Then, he swirled around twice, thinking he looked very elegant.

However, this swirling movement ruined whatever arrangements he had done in order to look slimmer. As a result, his belly drooped down again, which then flew out like a flexible elastic bag; followed his axial rotation, and then changed its direction once again as he stopped, only to dropped down to slap his thighs and knees.

“I’m meeting Miss Sun for the first time; I must make a good impression on her!” a look of longing and happiness flashed in Tang Yuan’s eyes while his pupils almost resembled the shape of a heart.

Chapter 236: Fatty's Blind Date

Jun Mo Xie couldn't bear to witness the spectacle and groaned. However, he was quite curious and wondered, [what kind of woman would bear with this nearly two-fifty Kg of fat?]

They ate breakfast with their eyes narrowed. Then they opened them big and wide as they stared in wait for the appointed time to arrive. They called out a big bodyguard when it was almost time and left to meet the “beautiful” woman.

“Third Young Master, what if your words comes true, and the Sun Family's granddaughter doesn't like me because I am fat and heavy? I... ” Tang Yuan's mind was full of worries. He passed gas onto the horse he was riding as a result of the mental pressure. The horse flared his nostrils up in complain; the foam forming at the corners of its mouth was proof of its distress.

Jun Mo Xie hummed in response, while his eyes were patrolling the street; he had an absent-minded look on his face.

Fatty Tang, on the other hand, had completely failed to notice the distracted look on the Young Master Jun's face. He anxiously looked down at his own fat, and let out a sigh as a thought suddenly crossed his mind. He violently turned his body, faced his friend, and asked in excitement, “Third Young Master, you said that if I lost weight... will it work if you supervise me?”

Just as he wiggled — the horse under his butt neighed in pain, while the four of its hooves were left trembling. The laboriously panting horse angrily turned its head and gave a ‘mortified’ look to show its resentment; then it reduced its speed further. It seemed that Fatty Tang had twisted the horse's lower back in the process of turning his waist.

“Erm, I will start assisting you in losing weight as soon as your injury is fully healed,” Jun Mo Xie replied with a smile on his face; then touching his chin, he continued, “we can make you as thin as

bean sprouts.”

“Well. Then it will certainly please you to know... that I would look very handsome if I weren’t so fat.” Tang Yuan pinched his fingers as he made a gesture towards Jun Mo Xie while looking at him in a flirtatious manner.

“Hiya!” Jun Mo Xie suddenly cracked a whip at his horse’s back, and dashed ahead. He then turned his head and spat in disgust.

Fatty Tang’s ‘coquettish’ expression was like a murderous weapon — it was just too much...

“She is meeting you here? Now isn’t that surprising!” Jun Mo Xie opened his eyes wide as he looked at the restaurant ahead. “Your fiancée has decided to meet you in this restaurant? I am really surprised; or was it you who proposed to meet here?”

“It wasn’t me; I didn’t think of meeting her in a restaurant... though I believe it’s a very good idea!” Tang Yuan looked at Jun Mo Xie in a bewildered manner, and then asked, “What do you find so strange about it?”

“What’s strange? A man meeting another in a restaurant can be considered quite natural. But a woman meeting her fiancée... it’s quite out of the ordinary!” Jun Mo Xie clicked his tongue twice as he said, “Fatty, it seems that your future wife is very different from the women of this era.”

“Oh? I guess she should’ve picked a brothel instead?” Tang Yuan flipped his eyelids as his nostrils flared, clearly showing that he scoffed at his companion’s opinion.

Jun Mo Xie wasn’t even able to find the time to reply — suddenly, from the restaurant, a white shadow quickly flew towards him and — in a moment — was standing on his shoulder; the speed of this ‘white shadow’ was no less than a high ranking expert’s.

He didn’t get any time to react in the face of such a sudden

attack, and was forced to allow the white creature to settle onto his shoulder. The tiny animal made a whining noise before sliding to the pit of the Jun Mo Xie's stomach. Then, with a grunt it embraced Jun Mo Xie's chest, floundered a bit, and attached itself to his clothes. It then extended its tiny head to Jun Mo Xie's now exposed collarbone and nestled against it, remaining motionless thereafter; just like placing oneself in the most intimate and secure embrace...

Jun Mo Xie had sensed this white creature long ago owing to his keen sensing abilities. "Woah! What are you doing here, you tiny thing?" he asked softly as he clutched the creature's ear that was clinging to his chest.

Naturally this tiny animal was none other than Dugu Xiao Yi's iron winged panther! It seemed quite obvious that the creature had gained a lot of weight over the very short period Jun Mo Xie hadn't seen him in...

Moreover, there was a small protrusion around a couple of its ribs; iron winged panthers were only capable of growing wings when their strength reached close to adulthood. Even then, they could only grow wings made of flesh. This young cub however, had already begun to grow vestigial wings even though it was barely a month old — its potential was truly limitless!

The little creature looked up with its watery eyes on hearing his dear young master. Then whining twice, it stuck out its small-pink tongue, and started licking his dear young master's chest and neck. It then turned once, and again started to search for Jun Mo Xie's neck with its tiny claws. The little cub's face lit up with happiness upon finding its desired target; looking at it, one would think that it would cling to Jun Mo Xie for the next 500 years...

However, that little thing could also somehow comprehend that Jun Mo Xie was on guard, and might throw it away.

[This little thing is very dear to that girl; if it's here... that

means...]

Jun Mo Xie shook his head, for he didn't need to ponder any further. If this little thing was here, then it meant that Dugu Xiao Yi was most likely to be around as well! Thinking about that unruly little girl gave Jun Mo Xie a headache.

The Young Master Jun hadn't yet gotten the opportunity to meet several of the Tian Xiang City's residents; such as Tian Xiang Empire's Emperor. However, the Emperor was someone he may not necessarily like to meet. On the other hand, there was another list, comprising of people the Young Master Jun simply didn't wish to meet; Dugu Xiao Yi was one of the names on this particular list.

However, he had already arrived at the door and couldn't retreat at this point. Therefore, lacking a better option, the Young Master Jun called Fatty Tang over, and braced himself as both men dismounted from their horses and walked inside.

They were completely unaware that the mountain-path they were about to take... would turn out to be a tiger-trail.

Apparently, the other party had taken great pains in reserving the entire hall for this meeting between their Family's granddaughter, and the Young Master Tang. Moreover, there was only one table for the guests, and it was placed right in the center.

Two guests were already seated around it at the moment!

One of the two — the petite figure wearing a light-green vest, was obviously Dugu Xiao Yi. This was apparent from the way her braided hair waved to-and-fro as she spoke. However, who was that man sitting with her...

The person sitting beside Dugu Xiao Yi had a stocky build, wide shoulders, thick arms and slightly thinning hair; just looking at him, one could tell that he was a formidable personage. Apparently, the Dugu Family was still uneasy about this meeting, and had sent one of Dugu Xiao Yi's elder brothers to act as a

bodyguard; just to be on the safer side. But which out of the ‘heroes and legends bravely rushing forward’ was this one?

His mannerism was much better than the other Dugu brothers... Jun Mo Xie’s sharp eyes were unable to determine which one of the seven ‘heroes and legends bravely rushing forward’ this man was, [could it be that the Dugu Family has an eighth son?]

Tang Yuan and the Young Master Jun had just entered through the door. However, on seeing those two, felt that there was something fishy going on as they walked towards them.

Jun Mo Xie patted his forehead. He was here for Tang Yuan’s blind date; not his own. But where was the Sun Family’s granddaughter? No other woman was present there besides Dugu Xiao Yi! He couldn’t tell why, but suddenly, an inexplicable feeling of dread arose within his heart.

With his mind abuzz, the Young Master Jun thought of something improbable, but dismissed it immediately. He then suddenly pulled Fatty by his sleeves and asked in a subdued tone, “Fatty, your fiancée... the Young Miss from the Sun Family... you’ve never seen her before, right?”

Tang Yuan’s palms were sweating with nervousness since he had been planning to leave a good impression on his fiancée. Feeling weak upon getting pulled like this, he replied to Jun Mo Xie in a soft voice once he had turned his fat head, and had sized himself up again, “No, but my fiancée is graceful and ladylike. We have just entered this place... how can we be sure if no one else is here, right?”

Tang Yuan finished explaining, and moved closer to Jun Mo Xie’s ear as he continued, “However, I guess what I’ve heard from people is correct because I once overheard my grandfather talking about the Sun Family’s granddaughter as well. He would’ve definitely made a good judgment with his strong foresight...”

“What did your grandfather say?” Jun Mo Xie was awfully

curious.

“My grandfather said ‘the Sun Family’s granddaughter has a very fat ass, and I will be sure of having a son. The two of you can be considered a perfect match!’” saying this, Tang Yuan laughed in an obscene manner, while his two eyebrows pulsed repeatedly in excitement. “Third Young Master, you may not know this, but I am very fond of women with big butts like my fiancée’s! However, my dream woman, he he he he...”

Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes and turned to walk inside; he had already had enough of that obscene fatty. The Fatty’s fiancée however, had his sympathy... [still, what sort of a girl would make a perfect match for this Fatty?] The Sun Family hadn’t cancelled the engagement despite Fatty’s disgusting behavior over the years — all this seemed very unusual to him...

The Young Master Jun was pondering over this strange matter, when a sudden and loud voice left him shocked!

“Jun... Brother Mo Xie! You actually came!” Dugu Xiao Yi took the initiative, and welcomed him with excitement. “I had figured that you will accompany Fatty here. So I also came along with my elder sister Sun. Hee hee... my guess was right! You really came!”

Jun Mo Xie shivered from head to toe; Dugu Xiao Yi had just called him “Brother Mo Xie” for the first time. A chill went through his body as he thought about it, [why is this little girl being so polite?]

“Young Miss Dugu! It was fated that I have the pleasure of meeting you here. But our real purpose in coming here is to meet your sister, the Sun Family’s granddaughter. So where is she?” Jun Mo Xie replied quickly; aiming to find more about her plans in order to be certain.

“You’re still calling me Young Miss Dugu?!” Dugu Xiao Yi looked at him bitterly, and pouted. Meanwhile, Jun Mo Xie’s hand went up to his chest, and he pulled out Little White from underneath his

clothes; the cub was still clutching him tightly, refusing to leave him. Dugu Xiao Yi, on the other hand, continued to purse her lips, “Did you not?”

Tang Yuan had been drooling over his fiancée ever after hearing about her. He stretched his neck to look for the ‘beautiful’ woman, but couldn’t spot any females apart from Dugu Xiao Yi. Meanwhile, that stocky looking person was now pouring himself a drink.

Just then, a thought hit Jun Mo Xie, [is that the Sun Family’s granddaughter?!!]

The Young Master Jun thought to himself: [Grandpa Tang was right! These two would make a perfect pair; they are truly a match made in heaven!]

Chapter 237: Strangely Heroic Woman

Fatty was still a bit suspicious as this well-built rose and strolled towards them. Though this person wasn't very tall, but anyone could tell that their figure was exceptionally sturdy. The person smiled widely as he cupped his fists calmly, and candidly spoke, "You must be Jun Family's Third Young Master? And the person with you is my future husband, Tang Yuan? This young woman is Sun Xiao Mei."

Tang Yuan was briefly dumbfounded. His eyes nearly popped out from their sockets, while his jaw almost dropped to the ground. This 'man' was actually a 'woman'! Her thick eyebrows atop big eyes wouldn't exactly look ugly from normal standards — if they hadn't been placed on that big forehead of hers.

Surprisingly, this woman had even tied her hair in a manly topknot [1]. She hadn't applied a whiff of cosmetic products, and was less of any jewelry. She stood cupping her hands in a posture that seemed as steady as stagnant water. Even her voice was ear-splitting, and resounding; like that of a powerful expert!

"Her ass really isn't small; she is exactly fatty's type. Your grandfather had spoken the truth. The two of you really do make a perfect match... a natural pair." Young Master Jun didn't know what to say. Therefore, left with no other option, he just prevented himself from laughing out loud, and awkwardly cupped his hands. He then congratulated Fatty in a low voice.

"Oh hey... " Tang Yuan looked like he had been struck by lightning. His small eyes were now as big as a buffalo's. His big mouth was stretched to the root of his ears, while saliva of despair had already started to drip from it. Suddenly a sound started emanating from his throat, "Kha, kha, kha... ," like someone was chocking a chicken. Then, his eyes rolled upwards as if he had hanged himself from a jade pillar. But his expression soon changed to that of dizziness. It almost seemed as if that jade pillar had

refused to bear his weight... and he had ended up hitting his head against the ground with a ‘bang’.

Tang Yuan had fantasized a lot about his fiancée — Sun Xiao Mei — the Sun family’s granddaughter. He had always thought that she would be would be the best candidate for his fiancée’s role. However, the difference between the fantasies of his dream lover and the reality... was far more that the pitiful Tang Yuan could bear. This shock was like a cruel blow which would leave one to vomit, lose consciousness, and then eventually fall to the ground.

“Apparently, this young woman has given quite a scare to my honored fiancée.” The Sun Family’s granddaughter mocked herself. Though there was a hint of sorrow in her eyes, she managed to conceal quickly. Then, she said in a straightforward manner after sizing up Tang Yuan, “My future husband is quite fat. He needs to lose weight.”

Cupping her fist in her hands, she made a gesture by extending them forward as she continued, “Third Young Master Jun, kindly take a seat.”

Young Master Jun had figured out the truth much before Fatty Tang. However, his first impression of Sun Xiao Mei wasn’t really good. It was important to note that Fatty, though intolerable, was still the heir to an important Family of the city. Thus, his wife’s morality and conduct shouldn’t be anything like Sun Xiao Mei’s. It wasn’t to look down upon the notion of women — but women were considered to be a man’s vassals in this era’s setting. Most men would find her unsightly appearance to be a defect. However, her each and every shortcoming would fall short in front of her amazingly bold attitude.

Jun Mo Xie had started to form a favorable opinion of the Sun Xiao Mei even though he had just met her; a fact, which was evident from the sincere shade of admiration in his eyes. For him, there was nothing to fuss-over about this woman — apart from her height and build.

In short, she could be described as, “A woman, who was a match for men.”

By just a word or two, one could sense that her temperament and efficiency in dealing with things surpassed that of the majority of men! She would surely have been a man with a ‘Heroic Personality’ if she hadn’t been born as a woman!

If Fatty were to break his engagement simply because of her appearance... it would be tantamount to missing out on an opportunity!

However, that flaw in her physical appearance had foreordained her life to that of tragedy.

After all, majority of men judged women by their appearance alone!

A woman’s inner-grace alone wouldn’t hold much importance for a vast majority of men!

Though it wouldn’t be pleasant to hear, but the fact was — Jun Mo Xie only admired her because he was unrelated to this whole matter.

If Minister Sun were to say to him... I’ll give my daughter’s hand to you if you really think so highly of her! Will you take good care of her?

The Young Master Jun would’ve immediately disappeared... he would’ve escaped the city for a lifetime; never-ever looking back at the Sun Family’s granddaughter again — let alone recognize this “gem of a person”.

“Elder Brother Mo Xie, Sister Sun’s appearance doesn’t stand out... but she is good-natured, kindhearted and very intelligent. I have been a close friend of hers, and she is a very remarkable person. She is straightforward and does not take trivial matters to heart; I am very fond of her!” Dugu Xiao Yi said in a musical voice as she petted and stroked Little White.

“You’re absolutely right!” Jun Mo Xie exclaimed in heartfelt admiration.

Jun Mo Xie could sense that this girl knew how to discern nonsensical falsehoods even though she conducted herself in a naïve and pure manner. So much so, that she could be deemed quite objective even though she came across as immature.

Very few women were capable of deferring from the conventions by so straightforward in this era’s background. Therefore, although Sun Xiao Mei was born with some physical flaws... her personality was nevertheless quite commendable.

Sun Xiao Mei smiled as she sat down. She lifted the teapot to pour Jun Mo Xie a cup as she raised her eyebrows and addressed him, “Young Master Jun, although we have met for the first time... I find that the rumors about you are not in agreement with reality.”

“Yes?” Jun Mo Xie asked with a mischievous smile as he raised the tea cup, “What do you find to be in disagreement?”

Sun Xiao Mei didn’t reply immediately, but instead smiled in a carefree manner. Her masculine smile somehow fit well with her rough face.

“To tell you the truth — this young woman is not here to meet Tang Yuan.” Sun Xiao Mei smiled. “The marriage between Tang Yuan and this young woman had been arranged by our respective parents. I have already accepted my misfortunes as a decree of fate since I’m an ugly woman. And I bear no intention to rebel. However, I have a record of all matters concerning Tang Yuan over these past five years... what he did, what he said, where he went, everything under the sky... I know it like the back of my hand!”

The Young Master Jun suddenly started feeling cold!

Jun Mo Xie observed a moment of silence for Fatty Tang; the Hitman could already foresee a very tragic life for that fatty.

“Not only is Tang Yuan not a good person; he is not even a proper gentleman!” Sun Xiao Mei smiled as she looked at the “fallen” Tang Yuan. “To put it bluntly — he is a proper scoundrel from head to tail; a really, really, vile character!”

“Well said!” Jun Mo Xie laughed heartily as he clapped his hands, “I’d say you’ve hit the bull’s eye!”

“However, this nasty guy is still very genuine by nature!” Sun Xiao Mei smiled glibly, “He never conceals his likes and dislikes. Plus, he’s is openly vocal and upfront about the things he hates; I like such genuine people! He has a bad reputation and is considered to be unworthy by everyone since he has a very bad record for the son of a nobleman... he is as fat as a pig, and as dumb as a donkey... you as his close friend must be familiar with all of this... so I needn’t comment on all this. I would just like to stress on one point. I have observed his intrinsic traits, and I believe that Tang Yuan is a man still; not a mere farm animal.

“Therefore, I don’t have anything to be dissatisfied about. Moreover, my own situation isn’t so great either. Keeping that in mind, being able to find such a life-companion is more than I could’ve asked for.” Sun Xiao Mei smiled lightly, “...it’s apparent that we are a match made in heaven.”

“Ke ke ke... ” Jun Mo Xie coughed several times since he was unable to think of a fitting response. He hadn’t met such a woman since he had arrived in this world. She was very open about her appearance, and also about her marriage; in fact, she made no attempts to avoid either of the topics. Any other woman in her place would’ve been too shy, and would’ve stopped talking a while back. Sun Xiao Mei, however, had actually gone on an incessant harangue. This in-itself was enough to describe her as a “Heroic Woman”!

“Third Young Master Jun; you needn’t cough. You understand worldly matters... so consider this — besides me, who in this world can tolerate Tang Yuan?” Sun Xiao Mei smiled, “He is so heavy!”

This time, Jun Mo Xie was completely shocked! His eyes opened as-wide-as his mouth as he speechlessly stared at her. [This young woman is truly a tigress... who else would dare to speak like this?]

Dugu Xiao Yi muffled her laughter with her hand, but her delicate shoulders still jittered incessantly. She was aware of her close friend's temperament. Therefore, she could naturally understand that her companion was being coy.

"I've been aware of Third Young Master's reputation for a long time. I had guessed that you would aid Tang Yuan by preventing any humiliating circumstances from arising; especially the ones that may involve the Tang and Sun Family's name. And for that, this young woman would like to thank you! ...Sun Xiao Mei is blessed to meet you in person today!" Sun Xiao Mei lowered her head as she poured more tea. She then continued in an unhurried manner, "You are wise and far sighted. Therefore, you may already know that this young woman is here for two reasons; first — I had to see for myself just how fat my fiancée is... and the second — which was my priority — to see if the rumors about your distinguished self were really true. Assuming I had understood Fatty Tang correctly... I had guessed that he would pull you along! And he did just that."

"Why did you wish to see me?" Jun Mo Xie asked in a bewildered tone. [What are you up to, ah. You arranged 'your' blind date with 'Fatty'... just to see 'me'?! This is really strange... but I doubt that she'd try to kill me over that "Wife Gambling" incident...]

"Apart from thanking you, I had to see something for myself. I have two close friends, and they are so close to me that they are like my younger sisters;" Sun Xiao Mei gave a meaningful look to Dugu Xiao Yi as she continued, "One of them deplores you. Her hatred for you is so high that it cannot be topped. While the other one has strong feelings for you, and roots for you passionately. When she speaks of you, it feels like her life would become unworthy of living without your existence. I came here out of

curiosity... I wanted to see what kind of charm the ‘number one’ debauchee of this city exudes. For you evoke such strong, yet opposite reactions from my two sisters... ”

Dugu Xiao Yi twisted her waist and leaned to one side as she heard this. Her face on the other hand, turned red as she protested, “Sister Xiao Mei!”

TL’s note:

[1]Manly Topknot, also known as the “Old Hero Top Knot”, is a hair style.

Chapter 238: The Troublesome Iron Winged Panther

Jun Mo Xie laughed out loud, and crossed his legs. He swayed for a while, and said, “May I know which of your sisters is so deeply attached to me? Ha ha... I’m one of the most bitterly detested individuals of the Tian Xiang City. In fact, I fear that eight-of-ten people would agree with this statement. But someone being ‘deeply attached’ to me... this is the first time I’ve heard something like this... I’m quite interested in knowing people with such discerning eyesight.”

Dugu Xiao Yi nervously looked at Sun Xiao Mei upon hearing this; her eyes seemed to be praying for her friend’s silence.

“I talk of a person who used to be far away; beyond the horizon...” Sun Xiao Mei smiled mysteriously as she ignored Dugu Xiao Yi’s imploring glance, “but has appeared right under your nose now! Young Master Jun, you have even exchanged a token of affection with her! And yet you’re confused?”

“Exchanged a token of affection?” Jun Mo Xie was aghast with shock. Then, he immediately recalled when Dugu Xiao Yi had given him her jade pendant. [Could it be that... oh god...]

The Young Master Jun turned sharply to look at the shy and timid Dugu Xiao Yi. Her small head was facing downwards, and was withdrawn into her collar. It seemed that she wouldn’t lift it up again; come what may...

Jun Mo Xie sighed deeply. What doubt would remain after taking all this into account...

He hadn’t expected that this silly-little-girl would try to approach a marriage in such a dubious manner... The thought of this depressed him a little. However, he also felt a little proud of himself for reasons unknown — the ‘original’ Jun Mo Xie was

regarded a scum, and a bully by everyone. Therefore, it was only natural that no one would form a favorable impression of him. On the other hand, the Hitman had only arrived in this world a very short while ago. However, he had already gotten a beautiful woman to fall for him. In fact, the seeds of affection had been rooted so deeply that she was already trying to set up their marriage... he naturally couldn't help but feel a bit proud of himself...

Dugu Xiao Yi started becoming increasingly bashful; so much so that her mind turned a bit hazy... [sister Sun is being so straightforward and loud about this. I could almost die of embarrassment...]

Sun Xiao Mei was paying attention to every subtle change in Jun Mo Xie's expression. Finally she spoke, "Now I understand. My younger sister — who detests and hates you to her bone — is reasonable in doing so since her opinion of you is justifiable. As for the opinion of my other younger sister — it seems that her affection for you may not be without reason either..."

"Miss Sun, this discussion has been awfully puzzling... I find myself in a state of complete confusion." Jun Mo Xie made a dispirited gesture with his hands, "I still haven't been able to understand your intention..."

"You don't understand... that's good too! It would be quite unfortunate if you were clearly able to comprehend everything." Sun Xiao Mei smiled faintly. She then unexpectedly looked at him in a pensive manner, "Third Young Master, you're not a good man; or at least not what they call an 'upright gentleman'! In fact, I'm still quite curious to know how many people you actually deem important."

The Hitman was terrified! He suddenly raised his head, and asked in a serious tone, "What did you say?"

Had he underestimated this woman...

“Arrogance! Disdain for all under heaven! This prominence of this character trait can be clearly gleaned from your eyes! Perhaps your eyes appear serene and calm to most people; so much so that you may be considered cool-headed and peaceful. However, they constantly reveal your arrogance in reality. In fact, your efforts to conceal it are useless in front of someone who understands this!”

Sun Xiao Mei smiled gently, “Now I’ll tell you this... as a customary gift for our first meeting, okay? — It will bode well to rein-in your arrogance and act amicably; no matter how much money you have, or how arrogant you are... After all, now is not the time for you to be so hubristic.”

She smiled sweetly after saying this. She then stood up and went over to Dugu Xiao Yi, and started caressing her beautiful hair as she warmly addressed her, “Little sister, your way of looking at things is good, but it’s such a pity...”

“But what’s a pity? Sister Sun?” Dugu Xiao Yi’s face couldn’t hold that bashful shade as she anxiously asked.

“It is such a pity that you’re still very young.” Sun Xiao Mei replied with a smile. Her heart wanted to say more, but she suppressed those words nonetheless: [Such a man cannot be tamed by any woman. You will taste a lot of bitterness for this in the future, little sister...]

[This woman is very difficult to deal with], Jun Mo Xie’s heart shivered with cold, [she can perceive even the minutest of changes, almost as if she has a sixth sense. Otherwise she would’ve never been able to recognize the pride I conceal...]

[Surprisingly, this woman is quite talented.] Jun Mo Xie pondered for a while, and then smiled as a devilish thought suddenly came to his mind. [If she marries Tang Yuan... wouldn’t I also gain a capable helper?]

Sun Xiao Mei finished speaking, and went over to Tang Yuan. Then, she suddenly kicked his plump buttocks: “Stop playing dead!

Quickly get up and follow me to my house. My father wishes to meet you!”

Tang Yuan jumped up wailing, and started massaging his posterior as he chided her angrily, “Crazy woman! Don’t come near me! Who’d want to return home with you!? Whatever... just leave me alone!”

Sun Xiao Mei’s face was blank as she suddenly reached out and tightly grabbed Tang Yuan’s big-and-fleshy ear. Then, she forcefully dragged him by it and took him outside. Tang Yuan’s initial curses later turned to pleas for mercy; his beseeching continued to remain audible inside restaurant until they had gone so far that he couldn’t be heard anymore.

At present, the only ones remaining in the hall were the Hitman — Jun Mo Xie — who was busy contemplating, and Dugu Xiao Yi — who still sitting giddy and red faced.

Dugu Xiao Yi’s embarrassment was clearly visible on her face. She’s had always considered that woman to be quite clever. It was difficult for her to fathom why her elder sister would betray her like this since Sun Xiao Mei clearly knew about her feelings towards the man; [Speaking of it so bluntly in front of Jun Mo Xie was like leaving me to die of embarrassment...]

Dugu Xiao Yi had become so self-conscious upon finding herself alone with Jun Mo Xie... that she wanted to stand up and run away! However, she would hate to leave at this point since she’d finally gotten to see him after facing a lot of difficulties. Moreover, it was difficult for her to foresee another chance of meeting him since her family was against this matter.

[He’s just sitting there; frowning like a dumb-witted blockhead... I don’t even know what he’s thinking... he’s not even saying anything...]

It’s a pity this little girl was the last thing on the Young Master Jun’s mind. Right now, it was continuously reverberating with

Sun Xiao Mei's final statement, "It will bode well to rein-in your arrogance and act amicably; no matter how much money you have, or how arrogant you are... After all, now is not the time for you to be so hubristic."

This statement had sounded as deafening as the morning bell to Jun Mo Xie's ears.

The young master Jun had managed to learn some formidable laws after coming to this world, and effectively had a few supernatural techniques at his disposal. Moreover, the memories of his previous life's skills were also intact. However, those memories weren't alone to cross over to this world. The prideful, cruel and untamed soul of the 'Evil Monarch' had also followed...

[There is no reason for me to not be arrogant. Why shouldn't I be proud with so many of such high-level qualifications in my arsenal?]

Whether it was this world's Sky Xuan experts, Spirit Xuan experts or Great Masters — none held any importance in the Hitman's eyes.

In his opinion, this world's inhabitants were second rate experts, and were nowhere near the ones he had come across in his previous life. As a result, he subconsciously acted arrogantly since he considered everyone beneath him!

In addition to this, he didn't give much importance to the concept of life or death. This obviously elevated in his arrogance to a more prominent position...

Yet, Sun Xiao Mei had unintentionally pointed out his character's greatest flaw in just a few words: Pride! Too much pride!

If a commoner was allowed to have pride, then the Jun Family's youngest heir was more than entitled to act arrogantly inside the Tian Xiang City; without anyone raising an eye. However, the Jun

Family's young dandy bore no qualifications which could justify his temperament in distant lands;

Especially in these precarious times when he was involved with both, the Silver Blizzard City, and the Xue Hun Manor. The Jun Family's young master was nothing for these two powerhouses. In fact, they could dispose him whenever-they-so-desired.

It seemed the need-of-the-hour for him to better his attitude and rein-in the unnecessary arrogance.

As he was thinking this, he heard Dugu Xiao Yi "humph". She then shifted in her stool and changed its direction with her buttocks, before letting out another "humph"; and then continued with shifting the stool. She kept wiggling on her seat while changing its directions around the table. A dark expression was slowly spreading across her small and pretty face. Her small hands were incessantly rubbing Little White to no avail, which was left wailing miserably upon being so 'rubbed'.

"Is there a bug under your butt?" asked the bewildered Jun Mo Xie; [why is this girl constantly twisting her butt like there's a maggot under it?]

"There's a bug under your ass!" Dugu Xiao Yi shouted back. "You don't pay attention to me... you don't speak to me, you... you... I hate you!" Dugu Xiao Yi retorted angrily. She whimpered and stamped her feet, for she felt more maligned with every passing minute; he had been ignoring her, and had hardly said a word to her... in-fact he had been giving her the cold shoulder ever since he had arrived!

Jun Mo Xie was stunned, [why is this girl so angry?] He didn't know how to confront this young miss's temperament. At the end of his wits, Jun Mo Xie spoke somewhat impatiently, "You... ugh, stop shouting or I'll leave!"

"You..." Dugu Xiao Yi felt a burst of anger rising in her. She hurtfully looked at Jun Mo Xie for a while. Then, she bit her lip,

controlled her rage, and said, “First, you cause me so much trouble... and now you want to leave?”

“Trouble?” Jun Mo Xie opened his eyes, “When did I cause trouble for you?” [Aren’t you the one spurring all the trouble? Why are you reversing the facts?]

“Just look at Little White! He... has turned my family upside down these last few days...” Dugu Xiao Yi bit her upper lip, “such a young level-eight iron winged panther is practically unheard of... and it suddenly showed up at my house! You think that’s not going to be problematic? Tsk, tsk, have you noticed the city’s situation lately? ...and I’ve been carrying this around! My dad interrogated me... he almost hit me.”

“Uh...” This was certainly troublesome but it couldn’t be helped. Regardless, Jun Mo Xie enquired further, “What did he say?”

“After he got anxious, he said — you are asking me what the problem is? You came back holding that thing in your arms, and you’re still asking ‘me’ what the problem is? I’m completely confused! Why don’t I just cut you up, and send you to hell. Maybe you can then find his parents, and ask them what the problem is?!” Dugu Xiao Yi imitated Dugu Wudi perfectly, but couldn’t refrain from smiling thereafter.

Jun Mo Xie was between laughter and tears.

[I’ll cut you, and send you to hell so you can catch hold of its parents?] It was difficult to say how Dugu Wudi reached this conclusion. However, it was a good thing that the conviction of his argument made up for the lack of reason in his words...

[He’s got some talents ah!]

Chapter 239: Dreamy Feelings

“Your father is really talented, and his plan is indeed very creative!” Jun Mo Xie burst out in admiration, and sighed. Though, he inwardly criticized that tiny creature — [even if someone was willing to die and go to hell for this... it would still not do any good; even this iron winged panther’s parents wouldn’t be able to explain any of this...]

[After all, this little thing has already overstepped every iron winged panther in the history. Even the ancestors of the iron winged panthers... or even the most powerful iron winged panther in history wouldn’t be able to explain this!]

He looked at that little girl once again.

[This little girl is also a first-class talent in her own merit. Moreover, she has a very unique personality. She was annoyed just a moment ago; annoyed enough to start shouting. In fact, it seemed as if her eyes would start tearing. But her tears quickly turned to laughter as soon as recalled a funny incident. Even that tension on her face disappeared. This transformation was really... very adorable.]

“I also believe that my father’s idea is very clever. It may seem very ineffective at first, but if one follows his directions closely, then this idea could turn out to be very interesting indeed... ha ha,” Dugu Xiao Yi seemed complacent, “In fact, I spent a lot of energy in fabricating a good lie to cover up for you. But I couldn’t come up with anything ample. My father can practically read my mind... It’s like my mother always says, ‘the wise often appear stupid to most people; that’s their true beauty’.”

[The wise often appear stupid to most people! True beauty?! Using such words to describe General Dugu Wudi... is an insult for these pitiful phrases.]

“So... how do we deal with this?” Jun Mo Xie was somewhat

touched. This little girl was so pure that she had laid herself bare for other people's needs. She was the complete converse of Dugu Wudi, who was completely barbaric. He'd act without thinking instead of resolving the problem.

"Hmm, it'll pass for the time being," Dugu Xiao Yi's nodded her head. "It goes without saying that many people will try to spend a lot of money to purchase Little White. But I'll drive them all away. He is mine, and therefore they can all forget about their plans. Besides, he's the only eyewitness of our..." the volume of her sound kept reducing gradually. It eventually reached a point where only she could hear herself; Jun Mo Xie wasn't listening to her anyway.

After she was done speaking, Dugu Xiao Yi stopped for a while. She then turned her head and looked at Jun Mo Xie for a while before she spoke in a soft voice, "My family received an invitation from the Jun family yesterday..."

"Oh?" Jun Mo Xie raised his eyebrows.

"I didn't know that you and my father had agreed on a bet!" Dugu Xiao Yi seemed a bit anxious yet angry as she stared with eyes wide open, "You've actually dared to make a bet against my father... I really don't know what you're thinking! Do you really think that a single bottle of wine could sell for over 10,000 silver taels? This is absolutely impossible; it simply cannot happen! However, you unexpectedly... humph! My father burst into laughter after receiving your invitation yesterday. He said that this bet would finally bring you under control. Ah... did my dad force you to make this bet..."

"Oh, he wants to bring me under control?! Hmm? I don't understand why you feel this bet is a bad idea... when in reality I have carefully chosen this opportunity, and have sent the invitations as per my own wish. Besides, who could ever subjugate this unyielding young master..."

Jun Mo Xie stroked his chin, while his eyes shone brightly, [General Dugu certainly did not force me to make this bet. This was my own doing. As for bringing me under control through this wager is concerned...? It would be quite unpleasant to say who puts whom under check.]

The Young Master Jun hadn't forgotten that the Dugu Family would owe him an astronomical debt if his wine auction was successful. [However, when it comes to it, will General Dugu lower his head because of the debt?]

“Are you sure?” Dugu Xiao Yi asked with a look of concern in her eyes. It was obvious that she didn't want Jun Mo Xie to lose this bet. Therefore, she would rather that her father lost! “But it will be ugly... how can you possibly beat my dad in this unfair game of gambling?”

“It is difficult to say whether it is... fair... or unfair... ” Jun Mo Xie stopped after he solemnly spoke these three phrases. He was confident of his plan. In fact, even if this game was going to be unfair to someone, it would most likely not be so to the Young Master Jun. However, if this world's gavel did not fall in his favor by chance... he would still have a one-in-a-million contingency in place.

“How about I accompany my dad tomorrow?” Dugu Xiao Yi's eyes suddenly brightened as her expression changed. She lowered her head, and bit her teeth as she made up her mind, “If he makes things difficult for you... I will start crying; and I will create a scene... I... I won't allow him to bully you! Please don't worry about it...”

The saying, ‘A woman's heart is with the one she loves’, is definitely not wrong. This little girl's mind was filled with concerns about Jun Mo Xie's wellbeing, and she was only contemplating means to prevent him from losing to her father. However, she had forgotten that if her old man lost, then her family would be burdened with a debt; and a very large one at

that...

Jun Mo Xie had always been cool-headed, callous and cold-blooded in his approach. However, for the first time in his life — he softened up. This little girl was whole-heartedly thinking solely of his welfare. Jun Mo Xie was no fool; how could he not see it?

Men aren't made of stones; they can't be that heartless.

"Young woman, don't worry; I will not lose." Jun Mo Xie smiled warmly, and extended his hands towards Dugu Xiao Yi to caress her hair. But as soon as his hand came into contact with it — he felt like he was hit by an electric shock, and quickly withdrew his hands. He had subconsciously gotten close to this woman in a way which was completely in contravention to his identity as a hitman. He had always carried himself as a hitman in both his lives. This, however, was the first time he had acted as such.

Though, he wasn't a hitman in this world...

Jun Mo Xie smiled as he stood up, and softly spoke, "I must leave."

Dugu Xiao Yi lowered her head, while her heart started to beat wildly. This was the first time he had spontaneously touched her on his own; even if it was just her hair. She felt as if her entire body was going weak, while her face started to feel feverish. Her mind, on the other hand, was racing... [what just happened? What am I doing? Why am I acting like this? Why am I behaving like a nit-wit...]

However, she had a vague feeling that something had been different during this entire tryst. This behavior of his' was different from before. Earlier, the Young Master Jun was just a slippery-tongued debauchee who always feigned a frivolously flirtatious attitude of a spoilt brat. On the contrary, he seemed preoccupied this time, while every move he made seemed earnest.

"Oh," Dugu Xiao Yi's lips quivered as she answered softly. She

stood up with her head drooping down, while her eyes seemed to be watching her own toes. Her voice was so soft when she spoke up again that Young Master Jun couldn't hear anything even though he stood in close proximity, "You're... leaving already? I... I... alright..."

Though, this young woman really wanted to say, "I could finally meet you with such difficulty." However, this sentence got stuck, and refused to come out of her mouth. She swallowed it, deliberated on it again-and-again, and eventually remained silent as she felt too embarrassed to say it out loud.

Dugu Xiao Yi's face shone like a transparent-white jade in the sunlight. The soft and smooth strands of hair seemed to be dancing in the wind. One strand fluttered along her temples and came to rest on her cheek, right next to her beautiful nose...

Her long eyelashes were calmly drooping down, and would only be disturbed momentarily when he would blink. Her bright-red and plump lips pursed because she was softly biting her white teeth. Her face was clearly showing her reluctance to part with him. Such was the scene of a young maiden-in-love who was trying her best to conceal her feelings. Though the more she tried to hide her feelings, the more adorable she looked...

This astonishingly beautiful appearance of hers left the Young Master Jun staring in awe. He had become accustomed to seeing celebrities in his previous life. In fact, he had seen all sorts of beautiful women. However, this was the first time he had seen a beauty as true and pure as hers. He found it difficult to suppress that feeling of tender-love and affection which was arising in his heart, and conceived this thought for the first time in his mind: [this girl is so pretty... even when compared to the most beautiful women; she still wouldn't seem inferior in any way...]

For a moment, there was pin drop silence in the hall; their delicate breathing wasn't enough to break this silence...

Dugu Xiao Yi's beautiful face turned red, as if feeling his burning gaze on her. She couldn't help but continue to look down bashfully. She started drawing circles on the ground with her toes while stroking Little White's silky white fur with her hands. Dugu Xiao Yi felt as if they were floating amidst the clouds; as if they were the only two people left in this huge world...

Little White's sneeze broke the silence, and woke the two of them up. Dugu Xiao Yi bashfully raised her blushing face, and glanced at him timidly as she softly said, "Fool... you... weren't you going to leave? Why haven't you left?"

Jun Mo Xie suddenly realized that he had lost control over his mind, and was being rude. However, this was the first time that his conduct had faulted during his two incarnations. He quickly got his act together, and laughed as he said, "I almost don't want to leave after seeing such a beautiful girl. It seems like you have awoken a perverted embodiment of mine..."

Dugu Xiao Yi lightly glanced at him as she softly spoke, "Shut up! You think I am scared of your perverted manners? ...Moreover, it seems that you have a matter to rush to; hurry up, and attend to it..." she turned away after saying this; Jun Mo Xie could clearly see that even the nape of Dugu Xiao Yi's neck had turned red.

He had spoken these words rather seriously, so how had it embarrassed her?

Young Master Jun had enjoyed very little intimacy with women in his previously life, and hence couldn't understand Dugu Xiao Yi's current mindset. On the other hand, she had just realized that the tone of her speech resembled that of a wife speaking to her husband just before he leaves for work. Her tone had been lukewarm, almost as if she was gently cautioning him. She recalled that her mother also used to speak like this right before her father would go out for a battle. She became even shyer upon realizing all this, and couldn't help wondering; [are we like that?]

[What's he to me?] The more she thought about it, the redder her face became. Soon, it was almost as if her face resembled the brilliantly shining red clouds of dawn; she naturally couldn't gather the courage to lift her pretty little head again.

“Ha, ha, pretty! Very pretty!” Jun Mo Xie exclaimed in admiration. Then he suddenly reached out with his hands, and cupped her face. He then felt it for a while, before softly pinching it. He clicked his tongue and exclaimed, “Quite smooth... very fragrant... haha!” he laughed loudly; his clothes fluttered in the wind as the sound of his footsteps gradually faded away into the distance.

He had acted frivolously in order to cover-up for his flustered heart. Hitman Jun had nearly fallen from grace, and had fled for the first time in his life... only to find his heart beating wildly like a drum...

Chapter 240: Aristocratic Status

Dugu Xiao Yi's heart was beating wildly. Jun Mo Xie's hand had just caressed her cheek, and she simply couldn't contain her embarrassment anymore. She instantly recalled something, and said, "Dammit... I'll definitely visit you tomorrow," Her voice was low where-as her head was still drooping down; same as before. Therefore, she obviously didn't know whether he had heard her or not.

"Excellent... I'll look forward to your visit." A wisp of Young Master Jun's clear and cheerful voice floated towards the beautiful woman's ears, and stayed there; till she looked up... even his shadow was no longer there in front her.

Dugu Xiao Yi stood-up hurriedly. She then swiftly took two steps at a time as she rushed towards the hall's entrance. Then, she expectantly raised her eyes, only to see that man turning a corner at the end of the street atop his horse. An intoxicated look of longing filled her eyes as she fantasized — gazing at the empty street. A dreamy smile surfaced on her face as she blushed; unable to speak her or move.

"That scoundrel... Humph! How dare he pinch my face!? I... he... how could he... I will definitely find him tomorrow! And I'll settle this account by fiercely kicking his butt!"

The merry Dugu Xiao Yi snorted as she tried her best to appear angry. However, her eyes — which she had no control over — were curved like the crescent moon; clearly revealing her bashful, happy and satisfied frame of mind...

Jun Mo Xie rode home alone; he was unable to figure out why he felt so pleased since his mind had never experienced such joy. Furthermore, he had become aware that he felt a little giddy and happy. He naturally hadn't had anything to drink, yet he was still feeling a bit tipsy; he obviously hadn't heard a funny joke, yet the

corners of his mouth were stretched into a tender smile...

[That nasty girl! Did that little girl poison me?]

Such emotions are like a poisoned wine which once drunk — would have a lifelong-effect; with no antidote for cure!

This mysterious feeling was giving him a headache. Though he had recuperated his body's health ever since taking it over... he only possessed the body of a youngster around the age of sixteen. This naturally meant that he hadn't yet reached adulthood from the notions of his previous world. To put it simply... he would still be in the final year of middle school. Perhaps he would be considered slightly more mature than a half-grown young man; at best. Well! That girl seemed to be around the same age; maybe slightly younger!

This was unadulterated puppy-love!

[Wow, this is frightening! Puppy love feels wrong! I need to find someone with experience so I can learn more about this condition...]

Young Master Jun incessantly indulged himself in flights-of-fancy while pleasantly smiling the entire journey back.

To normal people, the hurried hoof-beats of his horse sounded like drums being played upon a victorious general's return. Though to him, these hoof-beats sounded like sweet rhythm; almost as if they were a piece of poetic writing...

Jun Mo Xie dismounted from his horse as lightly as a feather. He was beaming radiantly as he stepped foot through the doorway of his house. Suddenly, a loud sound interrupted his noxious thoughts; noxious in-the-sense that he was already nearing his wedding night.

Anyone would despise this person. In fact, a vast majority would recommend handing him a beating with a thousand lashes until his shameless skin had been peeled away. And then crush his body

if nothing else worked.

Surprisingly, on one side he thought that puppy-love was wrong; while on the other, he was dreaming about his wedding chambers...

“You! Boy! You have returned at last. This old man has comprehended something new today; come quickly, and take a look...” the Solitary Falcon’s voice was galloping with excitement. In fact, it almost seemed as if it was trying to flaunt his treasure to someone. He had been busy with his research for several days, and had finally mastered his study; naturally, he was quite excited about it.

The Young Master Jun’s heart had left him visualizing the countenance of a flower. However, suddenly a man with long-and-fluttering black hair had appeared in front of his eyes. Moreover, this man’s face was as grim and icy as a fiend’s; this contrast was really too big! Extremely big!

Young Master Jun frowned. He was quite annoyed to see this person since it had destroyed his daydream. As a result, Jun Mo Xie was suddenly overcome with a wild impulse to kick the Solitary Falcon. Although he very much wanted to follow through with that urge, he restrained himself since he could not afford to provoke this person for the time-being.

“I don’t have time for this! Leave; you are disturbing me with all that noise!” Young Master Jun scowled, and his face became dark. He entered his room, and closed the door behind him with a loud “Bang”. The Great Master, who was following him closely, almost had his nose wedged between the slits of the doors.

“What’s the matter?! I had certainly seen this kid smiling a moment ago. He had returned looking happy and giddy... so why on earth was he talking to me like this... like a grandma who is sore on seeing that scoundrel-of-a-son she hates?”

Solitary Falcon scratched his scalp in confusion; he was at a

complete loss.

The day had begun like any other ordinary one. However, those invitation letters had soon made it quite unusual!

The entire Tian Xiang City had flared up; thoroughly flared up!

Each and every man, whose family had even-a-little-bit of influence, was completely engrossed in discussing it. [What is this Aristocratic Hall? Isn't this surprisingly arrogant?]

The scalding silver invitation cards were mounted by a golden plum blossom. The golden paint was used so precisely while drawing this flower, that each and every petal seemed vivid. In fact, even the stamens were clearly visible!

The invitation card's envelop could be considered a valuable piece-of-art on its own!

[What's there inside it?]

On opening the fly leaf, what would shine on one's eyes was nothing other than two rows of huge characters — inlayed in gold. The first line read: [frustrated, poor and the sick of heart are kindly requested to leave this route.] While, the line below read: [those whose family's worth is below one million are not to enter these doors!]

On opening another leaf of the letter, one would actually find a myriad of characters embedded in gold:

[Things worth discussing aren't free of charge!]

[The basic need of this world's greatest noblemen was — best-in-quality; how could they be mediocre? They wore fine silk, read golden scripts, heard immortal music, for they had a refined taste; fine tea, and one-in-million wine shall not be wasted on people with none.]

On the last leaf, there were a handful of large-sized characters written in flamboyant calligraphy —

[So far, life has been mundane; why?]

People were quick to realize that their worth needed to be above one-million in case they wished to enter this place! This place was a typical ‘favor the rich and disdain the poor’ sort of establishment... even its name — “Aristocratic Hall!” was reeking of discrimination.

However, this invitation card immediately caused a commotion... even amongst the most inelegant of families; all because of the three family-stamps it carried!

The personal stamp of the Jun Family’s Third Master; Jun Wu Yi!

The stamp of the Tang Family!

And perhaps the most unexpected and surprising one: the personal stamp of the Tian Xiang Empire’s sole prince-equivalent!

Together, these three seals had enough power to give anyone a breathing problem! To decline their invitation... would be equivalent to making an enemy out of one’s own life-expectancy... even the Mu Rong and the Dugu Family could not afford to offend such a monstrous alliance!

Momentarily, the members of all noble families in Tian Xiang City were found fluttering-about to discuss this matter!

Just one day of this matter had already blown-in a storm of public opinions. In the beginning, all influential families carried this rather profound belief that the actions of the “Aristocratic Hall” were no more than a nuisance. Many felt that it was blatantly pandering the rich and disregarding the poor; which was unacceptable to some. However soon-afterwards, the entirety of public opinions — down to every individual — reversed.

Many who received this invitation sighed in relief; they still they had a joyous expression on their faces even though they didn’t agree with it. Meanwhile, many others were left disgruntled; [why

haven't I received an invitation even though my family's worth is greater than one-million? This invitation clearly aims to convene the rich-and-noble families of Tian Xiang City; then why isn't there one with my name on it? Don't tell me; is my status lower than other people? As a matter of fact, do they look down upon me? What could be the reason?]

Such people couldn't reconcile themselves to private discussions, and started to criticize openly since they harbored sentiments of indignation and humiliation... on the other hand, the people who were initially nervous or afraid upon receiving this letter... eventually started to take pride in it...

[Take a look; Grandpa is an aristocrat! I am a great gentleman! Do you understand? Tsk tsk, the prince-equivalent, the Jun and the Tang Family are three of the most influential forces in the Tian Xiang City; they have made their judgment in inviting me! Do you still doubt it? You think you're richer than me? You think you have the money? Did you get the invitation?]

Status! Status!

The proof of status was quite simple: someone either had the invitation; or didn't.

If someone didn't receive the invitation... then it only meant one-of-two things: either their family wasn't worth over a million; or they were mere commoners.

This invitation card had become the 'symbol of aristocracy' in a very short period of time! People would wear pure-white gowns, and stick the invitation card in the collar. They would walk-about without caring about how they looked; their chests puffed, and their head held high. This was the new trend-of-the-town; a true sign of elegance and class. Moreover, it was proof of one's aristocratic status!

And, those who did not get the invitation... racked their brains in order to prevent themselves from being outdone. In fact, they

hollowed-out their minds with a hundred plans. Such people would stare wide-eyed at people who they didn't consider as equals. However, they would look away when any such person waved an invitation card in their face; else they would risk their desire and rage to give them away...

Then there were several people who never stepped foot outside their houses. However, they wantonly started visiting their friends and family after receiving the invitation. In fact, the most unreasonable ones were found knocking on over ten doors in just a day's time; these people were like dogs whose tongues would never tire of wagging...

However, none of them could be consider excessive because there were some who were even more unreasonable; so much so that they could leave the rest of them... far-far behind...

This single invitation had caused a lot of disturbances throughout Tian Xiang City. So much so, that even its creator, the Young Master of the Jun Family hadn't anticipated such a result. Things had escalated to such an extent that some people had even gathered the courage to seek out Jun Wu Yi. In fact, some people had actually offered him huge sums of money in-exchange for a single invitation.

Jun Wu Yi didn't know whether to laugh or cry after looking at this matter. To make things worse, some people had even begged him for his favor; this had really gotten out of hand...

One can't help but argue that the world has always had its strict hierarchies. However, no one had ever brought this out in a manner as brazen-and-blatant as the Aristocratic Hall.

Man has but one life; who wouldn't want a good name for themselves?

Right now, people had been presented with an opportunity to seem above the others... they naturally scrabbled madly on this wild goose chase. Just like in the in modern society, wherein two

married women who-each had the same gold ring... would still intentionally-or-otherwise compare whose ring was bigger. Therefore, who could blame the City's noble circle for this commotion...

Moreover, the Aristocratic Hall had opened right opposite the Magnificent Jewel Hall. This had immediately attracted interests from the upper-class of the city!

This business, which hadn't yet auctioned a single item — had aroused anxiety and curiosity in the hearts of many already. This was certainly the first incident of its kind for the Tian Xiang City!

The first ray of dawn shone from the east; early in the morning.

And the doors of the Aristocratic Hall quietly opened.

In its wake, two squads of security guards filed out, and neatly organized themselves into two rows to greet the crowd. Everyone who entered was surprised by the lush-green courtyard! Moreover, the flowers therein were so strongly fragrant, that they could leave anyone intoxicated!

No one could prevent their heart from feeling relaxed, and unperturbed after entering this courtyard. In fact, even the fussiest person couldn't prevent themselves from being entranced!

The flowers inside this courtyard were strongly fragrant even though it was late autumn. In fact, these beautiful flowers seemed to be flourishing; almost as if it was spring. The variety of flowers inside this huge courtyard could leave a very refined and tasteful impression on anyone. The trail seemed to be bending in the shadow of the trees lined-up on both sides; the scent of the trees only added to that winding taste of transcendence in the air. The path kept bending again-and-again, while its width reduced. In fact, one really couldn't tell the length of this trail; it seemed as if it would never come to an end!

This point alone differentiated this establishment, and had

placed it above all others!

[Truly deserves to be called the Aristocratic Hall! Ah!]

What else could anyone say... [where else can you find so many flowers in late autumn; and that too in the full bloom of spring! Moreover, none of them feel artificial upon touch! What kind of manpower and money does something like this require ah?]

Chapter 241: The Emperor's Verdict

A faint sound was coming from the upper floor of the Aristocratic Hall; the source of the sound seemed far, yet near. It was almost as if fairies were singing amidst the clouds. The music sounded misty and wasn't clearly audible to any who listened to it, but it was this indistinctiveness of the sound which made it even more enchanting.

Such a graceful and subdued sound was hard to describe. However, all those who had received the invitation cards were left to rejoice after listening to it. So much so that irrespective of the outcome of the coming auction, they would still consider this a very fruitful trip — even if they didn't gain anything else.

There were others who didn't have the invitation card, but were still standing amongst the crowd. Such people could only feel an unbearable itch in their hearts. They hated themselves for not having an invitation card after witnessing the elegant ambience of this place, since it meant they couldn't stay. [I'll regret it a lot later on... I must get that invitation card even if it is very expensive...]

The invitation card's price continued to increase as the sunlight became brighter. In fact, the speed of its rise was so frightening that it could be compared to whirlwinds. Fatty Tang had initially been quite distressed by the amount that had been spent on making these cards. However, he now stood gazing in admiration at the scene which had been choreographed by the Young Master Jun's persistence.

[Shouldn't he be called a business genius? I have been too shortsighted!] Fatty Tang ridiculed himself.

Jun Mo Xie was sitting calmly through all this commotion. However, even he hadn't expected that his plan would create the sensation of such an effect. The only explanation for this could be that the Tian Xiang City had a lot of rich people. Moreover, they

were crazy about invidious comparisons...

Sunshine illuminated the sky.

The Aristocratic Hall's on-sale invitations had been exhausted, and those who had been initially invited had arrived. In three-quarters of an hour, the main street was filled with first-rate carriages. All kinds of expensive carriages were parked next to each other. In fact, one could say that every vehicle in sight was expensive in its own right. When all was said and done, it was difficult to tell which carriage was the most luxurious. All the invitees had put forth their best harness to flaunt their 'aristocratic identities'. In fact, they had spared no expenses on the jeweler that hung from their carriages.

One could raise their eyes and expect to see a convergence of rich people!

It would be most appropriate to use Fatty as a metaphor to describe these portable mountains of gold; even if he only lost a piece of his bodily meat, then this single piece could still support an ordinary family for a lifetime.

Two cultured white-clothed youngsters were standing at the door along with two beautiful young women. The four of them were serving as a welcome committee. They would examine the guests' invitation cards, and then beckon them in immediately. Soon after, a white clad youngster would appear to receive them, and would cordially welcome and take them in.

Even though three influential families had printed their seals on the invitation cards, none of the familiar faces from these households had come out yet; these people were the only welcome the guests had received. However, even though each individual's invitation card was being inspected before they were allowed to enter, no one felt that they were being treated in a disrespectful manner. Instead, they felt quite proud and honored.

This was in accordance with logical reasoning. It would greatly

degrade the reputation of these three families if any of their members were to personally come over to greet the guests. Hence, it would be considered a very inappropriate thing to do.

Almost every guest appeared to be calm and high spirited; irrespective of the fact whether this was their true demeanor, or just an effort to put on such an appearance. As they walked in, they unintentionally shot a glance at the crowd standing outside. This crowd comprised of people who hadn't received the invitations. The veins of the invited guests inevitably turned blue with anxiety as they quickly made their way through the crowd. They then accepted this arrangement in a quiet and aloof manner. The guests then strolled into the premises with elegance, and then disappeared into the lush flowers and trees.

All who had received the invitation card, showed up without exception — and many had been invited. They came in a continuous and endless stream, yet each one of them conducted themselves with dignity. Moreover, there were many people who ordinarily wouldn't accept such arrangements, but even these people were behaving modestly — simply to demonstrate their magnanimity.

However, shouldn't aristocrats always behave with nobility? This obviously didn't have anything to do with their present behavior... it just seemed as if they were trying to put up with the title of 'aristocracy' that had been assigned to them.

In the imperial palace, someone laughed heartily. There was only one person who could laugh like this inside the boundary of the Imperial Palace. It obviously wasn't one of the beautiful imperial concubines. In fact, even Mother Empress would adhere to the importance of mannerism, and would not laugh so heartily. Even the favorite prince or princess would adhere to etiquette and refrain from demonstrating such a lack in manners. The salaried servants naturally would never dare! Keeping this mind, the identity of the person who was laughing in this presumptuous

manner was self-evident.

His Majesty, the Emperor of Tian Xiang's hand was clutching a white chess piece. He muttering to himself incoherently as he laughed loudly, "This, is actually quite an exquisite trick; unusual but truly ingenious. I don't know who came up with this exquisite plan. It is hard to imagine that there is person in my Tian Xiang who is surprisingly capable of producing clouds with one turn of the hand, and rain with another, heh heh pretty good, pretty good."

Sitting opposite him was a man of indiscernible age. He was dressed in white clothes that were as white as snow. He was tall and straight in stature and even though he was merely sitting, his shoulders and back were straight. His appearance alone could make people tremble with fear. Straight black hair flowed down from his head, and draped over his shoulders before scattering behind him. A beautiful tri-forked beard floated down to his chest. However, his face did not have a single wrinkle on it; in essence, his face was as fair and smooth as a lady's.

That upright figure contemplated carefully as he glanced at the chess board, "This entire move is truly exquisite. That person's wine must be quite wonderful. But even if it is a heavenly secret and extremely difficult to find... its value cannot be over 10,000 silver taels per bottle. However, this kind of method will make all the influential families compete with each other. In fact, this method will enable him to sell them at over 10,000 silver taels. He might even surpass that amount. It truly is a good plan! But Your Majesty had said, 'produce clouds with one turn of the hand and rain with another'. This person is still not that competent."

"Is that so?" the Emperor smiled in a profound manner and then continued, "In my opinion, however... he is."

"What does Your Majesty mean?" the white clad man intently looked at the chessboard. Even though he was sitting in front of such a great man, he did not seem to be behaving in a very

deferential manner.

“It seems to me that this method of selling wine is ingenious, and has been done skillfully with much consideration. Moreover, it is important to note that it far surpasses an ordinary person’s capability to calculate; it is truly amazing.” His Majesty the Emperor slowly stroked his beard as he solemnly said, “This plan seems simple, and one would think almost anyone can succeed with it. However, if it is that easy, then why hasn’t anyone?”

“I’d like to understand better,” The man-in-white also started showing interest, and raised his eyebrows slightly. His eyes had an inquisitive look.

“It was important to understand people’s feelings while formulating this plan. One must clearly understand human nature and its weak points, especially the psychology of the old and influential entities. It is important that one studies these things in detail, without missing out on even the most unimportant facts! Irrespective of whether the said individual is a nobleman, a commoner, a hoodlum, or a beggar, one must understand the weak point of all. If only one is able to grasp this single point, one will at once grasp the failings of people’s personality! Then, regardless of who it is... even a person with a position at the Imperial Court will bow down. However, this part is only the foundation, and the ‘beginning part’ of the plan,” The Emperor’s eyes were belied by a hint of anxiety, and a bit of admiration.

“This man certainly has a gift for understanding the human nature!” the Emperor laid down his first conclusion.

“Secondly, I figure that the people who have gone there today are unlikely to come out empty handed, and they’re only auctioning wine inside! Therefore, each and every family which has gone in cannot return empty handed... even if the wine is of poor quality! Moreover, they’re auctioning the wine at a very high price. Hence, no one will buy it for cheap. The price will be insignificant, and they will not calculate or care about the money they spend. What

they will care about is their reputation!”

The corners of the Emperor’s mouth rose to show a hint of ridicule, “Because too many of the people who did not receive the invitation cards are waiting outside. Wouldn’t the crowd possibly await an opportunity to ridicule the so called “Aristocrats”? Anyone who has received the invitation letter and has gone to the auction will not want to lose out; they cannot afford to if they wish to save face. That man has figured out that he can openly, and without fear, fill his pockets with the money he fishes out from each and every family present here. Moreover, everyone will be excited about it; they will all be busy striving to be the first and fearing to be the last! All because they fear being belittled by others. Spending over 10,000 taels in front of the whole capital city will better their reputation. They can justify their status... as long as they are able to buy something!

“This man is a master who fully deserves amassing all that money. Quite unfortunate for the others though...” the Emperor made his second conclusion.

The white-clothed person sitting opposite to him listened in a calm manner. His face was so blank that there wasn’t even a single ripple in response.

“Third, you have to take note of the names on that list. If you give it a careful look, it will be obvious that although this list has snared almost all the big families of the capital to go in, but there is still something rather interesting about it. This list is actually not complete!

“Every business will have its respective rivals. Naturally, the rich noble families involved in this business have their own rivals. Often, these rivals are well matched to keep the industry booming for a long period of time. This list also needs to be altered in order to maintain equilibrium. Otherwise the prices will drop and the merchant won’t make profits, or the prices will rise too high and no one will show interest. However, this man’s list, intentionally

or otherwise, will completely break the equilibrium I have painstakingly built over many years! Moreover, they will not leave even the smallest of clues. Therefore, even though I want to blame someone for this, I do not know who!”

The eyes of the white clothed man looked puzzled after hearing this. It was evident that he hadn’t understood what he had heard.

“He He...” His Majesty laughed, “I’ll explain with an example; the Sun, the Mu, and the Zhao family are the three of the most well known entities in the capital’s salt market. These three are like the legs of a tripod. Amongst these three, Zhao family is the most powerful; its strategies make it stronger than the other two families. Admittedly, the Sun, and the Mu family are somewhat weaker, but they frequently combine to withstand the influence of the Zhao family. The Sun and the Mu Family can therefore be used to maintain the equilibrium of power. This list includes the Zhao family, but not the other two old families — when in fact everyone knows that the other two families are also worth millions in capital and resources. Yet why haven’t they received the invitation? However, no one can really blame the man behind the Aristocratic Hall, since he has already invited the most able representative of the salt industry — the Zhao family!

“This method is used in several industries to earn huge profits — only inviting the representatives of the families which have the most influence.” The Emperor looked increasingly worried, “And to use such formidable means of propaganda to add fuel to the fire between two rival families... I’m afraid that a conflict will arise within a very short period of time! Those who received the invitation will act arrogantly towards the others, while those who hadn’t... will be angry. They will feel that they are being pushed aside, and are being considered beneath the first-rate personalities. As a result... chaos will be initiated!

“All this reveals only one thing — this person can be considered a true master of the tactics!” the Emperor made his third conclusion.

Notes:

Idiom; it means 'to possess great power and authority'. May sound off, but does fit-in in context if one considers that Jun Mo Xie liertally overturns the entire social structure of the capital.

Chapter 242: One Smile Can Obliterate Hate and Grievances

“This person actually seeks wealth. However, the amount he seeks is huge! By no means can we consider this normal since such an astronomical figure can easily shake one to the core!

“It’s possible that some trouble may arise since members from each of the great families will be gathered there. In fact, I fear that this man might deliberately manufacture an incident if nothing happens. He may try to take advantage of the confusion that may ensue after an incident... He may then try to make a move favorable to him using today’s conflict as cover!” The Emperor stood up, and paced back and forth for a while. He then sighed deeply and mumbled, “If only this talented person were working for me... such a pity...”

“Although this man is smart, but he still needs the backing of those three families. In fact, it will be very difficult for him to stir any storms without a proper support from the Jun family, Tang family, and the Prince Equivalent.” The man in snow-white clothes offered his comforting words.

“I am also worried about the point you’ve just now highlighted; it’s vital. This man has somehow persuaded these three families to help one another; it is clear that these three families have friendly relations. Moreover, their friendship seems strong. There was a rumor earlier which said that this idea to sell wine originated out of a bet. The Young Master of the Jun Family, Jun Mo Xie, and General Dugu Wudi made a wager on the quality of this wine, and the price it could sell for... It is said that this strategy was actually devised by Jun Mo Xie. Though, I am somewhat unconvinced by that. However, if it really is that debauchee’s doing... then I shall truly regard him in a new light.”

The Emperor laughed gently for a little while. However, he

couldn't conceal the color of worry over his eyebrows, "This plan is certainly made by someone else!

"Whoever this man is, he is extremely dangerous and talented! His action will spell chaos regardless of what the motive behind them is!" There was a deep scowl on His Majesty's face for a while. Then, his expression changed, and he suddenly smiled, "In any case, this will be a very amusing auction. Would you be interested in accompanying me to that hall Mr. Wen?"

"Your Majesty is tempted to go?" The white-robed Mr. Wen raised his head to look at the Emperor. The expression in his eyes was extremely clear; like a deep lake whose bottom could be seen easily because there was no impurities in it. His skin seemed... smooth like the skin of a new born baby.

"It is an interesting matter. Moreover, there is a talented and dangerous person there; why shouldn't I be tempted?" The Emperor narrowed his eyes, "How can I not go to this lively event when this matter will have a profound and far-reaching effect on the Capital's state of affairs? And it's always good to get new experiences; I also want to taste a wine which costs over 10,000 taels per bottle!"

Mr. Wen stood up in a free and easy manner as the hint sincere of smile surface on his infant-like face. He gently chuckled, "In that case, please allow this old man to accompany Your Majesty on your trip."

"With you by side, I'm certain to succeed!" The Emperor smiled and got up. He spoke as they walked out, "However, first we need to look for somebody who has an invitation since we don't..."

"The three princes and Princess Ling Meng have received the invitation cards, if one is to believe the reports. Therefore, is Your Majesty thinking of following the princess?" Mr. Wen winked; the two men smiled in a tacit understanding.

"I can also conveniently check up on my three sons as they fight

and scheme against each other; it ought to be quite amusing. What could be better?" The Emperor smiled in a profound manner. However, there was still a wrinkle of worry on his smiling face, "Has brother Zhu eaten anything in the past few days? I haven't heard much about it."

Mr. Wen was walking abreast with the Emperor. He smiled as he said, "This problem of his should be dealt with. However, that grandson of Tang Wang Li is too... immature; there's no hope for his future. He scared that cleanliness-obsessed man by disseminating his bodily wastes on him. As chance has it, little Zhu had stepped forward just then... And though he had managed to stay clean for so many years now, the poor man's spout was filled with..."

He referred to Zhu Zhu Zhu as "Little Zhu." That man's status was seemingly higher than the people from Zhu Zhu Zhu's generation. Though, it would seem that he was even younger than Dugu Wudi. In fact, he looked closer to Jun Wu Yi's age by his facial appearance.

It was very strange.

"Ha Ha..." The Emperor burst out laughing. He turned his face towards the side, and addressed an Old court eunuch as, "Have the imperial kitchen find a good remedy for eunuch Zhu. Ask them to concoct some kind of mixture to whet his appetite, and then feed him something. He doesn't eat anything at all nowadays; how is that good?!"

The Old eunuch solemnly and respectfully accepted his orders. He was quite close to the Emperor, and had served him for over thirty years. Wen Xian Yin was also aware of this; the idea behind this order was clear. On one hand, Zhu Zhu Zhu's matter required his personal presence. But, His Majesty couldn't drop from his status in order to sort such trivial matters either.

A smile spread across the Emperor's face as he watched the

eunuch leave; it seemed as if he was reflecting on something from the past, “I, however, haven’t found it easy to go outside the palace; those days... I truly cherish them a lot.”

“That ingenious person will not be able to hide himself now that your majesty has personally set-out to uncover his secret plan!” Mr. Wen smiled gracefully, “Or perhaps Your Majesty may acquire a very talented person because of this action. Wen would like to congratulate Your Majesty in advance...”

“I hope so!” His Majesty the Emperor smiled faintly, while the expression in his eyes fluctuated; he seemed to be harboring some doubts. He was constantly mouthing a name, but hadn’t mentioned it loud. If one were to look closely, they would realize that he was constantly trying to say three words: Jun Wu Yi.

A cold ray of light flashed in his eyes.

As the sun rose gradually in the sky to mark daybreak, the last of great families started to arrive.

First to arrive was the Dugu Family. This family had the reputation of being one of the premiere great families of the capital. They had showed initiative by arriving with eight major members from their Family. They came in riding atop big horses; all of them gallant and full of spirit. Dugu Wudi had arrived along with his seven burly nephews, ‘Heroes and legends bravely rushing forward’. They were crowding around a small green palanquin. They appeared similar to eight majestic black bears which had become exhilarated by the scent of good honey.

This brigade of men and horses finally stopped in front of the main door. One command sounded, and they positioned themselves in uniformity. The door of that small green palanquin opened, and one graceful, fair, and pretty figure came out. Her eyebrows were like distant hills, her almond eyes were joyful, while her cheeks were like peaches; her face was simply picturesque. All kinds of charms... immense loveliness and

sweetness poured out of this youthful girl. She seemed very fresh, pure and delicate.

Dugu Xiao Yi, one of Tian Xiang City's peerless beauties, had arrived.

Jun Mo Xie's eyes would've pop-out if he were there. In front of his eyes would be this gentle and beautiful woman, who had undergone a miraculous transformation. She was no longer that violent girl who yelled at him, fought with him, and beat him up every day!

A major member from the Jun Family showed-up to welcome the Dugu Family, upon their arrival.

Jun Wu Yi, the Third Son of the Jun Family, waited for them at the end of the flower-flanked path; he sat perfectly straight on his wheelchair. He was dressed in clean black clothes. His facial features seemed sharp, as if cut by a knife. Nevertheless, there was a faint smile on his face, which enhanced his graceful bearing. A white clothed youngster was unhurriedly pushing his wheelchair.

"Elder brother Dugu," Jun Wu Yi cupped his hands, showing a trace of a genial expression, "you have arrived."

"Younger Brother Jun," Dugu Wudi jumped down from his horse, and took large strides forward. "Jun Family is opening a major business. So why wouldn't older brother come-over and show his support? Why have you toiled to receive us personally? I, your older brother, could've walked-in myself; we are no strangers to you."

"There's no harm in greeting people. But elder brother is the only one in the City who actually deserves such importance. Therefore, how could I ever neglect my duties if my brother arrives here?" Jun Wu Yi smiled. Then he gestured with his hands as an expectant look in his emerged eyes, "Elder brother Dugu, please enter!"

Dugu Wudi immediately looked up, and his eyes were immediately rapt with layer-upon-layer of happiness. "Third brother Jun, please!" He reached and positioned himself behind Jun Wu Yi. He then nudged the white clothed youngster who was standing behind the wheelchair to the side as he laughed loudly, "You take a break; I will push my third brother inside."

Jun Wu Yi's body leaned back comfortably so as to allow Dugu Wudi to push the wheelchair. They chatted as Jun Wu Yi showed the way forward. The atmosphere had suddenly become very harmonious, and it seemed as if both sides were a bit emotional.

Could it be that the years-of-the-past had returned once again?

Dugu Wudi was laughing loudly; he was elated from the bottom of his heart. He quietly wiped the tears which appeared in his tiger-like eyes; he couldn't help but sigh in happiness, [today this younger brother has forgiven me... he called me elder brother once again... I'm so happy; I have no regrets anymore].

Ten years of suffering and silence, and no mention of the events that had occurred. But it had all been melted away by these few words!

The two men seemed extremely happy, and talked cheerfully. However, it seemed to everyone else that these two great generals were still enveloped in a thick layer of sentiment owing to that bloody-event from the past!

There was strange connection between these two iron-blooded soldiers.

Jun Wu Yi had dispelled the sword of resentment with his smile!

Ten Years of conflict and hatred had been obliterated with just a smile!

This opportune moment had announced the end of the uneasiness these two great generals had been carrying in their hearts for a decade!

The Dugu Family's seven burly and ox-like individuals remained silent, contrary to their usual personality. They understood the importance of this moment, and deliberately modulated their breathing for the fear of disturbing the two brothers whose bond had been molded over the course of numerous battles.

They had carried the glory of the entire army and the entire of Tian Xiang Empire on their shoulders!

Dugu Xiao Yi's eyes became red as she sobbed quietly. She was admittedly too young to properly appreciate the special camaraderie between these two men. However, as his daughter, she had always known the matter which had troubled her father's heart from the beginning!

Dugu Wudi had been a straightforward man throughout his life, and had never felt the need to regret. However, there was one matter he had always vaguely regretted.

Jun Wu Hui!

Dugu Wudi would get drunk every year on Jun Wu Hui's death anniversary. He would inevitably burst-out crying even though he was an extremely tough and strong warrior. Moreover, he wouldn't even try to cover-up his loud crying; ...he would cry his guts out.

Dugu Wudi had never in his life shed tears so many times. And all of this happened because the person who had died was his sworn brother.

Dugu Xiao Yi had often seen her father enter his study in the middle of the night. He would sigh endlessly as he would stroke the sword which Jun Wu Hui had gifted to him.

Today however, Jun Wu Yi had eliminated this hard-to-dispel conundrum in Dugu Wu Di's mind with just a smile! How could Dugu Xiao Yi not be pleased? How could she not cry? How could she not be moved to tears?

Following after the Dugu Family, came another important one; the Song family. The Tang and the Meng Family arrived successively, in accordance to the appointed time.

The Magnificent Jewel Hall which was in close proximity across the street had also received an invitation card. Xiao Han and Mu Xue Tong were clad in white like always; they arrived accompanying the flower-like Han Yan Meng.

And at that moment...

Chapter 243: Collision in front of the Aristocratic Hall

An imposing bronze colored chariot was galloping at full speed. The four pairs of beastly war-horses which pulled it were level four Xuan Beasts. A tender and beautifully blooming golden mums flower adorned the carriage, and shone with an abnormal brilliance. Eight horsemen valiantly strode around the chariot on their imposing horses.

The Murong family had arrived at last.

On the face of it, it would appear that the Murong family could not compare to the Li Family in terms of power and influence. It couldn't compare to the Jun and the Dugu Families either. In reality though, the Murong family was actually one of the most influential families inside Tian Xiang City. After all was said and done, it was the most ancient and the robust family. Moreover, it also has the most intimate relationship with the Imperial Family.

Murong Family's influence simply couldn't be ignored.

On top of that, the Murong Family was the only family which was related to the Imperial Family by the means of a marriage.

None of the other noble families enjoyed this honor.

It could be said that the Li Family was powerful enough to disrupt all levels of society. Moreover, Li You Ran was considered to be an outstanding youngster with a lot of impressive talent. However, even though he had set his heart to win over Princess Ling Meng three years ago, the Emperor had neither consented to this, nor given any opinion on it. The Jun Family was a family of martyrs, which had sacrificed many men to the service of the nation. The Grandfather Jun then had no choice but to lay down his self-respect in front of Tian Xiang Empire's Emperor, to seek a relationship by marriage. This proposal was also tactfully declined.

No one could trust that debauchee, even though the others were considered reliable. Therefore, if the Jun Family's proposal to join the two Families by marriage was refused... then one could imagine how difficult it had to be.

The Murong Family's importance in the eyes of the Imperial Family was extremely difficult to replace.

Some time ago, Murong Qian Jun had passed wrong information. This had created a huge commotion, and a big mishap had occurred wherein Jun Zhan Tian had brought about a purge in the capital city. By the end of it, he had massacred almost one-third of the Imperial Cabinet Ministers in that purge. There is no need to say that if it had been anyone else, they would have been executed ten thousand times over this matter. However, Murong Qian Jun was simply removed from his post to never be hired again.

Nothing more.

This clearly showed how close the Murong Family and the Imperial Family were, and how big an influence the Murong Family had on the latter. Therefore, how could anyone ever look down upon their power and influence?

The carriage suddenly came to a stop. The eight horsemen jumped down from their steeds with a loud thud. Amongst these, the guard in the lead turned a handle and set the carriage free of its horses. Then, he swiftly moved on to the ornamented door and opened it. He then stood up straight like a ramrod, holding the door open with one hand.

A short while later, a tall and handsome youngster walked out from within with a straight posture. It was none other than Murong Qian Jun. Then a pair of tender feet stretched from the door, marking the arrival of a young lady, clad in splendid bright yellow clothes. Her face reflected arrogance as she leisurely got down from the carriage. Soon after, an old man appeared. He coughed and trembled as he got down from the carriage, with two

men supporting his frame from underneath.

The bystanders inhaled a breath of cold air.

The Murong Family was worthy of the Aristocratic Hall in every sense of the word.

The grand Murong Family had surprisingly sent their second in command, who was the old master Murong Fēng Yún's younger brother, Murong Feng Yu.

Perhaps, their reputation was even a match to the Jun Family, the Tang Family, and even the Prince Equivalent.

Murong Qian Jun and the young maiden dressed in yellow supported Murong Feng Yu as they started to walk inside.

“Murong Family? It's quite extraordinary, right? But they are very arrogant!” suddenly, a cold taunt was heard, which was accompanied by a peculiar sneer. Every person of the Murong Family stiffened, and many of their men placed their hands on the hilts of their swords. All of them looked angry. Who in Tian Xiang City had dared to mock the Murong Family? Especially at a time when some of their leading members were present? Weren't they afraid for their lives?

This had never happened before.

On turning to see who it was, their gazes fell upon two middle aged people wearing white clothes and cold expressions. One of them had an angry look spread across his face. His snow white gown had been bathed in the mud and dirt. A beautiful young lady stood beside him.

It was Xiao Han's three-man party!

Those without power simply aren't capable of doing the unprecedented. However, what if the inciter was more than a mortal?

The Silver Blizzard City was simply too high to reach in the eyes

of a worldly family.

Xiao Han had been feeling that everything was going against him lately, which had left him feeling very gloomy of late.

He had become quite sullen since his arrival at Tian Xiang City. Previously, he had walked over to the Jun Family to insult his rival over his disability, but hadn't expected the younger generation of the family to make him look like fool and hurt him. Moreover, Mu Xue Tong had added more insult to his injury by beating him up further. However, what had made him really furious was when Han Yan Yao actually sent a gift to Jun Wu Yi in secrecy. He simply couldn't bear the flame of jealousy.

After that, his own nephew was seriously beaten-up by a mysterious master, shortly after the boy's arrival in the Tian Xiang City. Fortunately, the boy's recovery was not an issue after he had been diagnosed and treated using some of the best medicines available. However, this only meant that he had failed to take proper care of his nephew.

Then he heard the news that the Jun Family's cripple had unexpectedly recovered fully from his affliction.

This eventually pushed Xiao Han to his breaking point.

Right now, three families had joined hands to open the Aristocratic Hall right opposite the Magnificent Jewel Hall. They were obviously trying to compete with the Magnificent Hall. However, the part most unbearable for him was that... one of the members in this 'three family alliance' was the Jun Family.

He could not tolerate this.

Then, he had strived hard to find his place as the Magnificent Jewel Hall's representative for this event. His mental status had improved after he had managed to oust Mu Xue Tong's strong opposition to the same. However, then a carriage had splashed mud across his entire body just as he was walking over to the

Aristocratic Hall's doorstep.

Could he really have no respite in life? He was almost on the verge of exploding to death because of the anger he felt.

He rained curses unrestrained as he smashed his heel into the ground. The impact of his stomp was so forceful that he dislocated his own heel. Such was Xiao Han's present mental anguish.

The anger in Xiao Han's heart kept increasing, and it soon spread to his guts as he looked fiercely at the Murong Family members who had just gotten off the carriage. Anyone could tell that his stare was deliberately meant to provoke them, since his eyes had no trace of benevolence.

On one side was Xiao Han, who was obviously not in a jolly mood, while on the other was Murong Qian Jun, who was as angry as the former. After all, someone had insulted them in front of the entire Tian Xiang City. He lifted his leg to rush over, "You, you really wish to court death so early in the morning!"

This youngster had been faced with several adversities of his own. His pursuit of Princess Ling Meng had been largely unsuccessful. Moreover, he had been relieved of his duties at the Imperial Palace after he had spread that incorrect message. Hence, it was rather obvious that he was also quite frustrated with his life, and was just looking for someone to vent it all out on.

The old man Murong Feng Yu used one hand to cover his coughing mouth as he pulled the youngster back with his other hand.

Murong Feng Yu's movements were not at all quick, and seemed exasperatingly slow. However, he outstretched his hand just in time to block the 'dashing' Murong Qian Jun's path.

Murong Feng Yu was quite experienced, and his eyes could make out that Xiao Han and the others in his company were of extraordinary origins. He had been able to decipher all that from

just the curses this man had thrown at his family. Moreover, seeing that the three of them were clothed in pure white and had walked out from the Magnificent Jewel Hall, he had managed to guess the opposite party's origins.

“What did you say, you little bastard?” Xiao Han's murderous mood violently flashed on his face.

Xiao Han hailed from the Silver City, and was wearing the formal dress of a member of the younger generation. Having any other color upon one's dressing was tabooed in the Silver Blizzard City. This youngster had sinned by coloring his robes in a different color; something they would only do when in mourning. Not just Xiao Han, but anyone from the Silver Blizzard City would've been angered by this.

“Ke ke ke, this youngster is truly rude and rotten. He would like to apologize to you, Mr.,” Murong Feng Yu's vision seemed blurred as he looked at Xiao Han. The thick skinned person appeared quite sincere, while his smile resembled half a mum's flower, whose petals had blown away in the wind and rain. “Just by looking at Mr.'s dress, one can see that he is actually an outstanding hero of the number one secret powerhouse of this world - the Silver Blizzard City. How does one address the unknown Mr.? And how is the Xiao Family's Xiao Bu Yu?”

Xiao Han's body shook a little as he became even more depressed.

This old man was too crafty. He had first compensated for his loss by apologizing, and then he had brought Xiao Bu Yu into the discussion. In this way, he had faintly pointed out that he knew the man while reasserting his old age at the same time. This rendered the man from the younger generation of the Xiao Family incapable of venting out his anger.

Xiao Bu Yu was world famous, therefore there was always a possibility that the man could be lying. However, this was the Murong Family's second-in-command. Moreover, he had stated

this in front of many people, and so it was quite improbable that he would be claiming a fake relationship.

Xiao Han looked towards the old man and somehow controlled his anger, “The Xiao elder is indebted for your concern.”

“He he, we aren’t strangers. There is no need to speak in such a polite manner,” Murong Feng Yu narrowed his eyes and lowered his stance, “We were wrong in the matter which had just occurred, and my Murong Family will confess properly to you. In return we hope that you will show us kindness.”

Xiao Han groaned heavily, “There is no need for this!”

Murong Feng Yu relaxed a bit as he knew that the matter had now been resolved. He opened his eyes and glanced at the Murong Qian Jun ferociously. He then immediately looked at Murong Qian Jun, who was staring at him blankly. Then, his gaze fell upon the beautiful young maiden standing next to Xiao Han; she appeared as beautiful as a flower which had managed to bloom even in the icebergs.

He couldn’t help but contemplate in his mind, [If Qian Jun can woo this girl... won’t I then be able to pull my Family into a relationship with the Silver Blizzard City? However, this matter... I must take proper time to decide. This young lady is just a piece of swan-meat to my Murong Family, no matter what position she holds in the Silver Blizzard City.]

At this point, the sound of several horse hooves could be heard in the distance. This was soon followed by the arrival of many ranks of troops. These were in fact the three princes’. However, riding in front of them was the carriage of Princess Ling Meng.

There wasn’t enough time for Murong Feng Yu to properly exchange his greetings. Therefore, he hastily greeted Xiao Han and then walked inside, with the support of the people he had brought along.

At this moment the sound of another chariot was heard coming from a different street. This carriage belonged to the prince equivalent, and had arrived at the same time. These highly placed personalities had arrived at the last minute, and all at the same time. Their arrival had been skillfully timed.

Princess Ling Meng sat inside her carriage, with burdened thoughts plaguing her mind.

She had not wanted to come today. It was neither her hobby, nor did she like keeping up false appearances. However, her father, the Emperor, had decided that he wanted to look around and had requested that she come here immediately. Then he and Mr. Wen had disguised themselves, and had followed her to this gathering.

Left with no other option, Princess Ling Meng had to comply. Yet she did not know what her father was planning. He had kept ordering her carriage to stop and then proceed for the entire journey, forcing the three carriages carrying her elder brothers to do the same in the back. It had almost seemed as if he was intentionally trying to manufacture trouble for the three sons by forcing their carriages to collide on the broad road.

As a result, the Princess hadn't found any peace over the course of the entire journey.

Chapter 244: Young Master Jun's Rogue Tricks

The fact was that the Princess Ling Meg hadn't anticipated that the three princes would follow the Emperor. Shockingly, their carriages had travelled on the road side-by-side and had kept bashing sideways into each other. Luckily, this street was wide enough to accommodate them. Otherwise, perhaps even the houses on the side would have been affected by the three, and would have collapsed.

[I still don't know what father aims to achieve by this plan of his. Could it be that he is not satisfied with the usual infighting, or does not consider it fierce enough? Would he have those three compete, expose their weaknesses, and humiliate themselves in front of everyone? With my three elder brothers' current behavior, this is not entirely impossible!]

However, the scene that the Princess Ling Meng had just imagined would not come true.

Because the carriages of the three princes had managed to battle their way into getting cramped, they had also managed to reach their destination at the same time, without anyone falling behind the other. As a result, the tension between them had quickly eased. The street where the Magnificent Jewel Hall and the Aristocratic hall were located was very wide. However, it still had its limitations and the three Princes' convoy ended up cramming the street to its very limits. In fact, their carriages ended up crashing into each other on the sides.

Though this wasn't a very opportune thing, fortunately there was another carriage which lacked timing. This carriage belonged to the Prince Equivalent.

There were five royal carriages present, with four of them crammed up together and knocking against each other, [I'm afraid

that it is very difficult to avoid a problematic situation in such circumstances. Is all this really accidental? Or is it intentional?]

This situation made Princess Ling Meng somewhat dizzy. The only thing worth celebrating here was that the Emperor's brother, in the end, was also a part of the Imperial Family. Since he was one of their own, if her three elder brothers agreed to yield even a little bit, she was convinced that mediating this matter would not be too difficult.

Several youngsters clad in white with the responsibility to welcome the guests, came out from the Aristocratic Hall. However, they were left staring foolishly at the situation. The street where the Magnificent Jewel Hall and the Aristocratic Hall were located was considered the best location within the Tian Xiang City; it was the widest street in the city. In fact, this street was actually capable of accommodating three carriages at once without them crashing into each other. Needless to say, a pile-up such as this had never occurred before here.

Moreover, because the Magnificent Jewel Hall was also present on this street, no event had ever escalated to a situation like this. People who were eligible to come here usually knew the origins of the Magnificent Jewel Hall. No one was foolish enough to cause trouble on this street.

However, at present...

The carriage from the Prince Equivalent's carriage was the first to stop. Two white clothed maidservants uncovered the carriage's curtain screen. A child stepped down from the carriage with support. The child was the Equality Prince's son; he was the same boy who Jun Mo Xie had jokingly dubbed 'Adorable little sister' — Yang Mo.

Princess Ling Meng moved aside in order to make way for the Equality Prince. He was a member of her own family. Moreover, excluding her father, he was the only other patriarch of the royal

family in his generation. Even though her father was aboard her carriage at that moment, she still moved aside. Not to mention, she was also very fond of her little cousin. On top of that, the Equality Prince was also one of the owners of the Aristocratic Hall. Therefore, it was only proper for her to allow him to proceed inside first.

However, the situation with the convoys of the three princes was still the same. They were still battling it out with each other to arrive first, and things only got worse as they made their way towards the gate. This caused a rather noisy ruckus.

In the midst of the Princes' group, there was a black robed person whose cold eyes watched the three princes' convoys attentively. He observed the activity in and around each of the three carriages. However, he did not say a single word throughout, though his eyes were as sharp as a knife.

By now, Jun Mo Xie had already received information about all of this. Faced with such an embarrassing situation, he could not help but rush out.

Young Master Jun incessantly cursed in rage, [You three brothers cannot distinguish good from bad? Looks like your commotions are going to create a lot of trouble for me! If I had known earlier, I would have sent the invitation to only one of you to avoid all this annoyance.]

[This is an important moment and I still have a lot of work to finish. I have painstakingly managed this huge place for the auction. Do you think this is a joke? Be good you three dirty things; I don't have time to play with you!]

Fatty Tang and Song Shang were the main hosts of the auction. They obviously could not come out. Even if they did, it was not certain that they were capable of handling such a situation. After all, the status of these three people was just too high. Because of that, they simply could not use force to handle this predicament.

Admittedly, Jun Wu Yi, the Third Master of the Jun Family could handle this. However, if Jun Wu Yi appeared personally, it was possible that he would get involved in the rivalry of these princes. That really wouldn't be of much help. Therefore, he would be an inappropriate choice for now.

As for the other candidate...

General Dugu Wudi could also possibly come out and roar at these three. Most likely, he would be impartial as well. The three Princes were too high to reach in other people's eyes; nevertheless they did not hold any importance in the general's. However, these three were Jun Mo Xie's guests. Drawing support from external sources wouldn't be pleasant.

Besides, Jun Mo Xie figured that even if he won that bet, he wouldn't have the nerve to accept General Dugu's compensation if he were to truly exploit the man's power to settle this dispute. [Other people had helped you solve this problem.] Therefore, the Great General Dugu Wudi was out of the question.

It could be then assumed that Jun Mo Xie was the only remaining candidate. However, even though Jun Mo Xie's status was still far below the three Princes, he still had to handle this matter. Hence, using the Jun Family's renowned Debauchee's reputation, which continued to devolve into that of a hoodlum and a rogue, was no doubt an effective strategy. Therefore, after receiving the information, Jun Wu Yi and Tang Yuan immediately looked at the Young Master Jun's face.

"Mo Xie, it is important that this matter is settled. It will require some rogue-like means. Hence, only you are qualified to handle this," Jun Wu Yi had said.

[What manner of calling me out is this? Why is it necessary to compare me to a rogue or a scoundrel?] Young Master Jun became gloomy.

"Boss, as they say, it takes an evil to deal with an evil. Your

personal involvement would be the best option,” Tang Yuan patted as he flattered him.

Fatty’s flattery left the Young Master Jun raging in anger, [it takes an evil to deal with evil? How am I an evil person?]

These derogatory words of flattery made the Jun Family’s Young Master curse, [Motherf**ker!]

[What did he say? Do you really think I’m that evil? This is really ridiculous!]

However, a problem of this level could only be solved by someone very able.

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie hurried to the scene where all the noise was arising from.

However, before he could reach his designated destination, he ran into Xiao Han, Mu Xue Tong and Han Yan Yao’s younger sister. A high-ranking member of the Murong Family was also accompanying them.

Mu Xue Tong smiled slightly and nodded, whereas Xiao Han snorted at him coldly. He then arrogantly raised his head and pretended not to notice Jun Mo Xie. Only the little girl looked at Jun Mo Xie directly in the face, and then caught the lapel of his jacket. She pouted her mouth as she glared at him and said, “Jun Family’s youngster, greet your young aunt and she will be good to you.”

Jun Mo Xie was not in a good mood at the time. Hence, he rolled his eyes and replied, “I have already told you that your elder sister and my third uncle aren’t married yet. Moreover, all we can consider right now is that they have only shown their intention to marry. So can you please shut your little mouth? Oh, you know something young aunt? Looking at you, your chest is as flat as a slab; your waist and your butt are not at all curved; looking at your hair, it seems you are yet to shed your feathers; even the smell of

breast milk is yet to wear off from you. Yet you are under this delusion that you are of from this man's elder generation? You first wait for yourself to properly develop into an adult before talking to me and pretending to be of my older generation."

Jun Mo Xie had spoken these words out of sheer irritation. In reality, he had been given no reason to talk like that.

The growth period in girls starts earlier than in boys. Even though Han Yan Yao's little sister was fifteen and a half years old, her figure hadn't yet fully matured. However, it could be said that it was beginning to show promise. If she were compared to Dugu Xiao Yi, she wouldn't come out lacking in any aspect. Therefore, in no way was the Jun Family's Young Master accurate when he called her figure 'as flat as a slab'.

"You... You," Han Yan Yao's sister heard the Young Master Jun's senseless taunt, and stamped her foot. She could not help feeling a mixture of shame and anger. She angrily stamped her small foot on the ground once again, as her pretty and petite face turned red. Then suddenly, her eyes changed their direction and she said in a careful manner, "I don't care. However, you look like you're in a bit of a hurry. So I will not let you pass until you call me 'young aunt'. Do whatever you want! In any case, I'm not worried," Her tiny hand tightened its grasp on the lapel of his jacket.

Her status was quite high in the Silver Blizzard City even though she was the youngest. However, her status didn't matter because every other individual in the city was of an older generation. Naturally, she had to address them as such - 'teacher, master, uncle, great uncle, grandfather, great ancestor'. Moreover, since she was the youngest in her Family, she even had to address the people from her own generation as 'Elder Sister' or 'Elder Brother'.

Ever since she had come to Tian Xian City and had met the Jun Family's youngest son, she had wanted the little devil to show her some respect. Especially when she realized that if her elder sister married his uncle, Jun Mo Xie would surprisingly be considered to

be of a younger generation than her. That was indeed a joyous occasion for her. It was like she had found a treasure in a place where she had least expected it. How could she let him off so easily? She would naturally pester him, and fight tooth-and-nail for the honor of being called ‘young aunt’.

“Hey... ” Jun Mo Xie could listen to the sounds coming from outside, and they were getting louder and louder with every passing moment. Therefore, he suddenly stomped, “Well, I’m afraid to inform that calling you that is absolutely out of the question. Young... pig! Is young pig fine?”

He had sounded a bit vague, and had said these words very softly. Hence, the little girl wasn’t able to listen to it properly. Even though it had seemed somewhat fishy to her, she had still thought he had just called her ‘young aunt’. Pleased with herself, she raised her little chin, puffed-up her small chest, and released her grip on Jun Mo Xie’s jacket as she waved her hand and said, “Go, well behaved child. But on one condition — in the future, you will say ‘young aunt’ before you say my name, and this young aunt will protect you.”

It was as if Jun Mo Xie had deceived his way into getting an Imperial Pardon. He disappeared like a wisp of smoke.

“Oh, he just now called me young aunt... why doesn’t it seem right?” The young woman suddenly came to herself.

“He called you ‘young pig’ when he was supposed to call you ‘young aunt’,” Murong Qian Jun had been seeking to woo Princess Ling Meng, and Jun Mo Xie had been a tough opponent. Moreover, this young woman was also quite beautiful. Hence, he immediately resorted to making things worse for Jun Mo Xie, in the hope of winning a favor with this young maiden.

Han Yan Meng’s mouth resembled a tea-pot as she pouted. She turned around with great regret in her heart, only to see Jun Mo Xie’s back in the distance. She clenched her tiny fists.

“Get lost you B*tch!”

Xiao Han and Mu Xue Tong fiercely glared at the same time, “Shut up!”

Both men from the Silver City had a blank expression on their faces. They had both been sensible in staying out of each other’s way since they never agreed on anything. However, it appeared that for the first time in their lives, two mouths had spoken the same thing. They looked at each other at the same time, snorted at the same time, and then turned their heads away from each other... at the same time.

Mu Rong Qian Jun suddenly silenced his mouth in fear.

Xiao Han obviously loathed Murong Qian Jun. Just by looking at Xiao Han’s face, one could discern that he really wanted to beat the kid up. What enraged him even more was that Han Yan Meng was the object of his nephew’s affection, and had already been approved by the Xiao family as a suitable daughter-in-law. He obviously couldn’t allow this to happen in front of his own eyes. [You, a junior generation member of the insignificant Murong Family, intend to make such a move? Do you believe that a toad can eat a swan’s meat? You truly overestimate your capabilities.]

As for Mu Xue Tong, kicking someone when they were down was a reprehensible act. Therefore, he naturally did not look too kindly upon Murong Qian Jun.

By the time Jun Mo Xie got there, the Third prince was already with the Prince Equivalent’s son Yang Mo. In fact, he had already started causing more trouble.

The adorable little Yang Mo had passed through here several times with Jun Mo Xie. Surprisingly, he was usually quite happy to see this pain in the ass, hoodlum and a complete scoundrel and debauchee for an elder brother. He enthusiastically got down from his carriage and ran towards the Aristocratic Hall. This whole area was quite familiar to him because he had come here quite a few

times before.

The first and the second prince were still inside their respective carriages, since they were still trying to maintain a ‘this isn’t very important’ aura about themselves. However, the Third Prince was quite unhappy. Previously, he had tried to cram in with his two brothers and was barely able to. Even his strength was the weakest among the three brothers, and once again it seemed that all the bad luck had gathered in one place for him. He had tried his hardest to squeeze in with the two, but had still found himself falling behind. This obviously made his mood very gloomy. Though, at this moment, he viewed himself as a Prince, and felt that he could still not go in. However, Yang Mo, the little child had overtaken all three of the Princes, and had entered before them — what honor would they be left with now?

He had completely taken this kid for granted. However, he had forgotten that the Prince Equivalent’s family owned a third of the Aristocratic Hall.

“Isn’t that younger cousin Mo? Don’t you know that you are to greet your elder cousin when you see him? How is it that the older you grow, the more you forget your manners? You belong to the royal family. Don’t you have enough etiquette to not run around and bump into people? The people from the Prince Equivalent’s family are all quite rude. Don’t they even know how to wait upon their lords?” The Third Prince’s figure was somewhat thin, and his face a bit pale. His voice sounded rather gentle as he got out from his carriage. He stationed himself at a higher ground as he wantonly scolded his cousin, [At least one individual will not leave me behind.]

“Oh... Third Prince... greetings,” Yang Mo glanced at him timidly. Yang Mo was unable to say this but he really loathed this ‘elder cousin’ of a third prince.

“What about the Third Prince? The First and the Second Prince are also waiting over there, and you have not said a word to them.

Your etiquettes are horrible! Do you think everyone else is beneath you? Could it be that you have never learned manners? Hmm?" The Third Prince looked down at Yang Mo arrogantly; he was finally enjoying himself since he could vent out his frustration.

He knew that Yang Mo was naturally not to blame. It was just that he wanted an individual with enough status, on whom he could vent out his feelings and deliver himself of this frustration. Yang Mo was very young but his status was quite high. Moreover, this kid had a very soft personality, which made him a perfect target. On top of that, although the Prince Equivalent had a lot of power and was his senior, he was still living a simple life and had never shown any interest in matters of royalty. It could be even said that his influence in the imperial court was minimal. Therefore, the Third Prince wantonly humiliated the little Yang Mo, who was standing in front of him without any misgivings. In fact, he didn't even bother about the fact that this child had the same family name as him.

Inside Princess Ling Meng's caravan, the black gowned man's expression became gloomier and gloomier as he saw all this.

Yang Mo was just a child of ten. How could he endure such a hateful manner of criticism? Moreover, even the kid knew that it was not his fault. Therefore, he naturally felt wronged. Because of that, the rim of his eyes started to get red as tears started accumulating in them. Soon, the corners of his mouth started to twitch, and it seemed like he was about to cry.

"That's enough, Third Brother! The child is not saying anything, so why are you scaring him?" Princess Ling Meng could not bear looking at it anymore. In fact, she was just about to run out of her carriage and towards them to ease her anxiety further. However, just then, the calm and collected black clad man behind her pulled her back.

"Boy? This boy does not understand etiquettes at all. We are members of the Imperial Family. We are the nobility of Tian Xiang

City. So how can you compare him to a common child? I am just educating him, because it is important for him to understand how to greet with courtesy. Later on, when he starts handling matters himself, he shouldn't behave poorly. He should not bring disgrace to the royal family's reputation!"

The corners of the Third Prince's mouth rose as he smiled coldly. He did not give any importance to his own younger sister, or took her seriously.

"Oh... oh... oh... isn't that the Third Prince? Very huge drop in etiquette! In fact, a huge drop in character! How come you are just standing at the door and not coming in? Won't this result in my Jun Family, the Tang Family and the Prince Equivalent losing face?"

They all heard an eccentric voice as Jun Mo Xie stepped out. His eyebrows were slanted, and there was a devious look in his eyes. He took a few steps forward arrogantly, swaying with each step, and stationed himself in front of Yang Mo. Then with one foot forward and the other one behind it, he twisted his waist in the opposite direction and poised his body in an inclined and excellent looking posture.

His hand brushed in the air as he drew out a golden fan. It was late autumn at present, and the extreme heat had all but disappeared. In fact, it could even be said that it had already become a bit cold. Yet, here Jun Mo Xie was leisurely shaking his fan in an elegant demeanor. This clearly belied his lack of morality. Anyone who looked at him couldn't help but feel like getting mad at him.

"Third Master Jun, this Prince is teaching his younger sibling a lesson. This matter does not concern you," The Third Prince despised this debauchee. In his eyes, this youngster was nothing more than a leech that was sucking up to his parent's deeds - in other words, a complete waste.

“How can you say this matter does not concern me? Third Majesty, you have just intercepted the third great boss of our Aristocratic Hall and are preaching to him endlessly. This is directly resulting in our auction getting delayed. So how does this matter not concern me? Is such a thing reasonable anywhere under the sun?”

Jun Mo Xie looked at his face. In the eyes of the Young Master Jun, this person was someone who could only depend on people from his father’s generation. In fact, this man was unlikely to survive if he were left to his own measures. Moreover, what made him even more useless was the fact that he was ambitious, even though he did not even have the least bit of talent.

Jun Mo Xie pretended a loft and ambitious demeanor with a straight chest. His body was swaying a bit, and it seemed that he was unable to stand steadily as he continued, “This small matter relates to my Aristocratic Hall earning some shining white money and glistening yellow gold. In fact, this is important matter because when we make money, we pay taxes to the country. If you obstruct it, then you will obstruct our country’s taxes. If you obstruct those taxes, it will influence an important means of people’s livelihood! Are you trying to revolt to the system?”

As the Young Master Jun’s mouth danced, his saliva sprinkled everywhere — some of it even made its way to the Third Prince’s clothing, including the hat that was fastened to his head.

The Third Prince trembled with anger, “What nefarious nonsense are you talking Jun Mo Xie? You really think I’d want a revolt?”

Jun Mo Xie looked contemptuously, “Have you finally let down the people of Tian Xiang City? The common people of this country provide you with a life of luxury, one of high position and great wealth, of ruling status and powerful senior positions... and yet you still want a revolt! You... You... You... why? Don’t you have any humanity?”

Jun Mo Xie appeared to be brimming with grief and indignation, “You were born into the Imperial Family. In fact, you are one of the three magnificent Princes, and yet you are unsatisfied? Don’t tell me that you have determined to set brothers against each other? Just so that you can climb up and attain the senior most position? Are you willing to give up on family for that? Could it be that the Imperial Family is not your flesh and blood?”

The Third Prince felt very foolish, [This idiot is speaking non-stop of hatred and bitter hardship. He is blaming me in indignation, while the words he says about me are enough to show that he has a heart of cruel and unscrupulous intentions. Moreover, if I continue to let Jun Mo Xie speak, I do not know what he’ll say next. In fact, thanking everyone under the sun wouldn’t be enough if I live through this.]

[This idiot doesn’t even know what topics are a taboo... how dare he say such things? You are a spendthrift and a debauchee who doesn’t know that these topics are to be avoided! And you think I’m the same as you?]

Suddenly, the Third Prince started to feel ashamed, as it was his faction which would lose out now. What’s worse was that if a resolute person delivered the news of this to father’s ears...

The Third Prince hurriedly stepped back as he firmly covered his mouth. The voice that came out from it was almost pleading in nature, “Young Master Jun... You... You... don’t say such things! You... You... You... I’ll die... maybe I made a mistake... I will not obstruct you...”

The corner of Jun Mo Xie’s mouth rose as his appearance became tranquil. Then he groaned once, and his expression immediately became as radiant, “Woah! It is seldom that the Third Prince and Princess Ling Meng both honor my rustic hall with their presence. Wow, haha, the Aristocratic Hall and I are indeed very overwhelmed by your kindness. Please come in, do come in!” Then turning around, he roared, “What are you all doing? The Third

Prince has been waiting for such a long time, and none of you have greeted him, or invited him in! I'm getting really angry! You've neglected His Majesty! This is a serious accusation. Who was managing this? I'll personally escort His Majesty and the Princess inside the hall!"

[Huh? Escort them into the hall.]

Everyone had a strange expression on their faces. [He wants to escort the Third Prince and the Princess into the hall?]

[Do you really think that the Princess and the Princes actually need an invitation to enter? That's just what you think. This trip has really been worth it. Now, I've seen everything.]

There were people standing in all directions. Even though they had all witnessed his actions, not many saw their true nature.

For example...

"What's happening?" The First Prince asked his men with a gloomy expression.

"It's quite difficult to say!" an individual with a goat like mustache replied, "This Young Master Jun is very arrogant. It seems that he is quite keen on keeping with the rumors about him. He is certainly an ignorant and thoughtless individual. But nevertheless, the outcome of today's incident was certainly quite clever. If Your Majesty is unable to get a grasp on what is happening and wishes to incorporate that man into his own side, I suggest he should observe this man carefully." Everyone else sitting beside him nodded in agreement.

"Hmm, this fellow is not what I expected him to be. I believed that he wouldn't be able to deal with the problem. In fact, I had merely laughed him off as a joke. However, that drama has certainly stayed on mind," The Eldest Prince nodded and smiled, "However, this sort of rogue methods always give me a headache. Do you think it's really worthwhile to observe him carefully? Ha

Ha... ”

They smiled together.

As for another example...

“This rogue conduct makes me feel extremely sick, just like it did in the past!” The Second Prince observed Jun Mo Xie from afar, while making no effort to conceal the look of disgust in his eyes.

Cheng De Cao also gnashed his teeth said, “Such scums are a disgrace on the face of earth! This Young Master of the Jun Family is simply unbearable. It if weren’t for his Family’s name, I would have killed him a long time ago!” His eyes flashed coldly at that moment. [Jun Mo Xie, I have already arrived, and I see that you still act as arrogantly even after all these days. I will pay you back in double for last time’s humiliation. I await your death!]

Beside him, the white bearded Fang Bo Wen looked on in contemplation and then said slowly, “Today’s matter is quite strange.” He shook his head after contemplating a bit more, “Very Strange!”

The black robed man behind Princess Ling Meng spoke quickly, in a low voice, “This is the rumored Third Young Master of the Jun Family? Jun Mo Xie? He seems childish even at this age, even though he isn’t in reality. He is indeed a very interesting youngster.”

Chapter 245: I Just Like to Bully You

“Who? That Debauchee? He’s interesting? This person’s appearance is interestingly loathsome. The man is vile, arrogant and lacks grace. He lacks even the least bit of quality. Just looking at that man makes me sick!” Princess Ling Meng was seething with anger when she saw Jun Mo Xie. There were other things in her heart which she didn’t dare to speak, [I don’t know what Xiao Yi sees in that rogue of a man.]

The Princess knew these words would be harmful, since her father always avoided delving into such things. Therefore, she did not dare to speak these words out loud.

“Everyone has their own way of looking at things,” the black clothed person said in a profound manner. However, it didn’t seem to be in the pretext of the Princess’ argument. He continued to watch Jun Mo Xie’s back in mediation.

[Jun Zhan Tian’s grandson is really not that simple. My youngest son had needlessly picked a fight. However, this boy dealt with the whole incident in a short period of time with just a few words. He made the problem vanish with just a light strike from the opposite side of the spear. His method was indeed dishonorable, but it was also the quickest and the most efficient one.]

[Moreover, no matter what method one employs, it is a good method if it deals with the problem quickly. It wouldn’t have been possible to resolve the situation if he were to blindly argue like my son. As his father, how could I not be aware of my own son’s nature? It was wrong that he was born in the Imperial Family. It was wrong that he got the status of a prince. In fact, he is the sort of person who will rely on his parents’ achievements, and eat his own if required. He is a useless man who doesn’t have any talents.]

[It doesn’t matter what kind of a method it was. As long as it was quick and effective, it was a good method. Jun Mo Xie had clearly

adopted the best method available.]

[The rumor about the debauchee has not lived up to its hype. He doesn't seem to live up to his rumored name in reality ah...]

The black gowned man frowned thoughtfully, as he didn't know what to believe.

Jun Mo Xie started to politely greet the guests from the Imperial Family one by one, and then accompanied them into the Aristocratic Hall. However, each invitee could only take two more individuals with them, while the rest of their entourage had to remain outside.

However, the Second Prince insisted on taking three other individuals inside, when it was his time to enter. Jun Mo Xie saw the three people who were accompanying the Prince, and noticed that the first man was actually a repository of wisdom for the Second Prince. Therefore, he obviously had to allow the man to follow the Prince inside. The second person was a pretty and frail looking lady who looked quite hateful towards the Young Master Jun. She was the Second Prince's acquaintance, lady Yue Er from the Ni Chang Pavilion on the spirit fog lake. She had often proclaimed that she was purchased for her skill in music, and not for prostitution. It was not at all surprising that he had to allow the Second Prince's close female confidant to go inside.

Then there was Cheng De Cao...

Young master Jun raised his hand without a trace of politeness, and obstructed Cheng De Cao's entry as he said, "I'm sorry, each card permits the entry of only three people. This also includes the distinguished guest himself. I'm afraid that I cannot let you enter, as the Second Prince already has two other people accompanying him. However, we offer refreshments to those waiting outside."

"Why can't I go in?" Cheng De Cao glared as if he was just about ready to devour Jun Mo Xie. [This guy has not stopped anyone else from entering. What's the meaning of acting biased against me

alone? Is he looking down on me?

The Second Prince had already gone ahead with the other two. However, he turned around at this moment, and glared at the scene. The Second Prince could not abandon Cheng De Cao, because he needed people of such influence with him in order to succeed. Therefore, lacking a better option, he braced himself and entered because he believed that his identity as a prince would come to his aid. Many people had turned a blind eye to such things in the past because of his status. However, he had been unable to anticipate the extent of Jun Mo Xie's shamelessness and ability to create trouble. The audacity Young Master Jun was capable of demonstrating was more than enough to damage the Prince's reputation.

If it were someone else in this man's place, Jun Mo Xie may have actually turned a blind eye and allowed the said individual to slip by. However, this was Cheng De Cao... a man he would simply not help.

[Let alone allowing you to break the already existing rules... I would've created new rules to cause problems for you if you weren't breaking the any.]

[You're a two-fold omen of unpleasantness. First your name sounds awful, and then you're irksome to look at.]

"You're embarrassing your companions," Jun Mo Xie craned his neck. It seemed from his expression that he was looking at a monkey in a zoo, "You're intending to shout? You have violated the rules of this hall. Therefore, in accordance with the law of this place, I absolutely cannot let you inside. It would destroy the hall's prestige if everyone started breaking the rules according to their whims."

"Why?" Cheng De Cao asked anxiously.

[Everything would have been alright if I had not tried to enter. But now I'm already here, and just a step short of getting inside.

Won't I become a joke if I return now?] "I came here with the Second Prince. So why can't I go in?"

Jun Mo Xie deliberately sneered at him in a frivolous manner and nodded, "Your argument actually makes sense. B***s usually go together. However, there is a possibility that they cannot go into some places, right? So why are you pestering me if you are so clear about it yourself? Could it be that you're special? If such is the case, then you're a very talented person. It would definitely be of use to let you in."

Cheng De Cao was extremely angered by the Young Master Jun's words. In fact, he almost vomited blood, for Jun Mo Xie's analogy had drawn out a very shameful comparison in context of a person.

The two men behind Princess Ling Meng could not help but laugh after hearing what was said. They closed their mouths soon enough, as they felt it would be wrong to laugh at this. However, their bodies continued to shake wildly with laughter.

Everyone who had heard these words turned red. In fact, it seemed as if they were covered in chicken-blood, because they were barely able to keep themselves from bursting out laughing. The First and The Third Prince were among these people, but they did not take any offence. A member of their second brother's posse was being humiliated like this, but they were still cheerful.

Though the analogy Jun Mo Xie had used was far too mischievous, the Second Prince and his companions were the only ones not smiling. In fact, the Second Prince was very angry and a sinister expression was clearly visible on his face.

"Jun Mo Xie, stop bullying me!" Cheng De Cao panted. His eyes were bloodshot as he glared back at his aggressor. In fact, it seemed as if he was on the verge of erupting.

"I am bullying you? Are you kidding me?" Jun Mo Xie twisted his posterior to look at him arrogantly, and then twisted his waist to the other side. The lower part of his body swayed back and forth in

a rhythmic manner, “Bully you! Bully you! I want to bully you!”

“Puff!”

Cheng De Cao glared at Jun Mo Xie with eyes full of boundless hatred.

“Such big eyes! This Donkey is trying to scare me? Are you threatening me? Bah!” Jun Mo Xie spat. He then turned around to face the Second Prince, who was looking at him murderously. The Young Master Jun laughed as he explained, “You mustn’t by any means... You mustn’t misunderstand my words... these words really were directed at you...”

His explanation only added more fuel to the fire.

There was a frown across the Second Prince’s forehead as he snorted and walked inside after flicking his sleeve. Everyone followed suit. However, from time to time, someone would find it difficult to control their snigger. They would eventually clap a hand on their mouth, and cough in order to muffle their laughter.

This was especially the case with the two people who were accompanying Princess Ling Meng. These two men had no qualms about laughing, which made Jun Mo Xie notice them in particular amongst everyone else.

Jun Mo Xie was quite surprised to notice that Princess Ling Meng’s entourage had two men clad in black, who didn’t even look very young, [The Princess came without any handmaidens?]

[What is going on?]

The Young Master Jun was very suspicious of things and paid careful attention to this matter. Though he didn’t show any indication of his suspicions on the surface and was laughing and joking along with everyone, he was still mindful of everything.

[These two people are quite amiable and easy to get along with.]

[Moreover, these two people have beards. So they aren’t court

eunuchs.]

[Princess Ling Meng doesn't look like she is being forced. So that means she knows them well.]

[It also seems that the Princess respects both these individuals unconditionally. These two men definitely aren't ordinary people.]

[On top of that, Ye Gu Han is unexpectedly not at her side. His aura is not anywhere within even thirty meters of her! What reasons can he possibly have to leave Princess Ling Meng alone like this?]

[Judging by Ye Gu Han's temperament, who would he instill so much trust in the Tian Xiang City on?]

[This is quite confusing.]

[Or maybe... the answer to this riddle is in the identity of the two people accompanying her. If so, then understanding who these two people are will make everything clear.]

Just then, Jun Mo Xie suddenly remembered hearing a rumor that Ye Gu Han and the Empress had been close friends since childhood. [Could it be that I'm over thinking such a small incident? But why are these two here? I could understand the situation clearly if it really was him... but who is the other person with him? It seems that I have no knowledge of this person.]

Jun Mo Xie contemplated incessantly.

Up ahead, the entry point to the Aristocratic Hall's auctioning chambers had been flanked by two large Osmanthus(1) flowers. Their stem and leaves were lush green, while their petals were golden. In fact, the blooming flower showed no signs of withering, and its rich and strong fragrance filled the entire area.

Everyone was quite surprised when the doors opened and they saw the big hall inside. One could even call it a public square owing to the amount of space available.

The Young Master Jun had worked very hard to create this effect. Almost all the adjoining rooms to this hall had been brought into its fold. The columns used to support this linkage had been carved with shapes of dragons and phoenixes.

A hundred tables were neatly arranged inside. Not more, and not less - just a hundred.

There was only one chair behind every table. Two additional chairs had been placed some distance away from each table. These chairs had a small coffee table to keep them company.

A pair of bonsai plants had been placed on each side of every table. These bonsai plants had lush green leaves along with tender and beautiful flowers. There was a distance of at least 3 meters between every subsequent table. Moreover, the distance between any two adjoining tables was the same. This set-up had been arranged keeping Fatty Tang in mind; therefore, even a person of Fatty's dimensions could move around with ease here. That being said, Fatty was one of a kind. It was almost impossible to find another person with his build under the heavens.

Over three hundred people had entered the hall, but unexpectedly it did not feel crowded. In fact, it felt quite spacious. The air was fresh and clean as the long windows overhead had been opened. Therefore, no one was worried about feeling stuffy. Walking into this hall was like walking into a garden in spring time; it could soothe anyone.

Notes:

A yellow colored flower, primarily grown in East Asia. Also known as the Flower of O.

Chapter 246: 'Great Auctioneer' Tang Yuan's Interpretation of Aristocracy

A faint music floated from upstairs, and echoed down in the hall. The musical composition wasn't a rare masterpiece, but no one could see the people who were playing it. Somehow, this added a touch of elegance to this mediocre musical composition.

On the floor was a unique green-blue carpet; it was abnormally thick. The people walking on it felt a sense of warmth and luxury even though its color wasn't glamorous in particular!

Every table had a postcard with a name on it. The first row was naturally reserved for the Royal Family; they were the cranes in this flock of chicken. Four of the tables were designated for their seating.

Everyone thought, [this Aristocratic Hall is truly great; even the Royal Family hasn't been given a private area...]

Moreover, people inside this hall felt that they themselves had truly risen in the society. They started to believe that they were in the ranks of genuine nobles since they weren't too far removed from the Imperial Family. [Isn't this what aristocracy means?]

Everyone except for the members of the royal family felt very cheerful because of this.

The second row was for the major families. There was no division in accordance with their ranks. The third row was for the descendants of officials, as well as rich noblemen. And the fourth was reserved for the other rich and powerful of the Tian Xiang City.

Separating each row was a curtain of pearls hanging from above. This screen hazily covered a part of a person's head sitting ahead, which made it difficult for people to see the person sitting in the row in front of theirs...

Every nook and corner stationed a 'red-crowned crane incense burner'. It seemed like these cranes were blowing blue smoke. The smoke was rising spirally in the air, and this wafting smoke made the atmosphere seem more peaceful.

Some people had arrived early, and had been waiting for half-a-day. However, they didn't seem one bit impatient; in fact, they seemed to be brimming with vigor and excitement.

Dozens of young women wearing light-yellow clothes were serving tea in small cups. Their clothes and graceful disposition made them look like butterflies. They looked quite pretty as they moved around easy-mannered, yet with a sense of propriety.

There was a milky-white tapestry in front of the first row which looked like it had dropped from the sky. The tapestry completely covered what was behind it; it looked like an unusually thick wall.

The sound of music stopped.

Everyone's spirit rose, [finally the opening gong of this show has been rung.]

The tapestry in front of the first row was raised noiselessly, exposing the snow white platform. Then there was a sudden inflow of bright glittering lights. These lights were refracting from gems mounted in the different positions covering a small perimeter of the platform.

There was desk stationed in the middle.

On top of the desk, was a hammer; the hammer which would mark the final decision.

This arrangement was simply fantastic. In fact, it was such a stark contrast to the Magnificent Jewel Hall's set-up — which was wide known as the best auction house in the entire City — that it seemed as if a pheasant had run into a golden phoenix... or a beggar into a prince...

Suddenly, an echo of footsteps drew everyone's attention. The

sound of these footsteps made everyone curious, [what kind of colossal person could be behind such footsteps?]

The lights turned off.

A mountainous fat pile of meat walked in, looking around proudly; every step he took looked dignified. The fair skin under his black gown made him appear similar to boiled pork in-between sprouted bread. This entity bounced-about in a lively and a rhythmic manner, taking one step at a time.

“Since everyone here has received the invitation from our hall, all of you are the real aristocrats of the Tian Xiang City. And thus, our honored guests! I, Tang Yuan, am the chief auctioneer of the Aristocratic Hall. On behalf of this hall, I shall represent the three families comprised of the Prince Equivalent, the Jun Family and the Tang Family. I am here to greet the aristocrats on behalf of these families, and extend a very warm welcome to all!” Tang Yuan loudly orated what he had memorized by heart. Then, surprisingly, he bowed after he finished speaking.

Fatty Tang was in-fact still repeating what he had been taught earlier. He was speaking off the speech written on a piece of paper by the Young Master Jun. This voluminous write-up was scripted to create a civilized yet materialistic environment.

There was a warm and enthusiastic round of applause from the audience — not for anything else, but just the line “Tian Xiang City’s Aristocrats”. It did not matter if this praise was genuine or not, because from now on these families could use this title against the people they previously weren’t able to stand up to.

“The Aristocratic Hall, as the name applies, is the hall where only genuine aristocrats can come. Though, what is an aristocrat?” Fatty made great efforts to clasp his hands behind his back. It was a very strenuous task which he had undertaken to put on a formal appearance. As for Fatty getting rid of his weight, one could not say much. He wasn’t exactly short in stature, and his limbs were in

proportion to his height. Although he wasn't exactly tall and powerful, but his physical build was still a bit too much. However, he could not get rid of that fat right away. And try as he might, he was unable to wrap his arms and clasp them behind his back. Nevertheless, Fatty did his utmost to do it in accordance with Jun Mo Xie's instructions so as to seem graceful, calm, and 'hiding a few tricks up his sleeves'.

Tang Yuan's ego was given a boost since he was aware that this was his moment in the limelight. Though, to everyone else, he looked like a black bear which tried to clasp its hands behind its back in an attempt to walk gracefully. In fact, every step he took looked clumsy to them. However, every individual witnessing this scene was doing their utmost to stifle their laughter.

Fatty Tang sweepingly glanced at all sides with dignity, "The so-called aristocrat, is a man on top who has the best of qualities! For example, this — " Tang Yuan turned his hand; in the hollow of his palm was a round object, "I believe everyone here has tasted this crop and knows it as a potato. Everyone knows that this half-a-kg crop can be bought at the local market for three coins. Hence, this can be considered an ordinary vegetable. However! ..."

Tang Yuan stopped at once, and gave a pause since the potato appealed to his appetite.

Everyone was confused because this man was talking about nobility... so why had he just pulled out a potato? This thing had never been served as food to the rich and powerful!

"This half-a-kg 'thing' which is worth three coins is not only cheap, but it also makes convenient meals. All you need to do after getting back home is boil it in water. And then you can eat it. Or perhaps you can cut it into thin slices. In fact, you can continue slicing it as much as you like."

Tang Yuan felt as cultured as a great scholar as he uttered these words. He couldn't help but feel proud of himself. And hence, he

smiled in cultured manner. However, in the eyes of the ‘noblemen’ sitting in the audience, it seemed as if the half-a-kg weighing potato had somehow been pulled out by an elderly female pig. They were left twitching, for it was an unbearable sight!

“However, in a small tavern, it doesn’t matter how a vegetable is cut as long as one can finish making a dish out of it. Then, even a cheap potato can be used to earn hundred times the profit!” Tang Yuan spoke in an incessant torrent. “A man eating this ‘half a silver coins worth’ potato dish at a small tavern is obviously an aristocrat when compared to one consuming the same at home. What aristocrats consume is price! However, even that is of a low level.

“If a restaurant of a higher class serves the same kind of preparation, but at the cost of two to three silver coins, then that would naturally be considered of a higher quality. And again, one will still find it justified if one embraces an escort in a brothel at the Spirit Fog Lake who is skilled in her art, even when she draws out a sliced potato and asks for twenty silver coins. In fact, one cannot stop the price from rising if many individuals decide not to sell their bodies afterwards, and only offer the similarly prepared potato. Even fifty silver coins won’t be too much. In any case, the aristocrats visiting the Spirit Fog Lake will not worry about a few silver coins...”

Tang Yuan spoke excitedly since this felt similar to being in a brothel and lecturing a group of its patrons. He continuously winked and smiled in a manner like a man who could understand these things very tacitly.

The hall burst laughing with tacit understanding. As was expected, this made several ladies inside the hall frown. But none more than the one who had accompanied the Second Prince inside the Hall... her beautiful face turned green out of anger...

Princess Ling Meng suddenly heard a burst of laughter from her side; on turning her head, she saw her father, The Emperor,

narrowing his eyes while stroking his beard. His eyes flashed with brilliance as if he had just met an old and intimate friend. It seemed as if he was feeling the same immeasurable cheerfulness inside. He couldn't help but cough; and then did it again more vigorously. He spoke in a low and angry voice, "Ahem! Men are not good creatures!"

His Majesty the Emperor coughed embarrassingly at first. He then lowered his head, and held it with both hands, before raising it again after recalling some old memories. He then sat up straight on his seat; almost like a deadpan. He then thought, [Damn! This fatty almost swayed me! However, such a thing happened to me long back...]

"...Naturally if you go to Tian Xiang City's most luxurious restaurant for sliced potato... you will even be in favor of paying a hundred silver coins; even if their potatoes aren't that special!" Tang Yuan extended his finger, and lightly moved it to-and-fro like a pendulum.

This movement was also in imitation of Jun Mo Xie. The Young Master Jun was tall, and his fingers were slender. Therefore, he looked graceful when he made such a gesture himself. Moreover, one could also sense an air of arrogance in addition to grace when Jun Mo Xie made such movements. Tang Yuan had admired this in secret for a long time. His face lit-up after having pulled it off so coquettishly in front of so many people.

It should be mentioned that Fatty's expression greatly divulged from the reality...

Since looking at him from the audience's point of view... Tang Yuan looked like a motionless fat pig with a carrot jutting-out from its hoof, which he was swinging enthusiastically like a pendulum. Many of the audience became stiff, and then shuddered because of this sight. In addition, that unwarranted expression of pride on his face made the hair of every "aristocrat" stand up with disgust. Even those who possessed extraordinary strength were no

exception to this. [This fellow is extremely disgusting!]

“A hundred silver coins would be enough to buy potatoes to feed a family of four for five years! However, a person can eat only one sliced potato in a high level restaurant for that price. Moreover, this staple meal will be the cheapest dish no matter where you eat it!”

Tang Yuan’s arms vibrated as he laughed loudly, and said, “Could it be that such noble people just eat a potato? No! What you eat... is elegance; it is grace! What you eat, is status! What you eat, is your taste! What you eat, is also the price! What you eat, is the loneliness of sitting at the top! And only true aristocrats can enjoy this feeling!

“And at this point we can say, ladies and gentlemen, that sitting here in our Aristocratic Hall is the same as sitting at the best restaurant in Tian Xiang City!”

Tang Yuan shouted himself hoarse. Each-and-every muscle in his body shivered as he jumped about emotionally with a fierce look on his face, “This is the genuine aristocratic paradise! Even the water you drink here will be considered a genuine aristocratic commodity! As mentioned before, what we drink is not just water, but the loneliness of being at the top! To be alone — as to experience solitude — is the true mark of a genuine aristocrat!”

A thunderous applause erupted since fatty’s words were well-received by the audience. In fact, the applause continued to resonate for a while.

In another room upstairs, Jun Mo Xie laughed, “Fatty just said that genuine aristocrats consume sliced potatoes and plain water in solitude!”

Chapter 247: Jun Mo Xie's First Abduction

Jun Wu Yi's head shook as he broke into laughter. Beside him, even Little Yang Mo was laughing. Though he didn't understand the true meaning behind those words, the little rascal was aware that the combination of sliced potato and warm water wasn't delicious.

Tang Yuan wasn't just extremely fat; his memory wasn't that good either. He had forgotten the instructions long back. As a result, he wasn't left with much to go on. This section of the speech was a pure improvisation based on whatever little he could remember. Surprisingly, he had still managed a presentable performance. He was surely a very talented individual.

Fatty Tang was still speaking in an endless torrent. The Young Master Jun was in no mood to listen to the speech again. He turned and smilingly looked at Yang Mo, "How's your mood, Little Miss Yang?"

Yang Mo's pretty little face drooped instantaneously. Usually, he would refrain from retaliating when Jun Mo Xie called him 'Little Miss Yang'. This time however, he snorted and turned his head to leave. The Prince equivalent's son was a clever and mischievous little devil for his age. However, he was just a ten year old boy. He had already been embarrassed in the incident which had previously taken place. Therefore, it was only natural that he would find it hard to remain calm. Moreover, no one had consoled him after that. In fact, even an adult wouldn't have reacted calmly, and would've found it difficult to endure.

"It's no use getting angry," Hit-man Jun snorted as he made no effort to coax the boy. Instead, he crossed his legs, "You know that all you can do is get angry when you meet a bully, and nothing else. You might as well refrain from losing your temper since there is no gain in it."

“What’s the use of controlling my anger if there’s no gain it?” Yang Mo had been enduring that pain for a while, and the tears had finally started to fall.

“Calling you a ‘little girl’ wasn’t wrong since you’re crying over such a small matter. What are you crying for? If a ‘real man’ is frequently reduced to tears, he loses respect. Such a man will obviously get bullied,” Jun Mo Xie spoke in disdain as he picked up a big apple from a table. He cut out a piece and took a bite of it, “Is crying useful? Will crying solve the problem? You will leave my sight right away if you cry again. Get lost and weep somewhere else! I will not follow to console you. Moreover, I won’t try to help you vent your anger.”

“I won’t cry,” Yang Mo quickly wiped his tear, but continued to sob for a little while. He was very attached to the Jun Family’s Young Master. “Dad tells me that elder brother Jun is very clever. Can you please tell me what I should do? Those three have been bullying me since childhood. I... I get so scared that I can’t even think of anything. And I just want to run away... Elder Brother, can you please tell me... How can I make them stop? Or how I can get revenge, and vent my anger?!”

“Taking revenge to vent your anger? That’s not a good way.” Jun Mo Xie’s eyelid remained motionless as he calmly said, “They are the Emperor’s sons. Who is the biggest in this world? The Emperor is! If the Emperor’s son wants to bully you, is there anything you can do? All you can do is endure since your family isn’t as powerful as theirs.”

“I do not want bear it anymore! Elder brother Mo Xie, dad said that you are the smartest, and that no matter can baffle you...” Yang Mo caught Jun Mo Xie’s right arm and started shaking it, “I request you elder brother Mo Xie... please give me an idea...”

“Stop it. Stop it. Stop it right now!” Jun Mo Xie hastily pushed his hand away. He then continued impatiently, “Their father is the Emperor, while your father is not. This matter cannot be solved

with intelligence. You want me to help you? There is no chance. We don't have the means."

Yang Mo stared blankly for a moment. Then his eyes started getting watery again, and soon the tears gushed out. His tiny mouth had just let out a few sobs when, suddenly, there was a resonant flash in his eyes. His temperament immediately reverted back to the way it was before he had started crying. He became quite, while his eyes opened as round as the full moon, "Elder brother Mo Xie, you just said that their father is the Emperor, while mine is not...

"Why isn't my dad the Emperor? They are both the sons of my grandfather, the previous Emperor... why is my father merely a Prince, while his elder brother is the Emperor? I am also the blood of the old Emperor. So why is it that they can bully me, and I cannot rebel?" Yang Mo opened his big round eyes as he looked at Jun Mo Xie inquiringly.

"You just said that you also have the blood of the previous Emperor, so this entire matter is clearly your family's internal issue. How would I know 'why'?" Jun Mo Xie appeared somewhat impatient as he spoke, "Your father didn't have future prospects, just like you. He was also bullied since childhood. He didn't dare to rebel or call-on the nonsense that was perpetrated. Therefore, his habit became his nature. In fact, he may be willing to bear the bullying even now when he's a grown up. It's obvious that he didn't become the Emperor. And now, even his son has to deal with bullying."

"I mustn't be bullied again!" Yang Mo suddenly clenched his tiny fists, "I won't be bullied after I grow up! And neither will my descendants!"

"This is no good... the problem is difficult to solve," Jun Mo Xie sighed in a false show of affection.

"Is the Emperor the only person who doesn't have to stand

bullying? Will my descendants also be spared if I don't face it?" little Yang Mo asked.

Jun Mo Xie sighed, "I don't know; I really don't know."

"I'm going to become the Emperor just like you told me, ok?" Yang Mo opened his eyes wide. There was a sincere look in them.

"You? You are the previous Emperor's grandson. So, you are naturally entitled." Jun Mo Xie tilted his head as he focused his eyes on the boy, "Yes, you have the basic qualifications, but you fall too short of the other required traits. Hence, you are not qualified enough."

"Then please tell me elder brother Mo Xie, how do I change that? I must not be bullied again!" Yang Mo asked.

Jun Mo Xie was just about to reply when Jun Wu Yi, who was sitting behind him, coughed loudly; his thundering cough had sounded very similar to that of someone suffering from tuberculosis. It was evident that Jun Wu Yi was worried that other people might overhear that conversation. Hence, he tried to muffle this conversation. This deafening cough was indeed worthy of a Sky Xuan expert's name even though it had been limited to just this room.

Jun Wu Yi had been listening to this conversation, and felt that it had started to sound a bit wrong. Though the conversation had started out as an effort to console the child, it had soon taken a completely different direction. Moreover, it had started to tread on a forbidden road, and could possibly bear a very poisonous fruit. It was possible that the method Jun Mo Xie had adopted to coax this boy might end up being etched in his young mind. Hence, the Young Master Jun's advisor tried to indicate that they only needed to keep up with this act until they gathered the financial resources they needed. This process would only take a month or two. However, in case they ended up instigating the Equal Prince's son against the throne, then they might end up regretting it later...

[What is this kid thinking?]

“I am unable to answer this question of yours. Ask your dad when you go back home. I’m sure of what he’s going to say: Good that they bully! Good that someone else is also taking up my role. What about it huh? People bully the true and honest,” Jun Mo Xie imitated the Prince Equivalent.

“How do you know that? My father speaks exactly like that every time I get bullied. He tells me that I should be bullied, and he even says that I should be bullied more severely,” Yang Mo blinked as he looked at Jun Mo Xie with an expression of reverence. [This older brother really is very smart!]

[In fact, even my grandfather used to talk like this...]

Jun Mo Xie snorted and spoke the words of his heart, “I obviously know. I am also aware that you are a little traitor. You will go back and inform your dad about whatever people will tell you. Isn’t it so?”

“I will not betray my friend! My dad told me that people who betray their friends are bad. But I am a good person; I won’t betray my friend!” Yang Mo’s tender face became very red.

“Why are you worried?” Jun Mo Xie glanced at him plainly as he said, “You shouldn’t be. How about I tell you a story first?”

Yang Mo hung his head and dejectedly agreed, “Fine.”

Jun Wu Yi had practically been sitting on the edge of his seat. He finally loosened up and secretly wiped away his cold sweat. [These lunatics have finally stopped their discussion on that sensitive topic. Good thing that they’ve started with a story... I was really worried about the result of that...]

“This story is called the ‘Xuan Wu Gate Coup’(1),” Jun Mo Xie was all smiles. “Li Shi Min was the son of a Prince of the Tang Empire. He had two elder cousins — Li Jian Cheng, the heir-apparent, and Li Yuan Ji. They used to bully their younger cousin a

lot. At first, Li Shi Min endured their bullying. However, when it became too much, he murdered them at the Xuan Wu gate. Then, he sat on the throne and became the Emperor. He never got bullied by anyone ever again... ”

Jun Wu Yi also listened to Jun Mo Xie’s story. Not only did he regularly listen to Jun Mo Xie’s short stories, he was also very fond of them. Especially the story called ‘Romance of the Three Kingdoms’, whose contents had left Jun Wu Yi stupefied. Since Jun Mo Xie was telling a story he hadn’t heard before, he naturally listened with rapt attention.

However, as Jun Mo Xie calmly continued telling his story, Jun Wu Yi, whose nerves had just started to relax, suddenly became very taut again. In fact, cold sweat had drenched his clothes down to his undergarments.

The fact that a mere story by the Jun Family’s Young Master would actually scare a Sky Xuan expert to such a degree was definitely an unprecedented feat — if not an accomplishment.

[My god... I am an experienced general.] Jun Wu Yi was extremely infuriated by the Jun Mo Xie’s actions, [Are you trying to scare me to death? What utter nonsense are you narrating, kid?!]

[Heavens me! You have just incited a revolt. Yang Mo will listen and remember your words. Even if he is a child, he may still hold a grudge... hasn’t your story just poured a barrel of oil over the fire?!]

“Good, kill them! Kill them at once! Show them no mercy!” Little Yang Mo waived his arms as he exclaimed in excitement. There was a strange flash in his eyes. Perhaps a desire... maybe it was a thirst... or some other fanatical idea...

Jun Mo Xie’s eyes were almost the same. [I’ve said too much again. How many words can a small child remember? This is a seed, and must be irrigated with a little water to make it a tree.

However, it will drown if I throw it directly into the ocean.]

A sudden burst of an exotic smell flowed out from below. In fact, the scent was so powerful that everyone exclaimed in wonder; even the people who had been repressing their emotions. Even the people seated upstairs focused their attention on it.

After much promotion, the auction of the ‘Heavenly Wine’ had finally begun. On the stage, was an old man of fifty. His posture was upright, and he was dressed entirely in black. He seemed full of excitement and energy, while his concentrated eyebrows were arched like two cold swords.

Even Jun Mo Xie was surprised at seeing this person. [Isn’t this the sloppy and negligent Old Song?] He had adorned his fresh attire in the same manner as a soldier would. He wasn’t slouching anymore, and was standing straight from his waist up. All in all, he looked like a Military General right now.

“Send a glass of wine before the kill; Song Shang?(2)” Some people in the audience immediately recognized Old Song the moment he appeared on the stage. [There are rumors that Song Shang is a Sky Xuan expert. And now he is an auctioneer for the Aristocratic Hall.]

[Indeed... this is very aristocratic!]

The strong smell of the wine was floating in the air, and everyone was ferociously inhaling that scent. [This wine is worthy of the title of ‘Heavenly Grade Wine’, just on the basis of its wonderful smell alone.] Suddenly, everyone became somewhat impatient.

The eyes of that black clothed man sitting behind Princess Ling Meng flashed a bizarre light after he breathed in that fragrance. He was the Emperor of a country. Yet he had never come across such a high quality wine. This was an obvious indication of the rarity of this wine’s quality.

Notes:

A story from Chinese History.

This used to be Song Shang's tagline. It was mentioned during the wine contest sequence.

Chapter 248: The Gong to Start the Show!

It was no wonder that the Aristocratic Hall was selling such a high quality product. After all, this generation's 'Wine God' Song Shang had carefully fermented this 'Heavenly Wine'!

Even though Song Shang himself hadn't said anything, or admitted to fermenting the wine himself, everyone present couldn't help but think that he had. Song Shang was considered a formidable Sky Xuan hit-man, and was famous for his prowess as a warrior. However, Song Shang's identity as the 'Wine God' was how people had truly etched his character in their hearts.

Several maids started to move about. Each of them was pushing a huge trolley. And each of these trollies each had twelve small... wine glass.

These wine glasses... were nearly one of the smallest wine glasses available. However, it was still extremely exquisite since it was made of silver. Moreover, they looked extremely delicate — like a cicada's wings since its whole body seemed to sparkle.

Besides looking pleasant, these cups made of pure silver also assured people that the wine wouldn't be poisonous since poison would change color on coming in contact with silver. People could drink good wine without a worry on their minds since it would be completely safe.

Three wine glasses were placed on each table. Then, several maids arrived with wine bottles, and started pouring some wine very carefully so as to not spill even half a drop. The cold and extraordinary wine gurgled like a river as it was poured out of the bottles' snout and filled the wine glasses. The hall was covered with an even stronger fragrance as the wine flowed into the glasses. Everyone looked at the glasses in front of them. Many of them, regardless of their status or wealth, could not stop their mouth from watering.

“The main item for this auction is a wine which has never been seen in the mainland — the Heavenly Class Wine! We request everyone to first try the wine. That way, you will all be aware of what is at stake during the bidding,” Song Shang’s raised voice shook the audience in the hall. Naturally, he was very different from Tang Yuan. It seemed as if a deep and still-lake was standing on the stage as the prominence of a Sky Xuan’s demeanor exuded from his body language.

“After trying this wine, I am convinced that everyone will realize that it is a spiritual commodity, and a priceless treasure; no expenses incurred and no price paid will be too much for this wine. It will all be worth it as long as one gets possession of this marvel,” Song Shang waved his hand.

“Please.”

Everyone had already started coveting this ‘never before seen’ glorious wine. They impatiently lifted their wine glass as they inwardly cursed the stingy Aristocratic Hall for the small finger-sized cups provided for tasting.

“Everyone must be thinking that these glasses are too small; that they are not big enough to drink properly,” Song Shang spoke in an unhurried manner. “I would like to solemnly admit that in this regard... this Hall is guilty. However, I beseech everyone to think — if everyone drank this wine as much as they could, would they be able to truly cherish this ‘Heavenly Wine’? Moreover, would you all pay a high price for such wine then? This selfishness is necessary to curtail the greed which would violate this spiritual commodity!”

The guests were all fairly experienced in the ways of life. However, they didn’t understand the importance of that line, and therefore, dismissed it with a laugh.

All of them toasted, and then drained their glasses as they laughed. Princess Ling Meng didn’t drink her cup; she didn’t like

drinking in general. Anyway, she wouldn't dare to drink without getting prior permission. The two black clothed men sitting behind her were quite intimidating. So much so, that mere thought of overstepping her boundaries in front of them was enough to terrify her. If it weren't for their orders, she would've already left. Therefore, she had no choice but to pass the wine glass behind to the two men while giving them a disdainful look. Now these two men had three glasses in between themselves.

The two black clothed men behind her were getting somewhat impatient; so much so that they practically on the verge of snatching the glasses. They drained their glasses in one gulp as soon as they received it. The wine left these two men somewhat emotional after entering their bellies. These men had drunk wine from all over the land, but they never had the good fortune to appraise such a high quality commodity. The desire to continue drinking was strong in both of them. They both looked at the remaining glass simultaneously, and then looked at each other; neither was willing to yield.

Young Master Jun figured that the two men in black clothes who had accompanied Princess Ling Meng weren't ordinary. One of those two people was 'that man.' However, if that were true, who in all of Tian Xiang could be considered his equal? Who wouldn't yield in front of him? Who was that other man?!

"... " Unexpectedly, the crowd fell silent after taking the first gulp.

Then there was a sudden sound a while later. In the midst of this silence, a robust barreled-shaped man shouted as he stood up. His voice was full of emotion as he groaned joyously. There was a hint of a queer smell about him.

Everyone turned to the source of the sound, and noticed a man of barely forty years with a bewitched color spread across his face. He had put his hand on his cup, and had suddenly jumped to stand up. There was a foolish gaze on his face as he raised his head and said,

“You truly deserve to be called the ‘Wine God’ after fermenting this mysterious wine. Many of us have toppled after having just one cup. Tell me, when will the auction begin? What is the base price? It does not matter how much money is required, for this head of the family will take back at least ten jars of this wine!”

The big man who had just stood up was actually Tian Xiang City’s foremost salt merchant. He was also the head of Tian Xiang City’s Chamber of Commerce; Zhao Meng Long.

Though this man’s words seemed very vulgar, but everyone refused to reprimand him since they felt like doing the same. Hence, they all nodded in agreement. If it weren’t for them being dukes, chancellors and members of great families, none of them would have constrained themselves from saying what they really wanted to.

Only Dugu Wudi, who was sitting on the second row, shouted with a string of dark expression across his face, “Sit down! Speak in accordance to your surroundings! Making a big fuss like that, what’s next?! Don’t you see the people around you?! Do you think this is an aristocrat mannerism?” Dugu Wudi was very anxious and depressed.

The great general Dugu had come here for several reasons. One of his intentions was to show his support to Jun Wu Yi. However, his real intention had been to witness Jun Mo Xie getting humiliated. He wanted to beat him, and settle the bet that very same day. [One bottle for over ten thousand taels? What a joke! He really is very crafty if he can sell it at such a price. I will win this bet anyhow; that’s for sure.]

Who knew that at this point ten thousand silver taels for a bottle of wine wasn’t going to be considered expensive. Not only would the wine be sold for that much, but the price will far exceed the original amount. Also, because of the successful sale, he would end up with a debt of twenty five million silver taels. Life was indeed very unpredictable!

How could General Dugu not be depressed? Even if he decided to erase his conscience for this once, it still wouldn't get him out of his problem. Moreover, he had disturbed the meeting of so many people at present. He inclined his head and narrowed his eyes as he angrily looked towards the room where the uncle-nephew duo of Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi were sitting. [Wouldn't those two be laughing uncontrollably at me right now?]

Zhao Meng Long hiccupped as he sat down cutting a sorry figure. Although he was very powerful merchant in Tian Xiang City, he wouldn't dare to argue with the head of the well-known 'rude and unreasonable' family. He kept the already empty cup down as he sat. Then, he drained the other two cups on his table and gave a profound and satisfied sigh.

His face was full of happiness.

Dugu Wudi turned his head and saw his treasured daughter smiling. Her face was adorned in a happy and satisfied expression as she looked at her own father's expression; it was almost as if she was taking delight in his misfortune. He couldn't help but snort and threaten, "If you smile like that again, I will start arranging marriage interviews for you from tomorrow!"

Dugu Xiao Yi's laughter suddenly ceased. Her big shining eyes filled with anger, and her pretty face became dark. She turned her head as she panted in rage. She then looked-back at him as she spoke with an angry frown on her face, "Humph! Look at yourself. Are you scared that you are going to lose? Humph! Such a huge debt... I would like to see how you pay it back. You won't be able to pay back twenty five million silver taels even if you sell everything we have. "

Dugu Wudi was extremely infuriated by this, and rambled, "What pay back? Your father has plenty of means! You say that even if your father sells everything, he won't be able to pay the debt off? Is it really that huge a sum? If I truly don't have the money, then I will use my daughter to make that boy my son-in-

law. That ought to make up for the debt, and make you happy, right? Humph!”

Dugu Xiao Yi’s pretty face became red as she got up to leave in defiance. With a look of utmost disdain, she shouted, “I do not want that! Who would cherish that?!”

She was both angry and anxious. Although she liked Jun Mo Xie, she didn’t want to be given to him as a stake in a bet. In that sort of condition... how would her beloved give her any respect?

She suddenly started tearing up. Her eyes started glistening with tears as she stamped her foot. She then turned her tiny waist away without paying attention to her father, and tears continued to fall.

Dugu Wudi was at a loss because he had forgotten to mind himself, and had disrupted things. He hurried to console her. All of the seven ‘Heroes and Legends Bravely Rushing Forward’ could not attend due to the limited seating. Therefore, only Dugu Ying Yi had been brought along. He was initially laughing at the joke, but was soon found himself kicked on his buttocks.

“Won’t you go down?” Jun Wu Yi asked his nephew.

“I feel that something isn’t right,” Jun Mo Xie frowned and pointed his finger, “ ‘That man’ has arrived. Moreover, he has also brought someone along with him. It’s better if I don’t invite unnecessary trouble. Therefore, I plan to act cautiously.”

“Oh?” Jun Wu Yi’s body shook.

“I think everything will be alright,” Jun Mo Xie laughed mischievously. “I am convinced that Tang Yuan and Yang Mo can handle this matter. I will only make an appearance at a critical point.”

Jun Wu Yi smiled knowingly, but puckered his brows, “I fear that the knowledge of your strength will spread sooner or later. They will all... eventually come to know of it.”

Jun Mo Xie agreed and shook his head, “Therefore, we should

rush to develop our Family's strength in such a way that no would dare provoke us. This way, no one will be able to do anything even when they find out. After all, only the strength which does not diminish is the most powerful of all — money."

Meanwhile, Song Shang had praised the many interesting qualities of this wine, and had now withdrawn to the side. Song Shang, the 'Wine God', had spoken well since he clearly understood the flavor of the wine. And though his explanation fell short of Jun Mo Xie's, everyone who heard it was now reluctant to leave. In fact, they all wanted to dabble with that good wine. Their hearts had started beating much faster, while the atmosphere had reached a new height of excitement.

Now, as his role as the auctioneer, it was Tang Yuan's time to take to the stage.

"The auction of the 'Heavenly Wine' formally begins! The base price of each bottle is ten thousand silver taels. The price can increase consistently since there will be no upper limit. And because of the limited quantity of this excellent wine, each table can take back fifty bottles at most. Yet, there may be many who won't get this wine," Tang Yuan energetically made the announcement.

"May I venture to ask what this auctioneer Tang... meant when he said that many will not receive this wine?" Many people asked impatiently as Tang Yuan's voice faded.

"It has no special meaning. Only that, Mr. Song has spent his entire lifetime travelling all over the mainland to collect the best quality materials. He has used all of it to brew this wine; nothing more. There isn't any more of this high quality wine left. Therefore, this is the first and the last auction of this 'Heavenly wine'!" Tang Yuan sighed.

"Only this one time...!" everyone cried in alarm. They all looked at each other in dismay; [this excellent wine will go permanently

out of stock today?]

Chapter 249: Who is worse than whom?

Everyone thought that this was reasonable. [It must've been difficult to find the raw materials to ferment such a high quality wine, right?]

[Yes. It's fair that there's only this one batch.]

"Since it will only be this one batch... how many bottles are there in total?" this question was asked by a person who wasn't necessarily an authority on wines. In fact, she hadn't even tasted the wine — for it was Princess Ling Meng.

Fatty Tang answered her question despite being astonished by it, "The total number of wine bottles on auction is: three thousand. And no matter the price — wine such as this 'Heavenly Wine' appears only briefly. Therefore, just drink it! Even if it means that this wine will get finished!"

"Three thousand bottles...!" People who were very fond of the wine exclaimed. Three thousand bottles was a lot; it would be considered a massive number. However, one had to remember that many people were invited for the auction, and at least a hundred people were participating in it. Therefore, each would be able to obtain only thirty bottles on an average.

However, the upper limit of purchase for each person was fifty bottles. Moreover, in the first row was the royal family, and behind them were all the great houses of the Kingdom. These people would certainly take initiative and spend money so as to not return empty handed. It was likely that they would take turns in procuring for their needs. On top of that, representatives from over a dozen such great families were present here. Their consumption would reach around eight hundred bottles of wine; at the very least.

Hence, the remaining eighty or so families would have to compete for twenty two hundred bottles. This made it clear that

there would be many who wouldn't be getting any of this 'Heavenly Wine'.

If one was unable to bid successfully, it was possible that they would forever lose the opportunity to taste wine of such an extraordinary quality.

The competition between the merchants would invariably be unprecedented and bitter.

Many people secretly clenched their fists. They were ready to shout out the price once when the time came.

"Now we formally begin the auction. The first batch consists of fifty bottles! Only one person can win all of this," Tang Yuan's fat stomach shook as he smugly announced. He felt that the most important moment of his entire life was upon — holding the hammer, and making the final decision.

"I bid one million taels for these fifty bottles!" A man shouted. Surprisingly, the first person to bid... had actually doubled the price. Some people inwardly cursed the man after hearing this; [arrogant. Sir, this is just the first bid... don't treat it so much like game. Won't the prices become sky high when our turn comes because you shouted out like this?]

The person who had just called-out slowly stood up from his seat in the third row. He was wearing a blue gown. It looked as if the ocean was rippling undulated inside its in endless folds. In fact, it seemed to everyone that a thin layer of 'Blue Ocean' had suddenly appeared in front of them.

The man leisurely smiled and said, "I am Hai Chen Feng, the leader of Tian Xiang City's Jin Yang Gang. I have always loved wine. Therefore, I wish to covet the 'Heavenly Wine'. In fact, I don't think that one million silver taels is too large an amount for this wine. I ask anyone who I might have offended to forgive me."

Hai Chen Feng had naturally been brought in by Jun Mo Xie as a

precaution against many eventualities. He needed someone he could “trust”. True to the task, Hai Chen Feng had stood up to receive the first shelling of criticisms.

Naturally, there was another reason behind this action of Hai Chen Feng’s. He had done this to announce that Tian Xiang City’s number one underworld faction, the Jin Yang Gang, had undergone a change of leadership. Moreover, he had also demonstrated that ‘Gang Leader Hai’ was taking the Jin Yang gang to the upper echelons of the Tian Xiang City.

Hai Chen Feng’s sudden appearance caused everyone’s gaze to be immediately drawn to him; like pieces of metal being attracted to a magnet. Hai Chen Feng stood there motionless, but he looked a bit ‘under the weather’, for his complexion had turned somewhat pale. In fact, Jun Mo Xie, who was watching all this from upstairs, was left puzzled. [Don’t tell me that he has sustained serious injuries in these two days? This is becoming too frequent, right? It seems that I will have to train him, and increase his strength at least once or twice. Otherwise things might get risky.]

Only the Young Master Jun could dare to think this this. ... increasing a Sky Xuan expert’s strength by two levels on a whim... who would believe that?!

The three princes and the members of all the great families paid very careful attention to him. They all knew that Jin Yang Gang had undergone a change of leadership. However, they hadn’t expected that the mysterious new leader would turn out to be a Sky Xuan expert.

It was important to know that Spirit Xuan experts considered themselves above everyone else and rarely interfered in worldly quarrels. Just below the Spirit Xuan experts, were the Sky Xuan experts; they formed the backbone of the world’s power houses. Taking the Tang Family as an example; it was one of the most powerful families in Tian Xiang City. However, even its most powerful member was a mere Earth Xuan expert. And now, there

was a strong Sky Xuan expert who had unexpectedly become the head of a gang. Even if the Jin Yang Gang was supposedly the city's number-one gang, it still wasn't powerful enough to compete with the latter. Hence, everyone found this to be a bit too outrageous.

However, bearing this Sky Xuan expert to obtain these fifty bottles of extraordinary wine was acceptable. Hence, no one else participated in this bid; for a while.

As the dust settled, everyone saw a black clothed youngster leisurely standing up in the second row. Although his face was covered with a veil, his bearing was extremely graceful. Each and every movement of his' seemed to be comfortably executed. So much so, that it seemed as if he was a reservoir of all the elegance under the sun. Moreover, his conduct was a textbook example of paragon.

This black clothed youngster was the Li Family's Li You Ran.

Li You Ran was attending a public event after many years.

"I bid one million and five hundred thousand silver taels," it seemed from Li You Ran's voice that he was smiling. His voice sounded like a cool breeze passing through a forest on an autumn day; it was clear, and there was no hint of anger in it. "This is the first round of auction for this Heavenly Wine. This is of great importance. This Young Master is also fascinated with this wine. Therefore, I must ask Gang Leader Hai to forgive me."

Li You Ran smiled as he looked at Hai Chen Feng; it seemed that his look was one of admiration.

However, he did not reveal his truest and innermost feelings.

It was just the evening of the day before yesterday when two of his seniors had been dispatched. But, they were forced to return after sustaining serious injuries. And their culprit was the man in front of his eyes; the new leader of the Jin Yang Gang. Although he had come to know that both sides had suffered injuries, how could

he allow this auction to go as per Hai Chen Feng's wishes? Especially when his eldest brother-apprentice was sitting right behind him...

Li You Ran's main aim was simply to disrupt Hai Chen Feng's impetus, and test the financial capabilities of the Jin Yang Gang. After all, the commodity on sale would cost millions of silver taels. Hai Chen Feng would be a very brave man if he were to blindly increase the price. In that case, Li You Ran would back down at an opportune moment, and Hai Chen Feng and the Jin Yang Gang would suffer a crippling financial blow. This would also serve as revenge for his two injured senior brother disciples.

"So the Li Family's Young Master is also very fond of wines, huh?" Hai Chen Feng chuckled gently, "This, however, is not a problem. It is only natural that the price will go high. And since that is the case, I bid three million silver taels!"

Hai Chen Feng had never cared for money. Especially now when the Jin Yang Gang's purpose was to help Jun Mo Xie earn profit. Therefore, no matter what price Li You Ran would bid, Hai Chen Feng could surmount it.

However, this price wasn't enough for Li You Ran to consider withdrawing. Moreover, he was also worried that no one else would now dare to compete against Hai Chen Feng. Anyhow, such an opportunity didn't come to him very often. Therefore, he naturally wanted to add a little bit more; what he would add, would keep the price almost the same.

[Three million!]

Everyone present on the scene was a powerful personality in their own merit. And although three million was not a small amount, it wasn't very high either. However, spending so much to buy fifty bottles of wine... sixty thousand per bottle was still quite extravagant. [These gangs will never change... money is dirt to them.]

“Gang leader Hai is very rich; as expected!” Li You Ran laughed calmly as his glance turned as intoxicating as a joyful river. “This Young Master bids three million silver taels... and one copper.”

Three million silver taels... and one copper?!

Such a bid was clearly meant as a blatant insult.

Hai Chen Feng was infuriated, and a wave of outrage rose within him. He started breathing violently as he looked at Li You Ran in a cold manner. He said, “Young Master Li’s family is truly great... adding just one copper to the three million. He he... However, my heart is untroubled in this regard, and I will not hesitate to spend ten thousand gold taels. Therefore, I bid five million!”

Hai Chen Feng was really mad at Li You Ran. [This boy is extremely annoying! You increase the price, but add only a single copper! This is too strange! Dammit!] He decided to end it with Li You Ran at that moment.

This matter had just become a question of dignity.

“Gang leader Hai, didn’t you yourself say that ‘it is only natural that the price will go high’? Then why are you getting so mad about this? Such behavior isn’t good. He he,” Li You Ran said lightly. “Every family here is a noble, and everyone’s demeanor is in accordance to that status. This Young Master has merely added to the price without violating any rules. There aren’t any stipulations regarding how much we can add. Also, my Li Family is a very small family. Therefore, we cannot afford to add a lot of money; kindly forgive me. However, since Gang Leader Hai feels this way... I will admit that I have sinned since I wish to avoid annoying him!”

Hai Chen Feng’s face was pale but he was happy inside. [You try to add more to the price, and I will immediately stop. I will make you bear the burden of this black pot with your own pocket!]

Li You Ran paused for a moment, and then finally said with

elegance, “I will bid five million silver taels... and two coppers!”

Hai Chen Feng flew into a rage! He jumped on top of his table, and let out a huge roar, “You, boy, you’ve gone too far... you...” Just then, he heard Young Master Jun’s faint voice... right in his ear. It was similar to that of a housefly, “Let him have it.”

Hai Chen Feng was stumped. He started looking around. In the Xuan Xuan Continent, there was no technique-known to send one’s voice to others in such a manner. Hai Chen Feng had no idea how that voice entered his ear... [Why does it seem that no else heard that? This is too weird, right?]

“I am telling you to let him have it. Do not bid again; that’s an order!” Jun Mo Xie’s voice sounded inside Hai Chen Feng’s ear once again.

The voice was very strict and commanding; even if it was faint. Hence, he could not disobey that command.

[Yes. I will obey your orders.]

Jun Mo Xie had taken note of Li You Ran the moment he had arrived. He had then searched through the previous Jun Mo Xie’s memories, and had come to realize that this was the first time that he was seeing Li You Ran in person.

Jun Mo Xie had a sense of uneasiness the first time he laid eyes on this man. Li You Ran’s bearing... whatever he said... or the movements he made — were too perfect!

He was just perfect... regardless of what was at hand.

However, [does such a perfect personality truly exist in this world?] Jun Mo Xie would never be convinced of that.

[The Heaven and the Earth aren’t perfect; nothing is perfect in this entire world.]

[Such a perfect person does not exist anywhere in the world!]

Even if Li You Ran demonstrated a “perfect” behavior, Jun Mo

Xie knew at a glance that he was actually a fake.

Fake to the core!

Chapter 250: Locked Onto Their Respective Targets

Li You Ran was entrenching his position step by step whenever he spoke, and was drawing Hai Chen Feng into an ambush. Hai Chen Feng was a seasoned Sky Xuan expert and was usually calm. However, he had suddenly gotten angry, and had started behaving violently because of a few spoken words.

This scheme of Li You Ran was as profound as the ocean. He was indeed a formidable enemy.

Jun Mo Xie was certain that Li You Ran would eventually stop bidding if Hai Chen Feng would continue to blindly increase the price. He felt so because if it were him, he would've compelled the price to rise high, and then retreat at the opportune moment.

[Your plan was really good Li You Ran. It's a pity that you met Hai Chen Feng... and behind him — me. And you were doomed in that. This plan would've swindled any other person to fail!]

[You are indeed worthy of applause.]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had decided to act decisively, and put a stop to Hai Chen Feng's impulsive actions.

“Ha Ha Ha...” Hai Chen Feng was very experienced in worldly matters. And although Li You Ran had riled him up for a while, he had instantly gotten back his bearings with just a small warning from Young Master Jun.

It was extremely embarrassing for Hai Chen Feng to imagine himself standing atop the table. This was a disgrace to his identity as a Sky Xuan expert. Nevertheless, the lofty and towering Hai Chen Feng suddenly burst into laughter, “The Li Family is worthy of being called ‘one of the greatest families of Tian Xiang City’! It is indeed incomparably rich! He He He, I am a mere gang leader. Who am I to provoke the Imperial Preceptor's family? He he.

These fifty bottles aren't the only ones with this wine. Keeping in mind Young Master Li's reputation, I will withdraw from this bid since he is so determined to get this batch."

He calmly stepped down after saying this. Then, in the middle of this gathering, he cupped his palm towards Li You Ran as the corners of his mouth rose in a faint smile. "Young Master Li is really fond of this wine. Therefore, I congratulate you for your successful bid in the first round of this auction."

A few words had completely turned an awkward situation around. And those words were truly incisive.

Li You Ran was astonished for a moment. Though no one could make that out since his expression was hidden by the veil he was wearing; not a single ripple of the storm broke past the veil.

Li You Ran was completely puzzled. Hai Chen Feng was falling into his trap. In fact, it had seemed that he preparing to shout ten million judging by the degree of his emotional upheaval. However, Li You Ran had never expected that the leader of Jin Yang Gang would stand down and beat the drums of retreat at such a crucial time. [How is this possible?]

[Do I want the wine? This is a joke! Of course the wine is important to me, but I know that the first two rows are bound to get their fill. In fact, they won't even have to spend a very high price. They may even get it at the base price. How many bottles have I obtained after spending these precious five million silver taels?]

Li You Ran felt that a matter had not gone according to his calculations for the first time in his life. [But Hai Chen Feng's anger didn't seem false. So what's going on? Could one really control themselves in the nick of time? Not only did he withdraw from this meaningless struggle, but he also prevented hurting himself from hurting his reputation. He was almost about to prove that he uses force to bully people...]

[Hai Cheng Feng surely doesn't have such insight, right?]

[Is there a skillful person behind him who might be providing instructions? If there is someone who stopped him when they saw the matter getting out of hand... what method were they using to transmit their instructions?] He was completely puzzled.

This troublesome train of thoughts ran in his mind for a period of time. Li You Ran was staring blankly at first, but he was then obliged to smile and act cordially the next moment. He got up and cupped his hands calmly. He then said, "I would like to convey my heartfelt thanks to Gang Leader Hai for allowing me to win this bid."

He laughed gently in self-ridicule before continuing, "I figure that this young master has fallen into his own trap. Gang leader Hai understood the dirty game I was playing. I admire gang leader Hai's wisdom. I hope to seek the brilliant Gang Leader Hai's wisdom whenever I get the opportunity."

Upstairs, Jun Mo Xie could not help but sigh, [Li You Ran handles matters in a watertight manner. He is extraordinary!]

A person discerning this matter would see that Li You Ran had deliberately tried to disrupt the bidding. Moreover, it was clearly visible that he had raised the price in a way which would certainly embarrass Hai Chen Feng. Everyone jeered at him when his plan unexpectedly failed, and he had to spend a monumental five million silver taels to obtain those fifty bottles.

However, Li You Ran's manner of speech suddenly became very frank. He had then taken responsibility for his actions, and admitted defeat with a smile. This act demanded a lot of courage and strength of character.

The two black clothed men behind Princess Ling Meng looked at each other. Their eyes were full of admiration, "He adapted to the situations as they arose. This Li You Ran is some guy! He is a rare individual in this generation," Mr Wen smiled as he said this in a

low voice. “Could it be that you don’t think him to be clever?”

The other black robed man was the current Emperor of the Tian Xiang Empire. His vision was sharp and profound. He answered in an equally low voice, “Indeed, I think he is quite worthy. However, the man behind Hai Chen Feng is even more commendable. He gave his instructions without leaving a trace; no trace will be found even if you look for it. Moreover, I believe that person’s wisdom is in no way inferior to Li You Ran’s. In fact, it’s possible that this man may even be better than Li You Ran!”

“Another man behind Hai Chen Feng?” Mr. Wen did not understand.

“Mr. Wen, think. Li You Ran’s words had pushed Hai Chen Feng into a very perilous trap. He knew that Hai Chen Feng would compete when he raised the price by five hundred thousand. However, he had left Hai Chen Feng with no choice but to get angry when he added just a single copper. Moreover, Hai Chen Feng was in a completely confused state of mind. And then Li You Ran added only two coppers in his third bid. Hai Chen Feng was already unable to restrain his anger by then. It was improbable that he would think clearly from there-on. He was likely to become a ‘mad bull blinded by anger’ and would’ve resolutely charge forward. In fact, he would charge stubbornly even if he up against a thick wall which was had to break through.”

Mr. Wen closed his eyes and looked back at everything that had happened. He realized that it was true. Hai Chen Feng had forgotten the manners of a Sky Xuan expert, and had gone into a fit of rage. Shockingly, he had jumped on top of his table in extreme anger; completely disregarding his image. It had seemed as if he was about to explode.

“He then jumped on to the table, and said this, ‘You, boy, you go too far! I... ’ After that, he suddenly stopped. This is the point when one usually doesn’t stop. It was as if a massive river had been suddenly halted in the middle... by something. Then he calmly

stepped down from the table, and cupped his hands to admit defeat. This was an exceptional counterattack. In fact, it can even be said that this was a very dangerous counter attack.

“Just figure this; Li You Ran isn’t looking around the hall. I reckon that he and I have the same suspicion. Therefore, nobody can understand what sort of an enlightened person that man is. Or what kind of method he is using to instruct Hai Chen Feng. This is why I said that the man behind Hai Chen Feng is truly difficult to deal with. Whether it is his wisdom... or his extraordinary methods,” His Majesty the Emperor smiled.

Mr. Wen evaluated at the situation accordingly. Li You Ran was deliberately not looking all over the place. However, he was still spying around secretly. He naturally couldn’t keep this hidden from Mr. Wen’s eyes.

His Majesty’s eyes were sparkling with the splendor of his wisdom and foresight, “Wen, if you or I were in Hai Chen Feng’s place, and were receiving such insults — we also would not have been able to control ourselves. Wouldn’t you agree? That is why I believe that Hai Chen Feng was stopped by someone else. And that person chose a very suitable moment to act. He caused that Li You Ran to suffer by making him incur a huge loss. This person may be the main reason behind Hai Chen Feng suddenly taking control of the Jin Yang Gang. He He, the original leader of this gang was called Jin Feng Lie, right?”

Paying attention to a great many events, the country’s Emperor had surprisingly remembered the name of the head of an underworld faction — one could say that the Emperor was truly prodigious!

“I also suspect that this person may be the true organizer of this auction,” The Emperor’s expression was a bit cold. “We might be able to glean some information about this person if we observe Hai Chen Feng.”

Mr Wen looked at Hai Chen Feng. His eyes were shining as he said, "If that doesn't work, this old man will seize Hai Chen Feng and interrogate him slowly. This old man can extract information from him even if he is strong and hard-headed."

Mr. Wen's tone was simply too much. Hai Chen Feng was a Sky Xuan expert. Only a few people were stronger than him. And now this person was talking about capturing and interrogating him.

"Hai Chen Feng is the Blue Master's apprentice." His Majesty smiled, "We cannot provoke the Blue Master. In fact, we must not provoke him. The gains we will achieve will not make up for our losses." Then he leisurely looked at Tang Yuan, "There are many methods which can be used to gather information."

Li You Ran indifferently deposited the money he was required to pay. And he did it under the public eye. A man from the Aristocratic Hall followed him, and made preparations for handing over the wine. Li You Ran, however, took a seat and rested in peace.

"This Li You Ran is a formidable character," Young Master Jun concentrated as he looked at the man downstairs. To him, that man was a definition of a threat. And according to his accurate intuition, the threat from Li You Ran was actually quite huge.

Jun Mo Xie couldn't allow any threat to exist owing to his instinct as the number-one assassin in his previous life. Especially something that could threaten his life. Usually, his first thought in such situations was to destroy the threat.

Jun Wu Yi smiled as he intentionally-or-otherwise looked in the same direction, "Li You Ran is the eldest grandson of the Imperial Grand Preceptor. He is also the leading figure amongst the Li Family, the Meng Family and many other smaller families' younger generation. He has never attended this kind of an event before, Mo Xie. He is here in person to show face in Grand Preceptor Li's stead."

“I do not care about their face. Their face can be as big as an ass. It has no meaning as far as I am concerned,” Jun Mo Xie smiled. “What I genuinely care about is... him spending that much money,” A ray of light flashed in his eyes as he said this.

[I must keep Li You Ran in my line of sight!]

Hit-man Jun had secretly decided.

The first batch of the fifty bottles had been sold for an unexpectedly high price of five million silver taels... and two coppers. Tang Yuan was very excited as he brought out the second batch of fifty.

“This person bids one million silver taels for those fifty bottles. I don’t know who else will increase the price?” Hai Chen Feng stood up once again. He was more than qualified to make this bid.

It was only natural that he would make this bid. Moreover, it would be considered very strange if he didn’t make any more bids.

“I bid one million five hundred thousand,” A sharp and sweet sound resounded; it did not sound too urgent... nor did it sound too slow.

Everyone turned to the source of the sound and were surprised to see that it was Princess Ling Meng. She had unexpectedly bid such a high price!

Chapter 251: The Prince's Shamelessness

No one saw the unwillingness in Princess Ling Meng's eyes. Though the eyes of the black robed people behind her shined as they looked at those bottles of wine.

“Since the Princess is bidding, I will make no further bids. I will bid later. It's unlikely that someone will bid against me the next time; am I right?” Hai Chen Feng's demeanor was elegant. He smiled to show his benevolence as he moved out of the way.

“Princess Ling Meng bids one million and five hundred thousand silver taels for the second batch of fifty wine bottles. Is there no higher bid for them? ...still no higher bid? One million and five hundred thousand going once... One million and five hundred thousand going twice... One million and five hundred thousand going for the third time... sold to the Princess's bid!”

“Bang!” The hammer struck the table. Fatty Tang was extremely excited. He loved that ‘bang’ sound when the final call was made.

Upstairs, Jun Mo Xie laughed so hard that his eyes turned to slits, “This Fatty really leaves me speechless. He just shouted that Princess Ling Meng is getting married!” (1)

“Pfft” Jun Wu Yi spit out a mouthful of tea and coughed. The Third Master of the Jun Family had learned one thing — no matter what, Jun Mo Xie's mouth was capable of altering the meaning of anything. ...Tang Yuan had obviously shouted “bid!”, but the Young Master Jun had altered it to “getting married”(1). [Pah! How did I get into this ditch with this guy?]

The First Prince spoke up as soon as the third batch was introduced for auction, “This Prince has taken a fancy to this commodity. I bid six hundred thousand for this fine wine!”

Atop the stage, Tang Yuan rolled his eyes as he thought, [Bah! I think you're full of shit! The first batch was auctioned for over five

million, and the second batch was auctioned for one million and five hundred thousand. Yet you unexpectedly bid a price which is only a little higher than the base price?! Moreover, this tone of yours is not one of competition. ‘I bid six hundred thousand for this fine wine!’ ...this is obviously a warning; ‘don’t mess with me, I am the First Prince!’ Such shamelessness ah!]

The First Prince smiled as he made his bid. He then turned his body to face the rest of guests and said, “Would anyone like to bid? This auction must go to a very high price. So be at ease ladies and gentlemen. This First Prince will not mind if you bid.”

Everyone’s face twitched as they cursed him in secrecy; [did you say that you won’t ‘mind’? You could also have meant — ‘I will slaughter the person who bids’? Will you really mind or not?]

Tang Yuan hadn’t had the time to speak when “guest” Hai Chen Feng’s voice resounded. He coughed and cleared his throat before he said, “Your Majesty the First Prince has spoken the truth. The price must go high. Therefore, I bid one million silver taels; as I had done earlier.”

“Oh?” The First Prince smiled as he looked at him, “Gang Leader Hai has a very good outlook on things. If that is the case, this Prince will bid one million and five hundred thousand!”

Hai Chen Feng hesitated for a moment. It seemed that he wanted to increase the price again. However, he quietly sat down.

This continued for the next sixteen batches of wine. Hai Chen Feng made a bid for each batch. And each time he was unable to make the purchase. One million and five hundred had apparently become the fixed rate for the auction. These sixteen batches were auctioned off to the major families of the city. They got to walk away with the wine once they bid one million and five hundred thousand.

The stock of three thousand bottles of wine was already short of nine hundred by now.

The people sitting in the rows behind made no attempts to bid. They obviously didn't dare to.

However, they couldn't help but scratch their cheeks in anxiety.

[Not much is left now!]

General Dugu Wudi's face had already become as dark as charcoal.

This time... he was truly done for. The first nine hundred bottles had been auctioned for an astronomical price of thirty million silver taels. And now he would have to compensate more than twenty five million in silver since Jun Mo Xie's base price of ten thousand taels per bottle had been bettered. Moreover, further two-thousand-plus bottles of this wine still remained.

[I estimate that this auction will end-up making a crazy seventy million by the time it comes to an end! ...Conservatively...]

[And this figure is what I would owe him... this debt could crush me to death!](2)

Though the Dugu Family was very powerful, where would they get that seventy million silver from? It could be said that selling everything they owned wouldn't be enough to settle this debt.

[Would I have to use my daughter to repay the debt?]

[How can this be any good? Would I really have to use my daughter to settle this loan? This bears down on my heart. Won't the Dugu Family become the biggest joke in the Tian Xiang Empire? People will say that we couldn't even afford our wine... that we had to send our daughter to someone's family in order to clear our debts...]

"Oh dear!" Dugu Wudi sighed deeply. His anxiety was weighing him down. [I should not have made that bet! I should've never added that line in particular... that I would compensate according to the price his wine was auctioned at! Isn't this like burying myself in a grave that I dug?]

[Originally, I would've had no option but to pay the twenty five million. However, the price is now at one million and five hundred thousand per batch. That's around thirty thousand per bottles. This would mean that my family would have to pay at least seventy five million. And this is the most conservative figure! Forget about doing this alone... even the entire Dugu Family would not be able to cough up so much silver. What a horrible fate!]

On the stage, Tang Yuan was pushing his throat by shouting-it-hoarse in excitement. Yet he still was unable to make enough of a din. Right now, the princes, the nobility and the merchants — all the rich and powerful were opening their mouths to yell out their bids. Every individual's voice was loud since they feared that they would lose out.

Tang Yuan was also teasing them. He would still bring out batches of fifty bottles. But when the time came to remove them off the table... he'd do it one-by-one-by-one...

Everyone was afraid of not being able to buy a wine bottle, and losing their hard earned aristocratic identity. The more anxious they'd get, the more aggressively and openly they'd participate for fear of being outdone. And the price seemed to increase because of this.

Even “customer” Hai Chen Feng did not get an opportunity to bid. It seemed that everyone present had become Jun Mo Xie's “customers”. As long as one shouted; ‘I bid one million’, there would be several others who would shout — ‘I bid one million and five hundred thousand’.

It seemed that the heartfelt desire of the Jin Yang Gang's new leader would not be fulfilled. However, this matter would become clear later on.

Jun Mo Xie had initially intended to sell the wine at a base price of ten thousand taels per bottle. However, it seemed that base price had now been established at thirty thousand instead. Moreover,

the upper limit of the bids was still shooting.

It seemed as if the supply was unable to meet the demand. In fact, the price of the wine would've shot even higher if the guests not been limited with regard to the number of purchases they could make.

This auction was finally reaching its conclusion after witnessing several crazy tussles during the biddings. Two thousand and seven hundred of the three thousand bottles had already been sold off. Merely three hundred bottles of wine remained. However, there was still a small section of the audience which had not presented its bids yet.

However, the most noteworthy of all was Hai Chen Feng. The leader of the Jin Yang Gang still hadn't been able to obtain his long-cherished desire. He once again cleared his throat and said, "I bid one million!"

"Wait a moment! Let the Imperial Prince speak!" Someone shouted loudly. Everyone turned to look at the source, only to see the Third Prince climb the auction platform. Then, he hurriedly snatched the hammer from Tang Yuan's hand and exerted himself as 'banged' that hammer thrice on the small table.

Everyone was preparing for the final leg of this extraordinary wine's auction. Hence, they were alarmed to see the Third Prince suddenly make his way to the platform, and couldn't help but find it strange. However, they calmed down. [What is the Third Prince trying to do... That guy was auctioning the wine... Could it be that you wish to make a guest appearance and act as an auctioneer?]

"Ladies and gentlemen! Listen to what I have to say!" The Third Prince crossed his hands behind his back as he looked at everyone. His mannerism was arrogant enough to disgust most people.

"Today we were fortunate enough to taste this 'Heavenly Wine'; it is indeed a great blessing. I would like to convey my sincere thanks to all the stakeholders of the Aristocratic Hall. In this

regard, this Prince extends his sincere gratitude.” The Third Prince nodded towards Tang Yuan. Then, he turned to speak, “This wine is indeed exceptional and very valuable. However, we must not forget basic etiquette!

“This Prince is ashamed!” The Third Princes let out a fake sigh, “I just remembered a moment ago... that there someone within our Tian Xiang City who is more qualified than anyone else when it comes to tasting such excellent wine. And yet, unfortunately that person is not here. He works his heart out. He exhausts himself mentally for this country... and the common people!”

All who were qualified to be called “aristocrats” had been able to enter. They clearly understood ‘who’ this man was referring to. However, they still couldn’t understand what the Third Prince was attempting.

He seemed nothing more than an intimidating character who was trying bullying the weak by using his powerful connections.

“That person is naturally this Prince’s father, the Emperor — our Tian Xiang Empire’s King, His Majesty! My father, the Emperor, is busy with the nation’s affairs and does not have time to attend such an event. Tell me, can’t we show even a little reverence towards him? Are we incapable of sacrificing a little from our personal desires for the sake of the nation?”

The Third Prince’s voice sounded strict, “Not showing any respect towards one’s elders is equal to committing a reprehensible crime! The auction has already entered its closing stages! And only three hundred bottles of this extraordinary wine remain. This Prince suggests that we present these bottles to the Emperor, and show him our love and respect. Tell me; is it not a good idea?”

The Third Prince’s voluminous speech ended; it was greeted by complete silence.

Everyone had thought that the Third Prince acted up because he wished to obtain the remaining bottles. However, no one had

expected that the Third Prince would take this road. It was clear that he wanted to stop the auction, and then make the Aristocratic Hall offer the remaining bottles to him; free of cost!

In fact, it seemed as if he asking the Aristocratic Hall for a favor.

Everyone cursed him in the secrecy of their hearts!

[You want to show respect to your father? Then you should send him what you've bought! Didn't you win a bid for fifty bottles earlier? You didn't seem to be bothering about respecting your father then. And now you wish to take other people's things to ingratiate yourself in your father's eyes? And on top of that, you even managed to speak of it in such a self-righteous manner! We cannot help but call this a 'skill of sorts'! You have a great talent which can distort the truth, and mix the right with the wrong...!]

Everyone was discontent, but no one made a single noise. The people who hadn't been able to buy anything were obviously the most disappointed ones. It could be assumed that such people were mostly seated in the back since they weren't the richest or the most influential ones. Therefore, how could they dare to offend the Emperor's son? Moreover, raising an objection might just lead to a criminal charge for disrespecting the Royal Family! Hence, no one said a word. They simply looked at Young Master Tang since it would now depend on the Aristocratic Hall's chief auctioneer.

"Young Master Tang, what do you think?" The Third Prince asked in a low and calm voice.

Notes:

This is an instance of word-play (in the native language of the text). 出价 (chū jià) means 'to bid' and 出嫁 (chū jià) means 'to get married'. They sound very similar. Jun Mo Xie repeats Fatty Tang's words with the alteration to crack a joke.

The calculation is explained later in the chapter.

Chapter 252: Brother Mo Xie Playing a Handsome Hoodlum!

“The Tang stock in the Aristocratic Hall is mine; it’s Tang Yuan’s personal money! The Tang Family has nothing to do with it. I have no opinion about your desire to present this wine to His Majesty, the Emperor. However, I cannot sustain a loss on the one hundred remaining bottles that I own. Therefore, Third Prince can purchase them by paying the base price if he really desires. However, I have no comment on how he plans to obtain the remaining two hundred bottles.” Tang Yuan repeated the lines he had learnt by heart.

The Third Prince’s voice and appearance was stern, but Fatty Tang didn’t care much for him from the start. Fatty didn’t shout-back even though the Prince had dropped to a lowly status by trying to force others. In reality, Tang Yuan would’ve already exploded if he had not received instructions by Young Master Jun’s “sound”!

As for these words spoken by Fatty just now — it was Jun Mo Xie who had used his secret technique to transmit these lines to Tang Yuan’s ears. Fatty Tang had listened to these words, and had repeated them slowly.

However, did the Third Prince really wish to pay the base price for these hundred bottles? The base price for a hundred of these bottles would be around three million in silver, and the Third Prince did not have that kind of spare cash. This Fatty was a big dandy. However, he had the Tang Family behind him. His grandfather and the Prince’s father had really good relations. Therefore, the Third Prince wouldn’t be able to obtain those hundred bottles for cheap if this Fatty was truly being earnest. Hence, he decided to let it be, even though the price wasn’t low. The Prince didn’t wish to spur trouble with the Fatty, even though

the Fatty wasn't exactly being kind to him.

The Third Prince pondered on this for a while and then suddenly burst into loud and clear laughter. He then said, "Very good! This Prince will get the remaining two hundred bottles of this extraordinary wine stored in his carriage if chief auctioneer Tang has no objections regarding them. It is important that this Prince presents his father with this huge gift. And I will surely give credit to the Aristocratic Hall for such a contribution!"

"Did you finish your play's dialogue, Third Majesty?" a lazy voice resounded from upstairs. Everyone looked up only to see the Young Master Jun dressed in his gown. His pretty face belied his somewhat angry mood. He took one large step on to the railing. His legs were almost fully upright as he looked down and sneered at the Third Prince.

"What do you mean Young Master Jun? How on earth am I performing in a play?" The Third Prince's expression sank.

"What do I mean? I think I should inform the Third Prince that your performance is not pleasant to hear."

Jun Mo Xie gave a rogue smile, "Fatty Tang is merely the chief auctioneer of the Aristocratic Hall. This boy is the actual boss of the Aristocratic Hall! Moreover, this Young Master owns a hundred bottles out of those three hundred! All this man can see is someone who's trying to take away my share without willing to pay for it. You want to take these away? That's fine. However, I, your father demand the highest price which has been bid up till now. I suppose this is required even if the grandson is daring to give away his grandfather's belongings!"

Jun Mo Xie had wickedly and skillfully changed his own designation around five times in his accusation. He had gone from 'boy', to this 'this Young Master' to 'man' to 'father' before finally settling on 'grandfather'.

Shockingly, he hadn't set aside even a little bit of respect for the

Emperor's own son.

“This kid is mad!” Dugu Wudi's spirits rose as he exclaimed to his daughter, “This is new to me. But is this boy really that bold? Damn! His words make me comfortable! It's been a while since I've seen something this rare! He is truly worthy of being called Elder Brother Jun's son! His father was a hero, but this guy's got guts too!”

Dugu Wudi was somewhat touched in his heart. [Jun Mo Xie is staring blankly right now. It seems as if his brain hasn't yet processed his own words. However, this requires a lot of courage! He is standing-in for the youthful vigor of his family. My sons wouldn't dare to speak like this — even if they were beaten to death. But Jun Mo Xie has! This one incident has proven that he far exceeds my sons and nephews; regardless of the fact whether he has brain or not!]

[This boy must be drunk. But still, how could he say such a thing so causally?]

[Leaving aside the fact that he's just a boy — even a great general wouldn't have been able to say something like this in this manner!]

“Daddy, can't you speak without cursing for even once? Can't you speak a little gracefully? At least appear a little bit like nobility!”

Dugu Xiao Yi snorted as she playfully protested her father's vulgar language. She felt that his vulgarity was somehow too much for this environment. Then, she stretched out her finger and continued in a shy manner, “Daddy, I really like looking at brother Mo Xie playing the hoodlum. And just look how handsome he is! Even his bearing is extremely graceful. The magnanimity spoken of in legends and lore cannot surpass his chivalry.”

“...What?...”

The Great General Dugu Wudi was completely dumbfounded. [Is

there no justice? I used profane words, and she was discontent. But, now that this youngster is shamelessly playing a hoodlum — he is graceful and handsome?! What kind of magnanimity has he displayed to leave her so mesmerized?] Although he hadn't read a lot of books, he had a rough idea what the meaning behind these words was.

[What is this? Even the lover of the poet Pan Yue wouldn't describe this in such an outrageous manner! The difference in the way she's treating us is too great, right? She's simply favoring him too much, isn't she?]

“What is the meaning of this Young Master Jun? Are you are disagreeing to gift these bottles to my father, the Emperor? The Emperor only concerns himself with the welfare of the nation, and exhausts himself both physically and mentally over it. Is my father not worthy enough in Young Master Jun's eyes? Not even for you to offer him your wine? Hmm?”

The Third Prince coldly looked up at Jun Mo Xie. He seemed to be looking at Jun Mo Xie humbly. However, he only saw viciousness in the Hitman's eyes.

“It doesn't matter to me! I am running a business here. And this place isn't called the 'Benevolent Hall'! One simply can't come in here and bully us!”

An ominous light returned to Hitman Jun's eyes as he snorted in a cold manner, “I must question the Third Prince's intentions. When Fatty Tang said that he would not offer you his stock, and that you would have to buy it — you did not do anything. However, now that the stock of this fine wine is under this Young Master's name — you think you can handle it as you wish? I didn't know that the Third Prince looked at me as someone who will be fun to bully! Perhaps he looks at my entire Jun Family as someone who is easy to bully? I believe that everyone here can see through the ridiculousness you disguise as the so-called 'right and wrong', 'the fair and equitable justice' and 'the will of the people'...Third

Prince, Your Majesty...this Young Master must question in this regard!”

Young Master Jun’s voice was full of righteousness as he raised his head, “My Jun Family prefers to break over bending! We are ready to suffer a hundred calamities and still remain unyielding! The Third Prince has insulted my Jun family in front of so many people today! He has insulted us without reason, and all these people are a witness to it! How can I control these emotions under such circumstances?”

Jun Mo Xie sounded sad and indignant as he continued, “I feel sorry for my Jun Family, for we have sacrificed so much for this country. My old grandfather has valiantly fought in the country’s service his whole life! My father and second uncle gave up their lives for the nation; even their remains don’t exist anymore! My third uncle was disabled for life in that carnage! My two elder brothers also made the ultimate sacrifice, and died an untimely death! My entire family has bathed in blood in an unyielding effort to safeguard this nation until their death. They spend their entire life on a saddle. They gave their all. And then they died! Now, the Jun Family is in its decline and has become very desolate. However, you still come over and flagrantly dishonor us?! Where is the heaven’s justice?

“May I ask the Third Prince — what is the reason behind all this? Are you just taking advantage of our situation? Or are you targeting us in secrecy? Third Majesty, how can the most faithful servants of the crown not be disappointed and disillusioned when you act like this? You act oppressive, and disgrace this whole family of loyal soldiers over a trivial matter of a few wine bottles! Moreover, you strike you father’s banners, and use your powerful position to suppress others as you please. You! You! You! You!... What are you trying to do!? What have the Jun’s done to deserve this?”

The Young Master Jun had just added a completely different

flavor to the frying pan. He had clearly added an emotional and political layer to this whole matter. He had cleverly twisted this situation, and had then brought that frying pan right above the Prince's head. The Third Prince had never faced this kind of an opponent. He was left panting, while his complexion turned deep reddish-purple. He had realized that his reply was somehow wrong. Hence, he did not dare to say anything for a moment.

“My Jun Family...has been wrongly accused.” The Young Master Jun's voice became shrill as he choked with emotions. He held the railing to support himself while he trembled. Then, with a long sigh he looked up; his face resembled a beautiful lotus which had been abandoned. Eventually, he stationed himself upright once again...

Those who had heard the desolation in his voice... soon turned mournful in their hearts. It was like the winter snow had rained-in on the summer night — the injustice of it couldn't be borne.

The Third Prince had been completely outplayed. He had almost spit dozens of units of blood on his opponent in anger.

Everyone was dumbstruck.

They all stared at Jun Mo Xie. [How did he do that? He just publicly criticized the Third Prince, and too in such a terrifying manner!] They had witnessed the Third Prince distorting the truth and acting tyrannical just moments ago. And they had thought that he was being outrageous. However, now they had seen the Young Master Jun do the same, but not a wisp of that earlier feeling prevailed. These two men were simply beyond comparison!

This youngster had truly distorted the facts; he had confused the right from the wrong, and had actually created something where there was nothing to begin with. He was a true master of the art.

Dugu Wudi had just burst out in laughter. However, Dugu Xiao Yi covered his mouth with her hand before his laugh could even properly escape it. Her eyes were full of anger. The entire matter

would go down the drain if he were to laugh. Dugu Xiao Yi's heart thumped madly. She had only aimed to shut his mouth, but hadn't paid attention and was actually preventing her father from breathing. She was choking him; so much so that it could've easily led to an unfortunate event.

Dugu Wudi forcefully removed his daughter's hand from his mouth. His breath whistled as he deeply sucked in air before coughing violently. He then scolded her in a low voice, "You, girl... do you wish to murder your own father?!"

The two black clad people sitting behind Princess Ling Meng were men of exceedingly high skill. It was a pity that commoners didn't have the wisdom they did. However, even they were completely flabbergasted. They saw the snot and the tears on Jun Mo Xie's face, and felt a sense of inferiority. [That face of his has surpassed all the legends, and has shaken the heavens! I am truly not as good as him!]

The Third Prince panted since he found it difficult to breath. Then, he finally controlled after a while. However, it seemed as if his eyes would shoot flames. He gnashed his teeth as he looked towards Jun Mo Xie and said, "Since this is the case, this Prince will leave your hundred bottles alone! But, you should have no problems regarding the remaining hundred, right?"

"That matter does not concern me. I am not the person you should be asking regarding the last hundred bottles!" Jun Mo Xie suddenly changed; it was obvious from his face that it was no longer his concern, "That stock is the Prince Equivalent's son — Yang Mo's share. What does that have anything to do with me?" [Humph...add to the fire...bully him...]

"Yang Mo! You leave him to me!" The Third Prince was very flustered. Moreover, he wanted to retrieve some honor. Therefore, he shouted loudly. Everyone shook their heads. Unexpectedly, he wasn't demonstrating the graceful demeanor an Imperial Prince should in such situations; in fact, he his behavior had started to

disgust many people...

“What... what do you want?” Yang Mo trembled as he raised his head to expose himself.

“Will you give the hundred bottles under your name to your uncle, the Emperor? Will you be willing to do it?” the Third Prince asked in an oppressive manner as he looked coldly at Yang Mo.

Notes:

Pan Yue was a famous poet in China (247–300) who was also said to have been exceedingly handsome.

Chapter 253: No Relations for the Tian Family

A trace of anger flashed in Yang Mo's eyes. [You're a prince. Yet you are being so unfair to a boy who is linked to your own family? You wish to bully a boy to save your own reputation? Is that all you can do? You disgust me!]

There was only one Equality Prince in this Imperial generation.

This situation had become very embarrassing. Jun Mo Xie and Tang Yuan could decline the Third Prince. However, it could cause a lot of trouble if Yang Mo did the same. In fact, it could even lead to an internal dispute in the royal family.

"I allow the Third... Majesty," Yang Mo bit his lips as he whispered.

A cold look flashed in the eyes of the black robed man sitting behind Princess Ling Meng. He looked at the Third Prince, and then shifted his gaze to look at the Second and the First prince in quick succession. Then he closed his eyes and heaved a long sigh. However, he felt an endless sparse of sorrow.

[These are my sons!]

[I've always worked hard to nurture my successor and the future Emperor of the Tian Xiang Empire amongst my three sons.]

[I've always wanted them to understand that the title of the Emperor is a matter of competition; a position which demands sacrifice... victory and defeat is only natural in such matter. However, one's own flesh... is one's own flesh. All three of you would win — no matter which of you three brothers would get the title after this bitter struggle....Because one of you would become the Emperor, and the other two... his helping hands.]

[That's why; I let you compete without objecting to it.]

[However, I had hoped that you would keep this rivalry within wraps, and wouldn't involve others into it. I had hoped that you would at least stand together in front of outsiders since you were born to the same parents! The bond between brothers should always be stronger than social relations!]

[However, my third son had bullied a young child outside the auction house despite being a Prince. In fact, the kid happens to be his little brother and a member of the royal family. Yet he humiliated his own blood in public view. However, the other two were simply indifferent as their younger brother was making a mockery out of himself!]

[In fact, it was the same when my second son was insulted earlier at the entry gate. His brothers had just watched and mocked along.]

[My first born was up against Gang Leader Hai Chen Feng earlier in the auction. However, my second and my third sons only wanted to create more trouble for their eldest brother.]

[And now, my third-born is exhibiting such shamelessness in public view. However, his elder brothers are just sitting and watching from the sides. They are making no attempts to impart some wisdom to him. They are clearly waiting to use this against him later... What kind of brotherhood is this?]

His Majesty was certain that his three sons would place detailed records of their brothers' actions on his table later at night. They will each impeach the other two. As for the contents of these records... the Emperor wouldn't bother to look at them.

[... I still remember my own days... Huai Nong and I was competing for Emperor's position. Huai Nong and I always maintained the relation of siblings even though things weren't easy between us. Why don't the three of you follow Huai Nong's example?]

[At least Little Yang Mo is acting as his father used to.]

Yang Mo's pitiful face flashed in the Emperor's eyes. He clearly knew that the boy was being wronged. However, he didn't raise any objections. He sighed with sorrow as he thought, [Is there no respect between the elder and younger brother? Would the bond between Huai Nong and me have turned sour in case he hadn't backed away from the contest? Is there no relation in Tian Family?

The Emperor sighed with exhaustion. Suddenly, he started feeling bored. He had spent the entire day scheming and plotting. Hence, he really couldn't take this dumb façade now.

[This is boring! This is very boring!]

He felt wronged. He had arrived here in the hope of finding out more about the mysterious person behind this auction house's set-up. However, he had never expected that his three sons would turn the situation to this.

The Emperor knew that the relations between his three sons were a bit strained at the moment. However, he had still assumed it to be harmonious. He had always considered that the three brothers shared a peaceful and fraternal bond. He had considered his eldest son to be a staid man, his second son to be quick-witted, and his third son to be simple and honest. He had always considered his three sons to be the three crowning jewels of his family-tree. He was aware that it's impossible to avoid a few flaws in character — a tiny blemish in any beautiful tree. However, he had never anticipated that the blemish would be this huge.

[Is this the condition of their temperament? Is this how one behaves in the public eye? In fact, they are even willing to use their name to obtain their desires; shamelessly at that.]

[This is naked robbery! In fact, it seems that they want the destitute to feel grateful while they pillage them.]

[I am convinced that even a county magistrate would properly consider the fallout of this! And this is an Imperial Prince? This is so unbearable!]

[Is this what I've taught you?]

The Emperor's face had turned pale, and his finger started to tremble. It seemed that he was unable to control his rage.

Mr. Wen extended his hand and held the Emperor's to give him support.

"I am very disappointed!" He supported his head with his hand. He had never once hung his proud head in all these decades. However, he had hung his head low in sadness after watching all of this. Wave-after-wave of sadness hit him as he continued, "Indeed, very disappointed."

"I understand... what you are feeling." They were within the earshot of many people. Therefore, Mr. Wen couldn't call the Emperor by his proper title. Moreover, the Tian Family's Emperor did not care much about it. The position of an Emperor was a very lonely one. It needed him to be cut-off from the world. One or two slightly unworthy descendants could hardly be avoided...

Mr. Wen had realized that the Emperor had laid his heart bare, and could sense that his Majesty must've been feeling very sad. The Emperor had always been an outstanding crown prince his entire life. His brother, the Prince Equivalent was never competitive from the very beginning and had always retreated in front of him. And although the Emperor was very wise, he was still lacking when compared to the very fierce Sovereigns of the past. He had never experienced the fierce struggles for a harem, or the meetings for political marriages. Everyone had simply given up in front of him.

Though receiving the Emperor's title in this manner would be considered quite fortunate... it was also his greatest misfortune.

The Emperor was certainly the most important person in the Kingdom. And that was the reason why all the great families pledged their allegiance to him. However, this was also one of the greatest flaws at play here. An Emperor is also a man, and has to

choose the next successor to the throne. He will naturally choose the one who is most-suited for it. Fortune may favor a man, but may not do the same with his son. Such was the case here... therefore, a dispute for the title of Emperor was sure to arise.

“It is strange; all three show promise... and there’s hope in each of them. Then why are they handling matters in such an unwise manner? Especially the youngest one; why does he have to speak in such a way in front of everyone? Is he not worried about the ensuing ridicule? Or is he possibly unaware of it?” the Emperor frowned as he said this in a low voice.

“I believe that the Prince has considered this. The Emperor’s three sons are no fools. However, what he considers the most at this point — is you.” The shrewd and far-sighted Mr. Wen smiled.

“He wants you to know how much he respects you. His position would remain solid as long as you get to know. And as for everyone else’s ridicule... he does not care about it. It doesn’t matter to him as long as you don’t have to see it!

“If this wine went to the palace... and if you were there instead of here...would you not be surprised? Would you not be happy? This was the Third Prince’s real intention! As for the rest of the matter, it’s irrelevant to him for now.” Mr. Wen said in a somewhat grim and sharp manner, “The Third Prince simply wished to demonstrate his admiration by gifting you this delicious wine. As for the scene ensuing post that... what effect would that have on you?”

“Yes! Yes! This is exactly what it is!” The Emperor finally came to himself. [Apparently, it seems that my third son is not to be blamed entirely. It’s just that his method of handling things is a bit reckless. That’s all.]

[Is this what they call, ‘what man proposes, God disposes?’]

“So according to you...my sons wouldn’t... ” The Emperor ground his teeth, “...destroy each other in the future?”

Mr. Wen was stumped for words. He reined-in his desire to speak. [My close friend is a man of wisdom. How on earth is he asking such naïve questions today? Enemies cannot live under the same sky!]

[Once in power, the elder brother would certainly eliminate the younger one. Was it too hard to imagine? But how can I say such things?]

“You need not say it. I understand!” The Emperor strenuously covered his face with his hand, and hung his head again. He did not know what to think. He massaged his temple with his fingers.

He would do this when he had an important decision to make; it was a force-of-habit action.

“Mr. Wen, the Aristocratic hall is being supported by the Jin Yang Gang. Moreover, they also have a very talented person who is controlling things from behind-the-scenes. I do not believe that three children can be responsible for this hall’s operations. It is impossible for Jun Zhan Tian and Tang Wan Li. My younger brother is completely out of question. We set out today on this journey in order to find who this man is! This man managed to assemble all the rich and powerful. And many of these people will fallout with each other after today’s matter. Moreover, he gave the three princes a chance to interact with all the powerhouses of the city.”

The Emperor lifted his head with sudden understanding. His eyes flashed coldly, “I reckon that he not only managed to glimpse through the wisdom of the three princes, but may now be able to protect himself by forming connections with the rich and powerful — this was a very ordinary method to arrange meetings with the masters of the powerful families.

“Regardless of whatever this person’s intentions are, he has used the sale of these bottles to his advantage. However, this person must not succeed! And it is important that we find him!

“And as for the matter concerning the Three Princes...I must give it...careful consideration!” His Majesty’s facial muscles convulsed painfully. “I will look at that matter once again to make a decision!”

Princess Ling Meng, who was sitting ahead of them, suddenly felt her fragile body becoming stiff. She could not believe what she had heard. [That can’t be what I heard... am I blowing things out of proportion in my head?]

The final transaction had already been made by this time. The Prince Equivalent’s heir, Yang Mo, had glumly retreated. The Third Prince had finally gotten his hands on the hundred bottles of extraordinary wine... without spending anything. He was now impatient to return to the palace and show his “affection.”

A calm and composed silhouette appeared in front of Princess Ling Meng. “May I have the honour, Princess?”

The Princess looked up to see the Grand Preceptor Li’s grandson — the Young Master Li You Ran!

Chapter 254: Unintentional Leak of Secrets

“It’s Young Master Li.” Princess Ling Meng’s face was still pale, while her mind was still somewhat in doubt, “The Young Master Li had visited the palace earlier?”

“I had arrived at the palace yesterday to meet the Princess in particular. However, the Princess was busy with something important, and we were unable to meet. The Princess looks even beautiful than ever today; she really wins the admiration of everyone.”

Li You Ran spoke softly and his flattery didn’t sound vulgar. His voice was so clear and sophisticated that a person wouldn’t feel his to be comments ill-willed... even if they didn’t exactly make one happy.

“Young Master Li talks very pleasant.” Princess Ling Meng had gotten accustomed to flattery growing-up. Hence, she didn’t take his words seriously. “Young Master Li must’ve had a reason to come looking for Ling Meng? I request Young Master Li to be straightforward since the Princess is exhausted and wishes to return to the Palace.”

“I heard that a mysterious Sky Xuan expert cast-out a throwing knife to rescue the Princess when she was attacked by assassins. I’ve heard that the Princess keeps that knife in her private collection.” Li You Ran casually chuckled as he leisurely spoke about the matter as if it were trivia, “Would You Ran be lucky enough to see that knife?”

“But I don’t understand why the Young Master Li would wish to take a look at that knife... Please explicitly state the reason why you came to the Palace, and why you wish to examine the knife!” Princess Ling Meng immediately became conscious. [Why does this guy wish to see that knife? What’s his intention?]

“The Princess may be unaware of this... however, You Ran had

gone out a few days ago, and was unexpectedly ambushed by an assassin. Things had started to look bad, and You Ran thought that he might find himself in hell. However, an azure light flashed and threw a knife at the assassin in the nick of time. The assassin instantly retreated and You Ran's life was saved." Li You Ran's face reveled in sincere admiration and gratitude. In fact, it seemed as if he was deeply fascinated.

"His favor has given me a new lease on life; and this has been engraved into my mind ever since. You Ran has been making enquiries about this person over the past few days since I wish to know more about him. It is a shame that You Ran hasn't been able to obtain any news of him. It was only a couple of days ago that You Ran remembered that the Princess had also been saved by a mysterious man once. Moreover, both men had used a concealed knife from secrecy to rescue us. Therefore, it might be possible that our benefactor is the same person?" Li You Ran sighed, "He's benevolent. He saved my life without asking for anything return; he's so noble. You Ran is fascinated with this person."

"Oh," Princess Ling Meng pursed her eyebrows. She could faintly sense that someone was amiss. However, she couldn't exactly tell what.

"That person left after that. However, he left a few small throwing knives lying on the ground; they glistened so beautifully..." Li You Ran didn't seem afraid to share his personal memories.

Li You Ran's right hand went inside his bosom pocket. He fished for a while, and brought out three small and delicate throwing knives.

These throwing knives were very different from the usual ones found around the world; their blades were as delicate as a cicada's wings. The Princess could tell that these blades were manufactured by someone with exquisite skills. She could tell that there wouldn't be many people in the entire Tian Xiang Empire who were capable

of producing such weapons.

They were impeccably delicate. They were so adorable that one couldn't refrain from caressing them. However, the cold light flickering off their surface resembled an infernal demon that was blinking in the dark of the night sky. They were quite sharp. And although they weren't big in size, they were enough to send chills down one's spine.

One could tell that these tender and exquisite throwing knives were weapons that could easily take anyone's life.

"The shape of these knives look very similar. In fact, they look identical to the one I have." Princess Ling Meng heaved a sigh of relief. She then smiled and said, "But, the material used in these two variants is very different even if they look similar. I can confirm that there is a massive difference in the art used to craft these two blade sets."

Li You Ran's eyes hadn't left the Princess's beautiful face ever since he had brought out that knife. However, he finally looked away and smiled, "The make of the weapons is very similar? But how could I know which one is better unless I get to compare the Princess's blade with mine?"

"Young Master Li's blades look cold and sharp enough to terrify anyone. However, their texture is no match for mine. In fact, your blades are no match for mine in terms of texture and make. However, your blades are much tougher than mine. My blade is merely made of iron, while Young Master Li's are made of an excellent metal. Your weapons are indeed worthy of being called divine weapons." Princess Ling Meng affectionately compared the weapons.

[These weapons must belong to the man who saved me!] The Princess had been able to figure this out at one glance. [Only that unrivaled genius is capable of making something so delicate and graceful. Only he is capable of making something so beautiful, yet

sharp enough to be used for self-defense.]

[These weapons are elegant, yet callous; bloody yet beautiful. If such is the style of the weapon... then such must be the style of the owner... How could ordinary people like that scoundrel Jun Mo Xie ever possess such elegance and grace? Ordinary people would never be able to commission such peerless weapons!]

Princess Ling Meng had fantasized about her savior ever since the day of her attempted assassination. [If such is the elegance and divinity of his weapons, then just how smart and unruffled must that man be?!]

[Perhaps he's a man of peerless elegance and style!]

[It's disgraceful to watch that Jun Mo Xie pretend as if he's a man of indomitable spirit! He's such a shameless guy! Humph...]

A man of indomitable spirit... well, these words were indeed appropriate to comment on the hitman's personality.

"I really wouldn't be able to tell the difference between the blades unless I see the one in the Princess's collection, isn't that right? I really wish to know if we were saved by the same person or not?" Li You Ran's eyes seemed fervent with anxiety. It was almost as if he had suddenly received information about his savior, and couldn't contain his excitement anymore.

"Heavens have taken pity on me. You Ran may finally be able to see another weapon made by his savior. His grace cannot be expressed in words. Hence, I wait to see it with my own eyes. May I look at it?" Li You Ran's righteous demeanor was indeed inspiring, "How will I be any different from an animal if I can't thank him for his kindness!"

"That is true. Though, my knife isn't as good as Young Master Li's. However, I cherish it as a valuable item still. It never leaves me, and I never show it to anyone. However, I will make an exception since Young Master Li's words are honest and pure."

Princess Ling Meng looked at him appreciatively. [I didn't think that he would be so cultured and refined. However, he is truly an honest and a gifted man!] The Princess muttered to herself as she drew out a small wrapped-package. She slowly opened it and revealed a small and delicate knife. The cold light reflecting off its surface had been mingled with the Princess's sweet and fragrant bodily scent.

"It's exactly the same!" Li You Ran seemed very excited. He placed the four blades in his palms. The blades indeed looked identical. One could tell that the material used to cast them was different. But the size and shape were exactly the same. Moreover, it was evident that these blades had been cast out using the same method.

"Heavens indeed are watching! I've finally found you!" Li You Ran seemed rather emotional. A trace of a cold expression flashed in his eyes as he looked at Princess Ling Meng. His eyes begrudgingly revealed a trace of frustration.

[Now I'm certain. That vile murderer and Princess Ling Meng's savior are related; they are probably the same person. No other person in this world is capable of producing creating these weapons!]

Princess Ling Meng was only a tempted woman in Li You Ran's eyes.

[If there needs to be a sacrifice... so be it.] Li You Ran sighed.

"It seems that Young Master Li and I have been brought together by our benefactor's grace," Princess Ling Meng's face reveled in a joyous expression. In fact, she seemed a bit bashful. This unique and strange expression only added another layer to the beauty of her tender face.

"Please look after yourself Princess." Li You Ran's soul was a slight phased by the look in the Princess's eyes, and her peerless beauty for a split second. However, he immediately regained his

composure, and returned to his usual-cold mentality. “You Ran must leave now. I will come to palace later in order to meet the Princess.”

Li You Ran bowed after he finished speaking, and then turned around to leave. He didn't even bother to recover the knives, and left them with the Princess.

The murderer had been determined. Hence, the throwing knives were completely useless to him now. Even the fact that they were impeccable weapons was of no value to him.

The Princess was a bit puzzled by the manner in which Li You Ran left. [Young Master Li had himself said that he really cherish his savior's weapons. And he carried-on about how grateful he is to the man. However, he simply left these blades with me after he thanked me... it seems as if...]

Mr. Wen was still standing behind her. He whispered, “The words of Young Master Li were strange and roundabout. Something seems amiss... they were almost contradictory. Moreover, his eyes revealed a hint of malice as he looked at the Princess even though there was no provocation. He's definitely thinking of something vile. And it seems that he may have the Princess on his mind. I can't think of anything else... other than that. Your Majesty, we must put one or two guards on the Princess for her safety's sake.”

The Emperor narrowed his eyes, and whispered, “But I also wish to see who this mysterious expert is.” The Emperor noticed that trace of fear in Mr. Wen's eyes, and laughed, “Don't forget that Ling Meng has a bodyguard by her side. And that bodyguard is a Sky Xuan expert; her safety shouldn't be of concern.”

“Ye Gu Han? What if he proves to be insufficient? Or isn't always there by her side?” Mr. Wen shook his head in disagreement; again and again, “It's been a while since the last assassination attempt on her life. Wouldn't it be pure idiocy to neglect taking Ye Gu Han

into account while planning her assassination again?”

Chapter 255: Jun Mo Xie's prepares for the troubles ahead; Tang Yuan's lofty Ideals.

“It's not a problem,” His Majesty's eyes were deep in contemplation. He smiled and said, “Little Ling is my daughter. I would destroy the entire Family of anyone who tries to harm her. Anyone who has the guts can try!”

Mr. Wen sighed with gloom. [Some people have already shown that they aren't afraid. And you were incapable of destroying their families. Would it save your daughter if you exterminated the culprit's entire family after they kill the Princess?]

[It seems that His Majesty is determined to walk this path.]

The auction had come to an end. The Princes had already done their best to ruin it. A few people weren't happy because of it; Yang Mo was one of them. However, most people were happy and satisfied, and had started to leave.

The Young Master Jun almost laughed as he watched General Dugu flee from the scene with ghostly agility; his son followed after him like a wisp of smoke. Dugu Xiao Yi had stayed behind, and was making her way upstairs.

“Tang Yuan and Song Shang are to come here once things are done. I've something that needs to be arranged.” Jun Mo Xie seemed very serious. This was only an auction. However, Jun Mo Xie was secretly thinking, [What's wrong? This can't be a trivial matter?]

One tiny butterfly is capable of causing a ripple. So what if something was to go wrong with the Aristocratic Hall's arrangements at such a crucial time? It could easily turn the entire world upside down.

“Third Uncle, you must go outside in order to make some arrangements. We need our staff to pay attention to every family

departing from here. They must take special note of who these families come in contact with. Then, our staff must retreat. They mustn't leave any clues behind. Everyone should quickly gather all the information they can. I believe that every powerful family in the Tian Xiang City is here. And this is a great chance to determine their real strength and connections. This will make their influence very clear. You will need to make the arrangements properly Uncle. There can be no mistake.”

“I understand. I will act very carefully.” Jun Wu Yi's face was somewhat serious as he nodded.

“At present only four people know that I'm behind all this – Tang Yuan, Third Uncle, Song Shang and the Prince Equivalent. Uncle is not a problem. Tang Yuan and Song Shang will be fine once I give them their instructions. Solitary Falcon may have a rough idea, but he won't be an issue...” Jun Mo Xie's mind was busy making his calculations, but he wasn't exactly speaking his thoughts out loud. He looked around and his eyes finally settled on Yang Mo. An idea came to him. “Yang Mo, I'm going to write something down. I want you to give this to your father once you return home. You cannot let anyone else see it.”

Yang Mo dejectedly promised in response.

“Oh, and there's Hai Chen Feng. But then he's a Sky Xuan expert...” Jun Mo Xie didn't have the time to pay attention to Yang Mo's saddened state since he was busy contemplating the loop holes in his plan.

One needs to prepare for the troubles ahead if one wishes to maintain a position of invincibility.

There were many people at the scene. And Jun Mo Xie could constant feel as if someone was looking at him. Suddenly, his eyes fell on the two black robed men standing behind Princess Ling Meng, and a sense of great crisis arose in his heart.

The auction had already come to an end, and the guests were

beginning to leave. The Three Princes had already left. In fact, the Third Prince was the first to leave since he was impatient to show his father what a dutiful son he was. However, the Princess was still quietly sitting her chair. The Princess had never liked the way in which her three elder brothers were fighting for the title of the Emperor. In fact, she would've never come to witness this event if it hadn't been for her father's idea.

[These men are my Elder Brother, and he is my Father. Why aren't they close to each other? Why... why...]

Princess Ling Meng suddenly felt that she was very lonely and helpless. She would usually look to Dugu Xiao Yi or her other friends for support. However, she really needed a strong and unyielding shoulder to rely on... [When will I find such a person?]

Princess Ling Meng had always been a cheerful beauty. However, she couldn't help but feel miserable at this moment. She couldn't help but reach out to those four throwing knives. It seemed as if the knives belonging to that mysterious man were the only things that could console her. She felt as if these cold blades harbored the warmth of that man's body...

The two black-robed men had left a while ago. In fact, Mr. Wen and the Emperor had left long before the rest of the crowd. Naturally, the Princess had no right to intervene in their whereabouts.

The Princess's maid knew that she hadn't left the palace in a very long time. However, the Princess had finally gotten a chance to step outside the palace. Hence, the maid stood beside her and patiently watched the crowd disperse. The hall started to empty gradually; in fact, it became unusually empty. Soon, the mesmerizing fragrance of the flowers started to replace the intoxicating smell of the wine. The hall started to seem elegant once again as the scent of the other people also started to whiff away from it.

The Illumination of the hall seemed to be unlocking one's secrets.

Music was still playing. Its suave tune seemed to be recounting the sorrows of the previous generations; millenniums of desolation...

Princess Ling Meng sat quietly as she calmly listened to it. The music seemed to have made her figure even more fragile and desolate...

The Young Master Jun had already arranged for some people to escort Yang Mo back to his mansion. The young boy had gone through a lot today, and had suffered some very heavy blows. He had come here in high spirits in the hope of enjoying himself. However, he had returned with a plethora of mental scars. For a boy of ten — this was undoubtedly a very cruel thing.

However, the Young Master Jun hadn't tried to coax him; let alone figure out ways to make him happy again.

A sword needs to be sharpened. Plum blossoms need the winter to flourish. No one can reach the top unless they "steel" themselves.

A child's growth is always relied on his own effort. This humiliation had sown a seed in his naïve and delicate mind. He had obviously suffered a great deal today. However, this humiliation would inevitably lead to his real growth. Enduring this matter would be his greatest wealth in the time to come... no matter what the future held for him.

It would take many such experiences before the boy would turn into a real man.

It's only a thought... the world hasn't fallen from the grace of feelings. However, only those who don't willfully abandon are worthy of playing the game of life. People are never really ambitious. One rises above the others when he is unable to bear

the suppression. A person only tries to climb when he feels a sense of loss upon being trampled.

Everything has a reason; and every reason can produce its own fruit.

One can't always rely on others for support in order to bear their pains.

Moreover, the hitman Jun was unlikely to intervene in the ways of the Gods.

[Admiration is one thing; assistance is another. I won't help you if you cannot endure your own pains. If you die, then you die. I won't pity you on your death if you can't stand up on our own. Even a good man is no exception!]

[After all, many good men die around the world every day.]

The Young Master Jun thought to himself, [I won't help him; I'm not a savior. Even if could save him... he will find no help from me.]

Tang Yuan was in high spirits as he came upstairs. His fat face reddened with excitement. He shouted, "Huge profits. Insanely huge profits... wow... haha... I expected to make some money. But I never expected to make so much! I'm so happy!" Tang Yuan suddenly jumped up as he roared at Jun Mo Xie, "Ninety million; a full ninety million! Ha ha ha..."

It looked as if Fatty was in a state of hysteria. The Young Master Jun had always considered this trait of Fatty's to be immoral.

[Money... is the original sin!]

Song Shang's face was somewhat gloomy; in fact, there was no trace of happiness on it. Song Shang's thoughts were poles apart from Fatty's; [It's near impossible to find such divine wine! Selling it off to these so-called "Aristocrats" is a complete waste. How can one measure the value of such heavenly wine with mere money? Quantifying its value with money is nothing short of blasphemy!]

However, he wouldn't disobey since the Young Master had ordered this.

Dugu Xiao Yi was practically jumping with joy. It seemed as if the success of the auction organized by Jun Mo Xie was bringing her more joy than any success she could've achieved on her own.

"What?" Jun Mo Xie smiled at the Fatty, "Your share in the profits is in tens of millions. So what do you wish to do with it?"

"What will I do with it?" Tang Yuan's eyes narrowed in contemplation. Then he magnanimously said, "Yes, ah. Why not that! I've always had one dream growing up. But I never had enough money to realize it. My Family would never give me so much money, and so I wasn't able to live this dream until now."

Fatty sighed as a look of fascination flashed in his eyes. However, it was accompanied by a look of resentment as well. Perhaps there was a look of relief as well, along with the joy of reaching closer to his long-cherished dream... and some nervousness as well...

"What's this grand idea? Tell me," Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but show interest. Even though he asked casually, he really wanted to know what Fatty's dream was. Fatty Tang was as well-known as Jun Mo Xie when it came to certain socially-unacceptable activities. Though Jun Mo Xie wasn't particularly interested in knowing the Fatty's long-cherished dream, he still couldn't prevent himself from getting intrigued by the dirty dream this Fatty had kept buried in his heart for so long.

These conflicting thoughts were indeed very strange.

"I've been thinking that... now that I have some money... and that money really belongs to me... lots of it actually... enough for me to..." Tang Yuan suddenly looked a bit sad. It seemed as if he was finding the room's atmosphere a bit oppressive. Dugu Xiao Yi was awfully fond of teasing Fatty. However, even she kept her mouth shut in anticipation while waiting for Fatty to get a bit more comfortable.

“...I visit the Spirit Fog Lake often, and each establishment has women who sell their bodies. However, the ones who sell their bodies are never concentrated at one place. Most women just sing and dance. They will keep throwing flirtatious glances towards me, and would indicate that they would be interested in doing the deed. However, they often decline even when I’m offering lots of money in return.” Tang Yuan smacked his lips. It seemed as if his mind was reveling in the aftertaste of a magnificent scene.

Everyone remained silent. Their faces were strangely contorted.

He was really worthy of being called a great debauchee. What else could expect of this Fatty’s most cherished desire...

“I cannot bear the women who act in this manner and incite every man.” Tang Yuan seemed angry, “They are prostitutes, and shall be ready to sell their body. However, some of them just hang a signboard and say that they are entertainers... and not prostitutes. I wouldn’t have to hop from one establishment to the other if money isn’t an issue, right? ...Do these women really think of themselves as saints?”

Everyone still remained silent, but... the Fatty’s words still seemed somewhat... reasonable.

“If it’s not about the money, and they care so much about looking bad in front of the public... then they should just find a man and get married. Wouldn’t that make their life more comfortable and secure? It absolutely would! These entertainers are prostitutes as well. I will bury them in silver, and see if they are willing to sell their bodies or not!” Tang Yuan’s voice seemed to brimming with grief and indignation.

Chapter 256: Brother, Will You Be My Scapegoat?

“Fatty, this is perfect... this is amazing.” Jun Mo Xie wiped his mouth. It seemed as if he couldn’t find the right words. He could distinctly remember the last time Fatty had something like this. These words had clearly brought back that paranoia.

Fatty had clearly lost his mind. The Young Master Jun could only describe this as — [a poor man loses his mind if he earns too much money!]

“Fatty Tang, you, you, you.... you are too shameless!” Dugu Xiao Yi flushed with anger. Her almond-like eyes were wide open with rage. She had held her breath in anticipation to hear Fatty Tang’s cherished dream. However, she hadn’t expected to hear something so shameless.

It was evident that Fatty Tang’s outrageousness had reached an entirely different realm altogether.

“Fatty, don’t get so worked up; ahm, ahm...” Jun Mo Xie coughed twice, “Let’s get down to business first.”

“Sure. Sure. But I’ll hire a few carriages once we’re done here. Then I’ll have them take the money down to the Spirit Fog Lake. I will spend the entire evening spending lots and lots of money! Let’s see who can resist me then!” Tang Yuan waved his hand in a very overbearing manner. Suddenly, he felt as if his throat had become dry. Then, his gaze fell upon a glass of wine, and he drained it down in one gulp.

“Concerning this auction...” The Young Master Jun instantaneously sunk as his gaze swept through the crowd. He felt very stifled all of a sudden, and couldn’t prevent his expression from becoming grave. There were several Sky Xuan experts present — Jun Wu Yi, Song Shang, and Hai Chen Feng. In fact, Jun

Wu Yi was his own uncle. However, they couldn't help but feel insignificant in front of that expression in Jun Mo Xie's eyes. The cold and acute austerity in his eyes was indeed awe-inspiring.

Jun Wu Yi couldn't help but exclaim in admiration. [Perhaps such unique temperament is needed in a person who occupies the top position. Why would there be a need to flaunt if you're at the top? His involuntary reaction to stay aloof from the world is simply awe-inspiring.]

Even the seasoned general who had seen and commanded many wars over his lifetime couldn't help but feel a sincere pang of oppression in his heart. So, what could one possibly say about the others...

"This auction is... your idea! Do you understand that Tang Yuan?" Jun Mo Xie sternly looked at Tang Yuan as he spoke.

"This auction is my idea?" Tang Yuan scratched his head. There was a look of utter confusion on his face. He was surely confused with regard to the meaning of Jun Mo Xie's words. However, he was even more perplexed since the Young Master Jun had addressed him as "Tang Yuan". The Young Master Jun very rarely addressed the Fatty by his real and full name. The friendship between the two youngsters had indeed been very deep. So much so, that the two would address each other by almost any name jokingly, and neither man would take any offense to it. Hence, this was a rare term of address.

"That's right. This auction was entirely your idea! No matter who asks... this auction was your idea. Understand?" Jun Mo Xie's tone became even sterner, "I said, no matter who asks... the reply will be the same... do you understand?"

"I understand! Even if you were to ask... this was all my idea!" Fatty Tang sounded a bit complacent, "I cannot think of anyone smarter. Bah! Only I had the brains to draw out this plan. I oversaw everything and nothing went wrong. Who would dare to

doubt me? Who would dare to disagree? Whoever doubts me will die. Whoever questions my brain will perish!”

“Exactly! Your only intention was to make money! And aristocrats have money! That’s the reason this place is called the ‘Aristocratic Hall’. Some people were invited, while others weren’t... this was all done to incite competition and consumption... in other words... it was all done to make money! Got it?”

Jun Mo Xie glared at him, “I will explain everything later if you don’t understand things right now! But you are the founder of the ‘Aristocratic Hall’ from now on. This whole plan was yours. You will tell me the whys and whats of everything soon. And you shall remain silent if you can’t think of a reasonable explanation for something. Also, you can’t just go to the Spirit Fog Lake at your whim. In fact, you shouldn’t even step foot outside this Hall.”

Jun Mo Xie was being capriciously mule-headed and stern, “Brother, you will carry the burden of my secret?”

“This doesn’t require any justification. I am a genius! This is only a small matter. It’s nothing for my big brain. What’s all this fuss about? Wow, haha...” Tang Yuan burst into laughter. Tang Yuan had spoken all this in a very casual and easy manner even though his entire body was rippling with confusion. ...but one really couldn’t tell from his demeanor. However, he was betrayed by the narrowed glance he shot towards Jun Mo Xie; his vision contained the trace of extreme anxiety which he couldn’t convey in words.

Tang Yuan was no fool. In fact, he was very intelligent. Why would the Young Master Jun chose him as his partner if wasn’t smart enough for the job? Fatty clearly knew that there was a justification behind his friend’s words. [Something has certainly happened... he’s definitely thinking of something... It’s got to do with the Jun Family’s situation... Jun Mo Xie is truly remarkable.]

[I will have to carry this burden on my back this time since there

is no one else who can.] The Fatty was well-aware that there was no one more suited for this position at this time. Hence, he left his doubts for later, and took upon the responsibility without even knowing the particulars.

But... most people would still suspect Jun Mo Xie for this idea. However, they could never be allowed to be certain of it. He and his idea needed to remain unlinked.

Fatty had always considered Jun Mo Xie to be his brother. In fact, the Tang Family had a few other youngsters in Fatty's generation. However, Tang Yuan had always associated himself more with the Young Master Jun than his own blood-siblings. Hence, Fatty had opted to help out Jun Mo Xie without even considering the consequences of the matter.

Dugu Xiao Yi's face turned pale. She was naïve and young. However, she was still fairly intelligent, and had obviously sensed something. She may not have been able to realize the gravity of the situation, but it was enough to get her worried. She could sense that this matter would implicate the Young Master Jun if it were to come to light. Hence, she too knew that she couldn't lower her guard... even if it turned out to be a trivial matter in the end.

Jun Mo Xie felt an indescribable sense of comfort upon seeing the anxiety in Tang Yuan's eyes, and the worry on Dugu Xiao Yi's face. He feigned an indifferent smile as he said, "It's nothing. Don't you see my uncle over there? He's a seasoned strategist... do you see any fear in his eyes? Isn't that self-explanatory? My uncle would've been the most worried if there was anything major. It's okay if you don't trust my words. But wouldn't you believe my uncle?"

Dugu Xiao Yi immediately turned and looked at Jun Wu Yi sitting upright in his seat with a slight smile on his face. In fact, there was no trace of worry on his face. Jun Wu Yi smiled the moment the young maiden looked at him, and said, "Don't worry; just do as told. My Jun Family will continue to persist in the Tian Xiang

Empire as long as certain super-families don't come into play.”

The young maiden immediately felt reassured after listening to Jun Wu Yi's words even though he had spoken them in a very dull tone. However, he had clearly exposed every variable of the equation — without making any omissions.

His words came as reassurance to the young girl... but only made Fatty more worried. The young maiden was clearly no match for Fatty's intelligence. Fatty had clearly understood that something was off even though he didn't have any insight on this mystery. [Why would Third Master Jun say something like that if everything is fine? Third Master Jun's words obviously didn't slip out by mistake... but why would those super-families come into play?]

[Even the Royal Family can't put that kind of pressure on the Juns... I must do everything in my power to assist my brother!]

Fatty and the little girl were unaware that the anxiety they had just sensed were the true emotions of the Hitman Jun. They were completely unaware that only a handful of people had ever been able to see the Hitman's true feeling over the course of his entire existence...

Suddenly, someone came into report that Princess Ling Meng had invited Dugu Xiao Yi downstairs.

Dugu Xiao Yi stood up and glanced at Jun Mo Xie. Jun Mo Xie smiled as he nodded for her to carry-on.

Dugu Xiao Yi took two steps towards the exit, but then suddenly turned around and went over to Jun Mo Xie. She caressed his collar as she whispered, “You... be careful. You know... you know you're an idiot.”

She lowered her head after she finished. Then, she quickly ran out of the room. Little White had been reluctantly looking at Jun Mo Xie's body ever since they had entered the room along with

Dugu Xiao Yi; it was almost as if he didn't wish to leave. However, he too quickly followed after Dugu Xiao Yi when he noticed the change in Jun Mo Xie's bearings.

"Alright. It's time to get busy. Fatty, you can't move the money out at this time." Jun Mo Xie immediately put Fatty's long-cherished desire on hold. He then took out a piece of paper from his pocket, and wrote down the names of several medicinal herbs on it.

"Send out news. We need to purchase these herbs at any cost," Jun Mo Xie carefully handed the paper to Tang Yuan. "The more, the better; the sooner, the better."

"Heavenly Star Grass, Tri-colored Reishi Mushroom, Nine Xuan Roots, Dream-lined incense, Chiba Grass, Dragon Whisker Leafs, Black Ginseng, Black Bamboo fruit, Silkworm Stems." Tang Yuan sucked in a mouthful of air. He was knowledgeable enough to know the value of these herbs. Moreover, he was completely taken by the sheer number required. He had realized that even his own share of profits from the auction would slip away from his fingers by the time these herbs were purchased...

"Third Young Master... My Brother..." Tang Yuan's face turned sullen, "This has been my life's objective... I've lived my entire life for this purpose alone... You, you, you cannot be so cruel to me... I've just earned a little money that I can spare... You have to consider that I've been kicked out of my Family's home..."

The little money that Tang Yuan was talking about — was estimated to be around ten million silver taels. It must be mentioned that the military expenditure of the entire Tian Xiang Empire was around thirty million silver taels per year...

Jun Mo Xie kicked his foot as he smiled, "Stop with the nonsense! Hurry up! Do you know how much money the 'Aristocratic Hall' will make once these herbs have been collected? You can't see what I can. If you think that our current profits are splendid, then you

can't even imagine the volume of the next one!"

[That would go over my top! I've got no idea what a big profit will look like if this one is being considered small?]

Fatty momentarily raised his eyebrows and laughed, "That's good. That's good! Uh... Third Young Master, this wine... Will we really sell this wine only once? Why can't we sell it again? It's a real pity!"

"Never. Don't you understand the truth of the matter? The rarer something is... the greater it's value!" Jun Mo Xie waved his hand decisively, "The value drops if there's too much of something... This wine was good enough to make them spend so much money. Would they think that it's worth so much if they could get their hands on it whenever they wanted?"

Chapter 257: News of the Crossbows!

“Correct! Master’s words make sense. In fact, they don’t even deserve it!” Song Shang was listening on side with deep emotions in his heart. He licked his lips, and then brought himself to speak up, “Master, when will you tech me how to ferment this wine?”

“Shortly, when the time is right; however, I must give you a few words of warning, Song Shang! No one apart from our people is to drink the wine we will ferment; because the wine which we will ferment from now on will be even more delicious. Do you understand?” Jun Mo Xie broke into a smile.

“I understand! How can such ordinary people deserve to taste the wine which we — master and student — ferment! How can those people ever taste the Immortal Wine? This ‘never-before seen’ product is beyond this world of mortals. It exceeds both the earthly and the immortal objects; so how can we sully it?” Song Shang was angry inside his heart, and his disdain was evident in his tone; his words even shook-up his master.

The Young Master Jun was in a daze. [How am I getting confused by whatever this guy is saying?]

“Ahem! Yes you hurry-up and go down! We have to start purchasing these herbal medicines immediately!” Jun Mo Xie waved his hand.

Jun Wu Yi frowned after the two of them left, “Mo Xie, the news of this event is too massive. I’m afraid that...”

“I’m still convinced that there will be no harm because of this!” Jun Mo Xie chuckled gently, “Third Uncle, you said that you would immediately return home after seeing Dugu Wudi off... yet you are still here. Has something interesting come up?”

“You little devil. Indeed... nothing can ever be hidden from you!” Jun Wu Yi smiled helplessly as he said, “There has been news from

Jiangnan — the south of the river...”(1)

“Oh?” Jun Mo Xie’s eyes glittered.

“The Zhao Trading Company has completed the manufacture of the Xuan Beast tendon crossbows. They will soon be transporting them into the city.” Jun Wu Yi sounded very serious as he said this slowly, “Also, several unknown experts have propped up from nowhere. They seem to be restless. It seems that the Second Prince is getting ready to make his move.”

“Ahem. This wasn’t very difficult to guess. The more noise they make, the deeper we should conceal ourselves since that would allow us fish-out more profits from secrecy. We must especially get our hands on those Xuan Beast tendon crossbows. The cargo of those Xuan Beast tendon crossbows from the Zhao Trading Company shall be akin to a gift for us. He He He...” Jun Mo Xie’s eyes narrowed.

“We cannot let our guard down! There has been a lot of instability of late, and the situation is only getting worse. I believe the Second Prince won’t handle this matter casually. Besides, he might employ an elite force of guards from outside to protect his cargo. Moreover, the Second Prince is extremely rich and might also engage experts to escort the cargo. Also, there might be a person from a top guild of Jiangnan, and he might be in charge of escorting the goods. Finally, there is a high possibility of the Blood Sword Hall escorting those crossbows in secret.”

Jun Wu Yi frowned deeply, “We have determined their strength from the shadows and it is quite considerable. And I believe that there are other powers involved here; powers which we do not know of. And they may be adding to this already very powerful set-up. We need to utilise a lot of strength if we aim to fight for the crossbows. How much expenditure will we have to incur to do that? Moreover, we also need to be subtle, and shouldn’t leave any traces behind...”

Jun Wu Yi let out a deep sigh, “I fear that it is as difficult as scaling the heavens!”

“As difficult as scaling the heavens... it will be as easy as turning a hand!” Jun Mo Xie raised his eyebrows. His expression seemed to exude a somewhat demonic radiance. His elegant face seemed to have become cold, sly and devilish. “The matter definitely depends on the individuals involved. If we ourselves will have misgivings that the task is almost impossible and not act because of it... then it truly will become something which is more difficult than scaling the heavens. However, we will always come up with various means to take on the task as long as we decide to act. In fact, I would even venture to believe that half of our battle will be won by the time we decide to take action.”

“Yes, that’s right!” Jun Wu Yi approved.

“Third Uncle, how much time do they still need in order to reach the Capital?” Jun Mo Xie pondered, “In other words, how much time do we have to make our preparations? I need to know the detailed and definite point of time.”

“They should take two days on the southern river, and then they will have to disembark and come ashore. From there they will have to travel for three days in order to reach the city’s vicinity.” Jun Wu Yi muttered the accurate time frame in reply. “I estimate that there are experts escorting the cargo, and I don’t expect them to have many ordinary merchants along. Hence, their journey will be much quicker than an average person’s. However, taking everything into consideration I feel that they would at least take five days to reach here.”

“In other words, we have five days, or more, to make our arrangements!” Jun Mo Xie nodded.

“More. The Second Prince would first have to go to the river, and only then can they begin their journey from there onwards. This means that their party would take at least ten days or more to truly

reach the Capital.” Jun Wu Yi pronounced in a definitive tone.

“Ten days? ...That will be enough!” Jun Mo Xie smiled. ...it was unclear what thought made him pleased enough to smile like that.

“Third Uncle, I reiterate my need for accurate information. Who has the Zhao Trading Company sent? And what is his strength? What is the strength of the person the Jiangnan’s top guild has sent to help escort? And what type of troops did the Second Prince dispatch, and their strength... We have no information about the Blood Sword Hall. So we will let them off for now and act according to the situation later.”

“That won’t be a problem.” Jun Wu Yi’s expression was tranquil as always. He grasped his wheelchair firmly, “I am only interested to know — what kind of strength do we need to put forth?”

“The Jun Family’s master should not move. Furthermore, we can employ the three hundred bodyguards and the three Sky Xuan experts!” Jun Mo Xie grinned, “Third Uncle, you, Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang are the backbone of our family!”

“I fear that the mere power of us-three won’t be nearly enough. Will it be possible to make the Solitary Falcon...?” Jun Wu Yi didn’t finish. However, the meaning of his words was quite obvious.

“That will absolutely not do!” Jun Mo Xie vetoed that idea resolutely. “Solitary Falcon’s power is too great and might expose our identity. Not to mention with his temperament — he will absolutely refuse any such sneaky assignments; especially when we initiate the conflict since it contradicts our initial agreement with him. This can hinder our future plans since he may disobey before the great plan comes into play.”

“I fear that exposition as well. Hai Chen Feng’s features are also very distinct. So it would be very difficult... to hide his identity!” Jun Wu Yi said.

“It won’t do us any harm. I can try to get rid of that light blue color when the time comes.” Jun Mo Xie was very confident of the outcome. He started to slowly pace to-and-fro. He then came to the front and looked down from his vantage point. Then, he said lightly, “This matter will involve an unprecedented arduous struggle and hard fighting. However, we must deal with this matter ourselves and face it without relying on any outside power. We can only depend on our own strength.

“And eventually, our Jun Family will depend on only ourselves no matter what the matter; only then will we slowly rise! But our rise will be abrupt, and no man or power will be able stop it!” Jun Mo Xie’s sound was low. But he said this in a resolute and vicious manner.

Princess Ling Meng was slowly pulling Dugu Xiao Yi out of the hall. They were going towards a teahouse diagonally opposite to the hall. A tall and sturdy man-like figure of a woman stood-up there. The silhouette moved towards them with long strides.

It was Sun Xiao Mei, Tang Yuan’s fiancée. She had arrived a while ago, but hadn’t entered the hall.

“You don’t look very good.” Sun Xiao Mei looked at Princess Ling Meng. She asked with deep concern, “What happened?”

Sun Xiao Mei’s was born with the appearance of a heroic man; she even had the temperament of one. However, she was an extremely kind-hearted and intelligent person. Moreover, she was like an elder sister to Princess Ling Meng and Dugu Xiao Yi. However, these little sisters didn’t wish to burden their ‘caring’ elder sister with their worries.

“I don’t wish to conceal anything from elder sister. However, something did happen, but I am too embarrassed to mention it. In fact ...I do not wish to mention it.” Princess Ling Meng seemed sad. She rubbed her forehead tiredly.

Sun Xiao Mei was quick-witted. She quickly understood from the

Princess' speech that the matter must be relating to the Imperial Family. She couldn't ask for further details about it since she was not related to it.

Princess Ling Meng was also smart. She saw that Sun Xiao Mei had stopped speaking, and quickly realised that her elder sister had understood everything. She could sense that her elder sister had started to feel awkward. Hence, the Princess hastily said, "It was a pity that elder sister wasn't inside. Otherwise, she could've helped me examine that man and his actions. It was a really strange occurrence."

"What man? What strange occurrence are you talking about?" Sun Xiao Mei couldn't help her interest pique when she heard this.

"Li You Ran, the eldest son of the Li Family's third generation." She had sensed that there was something odd about Li You Ran's bearing. Stemming from her intuition as a woman, Princess Ling Meng had a sharp feeling that something was not right.

"Li You Ran, that man..." Sun Xiao Mei muttered to herself for a while. She was apparently finding it difficult to word her thoughts, "...He is just like Jun Mo Xie. You won't be able to read him properly if you don't observe him carefully, and you won't be able to understand him..."

"Jun Mo Xie?!" Princess Ling Meng exclaimed. "Jun Mo Xie and Li You Ran? How can you confuse these two people? Why are you mentioning two completely different people together?"

"There is maybe no evidence to suffice that these two men can be discussed together, but it's not that simple..." Sun Xiao Mei chuckled and went quiet. She gave no further explanation. However, she said in a low voice as they walked inside; almost as if she was mumbling to herself, "But I feel that Jun Mo Xie is more dangerous!"

"Elder sister Xiao Mei, I don't understand. But we are sisters... and I've discovered that you look at the special qualities of people."

Dugu Xiao Yi hadn't heard the words Sun Xiao Mei had mumbled to herself. "You had said that Jun Mo Xie had an air of arrogance the last time we met. I still don't see any arrogance in him. He just acts a little bit like a rogue; nothing more... And that doesn't mean that it is very bad... In any case he was really graceful today! I regret that you weren't with elder sister Ling Meng and me to witness him handle the situation in such a graceful manner, he he..."

"I feel vexed by the way your brother Mo Xie handles things!" Princess Ling Meng retorted in annoyance, "Xiao Yi, you must consider this matter very seriously... and countless times so that you don't live with regrets for the rest of your life! Listen to what your elder sister says!"

Dugu Xiao Yi was somehow not convinced. She snorted as she mumbled to herself, "Brother Mo Xie is no good? And your brothers are awfully great... are they?"

Princess Ling Meng was dumbstruck. It was true that Jun Mo Xie was a dandy and a bully. And he even rampaged about without any fear. However, even then... he still hadn't behaved as shamelessly as her brothers.

They were vile of character. They were really vile of character!

Notes:

Jiangnan is Pinyin for the southern part of the China which falls below the Yangtze river.

Chapter 258: Unexpected Misfortune

The little girl could see that Princess Ling Meng was distressed. She was aware that she had spoken something unwarranted. She wanted to comfort the Princess. However, she was dumbfounded, and didn't know what to do.

The three women remained silent for a long time. Sun Xiao Mei eventually broke the silence as she answered Dugu Xiao Yi's problem...

"You both know that my body experienced great and sudden changes in childhood, and now appears like this. This also made my nature calm and tranquil." The corners of Sun Xiao Mei's mouth rose bitterly, "I never dared to leave home. I didn't eat for several days to lose weight... but to no avail. ...until that year... when I met my master."

She heaved a long sigh and spoke, "I've had this bewildering illness since the age five. And it has already been fifteen years now! I've learned to see through things and understand them over these past thirteen years. I don't care about my appearance anymore. Do you think I would measure people by their beauty? I only perceive people's feelings when I look at them. As to how good they look — external beauty is only something one can show-off... its secondary.

"The importance lays in a person's nature. We can clearly understand a person's intentions and capabilities by paying attention to this point." Sun Xiao Mei smiled a 'somewhat' mournful smile, "Little sister Xiao Yi, Jun Mo Xie always shows a different side of himself. He always acts like a debauchee. He goes amuck whenever he wishes without fearing anything. And I worry that he may not be pretending. I fear that it is his true nature. He and I could meet only for a short while. However, it was clear that he never gives anyone importance, and only does what he wants. That man will never hold anyone highly in his eyes.

“Therefore, I called his nature ‘arrogant’.” Sun Xiao Mei’s smile was indifferent, “It may even be called ‘evil’!”

The little girl was convinced deep inside. So, she stayed still and listened to her elder sister Xiao Mei with rapt attention, “However, I saw another defect with this person. Though, it might not be seen as a defect by the person himself... And with regards to this... The Young Master Jun is more ruthless than anyone else! Therefore, you haven’t ascertained him properly. You have already been moved by him once, but you mustn’t invest too much into your relationship with him...! It will be very painful for you.”

Dugu Xiao Yi pursed her rosy lips. There was a resentful look in her eyes, but she didn’t say anything. She knew that Xiao Mei was deeply concerned about her, and did not have any malicious intention.

Sun Xiao Mei sighed inwardly. She was aware that her little sister was not listening to her.

Princess Ling Meng was on the side. It seemed as if she was in a daze. She seemed to be walking ‘in between the conversation’; she appeared to be listening and not listening. Her mind was a complete mess, and she didn’t know what she was thinking. She became aware that her sisters had suddenly become quiet.

“Ling Meng, you don’t seem well. It’s better if you return to the palace and rest.” Sun Xiao Mei looked at her with a worried expression.

“I don’t wish to go back! I won’t go back!” Princess Ling Meng was afraid of returning to the palace. She didn’t know how she would behave... or what frame of mind she would meet her “family” in...

“Elder sister Ling Meng, let’s go and find Jun Mo Xie if you don’t wish to return to the palace.” Dugu Xiao Yi raised her eyes as she made this suggestion. “That guy is quite amusing.”

Her ‘cherished’ Little White suddenly grunted and poked-out his little head as she said this. His round eyes were very wide open. He had already reached level eight. Hence, he had very sensitive ears. How could he not feel elated when he heard his owner talk about meeting ‘that’ man?

“This sounds good. I also wish to examine this guy since Xiao Yi admires him so deeply. In fact, I will also try my best to think highly of him. And I will finally get to see how outstanding he really is!” Princess Ling Meng said as her spirits rose. She smiled as she mocking herself, “Unfortunately, I wasn’t able to see how amazing a person he is. Have I been blind these past ten years?”

Dugu Xiao Yi’s face turned red. She knew that the princess’s words weren’t like her elder sister Xiao Mei’s. Her elder sister had given her a warning out of pure goodwill, but Princess Ling Meng had just taunted her. So, she couldn’t help but retort, “Of course you are prejudiced. You look at him with disgust... so, how can you find anything good in him? In any case, I’ve got good eyesight!”

Sun Xiao Mei smiled. Her two sisters were sticking to their own opinions and were refusing to come to an accord. The three women leisurely paced towards the Jun Family’s residence; their six maids followed in their suit.

The bickering between Dugu Xiao Yi and Princess Ling Meng somewhat pacified the mood as they walked along the way.

The distance to the Jun Residence wasn’t much, and the streets were bustling with people. Other pedestrians were admiring the two beautiful women walking on the street. Everyone, without exception, feasted their eyes on the two pretty women. After all, many hadn’t seen outrageously beautiful woman such as these in their entire lifetime. Now they were actually two of them walking together...

Some dignified nobleman would even take a hasty and covert look at them. They would then turn back and move on. They

would keep that image in their hearts, [this is my kind of beautiful.]

Then, suddenly...

There was a strong gale, and two azure lights reached up to the void sky. Then, these two lights suddenly shot towards Princess Ling Meng, who was amongst the pedestrians. It was like two blue arrows had been shot from a bow; such speed could not be avoided!

An angry cry was heard. A person glowing with a glamorous azure light appeared. He was dressed in black. There was a long double-edged sword in his hand. The sword seemed to be congealed in brilliant rainbow-like aperture. And then, a lonely light came towards Princess Ling Meng. A single sword had suddenly held back many others... of Sky Xuan Level!

Ye Gu Han had arrived!

“Bam! Bam!” the sound of the collision echoed twice. The three people retreated simultaneously. The two other Sky Xuan experts were dressed in black, and their faces were covered with masks. They fell back at first, but charged forward once again. Brilliant blue lights flickered from both of them as they moved towards Ye Gu Han. Ye Gu Han smiled coldly. He didn’t seem frantic as he held his double-edged sword at an inclined. It emanated blue light as he pointed in towards the enemy; as if ready to do vital damage. It seemed as it wouldn’t succumb to the opposition.

The crowd exclaimed at the sudden outset of this incident, and quickly scattered in order to escape. The bustling city street had quickly become deserted.

The three people including Ye Gu Han tumbled and entangled. Suddenly, there was a loud whistle. Three azure lights appeared, and shot towards Princess Ling Meng at great speeds; she was behind Ye Gu Han.

Ye Gu Han’s voice trembled as he shouted. He got away from his

enemy, and retreated with a sense of urgency in his movements.

He didn't evade any of their attacks and bore them on his palm and leg while still fighting his two enemies. His body sprayed blood on getting hit, and was sent spinning backwards. He fell in front of Princess Ling Meng; his long sword issued a 'clanging' sound as it fell. His hair and beard were dishevelled, yet he still didn't step back further; not even a little.

The other three men arrived simultaneously.

The other two assassins had followed Ye Gu Han's retreat as well. They caught up with him at lightning speed. Ye Gu Han's angry complexion quickly faded away. It was replaced with a blood-red, yet tranquil expression.

His sky blue Xuan color became stronger and stronger. Even his swords killing intent grew sharper. His power seemed like that of an insane tiger. However, his sword's movements weren't chaotic; they were precise. Surprisingly, one Sky Xuan was taking-on five other experts of the same level — alone with his own strength.

His hands were full as he fought off the assassins. However, he still caught hold of Princess Ling Meng's slender body. He put all his effort to throw her away... as far as he could. He then howled, "Quickly, run!"

The Princess's delicate body flew for about thirty meters, and then fell to the ground. Her eyes were red and teary. She choked with emotion, "Uncle Ye..."

Most people of the senior generation would only think about their own good. ...only her uncle Ye was different...

Sun Xiao Mei's eyes twinkled. [The target of the assassins is obviously Princess Ling Meng. And Ye Gu Han won't be able to keep five Sky Xuan experts at bay. We can only request for quick reinforcements in order to deal with this situation!]

However, these five great Sky Xuan experts could be considered

the strongest in all of Tian Xiang City. So even if all the great houses of the Capital were to lend aid... and even if their reinforcements arrived on time — it was doubtful that they would be sufficient to deter the threat.

“Xiao Yi, quickly send Little White to call for reinforcements!” Sun Xiao Mei was very intelligent. She saw Little White at Dugu Xiao Yi’s bosom. She looked at his eyes and realized that he had understood the plan. She had calculated that no one would be able bring help on time... much less escape help them escape. However, Little White was different — Little White was still very young and not very strong. However, he was still a level eight Xuan Beast. His ultra-speed was unmatched. Even a Spirit Xuan expert was unlikely to catch-up with him. Moreover, his small size would make it very difficult to catch.

Dugu Xiao Yi immediately came to her senses and grabbed Little White from her bosom. It didn’t matter if he understood what she was going to say or not, “Little White, I’m depending on you. Hurry up and inform my father. Tell him to come as quickly as possible, and save us! Hurry up and go!”

Sun Xiao Mei urged anxiously, “Why are you dawdling?” She quickly drew out a blade. She resisted the pain as she cut her arm with it. Then, she quickly tore a strip of Dugu Xiao Yi’s clothing, dipped it in her own blood, and tied it to Little White’s leg. She then tossed him away...

As long as anyone from the Dugu Family saw that blood stained piece of cloth — they would immediately understand that Dugu Xiaoyi was in danger, and would quickly rush-over to their rescue. Beyond that... these women could only wait.

Little White whimpered loudly, and shot like an arrow. One of the five assassins grinned fiendishly, “Come here, you little whelp!” He reached out with his hand. He had thought that it was just a little cub, [what could it possibly do?] And so, he attempted to grab it.

He thought...

Little White was angry. He jumped and suddenly its small mouth bared a set of very sharp teeth. He ruthlessly chomped down on that man's hand. And simultaneously, Little White extended his sharp claws with lightning speed and scratched the man's arm. He took out a chunk of the man's flesh while doing so. Then he proudly hummed and scuttled away to escape from that place. He vanished from everyone's eyes like a wisp of smoke.

That black-clothed assassin howled bitterly in pain; the pain was sharp enough to cut through to his bone marrow. The Sky Xuan expert had underestimated the enemy, and had thought it to be merely a small cub. However, that small enemy had left him in this condition...

He was completely unaware that the young cub was already a level eight Xuan Beast!

Chapter 259: Desperateness' Gentleness

“Bam!” the explosive sound was followed by loud echoes. Ye Gu Han[1] staggered to withdraw. He took several steps back. Wisps of blood were visible at the corners of his mouth, but he still took advantage of his backward motion and rose in the sky to stop two of the masked assailants who were going after Princess Ling Meng. His longsword seemed like a boulder that was blocking off a mountain pass.

The leader of the black-clad assassins sneered, “Ye Gu Han, our original target was only Princess Ling Meng. But now we younger brothers have no choice but to kill you since you so wish to court it so dearly!” He waved his hand. All the five men disappeared into five different directions with that gesture. Then, attacked Ye Gu Han in unison like ‘howling wind and torrential rain’.

Ye Gu Han’s sword was as quick as a snake; it took the shape of a light in the rain. He opened his mouth to shout, “Who are you? Do not hide! Tell me your names!”

“Our names? We have covered our faces with masks in order to hide our identities. Ye Gu Han, it is a surprise that you make such childish demands despite the fact that you are a Sky Xuan expert. I’ll tell you what — why don’t you take your white face to the underworld? Then you could ask the King of Hell himself who sent you there!”

The leader of the masked men smiled devilishly. Then, his body suddenly rushed forward and his expansive clothes floated in the air... as if to cover all the bright things in the mortal world, “Third! You must hurry and capture that little girl! Any delays will create complications; we can't live with such problems. Leave Ye Gu Han to the rest of us!”

There was a loud ‘hiss’ and his body suddenly came down like a terrifying illness. He opened his arms wide, and a sharp light of

blue energy emerged from each of his ten fingers. It seemed as if he held ten blue-longswords in each of his hands. It was a very fearsome sight as he fell down with a loud “bang”; with a lot of momentum as well!

One of the five assailants — one with a comparatively slender figure — twisted around without uttering a single word. This person was about to disappear in order to fiercely pursue Princess Ling Meng.

Ye Gu Han saw this, and let out a loud and mournful cry; his cry shook the heavens. His sword seemed like a rampaging dragon, and it seemed that a storm shower had occurred as over three hundred swords bore down on his enemies at once. This forced the other four to retreat, and even injured their leader’s shoulder. There was a bubbling sound. Then unexpectedly, two spurts of blood started to gush out of his back.

Despite his injuries, Ye Gu Han roared again! One person was sent turning in the air 25 meters away. He dropped down to the ground, and started to drip blood. Another person was spinning in the air and was yet to fall. Ye Gu Han’s attack was like a downpour of swords. It covered the somewhat slim-figured assassin.

The other four rushed to catch up, but it seemed that Ye Gu Han wasn’t frightened of death. In fact, he seemed to have prepared his sword, and was ready to die along with his enemy. He was prepared to fight tooth and nail to meet his fate. It seemed that his only desire was to go down the infernal Hell. He stubbornly kept-up with his extremely sharp attacks. He was like ‘death personified’ with his sword his in his hand. He had placed himself in such a way that he blocked-off the entire street.

The five similar ranking Sky Xuan experts were simply unable to cross this obstacle.

How could a Sky Xuan expert’s last-ditch effort ever be weak?

It was clear from Ye Gu Han’s body language that he was ready to

risk his own life...

“If you want Ling Meng — you’ll have to step over my dead body!” Ye Gu Han put his entire life and spirit into acting on these words as he demonstrated the implementation.

Every move of his sword covered the whole area; it was proud and desolate.

Every blow from his sword could be entrenched in the mind... as lonely and crazy.

Each blow was revealing something...

The loneliness and desolation that had come to be...

That distant place where he had buried his emotions...

His lonely life — his lonely blows...

His lonely swordplay...

Ye Gu Han’s lonely swordplay was oppressive, and it showed his extreme saturation. However, the man had only one thought in his mind — he would never allow them to harm Ling Meng.

Apart from this act of selflessness... Ye Gu Han had already entered the crazy state of a berserker.

[My sword is everlasting!]

[Heaven and earth are boundless; my sword’s winds will rise high and fly!]

[This sword will carve out a solitary path to the King of Hell!]

[This sword will wreak havoc in the world, and there is none who can stop it!]

[Kill!]

[Die!]

Princess Ling Meng was being forced to escape farther and farther by Dugu Xiao Yi and Sun Xiao Mei. The leader of the

assailants shouted loudly. However, there was no way he could give instructions at this point of time. He couldn't help but bite his lip and say, "Hurry up and deal with this manservant first; at all cost!"

Ye Gu Han laughed loudly; his laughter was completely desolate... same as before. His longsword rushed forward and pierced. It entered the side of the masked man and then suddenly retreated at lightning like speed when it reached half-way. This forced the opposite party to retreat in confusion for it seemed as if it had been casted in the heaven.

Ye Gu Han had fought almost-all his life. And he had almost-always been surrounded by numerous enemies in the battles. Therefore, he had a very rich fighting experience. He was obviously going to display his absolute peak strength when it was a life and death situation for his precious Ling Meng.

How was Ye Gu Han able to hold up five similarly leveled Sky Xuan experts in place without yet falling to a disadvantageous position even though he was staggering?! If he was somehow able to put all his heart and mind into it, and was able to emerge victorious... it would be sufficient to bestow him the crown of the most arrogant warrior of his generation...

His shoulder was bleeding profusely, but he unconsciously acted like everything was normal. Surprisingly, it hadn't affected his fighting prowess either.

"Bam!" His longsword hit the left side of a black-clothed man who was now staggering to retreat.

Ye Gu Han snorted; his body was shining a little. He took advantage of the situation and swung his longsword in a wide semi-circle. A cold-blue color emanated from it, and spread around the area. He didn't move an inch as he constantly fought the three enemies at once. The last of his sword's power was about to exhaust... yet he still continued to press his opponents. His body

rose and then came down hard with a “thump”. He attacked another masked man as his two pillar-like legs touched the ground. He caught hold of him firmly, and then shook him violently.

He snorted as he lifted that man. Ye Gu Han was like a kite without a string; he was beyond recall. Wisps of blood sprayed out of his nostrils; the black-clad person still had a lot of energy stored for use. However, Ye Gu Han had faced four people, but still had energy left to violently shake that man. His superiority was evident.

However, Ye Gu Han still didn’t retreat. He straightened his back and floated in the air. But, he suddenly stopped as he avoided another masked man’s attack with great difficulty.

This person was Li Wu Bei’s second disciple, Zhou Jian Ming. He was also quite violent of nature. He could see that Ye Gu Han wasn’t about to die so easily, and had been clinging to life for such a long time. Zhou Jian Meng couldn’t bear it anymore. He let out a loud shout and raised his great sword to hack down on him head-on. That sword had the assailant’s entire Xuan Qi concentrated in it. Therefore, it was necessary for Ye Gu Han to evade it. It was possible that Ye Gu Han would’ve been killed if he hadn’t evaded that attack.

His eyes were blood red and cold as he retreated. Zhou Jian Ming saw this and cried in exultation as he rushed forward to take advantage of such a retreat. However, Ye Gu Han immediately returned to his original position after the retreat. Then, he continuously hacked at Zhou Jian Ming’s great sword three times from above.

Ye Gu Han was already fighting on fumes. He was very exhausted after he had hacked-down on Zhou Jian Ming three times since the man had stored-up his energy. However, Zhou Jian Ming felt that he had just been attacked three times by a thousand sledgehammers; very ruthlessly at that! He couldn’t help his face turning white as he staggered to retreat, and then spat out blood.

Zhou Jian Ming wasn't weak when compared to Ye Gu Han. However, he had mostly trained in secret under his master, and had gained fighting experience by fighting only his fellow apprentice. However, he was battling with Ye Gu Han now; a man who was fighting tooth and nail like a maniac. He obviously wasn't able to keep up. The gap between the two parties was very huge when it came to a 'real' life-and-death match; despite the fact that they were pretty evenly matched skill wise. Therefore, it was natural that Zhou Jian Ming would individually lose.

Ye Gu Han had been seriously injured. Therefore, he wasn't acting very recklessly. He was also consuming a lot of Xuan Qi in order to put-up the fight. Otherwise, his attacks would've been sufficient to take Zhou Jian Ming's life in such a life-and-death confrontation between the two experts.

Ye Gu Han thought that it was a pity. He would've torn his opponent to shreds if his attack had gone well. Then, he could've outflanked the rest of them... or even might have had the opportunity to retreat and recuperate.

However, Ye Gu Han couldn't take it easy even though his previous strike had given him an advantage. His opponent's Xuan Qi had struck-back, and it had made it hard for him to exercise control. However, he only had enough energy to pull-off that one attack; he was now panting heavily. He was rendered incapable to perform the quick and nimble move he had just pulled off.

The fierce battle had forced him to go all-out. This had sapped-off most of Ye Gu Han strength. The fact that Ye Gu Han had alone been pressed from all sides by five similarly levelled Sky Xuan experts... and had managed to hold them off up till that point was a miracle unto itself.

His sword resembled a rainbow bent-on taking the life of the harbinger. The five assailants weren't as strong as Ye Gu Han; unfortunately it would not matter now. He had come to a state where he had 'burned through the oil of his lamp' — he had almost

no energy left.

There was a loud “bang”. The other four assailants couldn’t help but be frightened to see Zhou Jian Ming nearly lose his life. Their bloodshot eyes invariably turned towards the powerful sword. Their eyes had a mixture of anger and shame in them. They shivered as they let out their murderous aura. Their party had five Sky Xuan experts, but was being held back by a single one. This was simply the greatest humiliation — ever.

Now was the time to decide the victory and the defeat!

Ye Gu Han smiled bitterly; [it seems my short life will end today! I do not know if little Ling Meng has escaped far enough...]

The dark blue light once again burned fiercely around his body; it was like a giant star that had responded in the night’s sky. Ye Gu Han had concentrated the remains of his depleted Xuan Qi into his final strike.

Zhou Jain Ming was ashamed and angry. He howled terribly as he leapt madly into the air, and was followed by his four companions — all of them were intending to attack Ye Gu Han in the sky.

Ye Gu Han accurately calculated the enemy’s weapons, and waited for a good opportunity. He didn’t know when the blood-red color disappeared from his eyes. But he was now calm like a tranquil deep lake that had been left undisturbed.

The only thing he couldn’t comprehend was that — he had been fighting for a considerable period of time... yet why had no one come to lend support? Where were Princess Ling Meng’s Imperial Body Guards? Why hadn’t an expert from the Imperial Palace shown himself yet?

However, now wasn’t the time to think about it.

Ye Gu Han turned towards the inner part of the city. He gave it a final and profound look.

This look was full of emotion... a great ocean of emotion which was endless and lonely. It reeked of a strong sense of reluctance.

[Xiu Xiu... I fear that I will not be able to protect your Ling Meng from now on!]

[I knew that I could never get you... I had become tired of life long ago... I'm aware that you will never be mine even in this moment of life or death... yet, I'm unable to let you go... I hate to part with you...]

[For you had always claimed the softest part of my aching heart...]

[Xiu Xiu!]

[Will you be lonely if I cease to live in this mortal world? Will you shed tears for me?]

Ye Gu Han didn't have anymore time to think since the sword attacks of his five enemies had descended upon him like a storm, and had drowned his proud body amongst them.

Ye Gu Han laughed loudly and unimpeded...

He gripped his longsword tightly; his face was unhesitant, calm, and welcoming...

All the sweet memories of the past had quickly and had vividly flashed in his mind. The freshness and purity... the long silky hair that floating in the wind... that flower-like smile, and that ardent face so full of hope and expectation... And finally, those tearful eyes looking at him with reluctance... all of it first became fuzzy, and then faded away...

The past twenty unfeeling years of Ye Gu Han's life had just flashed through his mind... all stemmed from this gentle feeling of inseparable love in his heart...

Notes:

Ye Gu Han's name means 'The lonely night'.

Chapter 260: Little White Arranges a Rescue Squad

The Li Residence

Li You Ran was alone inside his room. A small portrait hung in front.

The person in the picture had bright eyes and white teeth. As it so happened, it was a portrait of a smiling Princess Ling Meng. Li You Ran was worthy of being called a genius amongst members of his generation in the Tian Xiang Empire. He had drawn that lifelike image of Princess Ling Meng on his own. He had based it on that profound image of hers which he had stored in his mind.

However, Li You Ran's eyes were shrouded with pain... [The operation must have begun... presumably...]

[Ling Meng...]

Li You Ran looked up, and then resolutely closed his eyes. Suddenly, a yell arrived on his lips... it had come from the bottom of his heart. The sound was similar to the howl of an injured beast that neared its death; it sounded coarse and sad. He then ferociously started to punch the wall with his fist in anguish.

These powerful fists collided with the wall. His fists were soon covered with blood, which started to drip to the ground.

It seemed like Li You Ran hadn't slept much; in fact, he looked distracted. His face was expressionless as he closed his eyes, and a drop of tear noiselessly fell down from each of his eyes...

[I'm sorry! My beloved!]

[...to increase my influence and gain the favor of my master's men... I had to sacrifice you...! I had no other choice...]

Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi were slowly moving away from the Aristocratic Hall. They had repeatedly reminded Tang Yuan to

purchase the discussed herbs and to store such purchases properly in an appropriate place. They seemed satisfied and hence finished-up with their busy day, and started to travel towards their home.

Taking into account that day's matter — it went satisfactorily overall... except for a few unexpected incidents. The prices during the auction of the extraordinary wine had reached a point that even Jun Mo Xie hadn't dreamt of. One could say that they were returning home from a rewarding endeavor.

The Third Prince had used his powerful position to force a misdeed at the end of the event. However, it couldn't be considered to be a bad turn of events since the Young Master Jun had taken advantage of this incident, and had successfully planted a seed in the immature and spirited mind of Little Yang Mo. He could use this in the future to perhaps incite, or eliminate many targets.

And coming back to the original topic again... the final batch of those hundred wine bottles was under the Prince Equivalent's name. Therefore, they were a part of the Prince Equivalent's stock. So it would seem that the Jun Family and the Aristocratic Hall had no direct relationship to it. Even though such a thought process would seem a bit shameless — but this fact would hold true regardless...

The Princes didn't treat the Prince Equivalent's side as one of their own. However, it was unlikely that Jun Mo Xie would take a step to help them out. Because it... wouldn't be worth it!

Jun Mo Xie wasn't a man of vile character who always sought after profits. However, he never pursued matters which didn't gain him anything. This was a hit-man's code of conduct. And this was how Jun Mo Xie conducted himself — in his previous life, and in this one.

[Heroes... I'll leave that role for others. I'll just do what I do... what my heart desires... what I love. I decide what I love; I decide

what I do — no one in this F**king world shall control me!]

Absolute freedom! This was Jun Mo Xie's biggest goal; the main pursuit of his life.

Jun Mo Xie had once said before the Aristocratic Hall's opening, "I'll take the Aristocratic Hall to a stage where one day of its sales will be enough to sustain a Family for three years' time!" However, hadn't the day's achievements crossed the goal? Perhaps a Family could sit and eat in leisure for an entire lifetime with so much money...

Hai Chen Feng — the man now known as 'Gang Leader Hai' — wasn't able to obtain a single bottle of that extraordinary wine. However, Jun Mo Xie sent him a gratuitous present of fifty wine bottles from the batch under his own name; such treatment was a must for the people on his side.

"I bid one million taels"... the Sky Xuan 'customer' had raised this trademark bid several times. Hence, he merrily received the fifty bottles and returned to his lair. He would certainly announce that he had obtained them during the auction since he was an 'Aristocrat'...

Jun Mo Xie was riding a horse, while Jun Wu Yi was on his palanquin. The Uncle and the Nephew had their hands tucked in their sleeves. Their mood was cheerful yet serious. Each was thinking about their future plans, and the arrangements of manpower that were necessary for their schemes. Both of them were individually making their calculations on the road back home. Surprisingly, neither spoke to the other about it.

The uncle-nephew-duo was aware that the upcoming operation would be a very tough one. However, they couldn't lose; it was a must that they win. They needed to win — but they needed to win beautifully. They needed their victory to be flawless.

However, the enemy trumped them in terms of strength.

[How shall this next round be fought?]

The stories of the weak defeating the strong have been told since ancient times. However, they not only had to use the weak to defeat the strong, but they had to win their battle without incurring any damage. And this feat would be extremely difficult since this was reality... not a fantasy story.

This small party from the Jun Family hadn't travelled far, when suddenly; Jun Mo Xie saw a shadow in the distance. This shadow shot towards him like electricity. He hadn't even recognized it properly, but the tiny white shadow had already embraced his chest. It called out in urgency as it groaned and squeaked. Its claws tugged at Jun Mo Xie incessantly; its dripping-wet eyes were full of anxiety.

"What happened?" Jun Mo Xie quickly noticed the strip of light-green cloth tied to one of Little White's hind legs. He distinctly remembered Dugu Xiao Yi's appearance before she had left; she was wearing light-green clothes. And now a strip of the same light-green cloth was tied to Little White's leg. Moreover — it was stained in blood.

[Dugu Xiao Yi is in trouble!]

Jun Mo Xie suddenly became tense. He felt as if his heart had suddenly been seized by something. His usually steady aura was now in chaos. Dugu Xiao Yi's lovable, pretty... mischievous, yet flowery smile appeared in front of his eyes...

[When did I start to care so much about this girl?]

Jun Mo Xie didn't have any time to think about this. There was only one thing on his mind; [I must save her!]

"Third Uncle, Dugu Xiao Yi is in trouble; I need to check-up on her!" Jun Mo Xie pressed his legs onto the sides of his strong horse, and it 'neighed' loudly in response. Its front hooves rose up in the air as it stood up on its hind legs. They hadn't even touched down

as its back hooves took a step ahead. Then, he leapt-up and shot-away like an arrow. The crazy hoof beats rolled and echoed like thunder as Jun Mo Xie followed Little White's swift shadow, and went-off at a great speed.

A wind whistled as the horse turned the corner of the street — it was almost as if a black cloud had descended upon Jun Mo Xie's horseback. However, it seemed like this new arrival was weightless. In fact, the strong horse subconsciously went a little faster in its state of mad rush.

That man was Jun Wu Yi!

This bloodied war general's face was filled with an air of cold murderous aura.

Jun Mo Xie regarded Dugu Xiao Yi with affection. How could an experienced man like Jun Wu Yi not see it? To him — Dugu Xiao Yi was as good as his nephew's wife; how could he allow anyone to trouble her?

He wouldn't permit anyone to harm a single hair on her body.

Such was the Jun Family's mindset. It was such in Guan Qing Han's case. And it was the same for this little girl.

Jun Wu Yi wouldn't allow the tragedy that had plagued his life to occur again. If he thought it necessary — he would destroy everything in order to protect his nephew's wife.

So, would Jun Wu Yi be willing to sit through this matter after hearing about it?

The strong horse neighed wildly as it galloped like a mad beast. It seemed as if the doubly astride horse had lost its mind. It turned one corner after another and disappeared into the distance.

It only left behind some windblown dust, which quickly dissipated in the autumn wind.

Dugu Xiao Yi and Sun Xiao Mei had carried the same idea: Send

Little White to the Dugu Family in order to arrange a rescue squad. Only the experts from the Dugu Family could be expected to have a chance against such a threat. Any other reinforcements might turn out to be useless since they may not have the capability to face five such high levelled Sky Xuan experts.

Though in consensus... their idea was naïve... Moreover, Little White was immature, and couldn't understand their words clearly. However, he understood that his master was in serious danger. And he understood that his master had sent him away to seek reinforcements.

But, who was he likely to seek out?

Naturally, he'd seek out the most powerful rescue squad he could think of...

Little White was quite intelligent. However, there were only two people in this world he was close to. One was naturally its master — Dugu Xiao Yi. And the other was that 'good man' who was also the strongest person in Little White's mind — Jun Mo Xie!

This person had helped it upgrade its level in childhood itself; so wasn't he already the strongest? So, who else would he seek out for to help when his master was in danger and needed reinforcements?

Therefore, Little White set to the task of finding Jun Mo Xie. Anyway, he didn't wish to go to the Dugu Family to look for help. [How could those uncouth long beards be useful? How could they compare to that 'Great Man'?] Little White had looked down upon them.

But then again... if he had gone to the Dugu Family for help... any experts they might have sent may have been too late to arrive. Therefore, Little White had made the correct decision in its state of inadvertent ignorance.

Little White couldn't speak. Therefore, his attempt would've

gone in vain in case he had actually decided to go to the Dugu Family's residence. They would've surely sent their soldiers if they had judged Dugu Xiao Yi to be in danger. However, it wasn't necessary that the line-up they'd arrange would be able to help against those five Sky Xuan Masters. Wouldn't those men have fallen short of the task then?

The sword had fallen. The Xuan Qi which had been condensed in his palm had also been ferociously shot.

Ye Gu Han was continuously getting besieged by his enemies from all sides. He would've quickly retreated if it weren't for Ling Meng's safety; it wouldn't have been very difficult either. He would've been able to retreat if he were to use his remaining strength. He could've then used his skills to fly far away very quickly. He would most probably suffer injuries... but a shot an escape would've been possible.

However, Princess Ling Meng hadn't escaped far enough. Therefore, these five powerful Sky Xuan experts would undoubtedly capture her if he decided to retreat at this time. He didn't know why they wished to capture her. All he knew was that he would rather die than let them get their hands on his precious Ling Meng.

He wasn't acting out of character; he was acting out of necessity.

[I know I will probably die. But I will still fight with everything I have.]

[It is either life or death; what do I have to fear?!]

Ye Gu Han stood straight like a mountain; a sword suddenly appeared beside his body. It curved towards him as he dodged it. But then it retreated as another sword approached him. Then, another sword appeared with a gleaming blue light, and took the shape of the shiny sabre which was ready to pierce its enemy.

Pfft!

A sword pierced Ye Gu Han's lower-left abdomen. Another two swords skimmed his entire body; they tore his clothes and his skin to shreds. It was followed by a fountain of blood gushing out. Two meaty palms carrying attacks as powerful as thunderbolts bombarded Ye Gu Han's chest.

"Snap! Snap!" a teeth grinding sound echoed as the brittle ribs in Ye Gu Han's chest gave away. All seven orifices in his body suddenly overflowed with blood.

However, Ye Gu Han suddenly seemed to have a somewhat elated expression on his face. He had a tender smile... or perhaps a nasty one... but it looked extremely bitter on his bloodied face.

Because...

Chapter 261: I Shall Give Up On the Heavens, But Not On My Beloved

Ye Gu Han's sword had shot out and pierced the armpit of the black-clothed man whose sword had pierced his lower abdomen. The black-clad man exerted himself to draw his sword out of Ye Gu Han's body. But, it did not budge. Ye Gu Han was actually using his own muscles to jam that person's long sword!

This was a real fight.

The blood-red sword in that assailant's armpit had started to move upwards within this short pause. The black clothed assailant was scared out of his wits at this. He then made a prompt decision to abandon his sword in Ye Gu Han's abdomen.

He dodged and prevented his entire body from a miserable death of getting slashed into two. Unfortunately, it was already late. His arm didn't receive the luxury of that narrow escape. The blooded sword went forth and separated the arm from his body; and the half of his shoulder. The sword went a little further and peeled-off the layers of his skin — all the way up to his facial muscles. What was left behind... was terrifying to behold — his white bones were bared; his twisting-worm-like veins could be seen very clearly... along with the wisps of blood that flowed inside them.

This person screamed a blood-curling cry as he retreated; it sounded more beast than human. His eyes were exposing the shock that had been bestowed upon his conscious, "My hand! My face! Ah!"

However, Ye Gu Han recovered his sword at an incredible speed. He then quickly took advantage of that moment and stabbed again; it was lightning fast.

Ye Gu Han's actions; his lack of hesitation in getting hit by the enemy — it had all been for this one moment.

This one blow...

Ye Gu Han knew that his strength wouldn't hold out in a drawn-out battle. He knew that he wouldn't be able to face the combined strength of these five Sky Xuan assailants. Therefore, all he could do was fight with everything he had. However, Ye Gu Han was a very experienced fighter. Anyone could tell that all five of them were Sky Xuan experts. But, he could clearly sense that the Xuan Qi of two of his enemies was unstable. He could sense that they had sustained serious injuries in the past and hadn't healed yet.

He himself was now a spent force. So, the most he could do was take the two of them down with him. However, the remaining three attackers were in good condition. Therefore, he couldn't be as sure about dealing with them. Therefore, those two injured enemies were his primary targets. In fact, they were his only targets.

Ye Gu Han's sword stabbed him repeatedly. But, the palms of one of the enemies hit his chest. He was happy that he had dealt such a blow to the enemy, but hadn't expected that his own ribs would be shattered. However, his chest now resembled a whirlpool as it sucked in the enemy's palms, and held them in place.

That person was aware of the danger and was vigorously tried to free himself from Ye Gu Han's grasp. He was about to succeed when a cold light rose from Ye Gu Han's sword, and made its way towards his chest.

The sword of death!

A blood curling scream escaped that man's mouth as he desperately tried to evade the oncoming attack. But Ye Gu Han's sword swooped-up in a moment, and pierced him right up to its hilt; it didn't pierce his heart. However, the Xuan Qi attached to that sword left his five frail visceral points^[1] in shambles!

However, Ye Gu Han had finally run out of steam now. He had stuck his sword into his enemy's chest, but didn't have the

strength to draw it out this time.

One of his remaining opponents bellowed. However, Ye Gu Han didn't even have the strength to pull his sword out. His right hand was cut-off by his enemy's sword. But surprisingly, no blood flowed out of that wound — the blood in his body had already flowed out by now!

His face was reveled in a mocking smile. Yet, his eyes were still full of tender affection as he looked in a particular direction...

...the direction of the Imperial palace;

One of the black clad people leapt-up and kicked Ye Gu Han hard. His body was sent flying-up in the air. Ye Gu Han fell down heavily. But still, Ye Gu Han stubbornly turned his body over. Suddenly, there was a loud and terrifying sound; the sound of his ribs being crushed. However, there was not a single sign of pain on his face.

His eyes had never so proud before; neither had they ever been so desolate...

They were full of inexhaustible gentleness and yearning...

Not a lot remained of his life, yet he couldn't see his beloved. So, looking at the place where she resided... the direction in which she was... would have to do...

He had hidden his feelings for a long time, but all of them came gushing out. [I think of you, Xiu Xiu! I think of you! I... think of... you...]

Ye Gu Han's mind was suddenly hit by an incomparably-bright light, and many memories from the past started flooding it. He was already in a state of trance, but these images inside his mind were lifelike; this dream seemed real. And then, he heard a gentle voice. It was lightly reading a small poem again and again. It seemed to go on endlessly; like a tiny thing that was floating in a vast area — it was just like a dream.

[Don't regret such deep affection,]

[I willingly fall and wither into loneliness;]

[The regret of my beloved can haunt an eternity,]

[I shall give up on the heavens, but not on my beloved.]

These were the parting verses which Ye Gu Han had written for Murong Xiu Xiu; eighteen years ago.

[I shall give up on the heavens, but not on my beloved.]

[I shall give up on the heavens, but not on my beloved.]

Ye Gu Han couldn't speak. However, his lips still opened and closed slightly. And if one were to pay close attention, they would notice that he was repeating the last line of that poem.

[Xiu Xiu, I had left eighteen years ago, and I lost you forever. I had left you with this poem... And you cried incessantly as you read the last verse. I remember to this day... the way your long hair was disheveled in the wind then...

[Now, I'm leaving once again. And I will never return after I leave this time. You may become aware later... that just like before... I was recalling the last lines of that poem in my final moments...]

[I shall give up on the heavens, but not on my beloved.]

[Xiu Xiu, I could never turn my back on you all my life! I have never turned my back on you!]

Zhou Jian Ming roared like a mad-man and rushed to cut Ye Gu Han's body into pieces. But Lei Jian Hong called-out to him in a loud voice, "Enough! His Xuan Qi is already exhausted, and his five visceral points are done for. We need to pick up the injured fourth and fifth, and capture that little girl! Hurry; we need to move quickly! We can't stay here for long!"

Zhou Jian Min and the female combatant were very angry. They screamed their frustrations out. Then they each picked-up their

fourth and fifth brother. They then departed like lightening towards the direction where Princess Ling Meng had escaped...

Meanwhile, Princess Ling Meng was being pulled by her two sisters. They were trying to force her to escape. But, she kept looking back at the raging battle. However, when she saw Ye Gu Han covered in blood from head to toe — she collapsed. The Princess then suddenly turned towards that direction, and screamed in a wild fit, “Uncle Ye!” Her voice was extremely sad and shrill.

The Princess’ feet were rooted to the ground as she refused to move even half-a-step. Suddenly, she unintentionally welled up, and tears started gushing out of her eyes.

Uncle Ye had always protected her since childhood. To her... he was unrivalled in his generation. She knew that he had felt desolate and heartbroken every day of his life; he was a sad and lonely man. And today... he had fallen... just to protect her...

Princess Ling Meng suddenly felt a searing pain in her chest. She felt as if her lungs had been split open.

There was no bonding in the Tian Family.

She knew that her father, the Emperor, was very fond of her; she had known this since the day she was old enough to understand things. In fact, he would go to the extent of spoiling her, and indulging in her appearance. However her father, the Emperor was too dignified. Even when she missed him, and acted spoilt in order to be embraced by him — her father would give her a cherished hug... but he never held her for long. He would always have some matter to take care of. He would then return to being the dignified Emperor once again.

Father and Emperor. When these two are considered together — the Emperor would always be given more importance than the Father. Father, the Emperor... Her father would turn into the Emperor whenever the need arose. Then, she couldn’t act like that

person's daughter.

Ye Gu Han felt more like a real father to her. She could act like a spoilt child in front of him without any inhibitions, and could throw small tantrums whenever she felt like. So, even if she called him 'Uncle,' she considered him her father.

He would always pamper her. However, he would scold her without mercy if she made a mistake.

[But he was really nice to me!]

[He has always been guarding me in silence. He never appeared in public. He never strove for anything. He never even demanded anything for himself! He just stayed in the shadows. And he seemed very satisfied.]

[But he was the first one to appear and defend me whenever I faced any danger!]

[He was the first one to stand up to my brothers when they bullied me.]

[He would give his all to look after me! Even now, he lies fallen for my sake. He has finally collapsed... in all these years... he must've become very tired. Uncle Ye, do you want to rest?]

[Don't you want to see your little Ling Meng? Do you have the heart to cast away your little Ling Meng and leave? Do you have the heart to...? Do you have the heart to...?]

[Uncle Ye, you know that in my heart... you will always be my father...]

[Father! Please don't leave me...]

Princess Ling Meng stood there motionless. She didn't know what she was doing or thinking. Dugu Xiao Yi and Sun Xiao Mei tried their best, but she remained motionless...

[Why hasn't my father, the Emperor arrived yet? Why?! Why hasn't he showed-up when Uncle Ye is doing his best?! He ought to

come!]

[If Uncle Ye truly leaves me... I will retaliate! I will go crazy and take revenge against everyone!]

[I will dedicate my life to my revenge!]

Princess Ling Meng roared in her heart, and it seemed that her chest was about to explode with anger. However, she was unable to say it out loud. Tears blurred her vision and it seemed that a five thousand Kg rock had blocked her throat. Her hands and feet were cold. Her entire body shuddered as if she had been transported to a world of ice and snow.

The three black-clad assailants with masked faces overtook them. Lei Jian Hong angrily rushed towards Princess Ling Meng to capture her. However, Princess Ling Meng just stood there with a blank expression. She didn't react to this situation in any way.

Dugu Xiao Yi and Sun Xiao Mei threw themselves in front of her. Their bodies were glowing with a golden light...

The fact that they had reached the edge of the Gold Xuan level was quite remarkable; especially when one considers their ages. The two women took out a knife and a blade, and prepared to fight.

However, the opposite party's strength...

"F***k off!" Lei Jian Hong waved his hands, and the two women were thrown back, "I don't wish to kill you! Don't force me!"

"Who are you? Who are you?!" It seemed like Princess Ling Meng had just been roused from a dream. She didn't feel frightened... she had to avenge her Uncle Ye.

Her eyes were full of hatred, "Who are you people? Why am I so important to you? Why did you kill my Uncle Ye?!" the Princess had roared-out the last sentence.

The loud shout startled Lei Jian Hong. [Such a delicate and frail

woman can issue such a sharp and resounding sound...]

Notes:

The five visceral points. This refers to the five main organs in a person's chest cavity in traditional Chinese medicine. The organs consist of heart, liver, spleen, lungs and kidneys. This will obviously raise a doubt with the fight sequence. His sword doesn't pierce the heart. But the energy in his attack still shattered the organ.

Chapter 262: To Save or Not to Save?!

“You do not need to know our identities. And you certainly don’t need to know the reason behind our actions. You anyway have no chance of living!” Lei Jian Hong had no idea why he had divulged their intention to this woman.

“I won’t let you off for this! I will kill you and your family! I will kill you!” Tears suddenly filled Princess Ling Meng’s eyes. However, she forcefully opened them and stared without blinking, “I won’t even spare your ghosts!”

It seemed that her shrill and mournful scream had split-open the blue dome of heaven. The autumn wind rustled. Her hair started to drift about like dead leaves as the whistling sound of the blowing wind got louder and louder. Even then, she somehow exuded a sense of beauty.

The pupils of Lei Jian Hong’s eyes suddenly shrank behind his mask. He felt a chill run through him. He trembled a little as his intuition warned him about her. He felt somewhat ashamed at getting frightened. [I am a great Sky Xuan expert. Yet, just a few words from this young woman made me nervous? That’s unreasonable!]

“Bang!” Lei Jian Hong flew into a rage because of his shame, and gave a tight slap to Princess Ming Leng. He then rebuked, “Smelly whore! Your death is at hand, and yet you talk like this?! Don’t trust too much in your confidence; else I’ll kill you right now!”

Princess Ling Meng’s face swell with the man’s palm-print and her hair scattered down from the wind. However, she stubbornly kept-on staring him. And her gaze was full of bitter hatred.

Lei Jian Hong looked at the venomous expression on Princess Ling Meng’s face again. An obscure anger rose inside of him when he realized that the Princess still hadn’t given-up. Moreover, this Princess had an important connection with those throwing knives

which had killed four of his fellow disciples. And tonight, this woman's bodyguard had seriously injured two more of his brother-disciples. Anger rose unabated in his heat for a moment, and extreme hatred was soon stemmed from his guts as he thought of killing her there and then.

The Third female disciple saw her brother-disciple filling with the desire to kill. She hurriedly advised, "Senior brother, this woman is related to that person. So it would be better if we don't kill her till that man arrives to save her."

Lei Jian Hong clenched his teeth. He then suddenly chopped down on the nape of the princess' neck; she fainted. He then picked her up and tossed her to the Third Disciple. Then, he ordered everyone to move out.

"Put the Princess down!" Dugu Xiao Yi and Sun Xiao Mei rushed to stop the opposite party. They were aware that they would be no match for them. However, they just couldn't allow the enemy to capture Princess Ling Meng and get away.

Lei Jian Hong snorted coldly. The female disciple rose to meet them, and then, "Bang! Bang!" the two young women were struck by a palm each. They flew backwards with wisps of blood flowing from the corners of their mouths. The three black-clothed individuals then flew up and disappeared.

It's not that Lei Jian Hong didn't wish to kill the two women — he just couldn't.

His hatred dictated no other option in the Princess's matter. However, in the case of the other two women — one had the support of the Sun and the Tang Family, while the other had the backing of the Dugus. The three great families would come together if something were to happen to those two. They would become a problem-big-enough to put his younger brother Li's family in a disadvantageous position.

A little while later...

A little white shadow flashed past. It was followed by hoof beats; their sound resembled that of a rain-shower. The hoof beats had sounded only a moment ago, and a strong horse was already turning the street to arrive at the scene of the battle. Silhouettes flashed as two men descended from the horseback.

There was a pool of blood on the ground. Ye Gu Han's lone body lay in the midst of it.

"Little Ye! Ye Gu Han!" Jun Wu Yi exclaimed in alarm. He dropped down besides Ye Gu Han's body. He was supposed to hide the truth about his healed legs, but he had abandoned that appearance now. He kneeled beside Ye Gu Han, and took his left wrist in his hand. Then, pure Xuan Qi started to flow from Jun Wu Yi, and into the seriously injured man. Ye Gu Han didn't have much life-force left in him.

Ye Gu Han had suffered major blood loss. His body had also been inflicted with serious injuries. His energy reserves had all but dried up. His chances of survival looked very slim. Had it not been for the concerns and anxiety of his heart — perhaps he wouldn't have survived till now. However, his expression had already started to slacken. It seemed as if his spirit had started to leave his body. He had incomparable willpower, but it's hard to resist elapse of life-force when the angel of death descends.

Then, Ye Gu Han's consciousness cleared because of the pure Xuan Qi that flowed into his body from Jun Wu Yi's. He forced his eyes open, and saw Jun Wu Yi's thin face. His eyes lit-up as an expression of urgency overtook his face.

Anxious... plea... Ye Gu Han was full of such emotions.

"What happened here?" Jun Wu Yi asked with a sense of urgency, but Ye Gu Han was unable to speak. Jun Wu Yi then looked around. [This street is supposed to be bustling with people. But there is no one else here; it's so quite!]

[Isn't this very strange? Where has everyone gone off to?]

“Does anybody know what happened here?!” Jun Wu Yi roared in anger. The entire street reverberated with his shout.

Still... no one replied.

Ye Gu Han and Jun Wu Yi were contemporaries of their generation. In fact, the Third Master of the Jun Family was a little older than Ye Gu Han. The Ye and the Jun Family used to have a somewhat friendly relationship. Therefore, Jun Wu Yi and Ye Gu Han used to be friends. Then, the Ye Family's power declined. And so, Jun Wu Yi and Ye Gu Han hadn't seen each other since. That happened around ten years ago. Jun Wu Yi hadn't expected to see his dear friend after ten years... and that too when the man was on the brink of death.

Ye Gu Han felt Jun Wu Yi's pure Xuan Chi enter his system. He was surprised to realize that Jun Wu Yi had surpassed his cultivation. Jun Wu Yi had reached the upper reaches of the mid-Sky-Xuan level. It was very astonishing. However, Ye Gu Han also felt his chances at living fade away at the same time. Therefore, his eyes become more and more urgent as the pure Xuan Qi entered his body... but it was soon replaced by a look of pure wrath.

Jun Wu Yi looked-on as Ye Gu Han's aura became weaker and weaker. He then looked up “Mo Xie... can you... save him?”

Jun Mo Xie sighed, [Third Uncle is asking me to do this... even he can't do it himself.] Truth to be told, the Young Master Jun had full faith in the Hongjun Pagoda's abilities. He was sure that he could revive a person regardless of the extent of their injuries. He had been able to eliminate the poison that had plagued his Uncle's body for a decade. In fact, it had even worked when Hai Chen Feng had smashed his own Dantian and Xuan Qi circulation to pieces.

Ye Gu Han's condition was very precarious; in fact, he was almost done for. However, Jun Mo Xie never considered himself a savior. Moreover, he didn't have any favorable opinions of Ye Gu Han and Princess Ling Meng. In fact, assisting them was likely to

result in more trouble for him. Hence, there wouldn't be the slightest advantage in helping him — this transaction would result only in a loss.

However, it was his Third Uncle who was asking for help; it was difficult for him to refuse his uncle in such a situation. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie unhurriedly and unwillingly crouched alongside his uncle. He reached with his arm and took Ye Gu Han's hand from Jun Wu Yi. He then slowly closed his own eyes. Next, he initiated the Art of Unlocking Heaven's Fortune. The pure Xuan Qi started to pour out steadily. However, his eyebrows couldn't help but twitch a little.

The Young Master Jun was startled by the extent of Ye Gu Han's injuries. [They can't be taken lightly. His injuries are similar to the ones Hai Chen Feng had suffered. It's almost certain that he will die from these injuries. In fact, it's a miracle that he has held-on, and hasn't died from his wounds! It seems that he doesn't have even half-of-his-breath left. It seems that his conviction is the only thing that remains in his body!]

Jun Mo Xie's aura covered the injured man's body. He had been injured in many places. There must be at least thirty places where he suffered injuries... perhaps more. His lower abdomen was pierced, his shoulder was damaged seriously by sword energy; the sides of his body had been opened, the palm attacks on his chest had completely shattered his rib cage... and his five vital points had been displaced. He was in a very bad state. [Damn!]

Jun Mo Xie had the utmost confidence in his Art of Unlocking Heaven's Fortune when confronted with such a condition. However, he didn't see the slightest of chance of curing Ye Gu Han... Jun Mo Xie could only extend the man's life by preventing his injuries from getting worse — by ensuring that he didn't die from them. However, he couldn't provide surety of healing the man...

Dugu Xiao Yi and Sun Xiao Mei staggered towards them from the

distance. They called-out in a loud voice, “Brother Mo Xie, the Princess has been captured! We must quickly save her!”

Jun Mo Xie could tell that the two women had been injured badly as well. He was about to welcome them. However, he remained seated after he heard their words. He thought, [how is the Princess’s fate any of my business? Why on earth are you demanding ‘me’ to do my utmost for her? I’ve got nothing to do with her. And can’t you see Ye Gu Han’s condition? And now you want my Third Uncle to do his utmost? Why? And for what reason?]

However, Ye Gu Han’s entire body started to tremble when he heard this. His face, which was deathly pale, suddenly flushed with a bit of color. His eyes became a little brighter and warm with hope. He looked at Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi — entreating them to save the Princess.

Ye Gu Han was grasping at straws. He had noticed that Jun Wu Yi’s level had exceeded his own, and that he was at the border of the Sky Xuan realm’s mid-mark. Therefore, there would still be a chance of saving the Princess if were to undertake the task.

Jun Wu Yi thought for a moment and asked softly, “You want us to save the Princess?”

Ye Gu Han’s eyes showed a shred of happiness in response.

“Stop with the fuss. How do you think we will save her with our strengths? Just speak frankly; you want us to throw away our lives!” Jun Mo Xie continued to use the Art of Unlocking Heaven’s Fortune. He didn’t even raise his eyebrows, “Third Uncle’s Xuan Qi has reached a high level. But his body is still weak. His health is infirm, and he is unable to walk. And they had the strength to leave you like this; not only are you asking my uncle... but you’re even asking someone as weak as me? Moreover, I don’t have any intention of saving her; nor do I have the strength. There is an ancient saying — Life and death, the fates are decided by the

heavens. This must an act of fate.”

[Do you think that I’m foolish? Work hard to no avail... What good would it bring us if save that stupid Princess? My third uncle’s recovery will be exposed along with his strength. Not only that, my strength will be exposed in that process too. Is it not enough that I’ve stopped you from dying? Can’t you be content with that? Even if there were others in my place... even the Eight Great Masters wouldn’t have been able to use this method; not even Yun Bei Chen!]

Ye Gu Han’s breathing was already weak, but now it became urgent and frantic since he had started to pant heavily due to his anger. Jun Mo Xie could feel a rapid increase in his pulse. His chest shook as he gasped for air. And because of that a bone in that area got fractured; it made a distinct sound...

Ye Gu Han stubbornly looked at Jun Mo Xie. His expression was one of inexhaustible anger at first... then, one of sadness before it eventually turned into one of a ‘pleading’ man. Jun Mo Xie’s heart shook as he witnessed such a mournful expression. He was sure that Ye Gu Han would’ve undoubtedly abandoned his self-respect and pride if he could speak, and would’ve then beseeched the Young Master Jun to save the Princess.

Suddenly, Ye Gu han’s face flushed, and a gurgling noise emanated from his throat. It seemed that he was using the entirety of his remaining strength for one last effort. His mouth opened, but he was barely able to spit out two weak words, “Request... save...”

Then, his head crooked and he fainted without a whimper.

Ye Gu Han had chosen to burn the last of his life-force to say these words.

He hadn’t been able to finish his sentence. However, Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi clearly understood what he meant to ask of them, “I request you; save Ling Meng!” He had spent the last moments of

his life and his life-force to make this request...

“Is he... dead?” Jun Wu Yi seemed sad and anxious as he asked.

“He hasn’t died yet... though he’s nearly dead. He is in a somewhat ‘suspended’ condition near death.” Jun Mo Xie’s hand was still pouring pure aura into Ye Gu Han. “However, things could take a turn for the worst if his condition remains the same.”

“To save people is like putting out a fire; you still haven’t saved everyone!” Dugu Xiao Yi rushed over. She cried-out as she grabbed the front of Jun Mo Xie’s jacket. “Hurry up and save Princess Ling Meng; what are you waiting for?!”

“How is this my concern?” Jun Mo Xie looked at inexplicably, “Why do you want me to save the Princess? A Prince or something should be dealing with this matter. You want me to go and throw away my life? Ye Gu Han is Sky Xuan expert. Can’t you see how they’ve turned him into a mere sack of blood? I’ve no strength in comparison; yet you want me to go and save her? How can those words even come out from your mouth?”

Jun Mo Xie rebuked in his heart, [Princess Ling Meng is not you; so why on earth should I exert myself for such a stupid matter? I had rushed over for your sake; who thought it would turn into such a big problem...]

“You... uhh... then what do we do?” Dugu Xiao Yi recalled that Jun Mo Xie was that powerful. In fact, he couldn’t even match her. So how would he deal with multiple Sky Xuan experts? What had she just said? She suddenly regretted her words, and was now at a loss, “Why... haven’t those guards from the Imperial Palace arrived yet?”

Those words were of no interest to the listeners. Jun Wu Yi and Jun Mo Xie looked at each other in tacit understanding.

“Mo Xie, as an act of kindness to Ye Gu Han... we should help. And after all... she is the Princess.” Jun Wu Yi said in a tactful

manner. He knew that his nephew wasn't interested in Princess Ling Meng. He was well aware that his nephew would actually sit and watch idly.

Hence, he decided to use Ye Gu Han's name instead of the Princess. He had said this since he had already figured that his nephew would make no attempts to rescue her otherwise.

He knew his nephew well. He knew his nephew was more than capable of doing just that. In fact, that would be the youngster's natural instinct — and he'd bear a clear conscience in the regard as well.

"I won't do it! I have no interest!" Jun Mo Xie refused his Third Uncle as well. He had a faint feeling that, [This doesn't seem like a minor matter... the cost of my identity's exposure would be... would be far from inconsequential...]

[I wouldn't do anything since it has nothing to do with me — even if she were the daughter of a deity; let alone she's a princess; I would rather use this free time to tease Little White...]

[Then again... the Great Assassin Jun won't work when I have no advantage from the transaction...]

"I will go; even if you don't!" Jun Wu Yi angrily propped-up from the ground and jumped onto the horse. "I do not go for the Princess; but I go for Ye Gu Han! Ye Gu Han would commit a bloody purge of the city for the Princess — just as your grandfather did for you! How can we sit back and ignore such affections?!"

Chapter 263: Get Someone Else to Do One's Dirty Work?[1]

Jun Mo Xie wouldn't have agreed irrespective of what his uncle would've said — except that he mentioned that incident. And this moved the Young Master Jun deeply.

Jun Mo Xie's heart shook. He suddenly remembered the manner in which Jun Zhan Tian had issued a call to war; the manner in which his grandfather had led his troops to commit that purge in the capital. This memory suddenly warmed his heart.

This memory moved Jun Mo Xie the most.

Hit-man Jun was aware that his third uncle's decision was based more on sentiment than reason. However, it would result in a lot of harm to the Jun Family if Jun Wu Yi truly undertook that task — regardless of his success in saving the Princess. However, the heavens find a way when a man of noble character sets out on a righteous task.

It would be difficult to cover-up his uncle's involvement if the well-known general was to get involved in the matter. However, if Jun Mo Xie himself undertook the task, then...

“Fine then; I'll go! Damn!” Jun Mo Xie took a deep breath. Then, he quickly transferred the pure Xuan Qi into Ye Gu Han's dry meridians to keep him alive for the time-being. “But you need not accompany me, Uncle — I alone will be more than sufficient. So, you first return home. But ensure that his body doesn't sway much on the way back...”

“I understand these rescue operations; unlike you,” Jun Wu Yi interrupted him. “But I will unwillingly step back.”

“You're correct to have faith in me... however; those are five Sky Xuan experts,” Jun Mo Xie smiled bitterly. He got up and mounted his horse. Then, he pressed his legs to the horse's side, and

prepared to speed away.

“You... scoundrel! You... be careful!” Dugu Xiao Yi’s heart was suddenly seized by her affection for Jun Mo Xie. She was ‘very well aware’ of the Jun Scoundrel’s strength. She felt like blocking his way to prevent him from leaving. Dugu Xiao Yi was extremely anxious. So much so, that she temporarily harbored a selfish thought... [its better to keep this scoundrel safe than rescue the Princess.]

Jun Mo Xie mounted his horse and paused for a moment. He decided that he wouldn’t look back since he had chosen a course of action. His horse neighed and raised its hooves. It then galloped off at great speed.

Dugu Xiao Yi’s delicate body trembled. Sun Xiao Mei slowly came up beside her, and held her hand. She then said, “Don’t worry; nothing will happen to him.”

“Elder sister Xiao Mei, I was too much... compelling him like this... what would I do if something happened to him?” Dugu Xiao Yi asked hesitatingly. She was worried out of her wits.

“He won’t; relax!” Sun Xiao Mei thought, [How did you force him? It was the Third Master Jun’s words. He probably wouldn’t have listened if you had tried to force him ten thousand times. You couldn’t have forced him. I’m afraid that the present ‘you’ in incapable of compelling him to do anything...]

However, these words would’ve left Dugu Xiao Yi heartbroken. Therefore, Sun Xiao Mei could only think about it.

As chance has it... the attack on Princess Ling Meng, Ye Gu Han’s arrival, his fierce battle, him getting seriously injured and finally, Lei Jian Hong grabbing the Princess and leaving — all of it had been observed by an individual hidden in the darkness.

This person was none other than Mr. Wen. He had followed Princess Ling Meng into the Aristocratic hall as the second black-

clothed man. The Aristocratic Hall allowed each invitee to have two companions. The Emperor had taken one place in Princess Ling Meng's party. Mr. Wen had then become her second guest, and had filled the last spot.

Besides his status, Mr. Wen possessed enormous strength. So much so, that even Hai Chen Feng wouldn't be able to deal with him. Things would've naturally been very different in case he had decided to lend a helping hand.

It was a pity that he didn't.

Mr. Wen admired the loyalty and affection which Ye Gu Han had displayed. He felt the urge to assist Ye Gu Han several times during the battle. However, he unfortunately could not. The Emperor had made a plan to draw out that mysterious Master, and this plan would've come to naught if he had attacked.

That Sky Xuan expert had become a nightmare for Tian Xiang's Emperor after he had saved Princess Ling Meng! The Emperor simply couldn't allow such powerful and unknown Sky Xuan experts in his Empire; especially when he couldn't keep an eye on them.

It wouldn't have mattered if this man were just a hermit. However, he had some connection to Princess Ling Meng and could get involved in Imperial disputes. The possibility of such a powerful entity's involvement in Imperial matters wasn't good news to the Emperor's ears. Therefore, the Emperor couldn't tolerate his existence.

His intentions may have been good. But it was still important to understand this man. The Emperor wouldn't be at ease until this man's position was clear to him.

This mysterious Sky Xuan expert was one matter. But the mysterious man behind the Aristocratic Hall had also turned into a nightmare for the Emperor.

Mr. Wen felt a sense of contradiction within himself... for the first time since his birth.

He had helplessly looked-on at Ye Gu Han as he fell to the ground, and lay there in silence. Mr. Wen was usually a calm man... however, he had grinded his teeth so hard that they almost snapped off. [He's a great man! He burned every bit of his energy in order to help the Princess. And the person who could've actually helped the Princess is being forced to sit and watch from the sidelines!]

[Conscience? What conscience? Ah!]

However, Princess Ling Meng had been captured. [That mysterious Sky Xuan Peak expert must be drawn out. And nothing should happen to the Princess!]

The Emperor had entrusted him with this task.

[What to do with Ye Gu Han? He's breathing his last breaths!]

Mr. Wen didn't have a choice. He didn't have the heart to ignore this. However, he couldn't do anything about it. Therefore, he looked-on with regret as Ye Gu Han's body fell on the ground, and sighed with remorse. Then, he shot-off in the direction where those assailants had escaped with the Princess, and started to give them a chase.

A strong wind blew in his face as he started pursuing them. And at that moment, he realized something. This whole plan was put together to draw out that mysterious expert, and to find the culprit behind the attacks on Princess Ling Meng. However, he knew the Emperor well. [The Emperor may have other selfish motives behind this matter!]

They had never talked about it since the great and wise Emperor obviously must've been embarrassed to admit it. However, Mr. Wen could understand — Ye Gu Han's existence was a matter of anxiety for the Emperor. In fact, it was a matter of great anxiety.

No man could endure another eyeing his wife for more than a decade. It was out of question to discard such a situation even when it came to the Great Emperor's heart. The Emperor was, after all, also a man. In fact, his desire for control would be greater than others — it certainly couldn't have been weaker.

It didn't matter that the man hadn't crossed the line. As long as the thought was there... it was a huge crime warranting no pardon from a capital punishment.

It was necessary for Ye Gu Han to die.

This thing was the real purpose among several other more pressing matters. The Emperor had in fact killed with a borrowed knife.

[He planned this arrangement!]

[No wonder the Princess's bodyguards were so weak, and had no desire to act... no wonder he sent just me to rescue the princess; and no one else! No wonder! It was almost the same as a 'ban' on any other help... so that's what's going on!]

Mr. Wen had no choice but to admire the conduct of the country's Emperor. His plan was precise and accurate. His thinking was cautious and meticulous. [My own schemes can't be as malicious as his.]

He could see the three people in the distance ahead of him. However, Mr. Wen was having a tough time in understanding his own emotions.

Jun Mo Xie rode his horse swiftly and quickly crossed several streets. He was ruthless whipping the horse, and it was travelling at the speed of an arrow. The corners his powerful horse's mouth had started to foam. The Young Master Jun quickly looked around to see that no one else was there. Then, he tightened his grip on his horse using his legs. He then tossed away the reins. Then, Jun Mo Xie's towering silhouette disappeared from on the horse's back...

The horse let out a long neigh and stopped as the Young Master Jun disappeared. The reins thrown away by the Young Master Jun got entangled in a nearby tree, and formed of a tight loop.

He would either do something or not. But when he did act; he'd do it with a sense of swift decisiveness. He would give his all.

This was the Hitman Jun's code of conduct. Nothing would matter once he had made up his mind.

It wouldn't have mattered if Princess Ling Meng was hacked to pieces in front of him if he had decided against saving her. Hit-man Jun would just calmly look-on. In fact, he might've commented on how the knife technique wasn't good... or how the weapon wasn't sharp enough. However, since he had decided to save her — he would ensure that not a hair on her body was harmed. He would rescue her whole, and then escape.

Strong Aura was flowing all around. It was as if a meteor-shower had slammed forcefully into the ocean, and had evoked large waves in the sky. These waves then rolled around in all the four directions; endlessly.

Jun Mo Xie initiated the Yin-Yang Escape. His speed increased tremendously in comparison to his regular swiftness. He was like an illusion; he was at one place at one moment, and at another the next. There was no one who could see this mysterious scene. However, the Young Master Jun was really enjoying himself.

Jun Mo Xie had realized that he had started to get increasingly proficient at controlling Yin-Yang Escape ever since he had unlocked the second level of the Hong Jun Pagoda. In fact, he could now use it according to his desires. Jun Mo Xi was wholeheartedly making use of this skill right now. He felt fully integrated with the world, and had a feeling of detachment from all worldly matters. It felt as if he could go anywhere in this vast world; no place was beyond as long as he desired it...

The Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune was flowing like the

Yangtze river[2] inside his body; unending and unlimited. Aura was continuously seeping out of the Hongjun Pagoda... the Art of Unlocking Heaven's Fortune was working without any clogs. There was a flow of unceasing Aura within his body since he had opened the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune. And this entire Aura was going straight into the Hongjun Pagoda again...

These things had apparently taken the form of a loop; a perfect loop.

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but recall some of the Daoist teachings from his previous life even though he hadn't been able to understand them at that point — Life is like a sea of misery, and the human body is the only raft available to cross it.

Jun Mo Xie felt that those words were very much in line with his present condition.

The Young Master Jun wanted to remain in that wondrous state for a longer period of time. However, the prevailing situation didn't allow him extend the time period for which he could remain in that state. It was truly a pity...

How could reality ever fulfill people's expectations?

Suddenly, there was a change up ahead.

Jun Mo Xie 'whooshed' across and silently covered over thirty meters in one step. He only left behind one whirlpool of wind after another in that illusory state. And these whirlpools were slow to subside...

Three people were continuously changing direction as they moved towards the outside of the city. They were like wisps of smoke. Their movements were swift and nimble. The motion of their limbs was smart. However, he could see that those three people were quite formidable. These people would somehow know of if someone was coming towards them from the front. They would then shift their positions to avoid meeting the person. These

people hadn't bumped into anyone the entire way; except for a few common people.

And a common person wouldn't be able to detect them given the speed they were moving at. He would just feel a burst of cool breeze blowing towards him, and the assailants would continue without leaving a single trace.

Notes:

To get someone else to do one's dirty work/ to kill with a borrowed knife, is an art of Warfare Deceptions. More details can be found in the 36 stratagems of Chinese warfare.

Yangtze river; Long river in China. One of the longest in the world.

Chapter 264: You Got Framed!

Jun Mo Xie took a deep breath, and then increased his speed further. He stayed a bit over a hundred meters behind the three black clothed people, and matched their pace. He suddenly detected a fluctuating aura, and realized that someone else was also shadowing these three. And he could tell from that person's movements that his cultivation was much higher than the three he was chasing...

[Don't tell me; is he from the Imperial palace?] Jun Mo Xie contemplated for a while and came up with a plan...

Mr. Wen also felt someone else's presence. However, he couldn't locate this person when he looked around. However, Mr. Wen had a very powerful awareness, and he could tell that this other person was an inconceivably-formidable expert.

[But why can't I locate him?]

The area opened-up ahead. The three indistinguishable shadows jumped over the city walls, and fled far away in a matter of moments. Mr. Wen chose that moment to investigate, and halted there on purpose for a while. He didn't believe that those 'youngsters' could break away from him. So, he decided to see how that man could hide himself in that wide-open expanse.

[I don't think that the greatest of the senior-most generation could hide themselves from my eyes in this large and open area!]

However, Mr. Wen would be disappointed.

He waited for a moment, but couldn't catch that person. All he could do — was feel a strong and formidable aura arrive, and then go away into the distance. In fact, the aura traversed into the distance through that bare space. Yet, he couldn't even see the man.

[This... how is this possible?]

[A man such as this exists in the mortal world!] Mr. Wen took a deep breath. However, his insides were now brimming with burning aspirations. [What a great life it would be... if I were to fight such an expert hand-to-hand?]

Mr. Wen quickly adjusted his personal state after-almost spitting out air, and then lightly jumped off as well. He floated down the city walls as light as a strand of hair. And then, he too faded away in the distance. The sleep-deprived soldiers guarding the gate didn't notice any of it, and remained ignorant of what happened.

“Big Brother, the condition of Fifth doesn't look very good. I've been pouring Xuan Qi into him, but it's not making any difference. We need to cure his injuries quickly. Otherwise, I'm afraid...” Zhou Jian Ming's voice had a sense of urgency to it.

“Ye Gu Han was truly fierce! The fourth's condition is also bad,” Lei Jian Hong gnashed his teeth with hatred. He then rapidly said, “The fifth's condition is quite serious. But he will be back to normal if we heal his injuries successfully. However, fourth has been permanently disabled. His shoulder has been cut off and his face has been disfigured... damn that Ye Gu Han!”

“I didn't expect this Ye Gu Han to be that much of a problem! We're each at Sky Xuan level; we aren't inferior to anyone in this Empire! That man had to face us all at once, and yet things still turned out this way!” The Third-female disciple, Fang Piao Hong sighed. “Fortunately, he was left for dead! Though it is a pity what he did to the Fourth Brother...”

“This is all because of this b*tch Ling Meng!” Lei Jian Hong roared angrily. “I'll make this b*tch regret her life after I find out about that mysterious man with the throwing knives! I'll take care of her... what a bullsh*t princess she is!”

“We must wait till Master arrives even if we get our desired outcome,” Fang Piao Hong sighed again. “The Fourth and the Fifth brothers are dying; the Sixth has no hope for recovery. The

Seventh-to-Tenths' bones have already been buried in the Tian Xiang City. Who would've thought that such a thing would happen... that things could turn out like this?!" she continued with another sigh, "Master will fly into a rage when he hears about this! Big Brother, Master will arrive in two days. You must make preparations for his arrival!"

"What preparations can I make?" Lei Jian Hong said somewhat despairingly. "If our father doesn't beat me to death — I fear he will put me in condition where I'll be bedridden for half-a-year! I had led nine disciples here... and now, only the three of us remain. Won't this be a huge blow to our old man? It'll be a miracle if he forgives me easily!"

Zhou Jian Ming also sighed, "I suppose we three can't take it easy now. Master will arrive after two days. At the appointed time... oh dear! I don't have the guts to imagine how the old man will react."

"Master had poured all his heart into us eleven disciples... now... oh dear! I don't know how he'll grieve!" Fang Piao Hong said sadly. She couldn't prevent her eyes from becoming red...

A small grove appeared in front of them as they talked. They first looked behind to see that they weren't being followed. Then, they entered it without hesitation. Hit-man Jun followed them from behind like a 'formless being' without any physical properties. He floated in the air as he followed them in.

Jun Mo Xie had listened to the kidnappers very carefully. Lei Wu Bei's disciples had also taken part in the raid for the Xuan Core on that night with the thunderstorm.

Jun Mo Xie was startled by what he heard; [Lei Bu Wei, the Cold-Blooded Master is arriving in Tian Xiang City in two days?!]

[This is big news!]

The three people were cautious even though they were inside dense woods. They changed directions and turned twice; first left,

and then right. Then, they stopped in front of a dry tree stump. Then, their senior-most disciple Lei Jian Hong extended his hand, and pressed something at an unknown place. The tree stump suddenly moved away, and revealed a huge stone slab. And that slab then moved away to reveal the round entrance of a cave.

Jun Mo Xie took a single step and disappeared inside the moment it was revealed. The cave was genuinely safe at that moment since there was no one inside. The three people including Lei Jian Hong adjusted their positions, and entered deeper; slowly and cautiously. This cave was very narrow, and two people couldn't go inside at the same time without bumping into each other. Had they known that the Young Master Jun was already there... quietly waiting for them to enter...

The tree stump slowly returned to its original position after they entered. The ground once again looked undisturbed; not a single sound of any activity could be heard...

Mr. Wen had followed those three people till the grove. They hadn't been able to evade him, or go out of the range of his sense of detection. In fact, he had seen them enter the woods. However, he had wasted some time in an attempt to search for that formidable person. Therefore, he had arrived a little too late at the cave's entrance. The stump had returned to its original place by the time he had arrived. There wasn't even a single abrasion left to indicate the entrance. He searched everywhere, but couldn't locate where the people he had followed had gone-off to. Mr. Wen could only feel their auras. He could clearly feel that they were nearby, but he couldn't locate them. He couldn't help but worry. This was truly a case of 'an old cat burning its whiskers'.^[1]

Mr. Wen was certain that these people must've gone underground using a mysterious mechanism in order to hide their trail. However, where did they go after digging into the ground? He was sure that he could draw them out if he launched his skill to sweep across the area. But that would arouse their suspicion. It

was a pity that he had to beat the grass to scare the snake[2]. He couldn't think of another plan.

[However, Princess Ling Meng would remain in their hands if they didn't show themselves. And what will I do if something bad happens to her...? How will I face the Emperor?] Mr. Wen felt somewhat embarrassed as he frowned. He thought hard and incessantly about countermeasures for that eventuality...

The cave led to a huge space. The soil was patted down firmly. However, the place had a somewhat damp smell to it since it was underground.

"You two, hurry up and heal the Fourth and Fifth. I will question this b*tch!" Lei Jian Hong had a somewhat murderous look about him.

"Big Brother, I know they're your junior-disciple-brothers, and you're angry with Princess Ling Meng. But I must urge that you consider your methods for bit." Fang Piao Hong hesitated, but she continued nevertheless, "I can see that this matter has brought pain to Brother You Ran. I can see... that our identities haven't been exposed. If we ask Brother You Ran to arrive while feigning to be a good person... and he comes as a 'hero saving the Princess from danger'... If You Ran is successful in this way... it would be considered..."

"...That's good. Contact Brother You Ran! I won't harm her," Lei Jian Hong gnashed his teeth.

Fang Piao Hong cleared her throat, but remained silent. She then diverted her full attention and energy to heal her fellow disciple.

Jun Mo Xie's heart started to beat wildly in the darkness, "Brother You Ran?!"

These two characters, "You Ran"... Li You Ran... this meant that the youngster couldn't be taken lightly anymore.

[Don't tell me... Li You Ran is involved with these people in this

huge incident?]

Lei Jian Hong picked Princess Ling Meng in his arms, and then set her down against the wall. He then reached above and placed his hand on her head. Pure Xuan Qi entered her body. This made the Princess wake-up.

“You rascal! Let me go!” Princess Ling Meng had barely opened her eyes and was already very angry. She shouted, “I want to go to Uncle Ye! Let me go!”

“Your Majesty, you wish to be free, and you will be... easily. All I need from you is an answer to one question. And then, you’ll be allowed to leave.” Lei Jian Hong snorted. He said this to her as he sneered, “Your Highness, you embrace several throwing knives and hold those damaged knife very dearly. Isn’t that strange, Princess Ling Meng? Honorable Princess, I’ll set you free if you tell me who the owner of these knives is... I won’t break my promise.”

“The owner of the throwing knives?” Princess Ling Meng opened her eyes in astonishment. These people had kidnapped her just to ask about this matter? “I have never seen that highly-skilled person; so, how would I know?”

“Ha Ha! ...Princess, when you speak like that... do you take the three of us for children!” Lei Jian Hong smiled ruthlessly. “Many of my junior-brother-disciples were killed by him. In fact, we had never heard of anyone that skilled in the ‘secular’[3] world. But the first task he had undertaken was meant to save your life! Don’t tell me that the Princess has forgotten?! That man had arrived the last time you had encountered assassins; his first and only action was to save your life! But he truly is a ghost if the Princess insists on not knowing his identity!”

Jun Mo Xie shook on the inside! He had saved the Princess in secrecy the last time she was attacked. [Have I implicated her by saving her?] This resentment was hard to figure...

[How did these people know the connection between these two

independent matters?] Jun Mo Xie's train-thought immediately went to Li You Ran.

[So that's how it is! Everything gets resolved if we take the Li Family into consideration!]

"You killed Uncle Ye for this question?" Princess Ling Meng couldn't move. However, her eyes bulged as she looked at her captor with utter hatred. It seemed like she would start to shoot flames at him soon.

"Well! The Princess she can forget about leaving this place since she insists on not telling us about the origin of these knives...!" Lei Jian Hong gave an evil smile as he said this in a low voice. "We have several other methods with which we can make you speak."

Jun Mo Xie was urgently thinking of the actions he could take. He had thought that he would approach Princess Ling Meng, and then disappear with her by using the Hong Jun Pagoda. However, he was unsuccessful despite several tries. [Apparently the Hong Jun Pagoda can't accommodate anyone besides me...? Or perhaps my cultivation isn't enough?]

Jun Mo Xie's wishful thinking was shattered into pieces since that plan didn't work. It would've been very easy for him if the Princess could've been transported into the Hong Jun Pagoda. Jun Mo Xie was confident that he would've been able to take advantage of the chaos that would've unfolded. He would've then whisked her away. In fact, he could've even injured or killed one of the assailants.

Saving the Princess still wasn't that difficult. However, these people were Sky Xuan experts. So he'd end-up in a dire position if they found out about his whereabouts.

Lei Jian Hong pinched the Princess's jaw and forced her to look up. He then asked her maliciously, "I'll ask you for the last time; will you still not speak? I'll have no choice but to punish the Princess if she remains firm on this!"

Suddenly, a lofty, cold, severe and mocking laugh rang out of nowhere; it echoed cruelly inside the cave. “Lei Wu Bei teaches such trash? What a cold blooded senior is he? This is truly laughable!”

The voice hadn’t yet faded when a blue light covered the area. Then, a delicate throwing-knife came flying out of nothingness. It then transformed into a dream-like azure color as it reflected everyone’s face.

Whoosh!

The throwing knife embedded itself into the earthen wall. It unexpectedly issued the same sound as a rotten piece of logs’.

The three people jumped in shock. Lei Jian Hong covered his chest with his hands to protect it. He then shouted loudly, “Since your honored self has arrived... what do you want? Why are you in hiding? I’ve been waiting for you for a long time!”

Zhou Jian Ming and Fang Piao Hong grabbed the handle of their swords and drew them out. They kept their swords horizontally in front of their chests; they then looked around as if facing a very dangerous enemy.

A faintly discernable voice was heard laughing, “You youngsters of the younger generation truly overestimate your capabilities in challenging me!”

Princes Ling Meng’s eyes welled-up with tears since she was emotionally moved. She struggled as she asked, “Senior... is that you? I beg you! I beg you; take me to Uncle Ye! I beg you to kill these people and avenge my uncle!”

This underground movement — especially Lei Jian Hong’s loud bellowing was clearly heard by Mr. Wen outside. This helped him in locating their position.

He had been paying attention for the slightest of clues. However, Lei Jian Hong’s loud bellowing had provided him with the best

possible orientation for locating them. He quickly arrived in front of the entrance of the cave, and held his breath as he attentively listened. He could enter their hide-out as long as he could find its exact location.

However, Lei Jian Hong and his two companions had just discovered a shocking incident. In fact, it was a terrifying, strange and an astonishing occurrence... Princess Ling Meng's delicate body had been propped up against the wall; but it was suddenly raised into the air with a 'whooshing' sound. It then started to float in the air. It was like an arrow had suddenly been released from a bow.

Lei Jian Hong jumped in alarm, and pounced at the Princess. However, he was little late. Jun Mo Xie had already broken through the stone slab at the entrance with a loud "Bang!"; with the Princess in his arms. The bright sunlight seeped into the cave.

Lei Jian Hong and the others shouted as they followed after them.

Mr. Wen was pacing in front of the tree stump. He had been hesitantly thinking about destroying the surface in order to rescue Princess Ling Meng... or something even quicker. Then, he heard the loud rumbling-like landslide. This was then followed by a sudden explosive sound as the entrance to the cave crumbled. Mr. Wen was caught off-guard and fell to the ground. He was about to open his mouth to curse when he saw a body coming towards him; it was almost as if it had been thrown towards him — this delicate body was Princess Ling Meng's...

The three block-clothed and masked people hurried outside and surrounded him. Then, one of them shouted, "You bastard! You stayed hidden the last time. And you hid yourself again now! But you didn't escape, did you?! I'll see how you manage to flee now!"

Mr. Wen had just extended his hands to catch Princess Ling Meng. He then suddenly found himself surrounded, and

confronted. He couldn't help but whine about his hardships...

This person had framed him!

Notes:

Chinese Idiom: Even experts can sometimes make mistakes.

Chinese Idiom: To make a din to draw the enemy.

Secular world means the usual/mundane/ordinary world. It's different from the world of martial arts. This term basically refers to the materialistic world, and is usually looked down upon by the top most figures of the martial world.

Chapter 265: I Will Withdraw When the Task Is Completed

How could the experienced Mr. Wen not understand the situation he was in?

He had been planning to save the Princess. However, this person had then appeared very inconveniently. Moreover, it was evident that this person had the strength to rescue the Princess. But, he had tossed the Princess into his arms as soon as he had escaped outside. [But... how was this man certain that I've come to save her?]

[This hateful man! He framed me for his actions to cover his tracks... now what do I do?]

[This is very problematic!]

He had initially decided to follow them in secrecy. It would've been a case of a mantis hunting a cicada unaware of the oriole behind it.[1] Or perhaps it was like an elderly fisherman taking advantage of the fight between two cranes. However, not only was the elderly fisherman unable to take the advantage — he had been made a scapegoat! This was ridiculous.

His presence had been exposed. He would no longer be able to investigate the mysterious Sky Xuan expert anymore... Moreover, he had been rendered incapable of capturing each of the kidnappers since the Princess was in his arms now. And his plan to interrogate them individually had obviously gone down the drain as well. This had obviously turned into a big problem for him since he had no one to look for help. Hence, he was left staring at the kidnappers with a stupefied expression on his face.

He analyzed the situation, [I won't be able to investigate anything since these young kidnappers have spotted me...]

Mr. Wen was obviously much more powerful than Lei Jian Hong

and his companions. However, his mood was still very regretful.

[That mysterious man had come to save the Princess... but then why would he bring her here? And why would you leave her mid-way; especially with these three in pursuit? They could've captured her back again! Let's say your plot worked... how could you call yourself a 'man' even if you were to succeed like this?]

Princess Ling Meng was still struggling and pleading non-stop, "Senior, I beg you to kill these people and avenge my uncle Ye..."

Princess Ling Meng hadn't been able to see the mysterious 'senior' properly — despite the fact that she had been in his arms. However, she had still felt safe. [He is very much like Uncle Ye. I'll be in no danger as long as he's here.] Hence, her mind had subconsciously shifted to Ye Gu Han's well-being.

Then, that towering person had tossed her away. She had then been caught by another person. The young girl had been born with a keen sensing ability. She could tell from his person's odor that he was the Imperial Palace's honored guest; the Emperor's mysterious friend — Mr. Wen.

[He has also arrived here! Now these two extremely skilled people can join hands! No one can escape their combined strength. They'll be able to avenge Uncle Ye! And such skilled people can also save Uncle Ye's life...]

Mr. Wen's arms were also warm. But they lacked that inner-warmth which gives rise to a sense of security...

Princess Ling Meng's thought process was wonderful. However, it was also naïve and fantastical. How could life ever move according to one's wishes? The reality of this matter was as different as from her wishes as it could've been. In fact, there were no similarities between them...

Mr. Wen had already been angered by the way things had turned out. Naturally, he was more than brimming with a desire to fight.

He secured Princess Ling Meng with one hand — the other he positioned in front to fight with. That hand didn't bear any weapon. Yet, it looked like he held a huge cleaver in it. He seemed so formidable that he had already secured an advantage. He fiercely looked at the three individuals from his younger generation; it seemed as if he would cut them up to pieces.

Mr. Wen had figured that the man had somehow managed to follow their trail without getting discovered. He was sure that the mysterious expert had saved the princess, and had then choreographed this ridiculous scene to protect his own identity. He could tell that this mysterious man didn't wish to expose his identity since it could've meant a great deal to him. Hence, this highly skilled person had shifted the blame on Mr. Wen. — The person who stands up first is always considered superior; such was the thought process of this world. Naturally, Mr. Wen was somewhat embarrassed to be the 'second'. However, what pinched Mr. Wen the most was the fact that he hadn't been able to catch a single glimpse of that mysterious expert.

He had been left with a sense of gloom and inferiority, and had hence remained silent. This was the main reason behind his enraged state of mind. He was a man of extraordinary self. But Mr. Wen had never felt so inferior in his entire life. Mr. Wen's strength was unpredictable. No one could ever consider him a mere peak Sky Xuan expert. In fact, even the Eight Great Masters wouldn't find him an easy opponent.

However, Mr. Wen had been caught up in a tricky play here. But he was an experienced man, and was quickly able to assess the variables involved. He jumped out of the circle and spoke with a solemn expression on his face, "So, you guys are the Supreme Cold Blooded Master's disciples? I am not aware of the Supreme Master Lei's well-being of late. And I certainly don't know how my Tian Xiang Empire has offended the Supreme Master Lei! What could have we possibly done for him to take an action such as this...

sending his disciples to capture our Imperial Princess? Has the honored senior forgotten the treaty we have as allies?”

“Supreme Master? What do you speak of Old Man? Come here and die by your father’s hands!” Lei Jian Hong denied and abused. Though, he was rather amazed by these turn of events.

[Who is this old man? His strength is barely at the peak Sky Xuan realm. He’s alone, and surrounded by enemies on all sides... but he’s so calm in this situation... His strength is nowhere near my father’s... and what’s more... he even knows about the ‘treaty of alliance’ that was signed all those years ago! How did such a high-level personality arrive here at this critical juncture? This matter just got harder to get over with!]

[However, this old bastard’s Xuan level must be very high. He had managed to kill four of my brother disciples with those throwing knives... But such an enmity cannot be recompensed very easily!] “Old fool, have the guts to tell us your name! We have a deep-seated blood feud with you, and it is important to settle that debt!”

Mr. Wen snorted. He knew that he had been unjustly implicated. He was aware that it wouldn’t be worthwhile to explain his true status to these argumentative youngsters. And even if he did try to explain... would he be able to do it properly?

But, he was angered by the rude manner in which Lei Jian Hong spoke to him. He then suddenly flew towards Lei Jian Hong and hit his face hard. Then, he shouted, “You’re not fit to know this old man’s name! You youngsters have ruined Lei Wu Bei’s reputation! Lei Wu Bei won’t be able to save you from my wrath if you violate the alliance-treaty again — not even if you’re his own flesh! Now get lost!”

His feet left the ground once he finished speaking; he was still facing Lei Jian Hong and his companions, and was still holding the Princess’s body. Then, he slowly started to float backwards and

deeper into the lush woods. But he didn't bump into a single tree — it seemed like he had eyes at the back of his head. It even looked as if he was riding a cloud... However, they heard his faint voice again, “Tell Lei Wu Bei that the old man you spoke to is called ‘Wen’. Be sure to tell him properly so that he understands it clearly.”

Lei Jian Hong and the others couldn't help but be overwhelmed with shock as they looked at each other. Zhou Jian Ming shouted angrily after a good while had passed, “That old bastard kills four of my brothers, and yet he shamelessly talks big! We must settle this debt! We'll see where this bastard escapes-to when the Master arrives!”

Lei Jian Hong and Fang Piao Hong agreed in unison. Their enemy's skills were extraordinary. There was no way those three could've dealt with him by themselves. Therefore, they were left with no option but to give-up on fighting him at that point... even if they did so unwillingly. They could just wait for their master's arrival, and then make a plan...

Young Master Jun whistled as he slowly and leisurely returned to his tethered horse. The strong horse freed itself, and Jun Mo Xie mounted it. The Young Master Jun felt rather proud of his achievement. He raised his whip to urge his horse to return home.

He had quickly laid out the whole plan when he had realized that the mysterious expert was also following Lei Jian Hong's trail. He knew that no one could see him once he'd initiate the Yin Yang Escape. [Humph! First, come to find me; then you dogs can fight each other! This uncle doesn't have free time to play with you!]

[This is good; I've saved Princess Ling Meng without exposing my identity. I've completed my task with above satisfactory rating. The Princess should thank me by clapping her hands.]

He returned home to find Jun Wu Yi anxiously waiting for his arrival.

[What? But why?]

Ye Gu Han's condition had become so bad that he could stop breathing any moment... Even asking the Solitary Falcon to transfer his Xuan Qi had been useless. Even the so-called 'pure Xuan Qi' didn't have any effect on Ye Gu Han's condition... even an excess of Xuan Qi had been useless in his case...

...because he lacked the vitality needed to produce flesh and blood...

Even Solitary Falcon was unable to help — he didn't have any means to! The Solitary Falcon had transferred a lot of pure and high-level Xuan Qi into Ye Gu Han without knowing if the man was capable of supporting it...

Everyone stood-up as Jun Mo Xie walked in. His face immediately deflated as they asked, "Did you find the Princess?" Jun Mo Xie shook his head listlessly as he sat down on a chair. He then drank some tea and complained, "You thought too highly of me! Those people had captured her, and had escaped a long while ago. How would I be able to find her? I couldn't!"

Jun Wu Yi sighed and kept quiet. Dugu Xiao Yi wanted to say something but remained shut since Sun Xiao Mei took her small hand and pinched it. But Solitary Falcon snorted and said, "This old man has squandered a lot of Xuan Qi by pouring it into his man. I will waste no more since the Jun Kid has returned. This old man shall return to his cultivation," Then, he suddenly left without any indication. He seemed very carefree as he left.

Dugu Xiao Yi's lips twitched, "This old man is a quack. He just checked the pulse and nothing else... how could your Jun Family invite in such a swindler? What a waste of food!"

The Solitary Falcon had reached the door. He staggered when he heard this line; in fact, he almost collapsed. He snorted angrily, [what is wrong with this little girl? This injured boy couldn't have lasted if it weren't for this old man's assistance. He wouldn't have

survived till this scheming Jun ‘Brat’ returned unless this Old Man had poured his Xuan Qi and replenished his life-force!]

However, the Solitary Falcon couldn’t remain angry after he looked at that little girl’s pretty face. He then waved his sleeves and disappeared without a trace.

Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi’s expression turned strange. They would’ve noisily laughed-out if it weren’t for Ye Gu Han lying at the doors of death.

Sun Xiao Mei, the Sun Family’s eldest daughter had more experience and knowledge than the other little girl. She couldn’t completely understand Solitary Falcon’s origins. But she could tell that this person was someone very extraordinary by just looking at how he had prolonged the near-dead Ye Gu Han’s life by transferring his pure Qi until now. She could tell that this seemingly powerful expert was quite smart as well since he had restrained his temper when he was provoked by a naïve and inexperienced girl. [The consequences could’ve been very serious if he had lost his cool.]

“Mo Xie, hurry up and take a look at little Ye! His condition is quite serious!” Jun Wu Yi said.

Jun Mo Xie cleared his throat and sat down besides the injured man. To be honest — he didn’t like Ye Gu Han. And similarly, Ye Gu Han didn’t like the debauchee of the Jun Family. However, he would save the man’s life since he had promised his uncle.

Either don’t try saving him or revive him completely. This was Hit-man Jun’s ‘standard’ behavior.

Moreover, Ye Gu Han was an iron-boned warrior, and a good man. There was no harm in saving him.

Notes:

A proverb derived from a popular Chinese story. There isn’t much of an equivalent in English. The reference can be looked up

very easily, and a summaries of it are easily available in all languages.

Chapter 266: Jun Family's Ancestral Teachings

Doctor Jun Mo Xie took Ye Gu Han's hand and quickly poured pure Xuan Qi into his body. Ye Gu Han coughed feebly. It seemed as if he was being choked. Thin wisps of blood started to drip from the corners of his mouth.

“Not good!” Jun Mo Xie shook his head and frowned. He raised his head to look at Jun Wu Yi, “This is a big problem. And the expenses incurred in saving him would be a lot! I'm afraid the expenses will be very huge... extremely huge!” He then looked at Dugu Xiao Yi and Sun Xiao Mei, “You two, haven't you been through a lot already? Hurry up and go over there; rest for a while!”

When he mentioned ‘over there’... he obviously meant Guan Qing Han's court yard.

Jun Wu Yi heard this and realized that he'd need to lend a hand in mediating the situation, “Niece Xiao Yi, Niece Xiao Mei, try and find Sister Qing Han. Take some rest, ok? We both are here. So you needn't worry. This is not that serious. I have informed your families, and someone will soon come to take you home. Little Ye is from your older generation... but he is a ‘man’. Your presence will pose a problem for Mo Xie's effort in healing him.”

Dugu Xiao Yi pouted since she didn't feel very pleased with this. She agreed that Third Uncle Jun was being very reasonable, but this made her feel like an ‘outsider’. The little girl then turned her waist. She snorted to show her dissatisfaction and refused to leave. However, she was pulled away by Sun Xiao Mei. The Sun Family's eldest daughter was quite perceptive. She had long-realized that the uncle-nephew-duo had a secret language for communication when there was an inconvenient entity present in their midst.

“You really couldn't find the Princess?” Jun Wu Yi snorted and

smiled, “Would you have returned if you hadn’t found her, young fellow? You think I don’t know you boy? You either don’t make a promise, or you complete the task if you make one!”

“Why do you ask when you know?” Jun Mo Xie continued to pour Aura into Ye Gu Han’s body, and started to rectify the placement of his bones. He then let out a helpless sigh, “Third Uncle, the Princess hates me. But I can’t blame her since I act like a degenerate. Ye Gu Han may be cold, proud and aloof, but he’s a good man.”

Jun Mo Xie’s voice became serious as he continued, “Be that as it may... our decision to help them may not necessarily have been the correct one. In fact, we shouldn’t have saved them! Third Uncle, you must be aware that our Jun Family is not very stable at the moment... yet, we have brought another layer of crisis upon ourselves! I’ve already made arrangements for this matter, and I’m convinced that no one will doubt my involvement. But I may have left a few tiny clues. Dugu Xiao Yi and Sun Xiao Mei’s presence can prove to be a huge risk as well; in fact, it can be a big giveaway! Secondly, you and I know that this man’s ‘position’ is quite sensitive! That could cause a rebellion against us later... that could lead to more problems.”

Jun Mo Xie looked at Jun Wu Yi sternly, “Third uncle, you didn’t think this matter through. This matter could associate the Jun Family with this man; that may not be a good thing!”

“I’ve already thought over the things you speak of!” Jun Wu Yi returned Jun Mo Xie’s gaze in a profound manner and spoke in a dignified voice, “You must be aware that your dad, your second uncle and I had grown-up and trained with several people. There used to be nineteen of us. However, there’s just Ye Gu Han, the three brothers of the Dugu Family, Murong Family’s Murong Cheng Long and me; just the six of us remain!”

Jun Wu Yi sighed, “Now in regards to today’s matter — I know that saving Ye Gu Han will make His Majesty uncomfortable.

However, he will only feel uncomfortable and nothing more! He has been uncomfortable with Ye Gu Han for the past ten years. So it's not like this is the first time... but how will I face my thirteen brothers in the otherworld if I change my decision now? Even your great-grandfather wouldn't forgive me! And even if the unlikely happens and your great-grandfather forgives me — I won't be able to live with myself after self-introspection! Therefore, I will continue with my efforts to save him!”

“Etch this into your heart, Mo Xie — a ‘Jun’ never describes himself as a man with a noble character! We’re forever in gratitude! Men are born to act when something is not right; men set such matters straight! Our Jun Family’s descendants have persevered for a long time with this pride! And this has always been the case. Your great-great grandfather, that is, your grandfather’s grandfather was just a common blacksmith. However, he imparted a very important lesson to my grandfather when he was about to die...”

Jun Wu Yi’s voice became solemn.

“What did my great-great grandfather teach?” Jun Mo Xie was somewhat inquisitive.

“Having balls does not make you a man! It is the incomparably indomitable spirit which does!” Jun Wu Yi slowly declared these fifteen words.

He had no choice but to relay these teachings even though the wording was quite vulgar and didn't embellish the teachings in any way.

“...Having balls does not make you a man! It is the incomparably indomitable spirit which does...” Jun Mo Xie muttered these lines for a while. Initially, he wanted to laugh. But then he realized that these words were turning more and more to his liking.

“The great-great grandfather taught well!” Jun Mo Xie cheered loudly and became somewhat excited. He then said, “It seems that

this ancestor wasn't even lacking at the death's door! He was still a 'real man'!"

"Correct! Innumerable people have p*nises under their crot*hes on this earth, but 'real' men are very few! 'Man'? What is a 'man'?" Jun Wu Yi looked at his nephew with a hawk like expression.

"A 'man' is someone who stands tall! He has a will of iron and a loyal heart! He is a man of character with an incomparably indomitable spirit!" Jun Mo Xie laughed loud as he spoke this in a carefree manner. The sentence he had spoken had actually broadened his mind. It relieved him of any worry.

"Correct! If a man is a coward, is overcautious and is too fond of life... and if he fears death... he cannot be considered a 'real' man — not even if he takes a hundred wives and fathers eight hundred children!" Jun Wu Yi laughed heartily, "A will of iron, and a loyal heart; a man of character with an incomparably indomitable spirit! Well-said!"

"I merely admire the last eight words of this ancestor's teachings!" Jun Mo Xie laughed in a carefree manner, "This line is very much to my liking. It feels like a 'God' has penned it to my liking! I can use these eight words in my conduct, and be worthy of my ancestor's name!"

Jun Wu Yi smiled, "Correct! His words may seem vulgar and uncultured, but they have a magnanimous and open-minded message inside. His words are truly great!"

"To continue in one's own way and do what the heart desires — it is truly a great way to live!" Jun Mo Xie felt very happy inside. [These teachings seem like they were custom made for me!]

"You prefer to interpret those words in that manner, but I do it differently. Perhaps this is the major difference between our natures. And that is probably why we conduct ourselves very differently in public!"

Jun Wu Yi smiled slowly, “An incomparably indomitable spirit! I comprehend those four words thus — it is important to live in an upright manner; regardless of the anything. We first need to harbor a clear conscience, and only then can we have an indomitable spirit!”

“Death isn’t worth fearing; simply wishing for wealth and prosperity isn’t enough! Wealth must be attained in a wise and just manner while maintaining a clear conscience!” Jun Wu Yi declared in a decisive and resolute manner. “Your great-great grandfather’s wishes were in this order: first — do good and become a good man; then — have a clear conscience. These two pre-requisites must be adhered to. Only then will a man be able to speak in a bold manner with justice on his side in every situation!”

Jun Wu Yi smiled in a profound manner after he finished describing the teachings, “Did you understand our ancestor’s teachings clearly, Mo Xie? Do you understand the reason behind my decision to help them?”

“Yes Third Uncle, I understand.” Jun Mo Xie replied respectfully, “First, you choose the correct path. Then you utilized your capabilities to do what your heart desires!”

“Good!” Jun Wu Yi felt very pleased. However, he hadn’t listened properly. His understanding and Jun Mo Xie’s understanding weren’t the same; in fact, they were completely different.

Jun Mo Xie had said — Find a correct path, and then live according to one’s own wishes. Whereas, Jun Wu Yi had referred to the ‘correct way of living’, and having a clear conscience... These two things were entirely different. In fact, these two ideologies clashed with each other, and weren’t alluding to the same meaning in any way.

Jun Mo Xie hadn’t ceased pouring pure Aura into Ye Gu Han, and was still operating the Art of Unlocking Heaven’s fortune. However, there wasn’t enough Aura in the mortal world to imbue

Ye Gu Han with. He was still unconscious even though his breathing had become somewhat stable. But this was the most Jun Mo Xie could do for now. He could at most make Ye Gu Han persist in the world of the living. However, Jun Mo Xie was powerless when it came to reviving Ye Gu Han completely... or even making the situation better than it was...

Then, someone informed that General Dugu had arrived with his bodyguard; Minister Sun had also accompanied them. Jun Wu Yi hastily left to make the preparations to welcome his visitors. Dugu Wudi and Minister Sun were about to enter the Jun residence when they heard the announcement that declared Princess Ling Meng's arrival...

Mr. Wen had taken Princess Ling Meng back to the Imperial Palace. However, she had then created a ruckus, and had demanded that she gets to see Ye Gu Han. Her demands to see her Uncle Ye were so fierce that the Emperor himself had to go and console her. But she became even more defiant when the Emperor tried to calm her down. Moreover, her attitude turned cold and distant towards him...

This continued for a while, but then the Emperor was forced to meet her demands.

The Princess made several inquiries regarding Ye Gu Han's whereabouts after she left the Imperial Palace. She was eventually informed that the Third Master of the Jun Family, Jun Wu Yi, had rescued Ye Gu Han. Princess Ling Meng was overjoyed to hear this news, and immediately made way for the Jun Residence...

Behind Princess Ling Meng were three 'panting' old men. Their chief was recognized as the foremost medical expert in the city — Fang Hui Sheng! They were followed by the Imperial Bodyguards who were energetically carrying the three experts' medical equipment.

"Uncle Ye..." Princess Ling Meng charged into the Jun Family's

residence. In fact, she ran inside as if no one else existed in her eyes. She made her way to Jun Wu Yi and asked, “Third Uncle Jun, what about my Uncle Ye? Where is he?”

She was unaware that she was practically shouting, and her mannerism would be considered as unreasonable by most people.

Jun Wu Yi forced a smile and shook his head. The Princess nearly fell down. It seemed as if she had stumbled upon a hole in the ground. Then, she asked in a trembling voice, “Is he already...”

“The Princess shouldn’t make such guesses. His condition isn’t good, but Ye Gu Han is still somehow alive. You needn’t worry. I’ve found him a place in Mo Xie’s courtyard. Uh... I don’t intend to conceal Ye Gu Han’s health from the Princess. He is stable for now, but his condition is not good,” Jun Wu Yi told her this in advance since he believed that she would need to be mentally prepared when she saw him.

The Third Master Jun only acted in this manner since she was the Emperor’s daughter, and it was necessary for her to act gracefully since she was the Princess of an Empire. It wouldn’t suit her to reveal her true emotions of care and nervousness towards Ye Gu Han; and certainly not in such a desperate manner.

[This fiery little girl is very emotional and righteous.] He had seen the manner in which the three Princes had fought amongst themselves. However, he now saw the contrasting manner in which this Princess treated Ye Gu Han. Jun Wu Yi couldn’t help but think of her to be a good person.

They reached Ye Gu Han’s bed.

The three old men carefully examined the injured man. Then, Fang Hui Sheng stood up and helplessly shook his head as he stammered, “Princess, Mr. Ye has received serious injuries on his body in this battle. He has also suffered many internal injuries. And these injuries are in his fatal regions. We could’ve dealt this with some difficulty, but his circumstances have been made worse

due to extreme blood loss. The human body can recuperate if half of its blood has been lost. However, it is extremely difficult to heal someone who has lost over one-third of their blood. No medicinal Dan can save him. In fact, he should've been dead by now. Mr. Ye Gu Han has only survived this long because his body was imbued with pure Xuan Qi by two very powerful people. But this extremely pure Xuan Qi won't be able to sustain his body for very long. Things will start to get worse after some time passes. We advise the Princess to make preparations for the funeral ceremony in advance."

It turned out that their formidable reputation as doctors hadn't been without reason. They had already deduced Ye Gu Han's present situation, and the inevitability of his fate. In fact, they had even figured that his body was being supported by Xuan Qi from two very powerful experts. It was a pity that these three distinguished individuals weren't capable of saving his life.

Chapter 267: I'm Sorry... There's Nothing I Can Do!

“What? Are you saying that Uncle Ye’s condition is hopeless? I don’t believe that! Imperial physicians, I beg you... please find a solution!” The Princess’s delicate body and pretty face became ghostly white when she heard the diagnosis of the three distinguished experts. She choked, and it seemed as if her small mouth was filled with blood. Her expression had become incomparably dull. However, she wasn’t willing to give up. Therefore, she repeatedly begged the head of the three experts, Fang Hui Sheng, to find a solution.

“Princess, please allow me report... besides suffering tremendous blood loss, Mr. Ye has also suffered serious physical injuries. The bones in his ribs are broken. His five vital internal-organs have been severely damaged, and he has suffered no less than ten serious internal injuries. This isn’t pleasant to hear... but there isn’t the least bit of a chance to save Ye Gu Han...”

Fang Hui Sheng’s tone was extremely serious as he explained, “Even a supernatural entity would find themselves powerless in front of such a case. We can support him for a little while, and you can get other people’s opinions until you’re satisfied about the... rarity of his case...”

Princess Ling Meng couldn’t support her body anymore. She trembled for a few moments, and then fell down.

Fang Hui Sheng sighed and shook his head along with the other two physicians. He didn’t wish to trouble the Princess. So, he put his medical equipment in order, and left.

“Uncle Ye...” Princess Ling Meng muttered absent mindedly. The beauty of her face could bring down a nation... However, its complexion was the same as the near-dead Ye Gu Han at the moment.

It seemed from Dugu Wudi's face that he couldn't bear it anymore. He sighed and shook his head. He didn't wish to disturb the two either. Therefore, he left the courtyard and made his way towards the Jun Family's main hall.

Dugu Xiao Yi and Sun Xiao Mei remained in the courtyard to keep Princess Ling Meng company. They were afraid that another mishap might happen to their sister.

Sun Xiao Mei couldn't see the heart-broken Princess. She hesitated for a moment, but was unable to bear it any longer. She then quietly and quickly whispered a line into Princess Ling Meng's ear, "Jun Mo Xie can save Mr. Ye."

Sun Xiao Mei wasn't a beautiful looking woman. However, she was very talented and extremely intelligent. Her wisdom was comparable to that of Li You Ran. She had heard the conversation between Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi, and had faintly sensed that Jun Mo Xie might be able to save Ye Gu Han. However, she couldn't understand why Jun Mo Xie wouldn't undertake that task... Moreover, she had a soft spot for the Princess. Sun Xiao Mei couldn't help but feel her heart soften when she saw Jun Mo Xie keeping his mouth shut despite the manner in which the princess was grieving. Hence, she decided to inform Princess Ling Meng about Jun Mo Xie's capability.

The Princess believed the information that was given her 'good' sister; without doubting a word of it. She didn't have any faith in Jun Mo Xie. However, she could never doubt Sun Xiao Mei.

The Princess would regard this as an absurdity under normal circumstances. However, she had no choice at the moment. She would grasp firmly at any straws she could find... just in case it turned out be the one and only way to save Ye Gu Han's life. Therefore, she would necessarily give this a try... even if the chances of saving him with this method were negligible.

[I must save Uncle Ye's life — at any cost!]

Everyone had already left. However, Jun Mo Xie had still here. This small courtyard was his residence, and the injured Ye Gu Han seemed to have taken control of his nest. In fact, Ye Gu Han was lying on his bed. How could Jun Mo Xie abandon his own lair? That was the only reason why he had stayed behind...

Jun Mo Xie was sitting cross legged on the only chair in his room. His eyes were closed. The Young Master Jun was considering things. [I must help Ye Gu Han since I've promised Third Uncle that I'll save him! However, his condition is genuinely difficult to deal with. So, how do I go about the healing process?]

Ye Gu Han had lost a lot of blood, and that was a huge problem for those three medical experts. However, this wasn't an issue for the Young Master Jun since his mind had retained the medical knowledge of his previous life. The issue of blood-transfusion wouldn't be a problem with Jun Mo Xie's power and skill as long as he could find someone with the required blood type. He could then assist in the blood-transfer with his innate spiritual talent. Therefore, he didn't consider that angle to be a big problem.

Jun Mo Xie was confident that he could cure the internal wounds that had been made by the swords as well. He had a treasure trove of medical ingredients, and they had nourishing spiritual properties. This would assist in the healing process. Ye Gu Han's life wouldn't be very inconvenient even if he had only one arm remaining post his recovery... comparatively.

However, the man's ribs were the 'genuine' problem. His condition was very serious in that regard, and it was also a rare occurrence. Shockingly, fifteen of his ribs were broken in multiple places. His chest had sunken inwards due to this. In fact, his ribs were broken in about 35-45 places...

[This is a very difficult problem!]

[This problem doesn't seem to have any solution!]

[It wouldn't have been a problem if it were a simple bone injury.]

The injury would've slowly healed as long as he could've borne the pain. However, his life-force is very weak at the moment. And he suffered so many internal and external injuries... Therefore, connecting the bones would result in losing Ye Gu Han. It would rid him of his small chance of survival as well!]

Ye Gu Han had very little life-force remaining in his body. And most of the Xuan Qi in his body was foreign to it. The Solitary Falcon and Jun Mo Xie had imbued his body with a lot of pure and high-level Xuan Qi. However, even that had reached the peak of its limit. Re-applying this method wouldn't be able to support him during the operation.

[However, if I treat the flesh wounds first, and then replenish the Xuan Qi inside of him... he might have enough life left in him to bear the burden of the mending bones for some time... though I reckon that Ye Gu Han's bones have been deformed for good.]

Jun Mo Xie frowned; his eyes were still closed. He thought hard on this muddy puzzle, but couldn't find a single clue to solve it...

[It is a pity that this world doesn't have anesthetics! Ye Gu Han's treatment wouldn't be so difficult if I had some anesthetics...]

[Hold on... anesthetics?!]

Jun Mo Xie suddenly became excited, and firmly slapped his thighs. He then opened his eyes in astonishment because his thigh didn't feel his hand when he had slapped it...

His hand obviously felt the clap, but the thigh didn't feel this slap. This was strange...

He opened his eyes. The Young Master Jun saw Princess Ling Meng covering her face with her hand. A few tear drops had streamed for her eyes. Her pretty face had five crisp and red fingermarks on it, and had started to swell...

Shockingly, the palm had struck the Princess's face!

He had landed an incomparably hard slap on her face...

“What are you doing? Why are you crouching like that?! Did you walk over here like a ghost? Couldn’t you have made some noise? I didn’t know... do you like to scare other people to death?” Jun Mo Xie’s head burst with an ache. He had been thinking hard and had set his mind on solving that problem. He was so engrossed in his thoughts that he didn’t notice when the Princess came over.

...he had accidentally slapped a beautiful face instead of his thighs. And that too the beautiful face of a princess!

His luck with women was... truly hopeless...

The Princess was clearly in pain and her small face had started to smolder. But contrary to the Young Master Jun’s expectations — she didn’t seem the least bit angry. In fact, her eyes seemed to be begging him. She then opened her mouth to ask, “This... I plead Young Master Jun... you save my Uncle Ye, ok?”

Jun Mo Xie was shocked by the look on her face. Then, he understood what was happening, and became very angry. His expression became that of an acute lightning. Like point of a spear, his gaze quickly turned towards Dugu Xiao Yi and Sun Xio Mei. And his knife-like stare left them with a desire to curl-up and shiver...

This little girl had quite some tolerance. However, the heart of the Sun Family’s eldest daughter quivered since she this accident had been caused by her. She hadn’t crossed paths with Jun Mo Xie very often. But it was very clear from the Jun debauchee’s behavior that... [He would retaliate for today’s matter, right?] She hoped that his reprisals wouldn’t be too harsh since she was Fatty’s fiancée...

“Save him? How can I save him? The Empire’s top-three medical experts couldn’t do anything. So what can a debauchee like me do? Your Majesty, you have sought the wrong man! This joke of yours is not funny; it’s really not funny!” Jun Mo Xie’s nostrils flared as he snorted. His mind had been completely engrossed with how to

save Ye Gu Han's life. However, he had given-up on that idea now.

This had nothing to do with the Princess. [If I wanted to save someone... I would save them even if countless people tried to stop me! However, Princess Ling Meng had no idea about my skills. Yet she has just come to ask me this favor. It must've been either Dugu Xiao Yi or Sun Xiao Mei who told her. Though I don't think the Little Girl would've divulged that information. So that leaves Sun Xiao Mei, the Sun Family's eldest daughter.]

Jun Mo Xie felt somewhat betrayed by this.

This feeling transformed his 'good' mood into an 'angry' one... that too in just a split second.

A betrayal in Jun Mo Xie's eyes was a betrayal indeed.

There was one thing that Jun Mo Xie couldn't accept — people threatening him.

An Jun Mo Xie had always detested people who had a tendency for betrayal.

Princess Ling Meng couldn't help but feel despair after listening to Jun Mo Xie's cold and detached answer. She suddenly gnashed her teeth, and her eyes revealed a determined expression. She slowly stood up until she was standing straight in front of the Young Master Jun. Then, she suddenly went down on her knees.

She knelt firmly on her knees.

"I beg you! I beg you; please save my Uncle Ye! I beg you, I beg you, I beg you..." Princess Ling Meng prostrated herself. The expression on her face was reckless and crazy, but it displayed inexhaustible distress. "My Uncle Ye has suffered countless grievances because of my willfulness... he has suffered so much harm because I'm not sensible... there is nothing I can do to repay him. But he lies dying now... and I am willing to sacrifice everything for his life!"

"Jun Mo Xie, I... I bow before you!" Princess Ling Meng dropped

heavily to the ground. There was a loud “Boom!” which resonated. This was proof that she had exerted all of her energy to kowtow in front of him. This was not at all a frivolous endeavor.

Dugu Xiao Yi and Sun Xiao Mei were emotionally moved.

What noble behavior from a country’s Princess! She had knelt resolutely in front of a vassal, and was begging him... just to save the life of her bodyguard!

The Imperial Family has been fighting for power since ancient times. There’ve surely been many people in that family who were emotional and just. However, Princess Ling Meng’s actions were unprecedented.

The Royalty must behave within the scope of the Royal Dignity. But Princess Ling Meng had ignored all of it. The Princess had kneeled in front of Jun Mo Xie like she was kneeling in front of a highly respected senior.

Anybody could make out the Princess’s determination by the manner in which had knelt.

No matter what the cost... or the chances of success. No matter how nonsensical the hope is... she wouldn’t hesitate.

Jun Mo Xie’s outer appearance was as calm as the surface of still-water. But he was badly shaken on the inside. He had never expected Princess Ling Meng to take such a step for Ye Gu Han.

Dugu Xiao Yi took a huge stride forward as she tearfully said, “Bastard, why do you hesitate? The Princess is kneeling in front of you and begging; what more do you want? Hurry up and do something if you can help! Is us-two kneeling in front of you not enough?”

Jun Mo Xie’s expression was cold as he extended his hand and pushed Dugu Xiao Yi aside. He then looked at Princess Ling Meng in an indifferent manner. Then, he spoke without showing any trace of emotion, “I’m sorry... there’s nothing I can do.”

Sun Xiao Mei's entire body trembled. She had quickly figured everything out. She realized that she had made an unforgivable mistake by informing the Princess about Jun Mo Xie's abilities...

Chapter 268: Blood Oath

Forget about other matters — she hadn't even taken Jun Mo Xie's temperament into consideration. [He is very different from other people. This man never brings himself out in the open for anyone. No is an exception to that rule!]

[He always does things his own way!] She had only intended to help Princess Ling Meng and give her hope. However, that had angered Jun Mo Xie. This had shattered any hope of saving Ye Gu Han's life.

The Princess and Ye Gu Han's political position was very sensitive. Moreover, the Jun Family circumstances weren't very good either. This was driving Jun Mo Xie to forego the task of saving the man's life.

“Why? What else do you want me to do? What in the world do you want from me? You just say it! I give you my word; I'll give you anything you ask!” Princess Ling Meng was still kneeling on the ground in despair. She had a vacant expression on her face. However, she still clung to her last hope as she asked Jun Mo Xie.

“Nothing you offer will make any difference; I don't trust you,” Jun Mo Xie raised his head and looked up at the sky. He let out a deep sigh. He then spoke in a resolute manner, “Princess, I really wish to save him but you must be aware of our Jun Family's situation. ...to say that it is precarious... would be an understatement. And if I could cure conditions that even the three foremost doctors of the city weren't able to. What would it mean...”

Jun Mo Xie took a deep breath, “Right now... people can only suspect... and be suspicious of me. However, it will become a reality if I manage to save Ye Gu Han's life! Princess, Ye Gu Han is one of the most ‘Taboo Names’ to his Majesty the Emperor. Reviving him would tantamount to offending the Emperor! This

single matter concerns the lives of thousands of Jun Family members... and tens-of-thousands of our Faction's followers. In such circumstances... ah... Princess... don't you think that sacrificing Ye Gu Han's life is a good idea? Would the Princess do it differently if she were in my place?

"How can you expect me to trust you?! The Tian Family has never been loyal to anyone. Doesn't the Princess know that?" Jun Mo Xie said heavily.

"I can pledge to guard your secret... you... you just asked how you can believe me... how can I...? ..." Princess Ling Meng hung her head dispiritedly. She knew that no pledge she would make would be binding-enough. She didn't know how to explain that her promises would be different from her Family's. So, she kept quiet for a while.

Dugu Xiao Yi bit her lip. It seemed that she wanted to say something. However, she eventually decided to remain silent.

Sun Xiao Mei sighed inside her heart. The Young Master Jun's words were reasonable. She knew that she would've ignored any pleas for assistance in this situation as well. She had realized just how childish and unwise her actions had been .

[The current Emperor is very wise. But one his few undeniable faults is that he's too suspicious...]

Sun Xiao Mei was lost in her thoughts. Then, she saw the princess suddenly rise to her feet. Her delicate body changed directions, and then she knelt down again. Princess Ling Meng then bit her lips very hard, and a wisp of blood started to flow down from the corner of her mouth. The blood streamed down her face and started to drip on the ground.

She hesitated for a moment. Then, she eventually placed her left hand upon her chest. She then spoke in a soft yet resolute tone, "The heavens above and the earth below — the Gods of this world and the successive generations of my ancestors — listen to my

oath! I, Ling Meng, hear-by swear...”

She paused for a moment, and her face suddenly twisted. She then continued, “...If Jun Mo Xie is able to save my Uncle Ye’s life... then I Ling Meng vow that I’ll return to the Palace and spare no efforts to demand from my father... that I be married to Jun Mo Xie. Weather a wife or a concubine... I’ll comply to his wishes; I’ll never complain. I’ll spend this life being the most loyal woman to Jun Mo Xie. I will keep my mouth sealed regarding all his secrets, and I will not divulge a single thing to anyone else. If it seems that I have reneged on this oath... may my whole family die! And may my ancestors never find any peace! Ling Meng herself shall be punished by being hacked into pieces. Then being thunderstruck five times... none of my descendants shall be allowed to continue in this world! I take this blood oath before the heaven and earth and the Gods of this world!”

The Princess turned her hand after she finished speaking. She held a delicate throwing knife in it. The knife flashed like lightning as she moved it towards her arm, and slashed it. She didn’t even flinch as she did this... The blood gushed out like a fountain. The Princess then drew a circle in front of her with her own blood. Then, she knelt and tapped her head right at the center of that bloody circle. Her luxuriant and water-like hair scattered onto the ground. She didn’t raise her head for a long time...

With heaven and earth as witness, and in the name of the Gods and ancestors... her soul, and her blood, had gone into this oath!

This was the most sacred and also the most malicious oath in the Xuan Xuan Continent. No one would ever dare to abandon this oath. And, Princess Ling Meng had already knocked her head in the very center of the bloody circle.

The oath had been sealed.

It was in-commutable in that life.

Dugu Xiao Yi cried out in alarm. She glared as her small hand

covered her mouth, while her eyes quickly filled with tears.

Princess Ling Meng got up. Her face was covered with tears but she didn't weep. She then faced Jun Mo Xie and then spoke, "Maybe I've convinced you now... Jun Mo Xie?"

Jun Mo Xie was stunned-speechless.

The Young Master Jun had never thought that the Princess would take such an oath — not even in his dreams.

[What are you saying?]

Jun Mo Xie had previously decided to save Ye Gu Han. However, he wasn't able to start the procedure due to some difficult problems. Then, the sudden arrival of Princess Ling Meng coupled with her special identity had escalated the situation further.

Otherwise, he would've saved Ye Gu Han in secret, and fronted the non-existent 'mysterious expert'. A few people may have doubted it, but it wouldn't have been a huge hindrance. However, he had never taken into account that the Princess would immediately make her way to his residence after being returned to the Imperial Palace by that man. Moreover, she had brought three Imperial Physicians with her. And those three were the top medical experts in Tian Xiang City.

This mix of so many people had killed Jun Mo Xie's plan. He wouldn't be able to save the man even if he capable of doing it since the Emperor may find out about his talents if the Princess were to leak any of his secrets to His Majesty's ears. The Young Master Jun's skills could've easily brought upon his doom...

First his Grandfather had taken undue advantage of the Jun Family's influence to commit a purge. Then, his Uncle's injuries had mysteriously healed. This was then followed the mysterious emergence of the Aristocratic Hall. Any logical interpretation of these facts would point in the Jun Family's direction, and heads would start to roll...

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had resolutely refused to treat Ye Gu Han.

However, Princess Ling Meng had made that Blood Oath to gain Jun Mo Xie's trust...

She had made this Oath to mediate the circumstances between herself and Jun Mo Xie...

The Princess's body trembled. There was a fierce expression on her face as she looked at Jun Mo Xie.

She was aware that Jun Mo Xie had endlessly nagged his grandfather to take an offer for his marriage to the Imperial Princess a few years ago. However, she had then rejected him and her father had also lost interest in the Jun Family. The whole matter had fizzled out sometime later.

Princess Ling Meng's judgement had been clouded by the present circumstances. She hadn't paid careful attention to Jun Mo Xie's words. She had heard him speak "I don't trust you," and had interpreted it to be a demand for her loyalty by marriage. [This has obscurely revealed this debauchee's real aim! However, I fear that he won't save my Uncle Ye's life if I don't agree to his condition...]

[Am I only to look on helplessly as Uncle Ye leaves the mortal realm?]

Princess Ling Meng had reached an impossible conclusion after she had searched her soul.

Therefore, she had decided to make this Blood Oath after some hesitation.

[I will sacrifice the rest of my life as long as Uncle Ye survives. It's not much of a sacrifice; is it? Anyway, who is to say that my father won't just use my marriage as a means to rope-in a minister in the future? There's no guarantee that I'll ever be allowed to marry by my own choice. In fact, he may just send me to Jun Mo Xie since he's quite influential...]

[Uncle Ye could do that much to save my life. Can't I even do this

much for him?]

Therefore, Princess Ling Meng had eventually made this resolute decision.

The throwing knife covered with her own blood was still in her hand.

However, the Princess's mind was ice-cold.

[What else do you want now? Tell me what you want...]

However, she was merely in a trance...

Princess Ling Meng looked at Jun Mo Xie. And Jun Mo Xie looked at the Princess. Their thoughts were a mess. Sun Xiao Mei could understand their thoughts. And her eyes were wide-open in shock...

Suddenly, Dugu Xiao Yi let-out a loud sob in the midst of this silence... Then, she started to weep... She was completely heartbroken.

[Boo hoo... brother Mo Xie... I liked him first... and yet you suddenly took that oath without speaking to me first! You stole him! No Way! Sister didn't even discuss this with me! You're a cheat!]

Dugu Xiao Yi felt wronged; she felt very sad. And when she looked at those two silently starting at each other... she thought they were looking at each other "lovingly". Hence, she couldn't help but cry.

Dugu Xiao Yi was dazzled in reality. She was just imagining things like Princess Ling Meng. There was nothing more to it. What she felt as "loving" gaze between two people... was actually Jun Mo Xie feeling stunned and panicky. There was a hint of embarrassment in his body language, and he was having a tough time in restraining his anger. And the Princess was tragic over the "Sacrifice" she had just made.

This gaze they shared, and that of two lovers, are two completely different things.

“Fine! I promise you! I will save him!” Jun Mo Xie took a deep breath, “However, I don’t accept your oath! You and I aren’t a fit match! Therefore, even speaking of marriage between us is absurd!”

“Ye Gu Han will have to stay here for a long time. I can only restore his health very slowly. And I can’t guarantee the extent of his recovery. You... understand what I mean?”

[I can save him or I can kill him.]

[You took that lousy oath. Even if you had to take an oath... it should’ve been about ‘not opening your mouth’. I could’ve stuck to my original idea by fronting the story about the mysterious master saving Ye Gu Han’s life, and you would’ve been the perfect tool to make the world believe it. Just that much would’ve been enough! But you had to go and add that part about ‘marrying me... or become my concubine, and then abiding by my desires’! What a shitty oath!]

[Bah! Even if you wish to marry me... I don’t wish to marry you! I have no intention to do so! You aren’t that beautiful. Can you even compare to that little girl?! And can you even compare to that little girl from the Silver Blizzard City? ...No matter what sort of a woman she is... she has the upper hand in this regard. Your beauty is worth a ‘fart’ to me!]

However, Jun Mo Xie had been stunned by the severity of the Oath the Princess had taken. He was shocked by the sacrifice she was willing to make for Ye Gu Han. In fact, he was certain that he would’ve never taken such a tough decision if he were to be in her shoes!

“Once a blood oath is taken... it cannot be changed even if you don’t accept it! This is a well-known fact!” Princess Ling Meng’s heart was filled with joy when she heard that he had agreed to save

Ye Gu Han. But she continued calmly, “I just hope that the truth of this matter is never known to my Uncle Ye.”

“I can only guarantee my utmost effort in this matter.” Jun Mo Xie sighed with numbness. [What is this? Why does it feel like I’ve forced an honest girl into selling her body...?]

Chapter 269: Is It... Is It Him?!

“Ye Gu Han’s injury is very serious. I’ll try my best, but I’m not sure if I can fully cure him. Also, his right hand is broken beyond repair. Therefore, he will find it difficult to hold his sword with it... even if his health is otherwise restored. His body would take 70-80 days for a recovery. Therefore, you should make some false announcements to avoid future trouble for him. You will have to announce to the world that Ye Gu Han has died due to his injuries. And... it’s better that you go through me when you wish to meet him in the future. And I’ll make the required adjustments. You don’t have a problem with that, right?”

Princess Ling Meng bit her lip and nodded. She knew perfectly well what Jun Mo Xie meant when he said “avoid future troubles”. These two had developed a tacit understanding by now. They didn’t need to explain their words anymore.

Princess Ling Meng sighed when saw Dugu Xiao Yi weeping. She then walked over to the little girl, fished out a handkerchief from her clothes, and softly wiped Dugu Xiao Yi’s tears.

“Silly little sister. I won’t compete with you. Is it possible... that we sisters... would have such a cruel fate? You... just for this guy... is he worth it?” She was going to say “debauchee”, but then she recalled her oath and didn’t say it.

The sound of Dugu Xiao Yi’s crying abated somewhat. She then opened her tear-filled eyes, “Really? But you... just a moment ago...”

“That is true. However, I did it because I had no other choice...” Princess Ling Meng smiled gently. The Princess was almost the same age as the little girl. However, she seemed so much more mature all of a sudden, “I will ask my father to get me married to Jun Mo Xie so I can complete my oath. But only after you do the good deed of marrying him first... I promise that this is only to

adhere to my oath and nothing more. Is it still unacceptable?”

Dugu Xiao Yi blushed. Her tears had turned into a smile. She ‘hummed’ for a moment and then said, “You are elder to me, so you first...” Though she had spoken these words, but anyone could tell that she felt insecure.

Jun Mo Xie had walked past them. He was now sitting beside Ye Gu Han. He almost fell headlong when he heard these words.

[There’s no sign of success yet. So, why are these two women talking like that?]

[I still don’t have any intention to look for a wife... Yet these two women are in a rush to marry me?]

[I have no plans in this regard yet!]

Jun Mo Xie’s expression became indifferent as he started to pour pure aura into Ye Gu Han. He then spoke coldly, “Miss Sun!”

Sun Xiao Mei apologized in a low voice, “You needn’t say anything. I know what you’re about to say. I won’t do it again. I’m sorry!”

“You are Fatty’s fiancée and also this little girl’s sister. So I’m dropping it for now. But if you ever do it again — I will kill you. What I loathe the most is... betrayal!” Jun Mo Xie raised his eyelids. A strong murderous intention flashed in his eyes. He then exuded a strong murderous aura, and the three women became cold all over.

Jun Mo Xie’s words reeked of murderous intentions. No one would ever suspect the seriousness of his threat. They wouldn’t dare to provoke him since they knew that he would carry out his threat.

Sun Xio Mei was silent. She knew that Jun Mo Xie wasn’t joking. [Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi were talking without restraint. In fact, he didn’t refrain from speaking his mind in front of Dugu Xiao Yi either. This shows that he considers them to his people. He

believes that they wouldn't betray him. If they had divulged his secret to Princess Ling Meng... he would have considered it to be a mistake... but never a betrayal...]

[This fact won't change regardless of circumstances or reasoning!]

[Have I always turned a blind eye towards Jun Mo Xie's true behavior? This youngster's nature is of the type... 'obey me; you will die if you don't.' It is a tyrant's disposition.] Suddenly, Sun Xiao Mei started to tremble. She had been very frightened by the words he had spoken to her.

[Are you that kind of a man, Jun Mo Xie?]

Princess Ling Meng was shocked. She looked at Jun Mo Xie with her eyes wide-open. [Since when did Jun Mo Xie have such an imposing personality? Has he... has he changed?]

[Is that the reason why Dugu Xiao Yi fell madly in love with him?]

Princess Ling Meng wasn't sure. She slowly walked over to Ye Gu Han. She leaned to look at Ye Gu Han's thin and deathly-pale face. The Princess grieved in her heart at that sight, but hid her tears.

"Xiao Yi!" Jun Mo Xie closed his eyes as he exerted his entire strength to transfer the aura.

"What?" Dugu Xiao Yi's mood was quite cheerful now. Her mood had a tendency to change very quickly. She had already dried her tears, and was feeling embarrassed about her earlier tantrum. She jumped up when she heard Jun Mo Xie call her name.

"Go to Third Uncle and ask him to send someone to the Aristocratic Hall. Ask him to have these medical ingredients brought back." Jun Mo Xie listed the names of the herbs without any hesitation. "The earlier I have them — the more useful they will be."

Dugu Xiao Yi nodded and then disappeared like a wisp of smoke.

Princess Ling Meng moved closer to Jun Mo Xie. She had never been this close to him before. She observed him as he sat there with his eyes closed and transferred the aura into Ye Gu Han. His face didn't look cold or greedy. But it seemed as if he despised all creation under the heavens. She couldn't help but feel moved inside.

Then, she felt a faint yet familiar sensation in her heart.

[It's a very familiar feeling and... a very safe one. This incomparable warmth and comfort... where have I felt like this before?]

[Why do I feel this warmth?] Princess Ling Meng frowned as she pondered hard...

Suddenly, a light flashed in her mind, [this feeling... why is it so familiar...?]

Princess Ling Meng couldn't help but inch closer to Jun Mo Xie. And the closer she got to him... the stronger that feeling became. This slowly reminded her of something. Though, she couldn't make out what it was.

She sat aside, but didn't utter a single word as she thought hard.

Sun Xiao Mei was sitting beside her with a 'somewhat' vexed expression on her face.

"Sister Xiao Mei... why are you at the Jun Family's residence?" Princess Ling Meng was sitting idly. Hence, she suddenly recalled this matter and could not help but ask. The Princess's mind was still haunting her decision of making that Blood Oath...

"Little White led Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi to us after you were captured ..." Sun Xiao Mei said plainly, "The Third Master of the Jun Family brought Uncle Ye here. And Jun Mo Xie set-out to search for you..."

"What? Jun Mo Xie went alone to look for me?" Princess Ling Meng forgot her manners and asked in a loud voice. She jumped

onto her legs as a shock spread across her face.

She had been trying hard to solve that puzzle. However, it suddenly seemed as if the dark clouds in her mind had been split by a ray of sunshine; everything suddenly seemed very bright.

The mysterious master had carried her as they had escaped from the cave. In fact, that mysterious expert with the throwing knives had always protected her. And what she felt in that man's arms was just like what she... had just felt near Jun Mo Xie's body...

[Is it possible that...?]

[But how's this possible?] Princess Ling Meng shook her head vigorously to rid herself of that ridiculous thought. However, those two figures gradually began to become one in her mind...

She recalled that Jun Mo Xie had been nearby at the time of the previous attempt on her life. He had then suddenly disappeared.

[Could he be 'him'?]

Princess Ling Meng's heart began to beat wildly. She looked at Jun Mo Xie in amazement. Her heart suddenly felt an unprecedented feeling. [He is quite handsome...] Her face suddenly turned red.

Dugu Xiao Yi came back 'skipping' after she had finished her task. The little girl's heart had recovered, and she was in high spirits. [He called me 'Xiao Yi' this time. It was so nice to hear. I hope he calls me that many times again in the future. Hee Hee...]

"Little sister Xiao Yi," Princess Ling Meng tried hard to restrain her emotions. The tone of her voice was very plain as she asked, "I heard that Young Master Jun had crafted a jewel-studded knife for you; is that right? I remember it had a pleasant name the last time you showed it to me, 'the first pocket-knife of Tian Xiang?'" Could you show it to me again?"

"You treated it with disdain the last time I tried to show it to you. But now you wish to take another look at it. Okay then... I'll show

it to you,” Dugu Xiao Yi mumbled. She then delved into her sleeve and drew out a slender knife.

Jun Mo Xie nearly fainted after he accidentally saw this spectacle.

“Dugu Xiao Yi! I gave you that knife so you could cut people apart... it’s not to be used as an arm band! What a waste!” Jun Mo Xie howled angrily. And he was very serious.

This little girl had tied the knife to her arm. This meant that it would take her sometime to draw it out if need be. [What’s the difference between it and an arm-band? The battle will be over by the time she draws the knife to confront an enemy! So what’s the use of it?]

Dugu Xiao Yi’s face turned red. She whined for a while out of embarrassment. Then, she replied, “This... you gave me... as a token of faith... I’ll use it if need be... why are you getting mad at me...?”

She lowered her pretty face as she spoke. The little girl rubbed the lower hem of her gown out of embarrassment as she whined like a mosquito. She then asked, “My... Jade Pendant... you still wear it?”

Princess Ling Meng’s blood oath hadn’t come from her heart. Yet, the Princess was still her biggest threat in Dugu Xiao Yi’s eyes. Therefore, she added the two words ‘token and faith’ in spite of the embarrassment when Jun Mo Xie asked her about the knife. The idea was to send the message that — “Whether you like it or not... I’m ahead of you! We’ve already exchanged tokens of faith!”

[Humph! We may be good sisters, but I won’t hold back! I, Dugu Xiao Yi, will fight for my love till the end! Humph! And I too shall take a blood oath if you provoke me! You may not have done it voluntarily, but I will; then we’ll see who is afraid of whom?!]

[The jade pendant? Token of faith?] Jun Mo Xie stared blankly.

He didn't know where this was coming from. As for that piece of jade he had received from her... [I had kept it somewhere... though I don't remember where I kept it...]

Princess Ling Meng didn't pay attention to Dugu Xiao Yi's words. Instead, her hands trembled slightly. Her eyes shone with pleasant surprise as she looked at the blade. She then saw that strange light reflecting-off of the gem on the handle. It captivated her. The weapon was definitive. The handle of this knife, and the throwing knives, were clearly made by the hands of the same man.

Whether it was the forging process, the craftsmanship, the decorative design, or even the casting method of the blade — it was all ingenious and original; along with the acute tip of the knife. This indicated towards one clear and undeniable fact!

The blade was easy to hold. It was delicate, small and exquisite. It was suited for slashing as well as stabbing. Moreover, it wouldn't injure the hand of the wielder. The point of the knife, its edge, its spine, its hilt... each and every part of the blade... including its curved arch had been thoroughly tempered and exquisitely evened. Moreover, the handle and the blade had been made without a cast... it was obvious that someone had spent a lot of time and effort into forging that knife.

In addition, the handle was 'somewhat' short. It was obvious that this knife's handle had been specifically intended for a woman's hand. In fact, it was probably intended as such from the time of the collection of raw materials.

The handled glittered. Its curving lines flickered like the stars in the night sky. It seemed as if the milky-way itself had fallen from the sky. The entire blade flowed like a river of light.

The Princess suddenly felt very jealous as she looked at the blade, [he is nice to her... very nice...]

Chapter 270: Reprimanded

!

“It’s a good blade!” Princess Ling Meng looked at it with envy. She seemed reluctant to parted with it. She had recognized her “mystery man” in her mind by then. However, she wasn’t ready to divulge this matter to anyone.

She felt that... [Jun Mo Xie plays the debauchee, and flaunts his immoral behavior everywhere. Isn’t that a means to conceal his real self?]

[He can perform amazing deeds; deeds that require bravery, chivalry and courage. His earth-shaking medical knowledge could create uproar in the entire capital! He should’ve been standing at the summit of this world. He could’ve enjoyed everyone’s admiration — the entire younger generation’s devotion. However, he has chosen dirt upon himself for his family’s sake...]

[So, what he said before is true? His heart actually didn’t lay in wait for me!]

[He and I, aren’t suited to be a match. However, he in no way unworthy of me — it is I who is undeserving of him!]

[His life must’ve been full of bitter hardships!]

[Someone capable of such great feats should be a proud and noble youngster. Yet, he has no choice but to suffer everyone’s condescending stares and taunts. But he continues to display an extremely nasty personality in public! He can’t show-case his achievements... this must be a great torment for him!]

[This requires a very far-sighted vision. How broad-minded, calm and talented does one have to be to face this...?!]

[Who doesn’t want to be desired? Who doesn’t wish to be worshipped by hoards of people? Who doesn’t wish to stand at the top? However, Jun Mo Xie had no choice but to suffer the world’s

humiliation due to his family's circumstances...]

Princess Ling Meng suddenly felt her heart grieve.

[He's about the same age as me... but he has experienced a-great-many things than I have... moreover, he never wants his name to be credited for the good deeds he does. He never asks repayment for what he does. In fact, he would rather suffer the scorn of the people he saves...]

[How can someone like Li You Ran even compare to such a man?!]

Suddenly, the image of Jun Mo Xie changed from a scoundrel who wouldn't shrink away from any crime to a lofty individual bathed in bright rays of light in the Princess's mind.

It was similar to a promotion from the 'bottom of eighteenth layer' of hell to the 'thirty-third level' of heaven. And that too in an instant!

Princess Ling Meng suddenly felt that her blood oath... wasn't unacceptable anymore... in fact, there was a faint... feeling of delight in her heart.

It was a pity that the Young Master Jun wasn't aware of these feelings. Otherwise, he would've laughed loudly, "What a mental disorder!" He would have sighed, "Heavens and Earth! This Princess's imagination is so enriched. She harbors fantasies I can't even dare to fathom!"

The real Jun Mo Xie never pretended to be a debauchee and a hoodlum. He was a genuine wastrel. There was no false imaging about him. As for the new Young Master Jun... he always went about things his own way. He didn't care about other people's point of view...

To summarize this change in the image of Jun Mo Xie from a 'good for nothing debauchee' to a 'tall and lofty person' in the pure and innocent head of Princess Ling Meng... Well, it was a complete

and beautiful misunderstanding...

Dugu Xiao Yi saw the ‘spellbound’ manner in which the Princess had held that knife; it seemed like the Princess liked it too much to let it go. The little girl’s heart tensed at this. She then snorted, [You don’t consider your sister’s feelings. I will never show you this knife again!]

She seethed with anger and pursed her lips. She then said, “I presume Sister Meng has seen enough? It is just a knife; it’s nothing that rare.” She then reached-out and grabbed the knife. Dugu Xiao Yi then proudly narrowed her eyes and smiled, “This knife isn’t very rare... but my Brother Mo Xie said that this knife is unique and unmatched — whether in quality or style...”

“Unique? Not really; right?” Princess Ling Meng didn’t know why she felt so uncomfortable upon seeing Dugu Xiao Yi this pleased. She couldn’t help herself to speak in a ‘ridiculing’ manner, “I have several knives that resemble this one. They are just smaller in size...”

“You have several such knives? I don’t believe you. That big villain said that he’d get this jewel-studded knife made for me; especially for me!” Dugu Xiao Yi cried out. Her big eyes were opened in circular shapes, “How is that possible?”

“How is that ‘impossible’? Why can’t there be several such knives?” Princess Ling Meng smiled mysteriously, “Would you like to spare some time to see them?”

Princess Ling Meng couldn’t help but satisfy her desire to satiate her ego. She was aware that the throwing knives she possessed had been crafted by the Young Master Jun had. However, she had gotten them purely by chance. They hadn’t been given to her as a gift; let alone specially made for her. In fact, she knew that there were probably several like the ones she possessed. And she was aware that she couldn’t take the knife out right now since Jun Mo Xie was nearby. She knew that he wasn’t interested in seeing his

‘tokens of faith’. She could incur his displeasure if she showed-off those knives. But that was secondary. How could she afford to lose face in front of her sisters?

“We surely have time to examine Elder Sister Ling Meng’s treasures!” Dugu Xiao Yi smiled as a sharp light flashed in her eyes. Princess Ling Meng also had a smile across her face. These sisters were smiling like flowers, but one could feel a strong hostility between them.

This confrontation had already surpassed the category of ‘young adolescent women’; it had reached the category of grown-up women. Women could commit all manner of unscrupulous crimes to defend their position in their love lives. This ‘sisterly’ feeling could in no way stand in the path of that...

Sun Xiao Mei had noticed this intense hostility and jealousy between the two women. However, the ‘very clever’ Sun Xiao Mei couldn’t help but gape in astonishment.

[Dugu Xiao Yi’s obsession with Jun Mo Xie is a known fact. So her behavior isn’t strange. However, Ling Meng... her attitude regarding the Young Master Jun has undergone a sudden and tremendous change. This is completely inexplicable.]

Princess Ling Meng had taken a blood oath to marry Jun Mo Xie. However, it was done unwillingly because of the prevailing conditions. Princess Ling Meng never had a favorable impression of Jun Mo Xie according to Sun Xiao Mei’s understanding. In fact, the Princess detested him. [So why have these two ‘sisters’ become ‘legendary rivals in love’ so suddenly? Moreover, how’s the sense of hostility so strong despite the strong sisterly bond they share? What’s the matter?]

[This is confusing; very confusing...]

Sun Xiao Mei had always considered herself very capable. She could employ her large brain to any situation. But it had short circuited in this moment.

Jun Mo Xie heaved a long breath. He had finally exhausted himself. He had grabbed Ye Gu Han's hand, and had recklessly poured aura into him for such a long time. He had poured-out a huge amount of it by now. But the injured Ye Gu Han's condition had stabilized. Ye Gu Han's Xuan Qi had been expelled from his body, and it had been replaced by Jun Mo Xie's powerful heavenly aura in its entirety.

Moreover, the broken bones had been carefully enveloped by the Young Master Jun's aura.

There would be no further problems as long as no one moved his body or messed with his bones.

Jun Mo Xie was very exhausted. He opened his eyes to look at the three girls, and then sighed in a dejected manner. He didn't feel like talking. A single woman was like a thousand ducks in the eyes of Hit-man Jun — long-winded and confused. But he was facing three of them...

This was a very terrifying issue! And if there was only one man present among them... the fate of that 'man' would be very, very tragic.

"How's he?" Princess Ling Meng asked as she moved forward. Her expression had a hint of flattery.

"How's he?" Dugu Xiao Yi's head barged in-between. The nostrils of her slender nose were flared, while her eyebrows pulsed unceasingly. Jun Mo Xie could feel her breath. He could even smell her sweet fragrance.

"Are you exhausted?" Sun Xiao Mei didn't dare to take the opportunity to join in-on the fun. However, she still put-in a word after she took a seat.

The three women had together inquired of the tired Jun Mo Xie. He couldn't shout with his mouth, but his eyes certainly filled in its stead. He thought of a few things to say as he opened his eyes.

He tried to keep his expression blank as he looked at the three women; it was cold like an ancient block of ice.

His cold gaze swept over them, and the three women shivered with nervousness. They felt ashamed for no reason. They felt as if they had done something wrong. Even the little girl was no exception...

“Women; ah women!” Jun Mo Xie’s mouth arched downwards. He raised his hands to his temple with effort and started to massage it. His face twitched with irritation, “I didn’t wish to talk nonsense with you, but now I think it is necessary! Otherwise, you’ll burden this Young master to death; sooner or later!”

“What?!” The three women were astounded. They looked at each other for a while. They were at a total loss.

“Firstly... You! You made a huge mistake!” Jun Mo Xie pointed his finger at Princess Ling Meng. There was no trace of politeness in his demeanor, “Take today’s matter as an example. It was unnecessary to sacrifice anything. However, you managed to create this situation from nothing! It’s all your doing! Ye Gu Han shouldn’t have sustained such injuries. He could’ve easily retreated with light injuries! But things have turned out in this manner because of your ignorance! Your Uncle Ye made such a huge sacrifice for you. And now you’ve made a blood oath for his doctor. It is very touching. I feel very bad for Ye Gu Han. His situation is extremely tragic. And it was all for something so worthless! It’s too sad!

“I got to know about this matter from your sisters. Princess Ling Meng, you’re at the Gold Xuan level. You may seem like a very strong expert to an average person. However, you can’t fight against such powerful assassins. But Ye Gu Han had already blocked the enemies. So couldn’t you have used your skills to escape? Moreover, this incident happened within the Imperial Capital. So why didn’t you run to each and every Major Family that resided nearby? Did you attach that much importance to your

tears? Those unreal things have done so much harm to Ye Gu Han!

“The only thing you can do when such an incident occurs — in fact, the only thing which you should do — is seize the opportunity and escape! The farther you would’ve run, and the faster you would’ve run... the more Ye Gu Han would’ve been able to relax. You shouldn’t have been concerned about Ye Gu Han’s safety. Or, thought that you’re abandoning him. You should’ve only thought of escaping yourself! You should’ve thought of your own safety since Ye Gu Han was fighting for that reason alone! Ye Gu Han would’ve thought about retreating once you were safe. He may not have been able to retreat wholly un-injured. But it wouldn’t have led to something like this! But did you do that? No. You didn’t. You just looked back until Ye Gu Han had been seriously injured to the point of dying. In fact, you hadn’t even run three hundred meters! And you wouldn’t have covered that distance if it weren’t for Xiao Yi and Sun Xiao Mei pulling at you... do you have curd inside your head? What were you thinking?”

Jun Mo Xie reprimanded the Princess; impolitely and ruthlessly. Princess Ling Meng’s eyes had become red, and she was about to cry.

“Don’t cry! I will throw you and your Uncle Ye out if I see another tear fall from your eyes today. I never asked you take that bullshit blood oath! What a stupid thing to do! As if tears are going to be useful to your Uncle Ye...! Your Uncle Ye is dying because of your wretched tears! But will it be useful for me against the enemy? Crying is worth a fart! Can you do anything else besides crying? You try to cry again, and see what happens!” Jun Mo Xie roared ferociously.

Chapter 271: You Three Are Very Stupid!

Princess Ling Meng's entire body started to tremble. Jun Mo Xie's devilish expression had frightened her. So much so that she didn't even dare to cry.

"In fact, you didn't try to escape when Ye Gu Han sustained seriously injuries! Indeed, it is very good of you! You are very formidable! Your Highness, you're very attached to him. You were willing to do so much for your Uncle Ye! This is so moving! I admire you so much!"

Jun Mo Xie gnashed his teeth and nodded ferociously. He then let out an earth shattering roar, "You didn't even think of the other people with you! You didn't think about your two good sisters! You got so emotional that you wouldn't escape no matter what. But did you think they would abandon you and escape? You could've caused them great harm; in fact, you could've gotten them killed! All three of you would've been killed and turned into a pile of rotting flesh if the assailants' intention had been to assassinate you instead of kidnapping you! You're beauty wouldn't have been of much use then! Your death wouldn't have been that much of a tragedy if you were the enemy's target. However, you managed to involve your two innocent sisters as well! How would you have felt if something had happened to them?"

"But..." Princess Ling Meng felt a sense of foreboding deep in her heart. She also felt somewhat ashamed. Hence, she didn't dare to meet Jun Mo Xie's eyes. Moreover, she didn't even dare to look at her sisters who stood beside her.

"But what?!" Jun Mo Xie's voice and expression were very stern, "However, and when Ye Gu Han was lying on the ground... on the verge of death. What was going on in your head then? This is such a piece of muddled logic!

"Let's say that Ye Gu Han doesn't die while defending you... And

you are safe; then there would've been no problems in that situation. In fact, if Ye Gu Han had died in order to protect you — it would have been a willing death! But he put his life on the line to cover for your escape — your escape was to be the price of his life! But not only did you not escape... you remained motionless! You would've made his death entirely meaningless! It would've been for nothing! He would've traded his life to give you a chance to escape. But he would've died a discontent death because of you!

“Stupid woman! But how will you be able to understand? Your head is full of curd! Huh. You're stupid... and beyond help! You believed that your brain is not that bad? And you even boasted your intelligence. You felt that you're something that I should not be looking down upon... bah!” He felt delight and a sense of accomplishment in bullying her. This was only natural since the Princess had previously disregarded and disdained his existence.

“And you!” He pointed at Dugu Xiao Yi, “The knife I gave you — do you find tying it to your arm very amusing? ...Why don't you tie it inside the crotch of your trousers?! Don't you know that the Knife law fits you? And using it with this knife can yield excellent results?! But how's tying it to your arm of any use? Has your head been kicked by a donkey?”

Jun Mo Xie was panting heavily, but he continued to scold, “Why are you reluctant to do it? What else do you plan to do with it? It's a knife! What is it used for? Knives aren't used as ornaments; nor are they used as decorations. Knives are used to cut people; to chop enemies and to kill! What would you accomplish with it by tying it to your arm? I forged it with so much effort. Didn't you guess that your everyday sweat and smell might corrode this knife since you tie to your arm? Do you know how much mental and physical effort, time, and energy it took me to forge this beautiful knife? What a waste!

“Stupid! You are incorrigibly stupid as well! If her head is full of curd... yours must be flooded with water! Someone needs to shake

that nonsense out of your head!” Jun Mo Xie pointed at Dugu Xiao Yi. He almost spluttered on her face. Dugu Xiao Yi’s face became pale as she made an effort to evade his spit.

“Moreover, their objective... wasn’t you! Princess Ling Meng wasn’t willing to escape. But you two didn’t hurry-up the road to look for reinforcements. You just foolishly looked-on until the enemy arrived! The enemies were Sky Xuan experts! Do you understand what a Sky Xuan is? You are like beggars declaring their intent to revolt against the King; that’s exactly what you are in front of them! The enemy could’ve torn your weak bodies with their fingertips. They could’ve crushed you two into pieces by pressing their fingers! No! Not even a single piece of your body would remain! You were like an ant trying to shake a tree. The only praise I can give you two is for... insulting those Sky Xuan level enemies with your actions!”

“You’re the second stupid woman of this gang!” Jun Mo Xie drew a long breath as he made his conclusion.

“And you! You think you’re very smart, right?” Jun Mo Xie wasn’t about to let Sun Xiao Mei off either. “They didn’t understand... but are you stupid too? You couldn’t get it either? Are you aware that you should’ve been escaping... and not enjoying the view of the street? Weren’t you supposed to flee for your life? And that stupid escape route you picked was something only a brainless person would choose. You wouldn’t have found many winding roads ahead. But there were houses on both sides of the road. And there would’ve been many whose front door would’ve been connected to a back door. That would’ve lead you to an alley at the back. That would’ve been safer, right? Yet unexpectedly, you madly rushed onto the main road! Do you think your speed is faster than a Sky Xuan expert’s?!”

“I know that your looks aren’t good. Therefore, you behave in an unconventional manner. You look at problems. You look at people, and you look at matters in an incisive manner! Therefore, you’re

very cocky in this respect! But your pride is worth a fart! How is it useful? You never look at yourself. You only scrutinize others; and most of that is bogus as well! Do you have a brain? Xiao Yi isn't very logical regarding such matters and Princess Ling Meng's mind was very muddy. You were the only clear headed individual there. So, couldn't you just knock-out the Princess and then leave with her? I'm sure that you could've escaped with ease if you had knocked-out that stupid woman early-on. And even Ye Gu Han could've escaped if you would've done it. You tell me; am I right or am I wrong?!

“Don't ever think you can understand others without understanding yourself first!” Jun Mo Xie pounded the table. “And don't by-any-means think that you're so clever that you can understand everyone's intentions! You think that you can understand a man's psychology and a woman's weaknesses? Let me tell you! The thoughts of men and women are their own, and no one would ever want someone else to control them. Don't ever weigh someone else's personality with your pitiful wisdom! It anyway seems that you're still very lacking! Even a small 'random' can be dangerous enough to kill someone. And what happened to Ye Gu Han is a great example of that!

“It's okay to be stupid on your own. However, you should never involve anyone else in it. Especially those close to you!” Jun Mo Xie roared.

Then, Jun Mo Xie stopped raining curses. His spittle was everywhere. Though, his heart was content. He had gone about scolding a Princess and the daughters of big families like he was lecturing his grandson.

“But... it's like you just said that... we are Gold Xuan level... far from the Sky Xuan level. Moreover, we had to resolve everything despite that huge and unconquerable difference in our strengths. And we could only depend on ourselves. So how could I do it?” Sun Xiao Mei snorted as she pointed at his nose. She had straightened

her neck and had shot back; somewhat resentfully. This little girl wasn't like the Princess and Xiao Yi. She was very proud. Therefore, she argued back.

“You think strength falls out of the sky?” A snorting sound came from Jun Mo Xie's nose. “Don't you dress-up and adorn yourself every day instead of training for your tyrannical strength? Do you think you can have an exceptional strength when you treat yourself like a delicate flower vase and remain protected? Do you know the cost of becoming a genuine expert; a really strong individual? That is obviously something which you young ladies will not be aware of. One should put all his life and soul into attaining even the most ordinary understanding!”

Jun Mo Xie smiled, “You're very young, yet you're already Gold Xuan experts! In fact, you can even be considered extraordinary talents amongst the younger generation. Many people will consider your feat of reaching the Gold Xuan level at such a young age as a remarkable one! And I'll admit that it's true. The cultivation of Xuan Qi is against the natural order of things. And to walk this troublesome path means to expend a lot of wealth and energy. And the most important part is to give up on world. You'll be in conflict with your body every day! However, you're at the best age throughout a woman's lifetime! There have always been many talented women in existence! However, only the women who gave-up on their good looks and youthfulness and were successful in becoming unrivalled experts. They are few and far in-between all these years — from the ancient times to now!

“I say these things to ensure that you don't make stupid mistakes like you did today! Your strength is weak. And I'm certain that an incident like today will happen again! But I'm sure that no one wants Ye Gu Han's sacrifice to become worthless. Do you understand my words?”

Jun Mo Xie hummed for a while. He had lost interest in venting his feelings. Jun Mo Xie walked over to the chair and leaned into

it. Then, he closed his eyes. He then said impatiently, “Don’t dispute the truth I say to you. It’s useless! It might do some good if you’re confident that you can use that bullshit logic to convince the enemy. If not... then shut up. This Young Masters has been working hard for too long; he needs to rest.”

The three women were flushed with anger at first. Then, they realized that Jun Mo Xie’s words were very reasonable even though they were extremely difficult to hear. They couldn’t help but hang their heads and ponder on his words.

Dugu Xiao Yi drummed her mouth and turned. She then snorted and gave a supercilious look. She wrinkled her nose and mumbled, “You’re so unreasonable! Humph! Whenever I get irritated... I take that knife out... it feels like I’m looking at you...”

Then suddenly, they heard the sound of heavy footsteps coming from outside. At first, it seemed that a monster the size of an elephant was wildly stomping towards their direction. The speed of its progress was scary. It was not scarily fast — it was scarily slow.

The three women looked at each other. They gasped. Then, they heard a voice calling from outside, “I say Young Master... you deliberately made me run on my broken leg! Poor me... I must’ve sweated around 5kg on this journey. What was so important that you demanded these medicines so urgently? Moreover, why was it necessary that I bring them over personally? I deserve a special treat for this! Let’s go to the Spirit Fog Lake this afternoon!

“Tch Tch... just think of those powdered and delicate women, brother! My mouth slobbers at the thought of them! I’ll wish to seek out several of them, and then I’ll try your ‘If you don’t pay for it, you don’t but it’ trick. Indeed, the Young Master is a true genius. This little brother admires you; he bows in front of you!”

It goes without saying who the new arrival was...

The color of the faces of the women inside the room changed into

that of a boiler's base. It was dark and scary. The three women's face showed the same intention in unison — murder!

It was a very oppressive intention!

The Tang Family's Young Master dragged his huge belly to the door's threshold as he panted. It was accompanied with the sounds of complaints and flattery. He then passed gas very loudly. He could barely hold-up his stomach with his hands as he finally stepped in. Suddenly, he was shocked to see the three young women staring fierily at him. He swallowed a mouthful of saliva, and let his belly go. Then, he looked around the place in a distracted manner and let-out a blood curdling scream, "AAH! ..."

He let go of the medicines, and spilled them on the ground. Then, he quickly broke into a run and left.

Chapter 272: The Cold-Blooded Master

The three women agreed to catch Fatty Tang and then nimbly pounced at him. Tang Yuan's speed was no match for the three women. Sun Xiao Mei grabbed him by his ear and dragged him back. Fatty Tang continuously begged for mercy as he endured the maltreatment.

“Alright Fatty Tang. You're trying to entice the Young Master Jun into going to that forsaken place with you! I'll whip that fat grease off your body today. How dare you even mention those girls...”

Sun Xiao Mei took the lead as the three women started raining curses at Fatty Tang. They even stomped on him; right in front of Jun Mo Xie. Each of them had accumulated a bellyful of anger. The Fatty had then arrived at the crucial moment. He was practically a ready-made punching bag for them to vent-out their rage on. It would've been a waste if they didn't use him for his designated purpose. Especially when they even had a just-and-reasonable cause to exploit...

Tears and snot ran down his fat face, his fat body, his chubby face and his plump hands; he lost count of how many times he was punched. And his face had turned from white to green, to purple and then black in an instant. He let out an earth-shattering scream. Fatty unceasingly requested Jun Mo Xie to have pity on him and save his little brother from that 'fiery cauldron'. However, he received no reply.

'Putting Fatty Tang right' apparently required a lot of effort. The three women were left panting. They stopped when they recalled that the main culprit was sitting at the side. They realized that they had merely grasped the opportunity to let-out all their pent-up angst. Tang Yuan also got up. He then continued to complain for a while.

“Jun Mo Xie, I didn’t expect you...” The three women suddenly shut-up. This resulted in a complete silence throughout the room.

The place where the Young Master Jun had been sitting was empty. The four people foolishly looked for Jun Mo Xie in the room. They hadn’t realized when the Young Master Jun had disappeared.

Even the herbal medicines which had fallen down were gone...

His actions had been lightning fast.

Grandpa Tang received news from the palace — his eldest grandson, Tang Yuan was to go there the next morning and have an audience with the Emperor. Tang Wan Li was unaware why his grandson had been called, but it was extremely difficult to reject the Emperor’s command. Therefore, he sent someone to the Jun Residence to bring the once-expelled-grandson home.

The Young Master Tang was covered in dirt by then. However, he thanked the Gods in heaven for breaking-him-away from the sea of misery he was in. He quickly escaped that place in disarray; in fact, he didn’t even change his clothes. He had never felt so much affection for his grandfather. His grandfather had rescued him from such hardships. His grandpa had become a god in his eyes.

The sky slowly grew dark as time progressed. Lights had started to flicker in the Jun Family’s courtyard. A banquet had been arranged in the ante-room in honor of the noble guests — Dugu Wudi and Minister Sun.

This banquet was of a very high standard. Grandpa Jun and Jun Wu Yi were personally accompanying the guests. However, Jun Mo Xie had vanished like the smoke. The three women had been gnashing their teeth. Their bellies were burning with their anger, and they desperately wanted to settle the scores.

Jun Mo Xie sneakily emerged from the Hong Jun Pagoda late at

night. Everyone had gone off to sleep by then. He glanced left and right, and then proceeded towards his bedroom.

[This is a joke. I wasn't hiding from those three silly girls. Why should I be afraid of them? I hid... only to prepare a prescription for ye Gu Han; that's all.]

[Saving people is like putting out a fire. How could I've delayed it? And this medicine took a bit of time... these people surely must've needed to rest by now? It's nothing to make a fuss about!]

Jun Mo Xie comforted himself with the anesthetics he had prepared in the past half-a-day. One medicine was to be taken orally, and another was to be applied externally. Jun Mo Xie proceeded into his bedroom, and began treating Ye Gu Han's injured bones.

It took a lot of effort but the broken rib bones in Ye Gu Han's chest cavity were brought together like embroidery. They had been completely brought under control by the time he was finished. Young Master Jun's clothes had been drenched in sweat. He was very tired, and couldn't bear to sit on his backside anymore. He shook his head and muttered, "My own mother didn't work so hard for me... the next time I have to work like this — I'll die before I do it. This effort has 'half' killed me!"

Suddenly, Jun Mo Xie felt a very mysterious aura gushing around him. He felt the hair on his body stand-up. The air itself had become scant, and had started to fill with a vicious and murderous aura. The atmosphere felt extremely cold.

Jun Mo Xie quickly looked-up. He shivered when he saw an astonishing spiritual aura scattering around the air...

The earth-shattering and frantic aura quickly rose over the Tian Xiang City. It then erupted. It had soon covered about of five kilometers...

This aura was filled with endless fury and pain...

Yes, pain! It was faintly discernable. But anyone who felt it could sense that the person disseminating this aura was extremely sad. This was a very genuine feeling.

Jun Mo Xie could confirm that the person dispensing that aura was a top level expert, and had surpassed all competition. However, Hit-man Jun considered this man to be second to himself. However, this man seemed even stronger than the Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao.

A very powerful person had fallen into extreme rage and sadness...

Jun Mo Xie nervously started to ponder. He couldn't tell what was happening. Suddenly, a thunderous and cold voice echoed in the sky, and broke the silence of the night. It then rolled across the city like a tsunami, "Solitary Falcon! Wen Cang Yu! Come and face me you two bastards!"

Suddenly, a long, desolate and indignant cry rang-out from the sky. And it startled everyone.

Many commoners lived in the capital below. However, the voice that had echoed didn't seem to have any apprehensions. Moreover, there was no need to have any misgivings this late at night. Therefore, the person had shouted-out loudly by putting his entire body's mysterious aura into circulation. The imposing manner of the call was sufficient-enough to shock all creatures on this land under the heavens.

The long howl continued to echo; it seemed like the roar of a dragon. It shook the surrounding land as Tian Xiang City reverberated with it. It continued to linger... though not for much longer. The sound seemed unhurried yet earth shattering. It seemed like the rivers had lowed backwards, and the countless people sailing it had roared in unison.

Everyone was woken from their sleep. Even those sleeping-deeply weren't an exception. No one was able to hear anything else

since their ears were full of that reverberating voice.

A thin, black clad, man stood on the roof of the Magnificent Jewel Hall. His roaring voice was full of grief and anger.

...and a strong, destructive, and tyrannical murderous aura...

“You have the guts to kill my disciples; do you not have the guts to face me? Solitary Falcon, Wen Cang Yu; are you dead yet? Don’t you dare act like cowards!” the black-clothed man let-out a more powerful cry this time.

Many people who were nearby were left hearing-impaired after they heard this roar. Their ears were covered with blood in an instant. It seemed as if their ears had ruptured because of this loud sound.

The two distinctive roars were heard; one from the Imperial Palace, and the other from the Jun residence. These three roars reverberated through the sky, and collided against each other. Suddenly, the pressure of the previous roars started to pacify.

“Bang!”

A huge bird like figure appeared over Jun Wu Yi’s small courtyard and suddenly took flight. It let out a loud and unending roar as it soared upwards. He rose over thirty meters in the sky, and then spiraled in the sky like an eagle that was rising to the ninth level of the heaven. Then, he turned in the direction of the Magnificent Jewel Hall and flew towards it.

“Cold blooded Master Lei Wu Bei! You have finally arrived, you brat! I’ve been waiting for you a while!” Solitary Falcon laughed loudly as he flew like a meteor. “I see that this cold blooded beast has arrived. But why has the Fifth Ranked Master of the Eight Supreme Masters come here?”

Another uninterrupted roar could be heard as well. It was resonating from the Imperial Palace, “Senior Lei and Senior Falcon; you have arrived! Your little brother Wen Cang Yu

welcomes you both!”

Wen Cang Yu was Mr. Wen from the Imperial Palace. His voice was exceptionally abnormal. It was very gentle and didn't seem hurried. It was apparently emitted without any effort. However, his gentle voice somehow was able to compete with the fierce voices of his two seniors. It was clearly audible and didn't seem subdued by theirs.

It was evident that Mr. Wen wasn't as strong as the two Masters, but he was definitely close to them in terms of his Xuan level.

The three men stood on the roof of the Magnificent Jewel Hall. The innumerable stars glittered in the heavens above them. The wind screamed through the crisscrossing streets between the houses. The robes of all the three men fluttered violently in the wind. It seemed like a deity from the ninth level of heaven had descended upon the mortal world.

Surprisingly, the cold blooded master — Lei Wu Bei — had personally arrived. It was a sight to see.

This old man had ten disciples in total. Four of them were dead; three of them were disabled beyond healing... and the remaining had been injured, and hadn't yet recovered. The old man had gone mad with rage after he had seen this. It would've been a good bargain if they had killed their Imperial target. But they hadn't. Hence, he had rushed over to see things through.

Hit-man Jun knew that Lei Wu Bei was a peerless cold-blooded master. However, Jun Mo Xie didn't feel any fear in his heart when he heard his voice. Instead, he quickly activated the Yin Yang escape and tailed behind Solitary Falcon. In fact, he followed him rather closely; he didn't pull-back a single step. Jun Wu Yi walked to Jun Mo Xie's room with difficulty. His blue robes were fluttering in the wind. However, he only found Ye Gu Han there. There was no one else in that room. Jun Wu Yi couldn't help but smile. His nephew's methods surely surpassed the heavens.

However, his courage was as impressive.

Lei Wu Bei's stature was tall. The sky hadn't lit-up yet, and the stars still glittered. The earth was completely dark in contrast. However, Lei Wu Bei's eyes shone through that darkness with a cold, merciless light. But if one would examine him carefully... they would see that his eyes were brimming with an incompressible sorrow.

He had the reputation of being the most cold-blooded master. However, three of his ten disciples had been permanently disabled, while four had been killed. This was a huge blow to the powerful cold-blooded expert. And it was something he could not excuse!

Perhaps no one could ever excuse this...

Lei Wu Bei had trained ten Sky Xuan experts simultaneously. It was considered an enormous achievement. Moreover, it was something that none of the other Great Masters could boast of.

However, he had lost two-thirds of his original ten disciples within a month. Even if their cultivation wasn't at the Sky Xuan level... he wouldn't have been able to make peace with it

The Young Master Jun had closely followed behind Solitary Falcon. However, he was in no mood to understand Lei Wu Bei's grief and anger. But, he found himself witnessing a very fascinating phenomenon. Or maybe it could be called — a wonderful feeling.

Moreover, this was something he had noticed whenever he had run into the top experts of this world... Shi Chang Xiao, the Solitary Falcon, Lei Wu Bei, Yu Tang Empire's Imperial Teacher — Fei Meng Chen, the three Spirit Xuan Elders of the Silver Blizzard City, Mr Wen, and the even the two King Beasts of the Tian Fa forest...

Though it wasn't very obvious for Mr. Wen... but looking at the people from the Solitary Falcon's strength and onwards... it could

be noticed that these supreme experts had one characteristic that was common between them.

They were all lonely!

Chapter 273: A Supreme Master's Rage

That's right; lonely!

It seemed that no matter where they stood and no matter how many people they had standing beside them — they were always very lonely. They were incompatible with their surroundings. It seemed that they were alone in the scope of this boundless heaven and earth.

Such loneliness was indeed heroic.

Yet, there was a sense of desolation to it.

[Was this the price one had to pay to become a peerless master? Or was this what they call... 'being lonely at the top'? If one reaches their level... would one also be lonely like them?]

[However, I am convinced that if I'm to talk about loneliness... I've reached greater heights than them.] Jun Mo Xie snorted coldly. [I can't compare with you in terms of strength, but I'm far lonelier than you!]

Jun Mo Xie pondered deeply for a while. Then, he suddenly saw a couple of shadows. Two more people climbed onto the roof. Their white beards were floating in the wind, and their expressions were dignified. The new arrivals were none other than the Silver Blizzard City's Third and Ninth Elders.

“The two seniors honor us with their presence. It's a pleasure to have Elder Brother Wen in our company. My Silver Blizzard City is truly honored. Why don't we all go down and have some tea?” Third Elder cupped his hands and smiled.

He could see that the three men had their 'daggers drawn against each other'. He knew his words weren't suited for this environment. However, he still requested them to follow him into the Magnificent Jewel Hall. No one would wish to lose the Silver Blizzard City's favor. Therefore, he put on a brave face and invited

them in.

Lei Wu Bei was very sad. He gave a long smile, but then ignored the Third Elder's request. He then shouted, "Solitary Falcon! My Sixth Disciple suffered serious fractures and torn tendons. He has been disabled for life. Why did you do it?"

The Third Elder's face was filled with embarrassment. His strength wasn't comparable, but he was the Silver Blizzard City representative. Lei Wu Bei's attitude had made the Third Elder very angry. However, he kept his rage at bay since he could see Lei Wu Bei's obvious sorrow and somewhat crazed expression.

Solitary Falcon laughed in an understated manner, "Why are you so angry Elder Brother Lei? He was just a disciple. This Old Man did him a favor, and taught him a lesson in your stead. You have ten disciples; one getting crippled shouldn't matter that much. And he was the only one amongst your disciples who hadn't reached the Sky Xuan realm yet. I removed the garbage that plagued your name. I've taken out the trash for you. I avoided you so much embarrassment! Ha Ha Ha..."

Ferocious Qi arose within Lei Wu Bei's body. There seemed to be an invisible undercurrent in his body, and it was slowly rising-up. He stared at Solitary Falcon. His eyes showed an endless increase in murderous intentions. He nodded slowly, and then said in a deep voice, "Well! Very well! Solitary Falcon, you're not worthy of calling yourself a 'teacher' of the senior generation. You attacked a member of the younger generation! You must be ashamed of yourself!"

Solitary Falcon snorted and looked at Lei Wu Bei with disdain. He sneered, "What? Are you going to avenge your disciple? Then come on Lei Wu Bei. I've waited thirty years for this opportunity! I've long felt that the rankings are wrong!"

Lei Wu Bei repressed his emotions and smiled, "I'm not exactly worried about it. Solitary Falcon, what I'm really interested to

know is... how had my disciple offended you? What made you do this evil deed despite being aware of his identity?!”

Solitary Falcon replied coldly, “Could he dare to offend me? He just wasn’t pleasing to my eyes! Will this reason suffice, Lei Wu Bei?”

The Solitary Falcon, Shi Chang Xiao and others had been fighting over the Xuan Core. Lei Wu Bei’s sixth disciple had snuck-in in an attempt to steal the Xuan Core from the Solitary Falcon. And he had almost succeeded. This had caused immense embarrassment for the Solitary Falcon. However, how could he admit it now?

Moreover, there was no way the Solitary Falcon would ever explain anything to the cold-blooded master; especially given the arrogant tone in which Lei Wu Bei had asked him the question. The proud master would never bow his head.

Who was right and who was wrong... strength was the only truth in this world.

“This is a good reason! A very good one! Solitary Falcon, I’ll remember this reason.” Lei Wu Bei laughed heartily. He then changed the direction of his gaze, and spoke to Wen Cang Yu in a dignified voice, “Elder Brother Wen... you are here? You’re staying at Tian Xiang City?”

Wen Can Yu smiled gently, “Master Lei is very perceptive! Wen has arrived to protect the sacred contract with the Empire!”

Lei Wu Bei closed his eyes. His eyes somewhat twinkled and became gloomy. Then, he suddenly opened his eyes, and they started to emit a burst of cold, poisonous and a miserable green-colored light. It felt as if there was an evil and unsettling wind around them; this wind seemed to screaming the agony of his heart. He spoke in an incomparably cold manner, “Elder Brother Wen Cang Yu, protecting the treaty is not a proper justification for killing four of my disciples! Guarding the treaty doesn’t mean you can act unscrupulously!”

Wen Cang Yu looked-up to the sky, and let out a faint sigh. A trace of anger flit across his face... Lei Wu Bei wasn't in a position to distinguish between good and evil. Moreover, he was acting in a forceful and somewhat unreasonable manner. However, Mr. Wen remembered his duty. He took a deep breath and somehow managed to restrain his anger.

He pondered for a while and then lowered his head. He then looked at Lei Wu Bei indifferently, "Master Lei... I did not kill your disciples!"

Wen Cang Yu's voice sank, "I have to address Master Lei since you've questioned and ridiculed. But I will only explain this to you once! Whether you believe it or not... or accept it or not...!"

Lei Wu Bei remained silent for a while. He then replied coldly, "When Elder Brother Wen says it like that... how can I not believe you!" His voice was still cold, but the murderous tinge in it seemed to have reduced. His voice then became gentle, "If Elder Brother Wen tells me... he can leave any time!"

"But then who killed my disciples? Can you tell me, Elder Brother Wen? If Elder Brother is willing to accept my questions and tells me the truth... then Lei Wu Bei would offer apologies for his conduct!" Lei Wu Bei removed his hands from his sleeves, and kept them at his side in a gesture of friendship.

Li Wu Bei was a Supreme Master. His disciples had been slaughtered. Yet, he was speaking in a very dignified manner, and was willing to listen to logic. It would be considered very commendable even if the opposite party was a Spirit Xuan expert like himself.

"That man's origins and strength are quite mysterious. Mr. Wen is also very interested in him. It is such a pity that this is so muddled and confusing. So much so that Wen is convinced that he shifted the blame to me."

A short yet bright burst of a smile spread across Wen Cang Yu's

face. He didn't seem ashamed. His smile was like a cloud in the face of insipid wind. It seemed as if the matter was frivolous and unimportant.

“And now I see Master Lei has personally set-out to find that person. But Wen is helpless, and willingly concedes defeat.”

“You have my many thanks for this, Elder Brother Wen.” Lei Wu Bei's eyes flashed with a cold light as he cupped his hands, “Do as you wish Elder Brother Wen; many apologies for today's matter.”

Wen Cang Yu laughed and cupped his hands in return, “That's very noble of you. I hope to see you again. Wen has some pressing duties; so kindly forgive me!”

He cupped his hands again. And then, he was swept away like a dead leaf in the strong wind. He flew-up to the sky; his slim body seemed to resemble a piece of parchment. He swayed in the air for a while, and then vanished without a trace.

Young Master Jun had been watching in secrecy. He couldn't help but curse in his heart endlessly. [This senior's explanation was so plain. He merely said that it was a misunderstanding... Wasn't this too easy? And how did the Cold-Blooded Master Lei Wu Bei get convinced so easily?! ...The other person merely told him that he hadn't done it. And surprisingly this Fifth-ranking Master of the Eight Great Master was convinced by it?!]

[Is Mr. Wen incapable of telling lies? Or is he too good at swindling!]

[I'm genuinely... speechless!]

Jun Mo Xie understood one thing as he cursed in his heart — people at such levels of cultivation didn't have a need to lie. It was unlikely that they'd be afraid of anything after having reached such a level. However, this explanation still seemed strange.

[That explanation shouldn't have cut-it even if it were a misunderstanding.... That explanation was too weak!]

[The Solitary Falcon's attitude wasn't very different either...!]

Lei Wu Bei had genuinely believed Wen Cang Yu's explanation. Moreover, the Cold-Blooded Master's attitude towards him was entirely different. It seemed as if Lei Wu Bei had no option but to agree with Wen Cang Yu even if he didn't give a proper explanation. And it seemed as this had something to do with Wen Cang Yu's identity.

Mr. Wen's Xuan Level was lesser than Lei Wu Bei's. However, it seemed that the man had only given an explanation since he didn't wish to disrespect the Cold-Blooded Master.

[Is that man from 'that' place?] Jun Mo Xie's attention shifted to 'those' words as he pondered inside, [But where is that place? How did Lei Wu Bei — a member of the Eight Great Masters — seem fearful of him? Is there something fishy between them?]

Lei Wu Bei then turned towards the Solitary Falcon. He withdrew his hands and snorted coldly, "Now it's only the two of us, Solitary Falcon." Then, he suddenly swung his sleeves in anger towards the Third and the Ninth Elders. He then shouted, "This matter doesn't concern you! The Silver Blizzard City doesn't have any qualifications to get involved in this matter!"

It seemed as if a strong wind had screamed at them. The Third and the Ninth Elders were left in pain. They were extremely angry at this, but the other person was far stronger. Therefore, they had no choice but to cup their hands, jump into the gale and disappear. However, their minds were singing a different tune, [let's see if you dare to act so arrogant when more people from our Silver City arrive!]

Solitary Falcon laughed. His tall body rose up in the air like an eagle as he sneered, "You had a good relationship with your disciple! So, you wish to avenge him? Follow me!"

Lei Wu Bei screamed. It seemed like a thousand ghosts were escaping from the gates of hell. His body slowly rose into the air.

He followed the Solitary Falcon closely, and then vanished with him in a blink of an eye.

The Milky Way lit-up the night like a cold and starry river.

Jun Mo Xie activated the Yin-Yang Escape and followed after them.

He couldn't help but admit that the masters' strength was in a league of its own. Jun Mo Xie had activated the highest level of the Yin-Yang Escape. Yet, it was very strenuous for him to keep up with them.

Jun Mo Xie was an expert in tailing stealthily. He was convinced that no one in the Tian Xiang City would've been as successful in his place. And that included the mysterious Mr. Wen.

Solitary Falcon's bird-like movements were the fastest in the Xuan Xuan Continent. Moreover, Solitary Falcon was confident that he was one of the strongest amongst the Eight Great Masters. Therefore, he employed his full strength to show his authority to Lei Wu Bei. Lei Wu Bei obviously didn't dare to neglect this. Hence, the two individuals promptly began a competition of 'Swiftness'.

The two men had merely exchanged a 'battle of words' after they had met. However, they had reached the threshold of such a fierce competition.

The coiling sounds of their roars seemed to have been the first round. However, it had appeared that the Solitary Falcon's cultivation was a bit lacking in that regard. But it seemed that 'Speed' was the second round of their competition.

Chapter 274: Intentionally Stirring-Up Some Trouble

Therefore, Solitary Falcon and Lei Wu Bei hurried with great speed towards the battlefield. They were putting forth all of their efforts for the fear of losing face. The Solitary Falcon's Xuan Qi had even started to produce sound waves as he flew. Speed had always been his domain of excellence. He couldn't allow Lei Wu Bei to beat him.

Lei Wu Bei had come to avenge his disciples. Hence, he couldn't allow his strength to be looked down upon. Therefore, he was chasing after the Solitary Falcon in full-force.

From this perspective — Jun Mo Xie's Yin-Yang Escape was worthy of being called formidable and astonishing. However, its efficacy was still very shallow. He had yet to unlock the mysteries of the Yin-Yang Escape. So how could he compete with those two powerful masters yet?

However, he was able to keep-up with those two Supreme Masters. This was a world-shaking and astonishing fact given his age and cultivation level.

The two men's shadows flickered back-to-back like a falling meteorite. They crossed from house to house, and were soon outside the city. They then disappeared into the vast open-lands.

The city couldn't be considered small since millions of people lived in it. However, these two masters had crossed-over from the center of the city in a few breaths. Jun Mo Xie reckoned that even an F-4 fighter aircraft from his previous life couldn't match this speed...

Young Master Jun felt a little dispirited as he saw the two men disappear from his line of sight. The people he was following had managed to evade him. This was the first time in his life that

something like this had happened to him. He couldn't help but force a smile as he raised his eyes.

[Indeed it must be fate! I had come here in the evening today, and had barely plucked myself from a hugely troubling incident. And now I'm here once again ...in the middle of the night!]

[Does this place have a relation with me?]

Jun Mo Xie looked around to confirm this inference.

This place was an uninhabited countryside. It was surrounded by dense and misty forests. It was well suited to kill someone.

He stood on a treetop. The wind caressed him as it slowly whistled by. Jun Mo Xie felt content for a while. In fact, he even felt heroic. He was almost unable to stop himself from singing, "To wear a dress and to step across the snow covered forest... oh anger to dash like water... oh e eee!"

This loud singing voice never left his throat though. Suddenly, two loud blasts burst from the middle of the jungle. They submerged that part of the forest like a tsunami; its waves were as imposing as mountains.

[I thought those two old fools had gone far-away. But it seems like they've started fighting somewhere nearby. It seems that this territory not only appealed to me, but them as well. What a great area!]

Countless trees were forcefully tilted in the opposite direction. The area resounded with 'snapping' sounds. It seemed that the trunks of the trees would break at any second.

He had been standing on a treetop, and had felt very pleasant in this atmosphere. In fact, he was on the verge of breaking into a song... But the Young Master Jun suddenly swayed and came down. He then cursed inwardly; [these old bastards don't have any appeal. Don't they know that fighting requires grace?]

Then he silently looked towards the inner part of the forest. An

opportunity to watch a fight between such Masters was very rare...

Solitary Falcon and Lei Wu Bei stood opposite-each-other in the middle of the jungle. They were about thirty meters apart.

The ground between the two men had become exceptionally smooth. There had been a huge tree there just moments ago. However, it silently disintegrated and disappeared forever because of the explosion caused by their colliding Xuan Qi.

At present — that space seemed smoother than a basketball court's floor from his previous life.

[Such amazing craftsmanship! How come these two beasts don't repair roads? They ought to go to remote mountainous areas, and build roads. This is even smoother than the work of a road roller. And it's far more convenient. This road is so smooth that it could be used for speed racing... It's such a waste that no one will be able to make proper use of their craftsmanship in this area...]

An invisible field of Qi spread-out between the two fighters. The back of Solitary Falcon's head was covered with disheveled hair. His hair seemed to lift as if they were drifting in the wind. Lei Wu Bei stood opposite to him. However, he didn't move a single inch. Even the hem of his clothes didn't sway.

The two men had judged whose cultivation was relatively superior.

"Falcon, your cultivation has progress significantly over these years!" Lei Wu Bei snorted coldly, "I can't compete with you in speed, but your Xuan level falls far behind mine! You'll have to be honest in front of me!"

"Is that so? Not necessarily!" Solitary Falcon suddenly jumped high and soared into the air. He was like a high pressure spring which had suddenly rebounded. His entire body was like a javelin that had been thrust straight into the sky.

The Xuan Qi of the imposing Master Solitary Falcon was a bit

lacking. It would've been difficult for him to continue if he were to maintain his position. Moreover, he would've been too powerless to save himself had he fallen into Lei Wu Bei's field of Qi. Therefore, the Solitary Falcon had made a prompt decision and had shot-up. He had broken-through Lei Wu Bei's Qi barrier in the process.

The Solitary Falcon held the last position amongst the Eight Great Masters. His Xuan Qi was also at the lowest level amongst those masters. This was a well-known fact. In fact, he probably wouldn't have been deserving of the title of a "Great Master" if he were to foolishly entangle himself against one of the mightier ones.

Each has their own strengths. And Master Falcon's strongest advantage had never been a powerful Xuan Qi.

This high-a-jump had broken past Solitary Falcon's original limit. He had jumped to over seventy meters. He looked like an indistinct dot in the night's sky.

Lei Wu Bei snorted coldly as a brilliant light flashed in his eyes. He started spinning on his toes, and his body suddenly became similar to a spinning top. Then suddenly, a tornado started to appear around him. It was made-up of a completely shiny-black strange Qi. The surrounding trees, the grass and the soil started to roll-up with this tornado. As its range got larger and larger — its power also increased.

A sharp, incisive and ear-rupturing howl echoed in the sky. The mournful and shrill howl came down like lightening.

"Bang! Bang! Bang!" the sound of a sonic-boom echoed from the sky as the Solitary Falcon reached the limit of his speed. The friction between his body, his clothes and the atmosphere rent the air. This had given rise to such a loud sound.

The Solitary Falcon extended his right hand into a claw as he moved his left to his shoulder. The man himself was descending

from the sky, but his long shining hair was perpendicular to the ground...

The Solitary Falcon resembled a devilish God of war as he emitted a fearsome arrow made of wind. He screamed loudly as he let it loose towards Lei Wu Bei.

“Good! Come!” Lei Wu Bei shouted coldly. The tornado around him rose steeply from the ground to meet the strong black figure in the sky. Soon the two came into contact. This resulted in a loud ‘blasting’ sound. The two powerful forces disappeared in the blink of an eye; they left no trace. The Solitary Falcon stood in front of Lei Wu Bei again. His claws transformed in an ‘ever changing’ manner as he snatched at his opponent.

Lei Wu Bei let out a ruthless howl. His palms were covered in black Qi. He welcomed his opponent’s attack with no trace of fear in his eyes. The hands of the two men clashed several hundred times in an instant. Then, suddenly there was a loud “Bang!”. Lei Wu Bei’s body flew away, while the Solitary Falcon stumbled back due to the recoil.

This flying-retreat had created a distance of over thirty meters between the two men.

There had been an intense explosion at the place where these two forces had clashed. The two men were thrown into a retreat. Jun Mo Xie had been hiding over sixty meters away. However, the waves of the aftermath of the explosion had reached him. In fact, the tree he stood on had snapped under the effect of the explosion.

It was a huge and astonishing explosion.

Hit-man Jun had been observing this decisive battle between those two powerful Great Masters with keen interest. Moreover, these were the top fighters of this world. And he had been comparing them to the ones from his previous life. He felt that he could learn a lot by observing from the sidelines. That could help him in becoming more powerful.

He had just figured-out another hiding place when that tree broke. But, it broke into more than ten pieces. Jun Mo Xie was suddenly flung to the ground. He fell hard and rolled for a while. It was a sudden incident, and he didn't get enough time to recover. Moreover, he couldn't help but let-out a low groan since it happened so suddenly.

This groan was indeed extremely low in volume. However, that sound was like a thunderclap to the two Great Masters. Someone had been spying on them, and the two of them had been shockingly unaware of his presence.

The two men couldn't help but shout in unison, "Who's there?! Come out and show yourself!"

The Young Master Jun didn't dare to. He withdrew his neck and escaped into the woods. He moved onto another tree as he studied the contest between the two men in his mind. He could determine who the relatively superior man was...

The fight had just started, but he could see that the Solitary Falcon was no match for Lei Wu Bei. [I'm afraid I'll have to suffer if he loses.]

This was like a fight between two extremely rich men. One was fighting with one billion, while the other was fighting with one-and-a-half billion. These two men were filthy rich from this world's standard of strength. They had spent enough. But as much as they liked it, they were still squandering their money. However, the one with the one-and-a-half billion would win if both sides fought to the end. After all... he was better off.

[However, the Falcon is on my side! Do I just look on helplessly as he gets humiliated? Ah, I guess I'll give them a little trouble.] Jun Mo Xie suddenly thought of a plan. He snorted coldly; his voice was full of disdain. He then moved again.

The two figures suddenly moved onto the place from where he had groaned in a fraction of a second.

However, Yin-Yang Escape was wondrous. He could hide right in front of the eyes of the two Masters.

The two Great Masters thoroughly searched the area. They looked at each other in dismay since they were unable to find him.

The two men were extremely shocked. How could someone infiltrate so close to them? That too right in front of their very eyes.

This man's Xuan Level was in no way under theirs. His Xuan Level might even be superior to theirs. [Who is this man? What is his purpose?]

Just then, someone snorted coldly. It seemed as if this person was looking down upon them. [Who would be so arrogant?]

Solitary Falcon suddenly came to himself. He then cursed, "Lei Wu Bei, you're extremely shameless. You came with a helper! I am disgusted with you! This is your manner of conduct?! And yet you call yourself one of the 'Eight Great Masters'!"

"Shut your nonsense!" Lei Wu Bei was very angry, "I can deal with you on my own. Why would I need a helper? This is a joke! This man's your helper, right? Falcon, stop crying 'thief' when you're the one going-about committing 'robberies'. I'm going to teach you a lesson!"

The two men cursed each other. But they were inwardly alert. One may have been superior to the other, but his superiority was very limited. However, their respective opponent could easily turn the tide in his own favor if the man had someone with a decent strength as an aide. Therefore, both the men quickly came up with the thought to end the fight then-and-there.

Chapter 275: I Will Seek To Avenge!

“Even if you do have a helper — what do I have to fear?” Solitary Eagle laughed mischievously. He snorted as his hands turned into bright claws like those of a falcon, “Lei Wu Bei, your Xuan cultivation is indeed slightly better than mine. And I admit this. However, winning a battle doesn’t solely depend on the level of Xuan Qi. But it’s your lucky day today because I’ll teach you an important lesson. This old man has come up with an exceptional move. My move will make the Fifth Great Master ‘eat dirt’! Ha Ha...”

Solitary Eagle’s body accelerated and became very erratic as he burst into laughter. His body had suddenly taken the shape of a demonic and ghostly bird. The entire realm under the firmaments seemed to be screeching as his claws came together in a crisscross shape; this move had given rise to a strong gale. His claws formed a large network of airtight angle which could seemingly penetrate through any angle.

If this bird was ‘supposedly’ a Falcon — then it appeared as if the Ghost of a Falcon had launched an attack.

The Nine Claws of the Ghostly Falcon!

“An excellent Falcon-Claw!” Lei Wu Bei suddenly shouted in praise. He had never seen anything like this before. This move had attracted all his attention. His brain even forgot to counter-attack.

Chi Chi Chi...

Lei Wu Bei had never seen such a fantastic martial arts move before. This move had left him at a complete loss. Solitary Falcon’s claws inflicted three cuts on Lei Wu Bei’s body. However, Lei Wu Bei didn’t get frightened... even though he wasn’t prepared to face this attack. He calmly retreated a few steps. Solitary Falcon howled as he gained the upper hand. Then, he unleashed the second move.

The Supreme Master Solitary Falcon had only been able to learn the first two steps of the ‘Nine Claws of the Ghostly Falcon’. His confidence increased when the first step showed results. Hence, he decided to strike with the second move while the iron was still hot.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” the sounds of explosion emanated from Lei Wu Bei’s body. He then let out a fierce roar and started to accumulate an exceeding amount of Xuan Qi in his body; the Xuan Qi started to surge like a tsunami. Lei Wu Bei was the Fifth Great Master. He couldn’t allow himself to get pushed to such a state while fighting the Solitary Falcon. He made no attempts to hold back as he unleashed his Cold-Blooded Finger.

There was a loud explosion and the two men stumbled back in recoil.

Lei Wu Bei was extremely shocked when he looked at his chest and saw five bloody palm prints. Then, he looked up, “What is the name of this remarkable Falcon-Claw technique? How many steps are there?”

Solitary Falcon’s face was flushed, and his chest was heaving rapidly. He answered coldly, “How did my new technique taste, huh?! It’s called the Nine Claws of the Ghostly Falcon! As the name implies — it has nine steps. How did you like your lesson, huh?”

“Nine steps? So this wonderful move has nine steps? The Nine Claws of the Ghostly Falcon?! It is worthy of the name ‘Ghostly Falcon’!” Lei Wu Bei groaned in a depressed manner. He then added, “Solitary Falcon, you’re different from before! This Old Man has no interest in dawdling with you today. So I am dropping this matter for the time being. Humph! But I’ll find you whenever I want!”

Solitary Falcon laughed heartily, “You can seek-out your senior whenever you wish to taste his new and unique skills!”

“Solitary Falcon, we’re both called the ‘Eight Great Masters’. So I shall give you a warning. Stay away from the Jun Family.” Lei Bu

Wei snorted, “The Jun Family has provoked two powerful entities. And now they’ve added this Old Man to that list as well. It seems that it will be necessary to take action against them! This Old Man doesn’t wish to see you there when he annihilates their entire family! Otherwise I doubt I will let you off either!”

“Annihilate the Jun Family? How?” Solitary Falcon snorted coldly, “Why should the Solitary Falcon listen to this nonsense when he can sort Lei Wu Bei out easily? And you wouldn’t be delaying this matter if you could contend against my ‘Nine Claws of the Ghostly Falcon’!”

“You don’t know how to regret! You always act so recklessly!”

Lei Wu Bei snorted as he hung his head. Then, his body rose-up and suddenly vanished. Lei Wu Bei had decided to act when he saw the peculiarity of the situation. The Solitary Falcon’s ‘Nine Claws of the Ghostly Falcon’ was a very strange and unpredictable move. Moreover, each step was more powerful than the previous one. He felt extremely threatened by this move. He didn’t have the confidence of emerging victorious like he previously did. Moreover, the lowest ranked Great Master was known for his speed. Therefore, it would’ve been very hard for Lei Wu Bei to escape if the Solitary Falcon had a powerful aide in support.”

Therefore, Lei Wu Bei made a prompt decision and escaped.

The Solitary Falcon was silent for a while. He then sighed, “Well, that was a close call!”

His opponent was ranked fifth amongst the Great Eight Masters for a reason.

It would seem that both the fighters had done equally-well in this battle. However, the Solitary Falcon was aware that he would’ve lost.

His ‘Nine Claws of the Ghostly Falcon’ had admittedly been very fruitful. However, he would’ve undoubtedly been in a difficult

situation once the opponent increased his power output as the fight progressed. He was already scraping the bottom of his trunk of tricks, and had nearly exhausted them. However, his opponent had just begun to unleash his Cold Blooded Finger. The second step of his unique 'Nine Claws of the Ghostly Falcon' had dominated for a short while; nothing more. Further, there had been a mysterious occurrence. The two men had searched throughout the periphery, but hadn't been able to find any trace of this 'spectator's' presence. The two men had lost the zeal to fight after that incident.

They feared that a fisherman would catch both the fighting fish[1]. And the fisherman had a great advantage in this situation; this fact could not be guarded against! In case the two men were to sustain serious injuries during the battle... the third party could swoop-in and clinch the victory.

He could attack and kill both the Great Masters! How could he possibly attempt something that crazy? Who was this extremely mysterious person?

Therefore, the two men thought of the same thing, and gave-up on the fight.

[I'm afraid I would've been humiliated if I hadn't practiced this Ghostly Falcon's Claw move. My recent comprehension of the second step was especially pivotal... Lei Wu Bei is far stronger than me!]

[He is truly worthy of being called the most 'cold-blooded' master!]

[I am thankful to the man who made that noise; regardless of the intentions he may have harbored!]

It seemed that he needed to learn more about the 'Nine Claws of the Ghostly Falcon'. It was imperative that he quickly master that move without delay. The Solitary Falcon sighed, and then quickly left.

The Young Master Jun had departed before the two Great Masters.

Jun Mo Xie was bursting with anger at that moment.

Hit-man Jun was extremely mad at Lei Wu Bei.

[Correct! Our family indeed has incurred the grudges of two powerful organizations! But it doesn't mean that 'anyone' can come and step on us as they like!]

His precise words had been — “The Jun Family has provoked two powerful entities. And now they've added this Old Man to that list as well. It seems that it will be necessary to take action against them! This Old Man doesn't wish to see you there when he annihilates their entire family! Otherwise I doubt I will let you off either!” The mere thought of Lei Wu Bei's words had set Jun Mo Xie's stomach on fire.

This was a clear threat for the Solitary Falcon to abandon the Jun Family. [Damn it! I've somehow duped a Great Master to come and protect my side! So what if you're the Fifth Great Master! Bullsh*t! You're merely the Fifth Master, and yet you dare to oppose me? Even if you were the Supreme Master, Yun Bei Chen... what could you do? I will kill you... the first chance I get!]

[Why even wait for an opportunity? Let's play right now! Let's see who beats whom!]

Jun Mo Xie was full of rage; extreme hatred had accumulated in his gut.

[Damn it Old Man! You had ten apprentices, and four of them are dead! It seems that it's not enough yet! I can't sort you out for the time being. Nor can I deal with your remaining Sky Xuan apprentices... However, I can assassinate your crippled apprentices! You think that's going to be difficult for me?]

[So your heart aches for your deceased disciples? Then this Young Master will make your heart ache once again!]

Jun Mo Xie was recklessly angry.

The Hit-man Jun couldn't help but recall the Jun Family's ancestral teaching — “Having balls does not make you a man! It is the incomparably indomitable spirit which does!”

[Good! I'll send them to their f*cking ancestors!] Jun Mo Xie cursed in anger as he unleashed the Yin-Yang Escape at full speed. He darted back towards the city like a wisp of smoke. His desired destination was the Li Family's residence.

[I don't care if your bullsh*t ranks fifth or sixth in the list of the Great Masters! I will make you cry today. I will tear you down and turn you into a kite!] His speed increased exponentially because of his anger...

He searched the Li Residence thoroughly, but couldn't find anyone.

[Does no one live in the Li Family's residence? This is very alarming... What's going on?]

Young Master Jun scratched his head upon finding the place deserted. Finally, he stamped his foot in frustration and then infiltrated into the ground of the locality. He carefully searched while he listened for a giveaway sound to a hidden private chamber...

One lap of the residence... two laps... then finally...

A strange voice grabbed Jun Mo Xie's attention...

“...the Xuan Beast crossbows are very important... everything has been arranged carefully... but the good thing is...” several intermittent words reached Jun Mo Xie's ear. Jun Mo Xie suddenly became alert. He slowly and carefully followed the sound to its source.

[I've been making a plan to capture the Xuan-Beast-Tendon Crossbows. But surprisingly I've found other interested parties as well? This is an unexpected gain!]

“These are Xuan Beast tendons and materials used in the frame of crossbow’s body make an excellent combination. Their lethality will be immense. Even an Earth Xuan expert will find it hard to evade its attack if they’re caught off-guard! It is a rare and killer weapon! It is a pity that we have to give up on these,” a person with a musical voice sighed.

“Why are we giving it up? Junior Disciple Li, we can’t let them go so easily! This is a very rare opportunity for your Li Family! These weapons are ready-made and good-to-go! These are of a special make. These crossbows will make terrifying killing weapons! Will you let this opportunity pass you by? Why would you do that?” another person spoke in an anxious voice.

Jun Mo Xie could listen properly by now. This was the voice of the Senior-most Disciple — Lei Jian Hong. He was eagerly trying to persuade someone.

“Elder Brother Lei, how could I not see the importance of these crossbows?” the voice that replied was sonorous, graceful and extremely refined. One could imagine this person’s graceful personality by merely listening to his voice.

He was audible to Jun Mo Xie as he continued, “Ten brother-disciple had come to Tian Xiang City to help You Ran. But I’ve done nothing for Master in return. Yet, I’ve only received Master’s aid and my seniors’ affection. I’m truly ashamed! And four of my seniors have left for the heavens because of my matters. And three of my seniors have been crippled for life. This Little Brother is remorseful... what right does this Little Brother have to exert himself in front of his seniors? If some misfortune befalls the senior brothers again... wouldn’t Li You Ran’s behavior be considered worse than a beast’s?”

“Junior Disciple Li, why are you talking like we are strangers? We are brother disciples! Your matter is our matter!” Lei Jian Hong anxiously replied. “And if these crossbows ended-up with the Second Prince... heaven knows what that idiot would do? This

could turn into a major threat! The Jun Family won't be the only one to get affected if the Second Prince succeeds... your Li Family will also be affected... along with the Emperor's iron clad strength! How can you not see this? Junior Disciple! This matter demands immediate action! You've always been so firm. Why are you being so overly sensitive at such an important time?"

Notes:

A slight modification of an Idiom. The actual Idiom is — sandpiper and clam war together (and the fisherman catches both); alternately... two quarreling neighbors lose out to a third party.

Chapter 276: I'm Not Satisfied Yet

“No, Elder Brother. But your Junior Brother appreciates your feelings,” Li You Ran seemed pained as he shook his head. “Elder Brother, do you know? When I close my eyes at night... I see the four seniors standing in front of me. They’re drenched in blood and covered in scars. I... I... I... Li You Ran, am ashamed to face them! The Second Prince will use his entire strength to escort these crossbows to the Capital. The number of secret experts will be too many to count. If anything bad happened to you, Elder Brother — your little brother... might as well... die!”

Jun Mo Xie couldn’t help but inwardly curse when he heard that emotional sigh. [What?! What?! This Li You Ran is too pretentious! He is at the greatest level! This guy could even beat me...]

[Why did you deliberately mention it to them if you didn’t wish for them to take action? You’ve just told them the rationality and the threats of this course of action. And then you stated your desire to refrain from participating in it...]

[But now they won’t stop no matter how hard you try to restrain them. They’ll be touched when your words convey that you don’t wish for them to go... so much so that they might even leave without telling you. This scheme is amazing! And I was belittling this brat before?!]

[You want them to become cannon fodder for you. But you want them to be moved-enough to volunteer for it themselves. You wish for them to feel that they owe you. And you wish for them to feel that your concern for them will cause you big problems...]

[You’re hot and numbing; at the same. You’re pretending to be real while you pretend.]

[That’s for sure!]

“How’s that possible?” three voices shouted in unison. “How can

we sit and watch as our younger brother's family slips into a dangerous situation? What are we then? What kind of people does Little Brother treat us as? We'll relax only once the Li Family obtains those crossbows. This matter doesn't need so much deliberation. It's already decided. When the time comes — we three will act! We'll win the Xuan Beast Crossbows for Li You Ran; we'll hand them over to you. If Younger Brother Li is still uneasy... then you can send some of your men to support us!"

"Eldest Brother... Second Brother... Elder Sister..." Li You Ran had seemingly been moved-speechless. However, he seemed to become more and more resolute as well. "But how can your younger brother respond? ...I... your younger brother am ashamed... and my conscience is uneasy..."

"A man acting 'effeminately' indecisive?! What are you doing? You are decisive then why don't you go to that place?" This was apparently the voice of the Female Senior, "Younger Brother Li! Why won't you let us go? Do you want us to watch while your Li Family slowly descends into danger?"

"Master has been very generous. I won't let Elder Sister and the Elder Brothers walk into danger!" Li You ran could be heard speaking these words. It seemed as if he was resolutely gnashing his teeth.

"This is rubbish!" his three seniors shouted angrily and pounded the table. Then, Lei Jian Hong started to speak, "Younger Brother Li, we will refuse to recognize you as a fellow disciple if you continue to talk like this and look down on us! I'll kick your buttocks. And I'll never look at you again!"

It seemed as if heroism had reached its pinnacle. It felt as if both parties were treating each other with the utmost sincerity.

The Young Master Jun was still hiding in the soil. He almost broke into laughter. [What is this? What trash has Lei Wu Bei taught his disciples? Lei Wu Bei wouldn't volunteer to personally

take action, right?]

“If this is the case... you... Big Brother... must be very careful!” Li You Ran’s diction wasn’t very clear. It seemed that he was choking with emotion, “I beg my seniors to be very careful. It doesn’t matter if I get those crossbows... you must return safe and sound! I will assign you the maximum number of troops. Please don’t be stingy with the man power. And I won’t care if they are sacrificed to ensure your safe returns. You mustn’t hesitate to spare any expense!”

“Be at ease; we will take care of everything. And prepare for the good news, Younger Brother!” The three people patted their chests. They were brimming with feeling of heroism; one which could even lead them to die for their friends.

Jun Mo Xie didn’t laugh this time. Instead, he let out a profound sigh. [It seems that they will spare no effort to help Li You Ran. Apparently, Li You Ran has completely brainwashed these three individuals ...]

[Lei Wu Bei’s eldest, and these two other disciples, are in a pitiful situation! It’s no wonder that these five powerful experts managed such a bleak result when the encircled and fought a lone Ye Gu Han!]

[Men without wisdom are pathetic!]

“Many thanks Elder Brothers, Elder Sister! According to my information — I believe those crossbows should reach the outer reaches of the Capital in thirteen days. We’ll make our move when the time comes!” It could be assumed that Li You Ran must’ve taken a deep bow before he had begun discussing the specifics of his plan.

Everything was clear to Jun Mo Xie after he had listened to them for a while. He had no interest in listening to Li You Ran play with those idiots. Moreover, he had suddenly formed a new plan in his mind...

Of course... it was for later.

It was time to kill a few people now. The Hit-man Jun had never forgotten the original purpose of his visit. Over-hearing this important information hadn't interfered with Jun Mo Xie's determination to kill.

He silently surfaced above the ground, and found himself in the middle of a huge but empty courtyard.

Jun Mo Xie looked up and realized why he could not locate the Li Family's main operation center — it was located outside the Li Family's residence; it was located in the area next to the Li Family's residence.

[So that's why!]

He then turned as he heard a voice of someone's groan; the person seemed to be in pain. It came from a side-room. This room was surrounded by green bamboos. Jun Mo Xie's mouth bent into a cruel smile as he moved into that room; as quick as lightning.

The room reeked with the smell of medicines. Three of the disciples were lying on soft mattresses inside the room. They were mostly stationary; except for an occasional twitch. And they looked deathly pale.

[Ah! It's pitiful to look at you in so much pain, Elder Brother. Let this Little Brother free you from this world of suffering!] Jun Mo Xie sighed compassionately. Then, a sword which hung on the wall — which might have belonged to one of those three patients — suddenly rose on its own. The sword then started to move like a meat cleaver...

“Puff! Puff! Puff!”

The three men had been fatally wounded during their excursions. It was amazing that they had been able to persist for so long after. But one mustn't delay more than one breath's time if they wish to resist fate.

Blood and flesh splattered...

The ‘speedy’ sixth disciple was the last one left. He stared blankly when he saw the sword ‘float’. He couldn’t believe his eyes initially. Then, he saw it come down like lightening on his senior and junior brother disciples who lay at his side. He felt weird when he saw their head separate from their bodies, and then roll-about like watermelons. He was extremely frightened by this sight. He was about to cry-out in alarm, but something unseen covered his mouth and he was unable to shout. The thing that covered his mouth seemed to be a ‘hand’. It was warm. But, why was it invisible?

[Why is it invisible? Does this world really have ghosts?] ...He had just thought this when he saw the unmanned sword chop-down on his neck...

Jun Mo Xie stopped his hand from making more chops, and coldly picked up a piece of cloth. There was blood everywhere. He smiled mischievously and crookedly as he dipped the cloth in the blood and wrote several characters on the wall, “I wasn’t satisfied after killing those four people. So I’ve killed these three too. But they were already half-dead... so how could I be satisfied? Wait for a few days; I’ll hack-open the final three as well. But if I’m not satisfied with that — then it will be your turn, my dear Cold-Blooded Master, Wu Bei...”

But he didn’t feel satisfied with these threats. Hence, he added several more characters. He left the room once he was satisfied with his work.

The distance between the side-room and Li You Ran’s location was barely over thirty meters. The Hit-man Jun had used a method which had increased the speed of his movements exponentially, and his actions had been urgent. He had been able to kill the three people without any resistance. No loud sounds had been emitted over the entire course of his covert operation — just a highly subdued “pfft pfft pfft”... and the entire mission had been

completed. This was the basic skill that was required from a good assassin; it wasn't considered to be something amazing in this line of work.

[Besides... this sword is very sharp...]

He was convinced that if anyone heard him... they would merely think that they heard a lot of 'fart' noises. Therefore, no one would know that the men in that small room had been relieved from their mortal suffering and had gone to heaven until Jun Mo Xie was finished with his task ...

The Hit-man Jun had barely escaped that courtyard when he saw the silhouette of a man floating towards his direction. The man's hands were dirty. His movements were calm; they were neither too fast, nor too slow. He was frowning slightly, and it seemed that he was having difficulty with some problem...

His name could shake all land under heaven; he was the Cold-Blooded Master — Lei Wu Bei.

[You old bastard, you've arrived too late!] Jun Mo Xie smiled ruthlessly, and deliberately brushed passed him.

Just as Jun Mo Xie brushed past him — Lei Wu Bei seemingly sensed something. There was no change in his body posture, but he surged his powerful Qi in a split second and it frighteningly burst-out.

Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt the burst of powerful Qi hitting him and became gloomy. Jun Mo Xie stuck-out his tongue in a tease, and moved into the Hong Jun Pagoda.

[You think that I can't hide from you? I'm in-here now... try to find me if you like.]

[However, no one has ever sensed my presence like this. So how come Lei Wu Bei was able to?] Jun Mo Xie crouched in the Hong Jun Pagoda and thought hard. [Could this wonderful Yin-Yang Escape have some shortcomings?]

[Or is it possible that Masters with such high level of cultivation can detect my anomaly?] Jun Mo Xie suddenly recalled that he had just killed some people. This meant that his body must be emanating a cold-killing intention.

He reckoned that Lei Wu Bei must've felt this dangerous killing intention. Moreover, his aura contained a massive feeling of hostility towards Lei Wu Bei. Suddenly, Jun Mo Xie realized that this incident may have been a normal occurrence.

So, I can hide easily when I'm not hostile or I don't have the killing intention about myself. However, I might fail once I get into that mood. He obviously dispelled the idea of stealthily killing the Great Master...

Chapter 277: The Super-Misunderstanding!

Hit-man Jun's inference was reasonable. But it was slightly inconsistent.

The Yin-Yang Escape was a wonderful evasive technique. So much so that even the Eight Great Masters couldn't find Jun Mo Xie's tracks. But the Yin-Yang Escape didn't use the five key elements for the time being. One could go into hiding, but they'd still be discoverable for they wouldn't be escaping into the void. The technique merely altered the flow of air to create this anomaly. This technique wasn't much of an anomaly from this perspective. In fact, it was quite ordinary. A person would basically be walking around with some alterations in the flow of air around their body.

The vast majority of people were unable to detect these subtle changes.

However, who was Lei Wu Bei? He wouldn't have been worthy of his name if he couldn't detect these changes.

He could easily notice even the most-minute changes in the flow of air. However, the situation in front of him was too weird. He had never witnessed such a strong killing intention. He could infer that the strength of the individual emanating it was quite profound. Therefore, Lei Wu Bei had released his powerful Qi in order to protect himself.

However, Lei Wu Bei couldn't sense it once Jun Mo Xie entered the Hong Jun Pagoda.

Jun Mo Xie had realized this in time. He felt frustrated, and remained inside the Hong Jun Pagoda with a blank expression on his face. He stayed there for a while, and reckoned that he'd escape once Lei Wu Bei left. He came out to take a peek, and realized that Lei Wu Bei was unexpectedly rooted to the same spot. Moreover, the Young Master Jun had barely come out of the Hong Jun

Pagoda... while being invisible... yet Lei Wu Bei's eyes quickly turned to look in his direction...

It seemed as if his eyes were a pair of jack-o'-lanterns.

[Damn! This fart has a lot of free time!] Jun Mo Xie felt very helpless since he had no option but to return inside. He inwardly cursed Lei Wu Bei. [I won't be able to get out of here before break of dawn at this rate. This isn't good...]

A Great Master would never doubt his spiritual sense. Though the Young Master Jun's odor subsided in a flash, but it left a deep impression on Master Lei. And he wouldn't dare to neglect it.

Lei Wu Bei had nothing to concern himself with while he returned from his confrontation with Solitary Falcon. Therefore, he had slowed his speed down. Moreover, he had attempted to look for the mysterious owner of that 'groan' throughout the journey. This had slowed him down even further...

He had barely returned to the vicinity of the Li Mansion. But he suddenly felt that blood-thirsty killing intention so close to his own body. He had no option but to mobilize his Xuan Qi as he prepared to move into action at a second's notice. He had clearly felt that sharp killing intention. [It's terrifying!]

Only the world's top assassin had the ability to emit such an intense killing intention. [Such a ferocious killing intention could even kill a Great Master like me.] Therefore, Lei Wu Bei didn't dare to neglect it. He released his powerful spiritual pressure, and then waited alertly.

Hit-man Jun's killing intention and murderous aura were far beyond that of an ordinary person. And Jun Mo Xie was well aware of it. His strength may not have been very tyrannical. However, that didn't lower his killing intention.

Lei Wu Bei concentrated hard as he remained there silent, calm and unmoving. [That cold killing intention suddenly disappeared,

and everything is calm again. In fact, there's no sign of any danger... I can't help but find this strange. Was I imagining it? But why would I imagine something like this?]

He would've let his guard down since he felt that he had been overly suspicious a 'lurking' enemy. But, that murderous aura had momentarily resurfaced just when he was about to do this. Moreover, that murderous aura had appeared very close to his body. However, there was no one present near him...

Lei Wu Bei was about to move into action when that extremely terrible and lofty killing intention suddenly disappeared; it had vanished without a trace.

Lei Wu Bei was terrified! [What kind of a peerless killer would possess such a terrifying skill?!] Lei Wu Bei's entire body was covered in cold sweat. This was because he had suddenly recalled a terrifying person.

This person's Xuan Level might not have been anywhere-near Yun Bei Chen and Li Jue Tian, but Lei Wu Bei's chest had stiffened at the mere thought of him; this person was a very formidable individual. He had been active for dozens of years, and no one had ever escaped him once he had decided to assassinate them.

This man was a legend among the community of assassins. Everyone avoided him like the plague. Even Yun Bei Chen and Li Jue Tian had never dared to take this man lightly.

He was a frightening killer with mythical abilities — universally recognized as the living embodiment of death.

He was the greatest assassin — Chu Qi Hun!

[Who else could emit such a sharp, powerful and fatal killing intention? Who besides Chu Qi Hun is capable of hiding right beside me... without me becoming aware of their presence? Who besides Chu Qi Hun can disappear once I detected their killing intention?]

[There's no one else... not anywhere in the world...!]

[Even Yun Bei Chen and Li Jue Tian wouldn't be able to pull this off! They can defeat me. In fact, they can kill me! However, it's impossible for them to hide right beside me without my knowledge... but Chu Qi Hun has.]

Lei Wu Bei's became more cautious as he became increasingly sure about this. And the more cautious he got... the more intense that feeling of fear became.

Man is always full of doubts and fear when he faces the unknown. And the Great Master was no exception... especially since he was aware that he was facing a formidable enemy he couldn't beat.

Lei Wu Bei was confident that his Xuan Level and strength was in no way beneath Chu Qi Hun's. However, Chu Qi Hun was known to like making the first move; very unexpectedly at that. It would cost Master Lei very dearly to be caught off-guard. Getting ambushed by someone of the same level was no joke.

Lei Wu Bei was somewhat... afraid.

Chu Qi Hun was considered a Supreme Master of his arts, but he wasn't counted amongst the Eight Great Masters. Consequently, that assassin would never attack from the front... even when killing an extremely weak person. So much so that even a person whom Chu Qi Hun could defeat by blowing air on him... was never attacked in a straightforward manner.

This Supreme Assassin was extremely meticulous from the standard of assassins. He never left a single loose thread. His ability had reached the point of abnormality. His very name could give any man goosebumps. This was the main reason why the Supreme Assassin never got 'public fame' like the Eight Great Masters.

Though Chu Qi Hun wasn't considered one of the Eight Great

Masters, but he was the most terrifying man in this world. This was a well-known fact. Even the Eight Great Masters had publicly accepted this.

Lei Wu Bei paid careful attention to his surroundings as he spoke in a low voice, “Is the person who’s arrived the Supreme Assassin? Elder Brother Chu Qi Hun? Ah, I don’t know what offence I’ve committed that Elder Brother Chu Qi Hun has personally arrived for me. And it’s a great honor to have been taken so seriously. But we’re both counted in the supreme ranks... so greeting each other before a fight to the death would cause no harm, right?”

There was silence all around as... the autumn wind whistled... the dead leaves fell and spiraled into the air. But there was no reply.

If someone had replied... then it would’ve meant that ghosts truly existed. The only spectator had no choice but to hide in the Hong Jun Pagoda. The individual hiding inside the Hong Jun Pagoda was obviously Jun Mo Xie. However, the Hit-man Jun had decided not to utter a word. He eagerly looked forward to watch Lei Wu Bei misunderstand the situation. The greater the misunderstanding... the better it would be for the Young Master Jun...

“Won’t Elder Brother Chu give me face?” Lei Wu Bei gnashed his teeth. His voice was full of anger. “Has the Elder Brother changed his mind? Would he not battle me to death?”

No sound was issued in reply.

Lei Wu Bei calmed down, but his demeanor continued to become more imposing. He spoke in a deep voice; it sounded similar to the calm before a volcanic explosion, “He he... is Elder Brother Chu afraid to face Lei Wu Bei? That’s okay... Elder Brother can return whenever he’s gained his confidence. I shall eagerly look forward to seeing you again.”

He had finished speaking. Then, his body transformed into that

of a spirit dragon who was soaring towards the ninth heaven, and disappeared without a trace.

Jun Mo Xie stepped-out from the nothingness of the Hong Jun Pagoda the moment Lei Wu Bei left. He had been stretching out half of his head to listen to Lei Wu Bei's words. He had almost burst into laughter when Lei Wu Bei had addressed the air in such a serious tone.

However, he was awestruck to realize that his fellow-assassin enjoyed such a terrifying reputation among the Great Masters. So much so that the mere thought of him had worried the Fifth Master of the Eight Great Masters. In fact, the Cold-Blooded Master had seemed scared.

[This Supreme Assassin must be exceptional. The fact that an assassin could have this effect was an achievement on its own.]

Jun Mo Xie returned home relaxed and unrestrained while marveling at that Supreme Assassin...

Lei Wu Bei quickly arrived at the small courtyard. His body floated as he opened the gate. The four people inside stood up at the sight of him, and greeted him respectfully, "Master, you have returned!"

Lei Wu Bei snorted coldly. His face was expressionless as he took a seat.

"Master, what was the outcome of this trip? Can we assume that Master has taught Solitary Falcon a lesson?" Lei Jian Hong was Lei Wu Bei's son. However, he never addressed him as his 'father' in front of his fellow disciples. This was to demonstrate equality of treatment. But, he was the only person inside the room who had the courage to ask this question.

"This matter is complicated; we'll discuss it later," Lei Wu Bei spat-out these words in a solemn manner. "You be more careful with your actions from now. The atmosphere in the Tian Xiang

City is very treacherous! There are many Crouching Tigers and Hidden Dragons present in this city! You'll have to think hard before acting on every matter..."

He thought for a while, but then finally resisted. Lei Wu Bei had decided against mentioning the Supreme Assassin, Chu Qi Hun. He was aware that the name itself would've been enough to frighten his disciples. This would've made them hesitant to take actions. His disciples were at the Sky Xuan Level... but that was too meager. They would've gained no benefit from knowing of his involvement.

[Chu Qi Hun has decided to make a 'target' out of me; I shouldn't tell my disciples about it till the outcome of this battle is decided. Why should I make my disciples unnecessarily nervous by speaking of this matter?]

The four disciples were no fools. They had heard the tone of their Master's voice and had realized that the matter regarding the Solitary Falcon hadn't gone as smoothly as they had imagined. They restrained themselves, and enquired no further regarding that topic.

Lei Wu Bei got up and spoke in a tranquil manner, "Let's go! Come with me to look at the Sixth! He seems to have lost his Xuan Qi. Let's see if we can recover it somewhat. If that doesn't work... then we'll have no option but to send him to the King of Malicious Medicines."

Lei Jian Hong trembled and cried out in alarm, "Master!"

Lei Jian Hong snorted since his master left the room without giving a reply. The four disciple's complexions were heavy as they followed behind; listening to their Master mention the 'King of Malicious Medicines' had made their hearts heavy.

Chapter 278: Soaring Rage

The ‘Malicious King of Medicines’, as the name suggests, was an individual with a malicious heart. He was the most prestigious and famed doctor according to the rumors. He was considered ‘without an equal’. However, this doctor was the most expensive in the world.[1]

In fact, not only was the fee he charged exorbitant; there was another crucial point. One would owe him a favor if they were to seek him out for a treatment — no matter what the final result of the cure was. And one would have to return the favor whenever he wanted. As the capability of the person seeking treatment increased — the matter he’d wish them to deal with increased in difficulty.

There was one particular rumor regarding the ‘Malicious King of Medicines’ which had spread far and wide. It was a matter that had happened over 40 years ago. The Yun Family was one the most influential Families in the world of commoners. Their patriarch’s little concubine had been critically injured, and he eventually went to the ‘Malicious King of Medicines’ for help. The Medicine King took one-million silvers from the Yun Family, and made their patriarch promise him to deal with a certain matter. However, the Medicine King didn’t tell him what that matter would be.

The Yun Family’s patriarch readily agreed to these conditions owing to his love for that concubine. Consequently, she was saved. Two years passed, and the ‘Malicious King of Medicines’ sent a late yet important request. He wanted the Yun Family’s patriarch to kill someone. And this person was the Yun Family’s ward by marriage.

How could the Yun Family’s patriarch do such a thing? What face would he show to the world if carried out this request? Therefore, he flatly refused. The ‘Malicious King of Medicine’ laughed heartily; he didn’t consider this a ‘problem’. He then vanished into

the dust; he left without a trace.

Later, the ‘Malicious King of Medicine’ spread some news. He asked anyone who owed him a favor — no matter who they were — to do one thing: annihilate the Yun Family. Even their family’s chickens and dogs weren’t to be spared. The entire family was to be annihilated; straight down to their ninth generation. [2]

The ‘Malicious King of Medicine’ had accumulated several favors over tens of years. How could it be trivial? His favors were mostly qualified individuals. And most of them were high-level Xuan experts. A majority of them were dealing with illness they couldn’t have cured otherwise. However, strength alone can be a limited resource. But, many rich and powerful people owed him favors too. And they became extremely formidable all-together. Their combined power was rare and powerful-enough to shake the world.

This order was a death-dealing blow. The whole of the ‘secular’ world boiled over because of it. This resulted in the entire Yun Family’s slaughter. Their relatives and clansmen weren’t spared either; they had ensured that even the chickens and the dogs didn’t survive — as was the wish of the ‘Malicious King of Medicine’.

The rumors state that the heads kept pillion outside the ‘Malicious King of Medicine’s’ place. The massive amount of blood was said to have covered kilometers of the lands...

Heaven knows what strange favor that man would demand if Lei Wu Bei decided to deliver his disciple to the ‘Malicious King of Medicine’.... Lei Jian Hong knew that his Master was one of the ‘Great Eight Masters’! So how could the conditions be easy?

However, their worries were removed and replaced with grievances.

Lei Wu Bei’s expression changed as he arrived at the side of the bamboo-walled side-room. He said, “Why’s there such a thick stench of blood here?” The five people looked at each other. They

could sense that something was terribly wrong. They cried out in dismay and pushed the door open.

The four disciples were heartbroken at the sight, and exclaimed in grief. They were dumbstruck and could only look around blankly.

The scene drove them mad with anger.

Three dead bodies lay on the beds. They had been chopped into pieces. Blood was still flowing inside the room. It had coagulated in some places, but continued to pour-out slowly from others.

The entire room was had turned into a scarlet pool of blood.

Lei Wu Bei's eyes had reddened as he stepped into the room. His clothes didn't even sway as he moved. He was extremely angry and was forced to use his supreme Xuan Level to restrain himself. He had even controlled the movement of his clothes by doing that.

He looked around and saw Li You Ran stand motionless in front of a wall. Li You Ran's posture was strange. Lei Wu Bei's mind suddenly understood the reason behind it. He then shouted, "Get out of the way, You Ran!"

Li You Ran showed an ugly expression. He then weakly spoke, "Master..."

"I told you to get out of the way!" Lei Wu Bei roared in rage as he hit Li You Ran hard on the face. The youngster was sent flying-out with a loud 'Bang'. Lei Wu Bei then looked at the wall. Lei Wu Bi gawked at it for a while. His face had turned red and he suddenly let out another enrage roar. The band on his hair-knot got torn into a million pieces as his hair straightened. They rose-up to the heavens un-scattered for a long time.

"Aaargh!"

Lei Wu Bei violently belched scarlet blood from his mouth. And that blood instantly turned into mist. Master Lei cried tears of blood; thereby damaging his liver as he howled, "This scoundrel is

shameless! He acts such with me! No matter who you are — I'll kill you! I will annihilate your family down to the ninth generation! Even chickens and dogs won't be spared! My name isn't Lei Wu Bei if I don't fulfill this claim!"

He again spouted blood as his lean body tottered forward. The act of bringing the world-famous Cold-Blooded Master to such a condition by leaving a mere message had demonstrated that person's unprecedented talent...

The three remaining disciples were perplexed. Therefore, they leaned in closer only to find two blood-stained lines written on the wall. The message was crooked and had been written in freehand. It was obvious that something had been dipped in the victims' blood to write that message.

The first line read, "I wasn't satisfied after killing those four people. So I've killed these three too. But they were already half-dead... so how could I be satisfied? Wait for a few days; I'll hack-open the final three as well. But if I'm not satisfied with that — then it will be your turn, my dear Cold-Blooded Master, Wu Bei..."

The second line read, "Elder Sister Lei Wu Bei, I did your mother... la la la..."

The three disciples felt a burst of darkness; it was nearly as strong as that of Lei Wu Bei's. They spat blood; this was too much. That person had killed their brother-disciples. Moreover, he had called the fearless Lei Wu Bei... 'Elder Sister'. And what's more... he had hurled abuses at their Master.

[This is a huge insult! Especially to Master! Just that line 'Elder Sister Lei Wu Bei...' will never die... and will continue to ferment hatred. Not only has that person killed our brothers, but he has insulted Master's ancestors. That man's conduct is incomparably vile and nasty!]

"Master..." The four disciples worriedly knelt in unison. They crawled two steps forward. They then held on to Lei Wu Bei's legs

and burst into tears.

“This matter clearly occurred moments ago! The blood hasn’t even dried yet. You weren’t far from here. And none of you sensed it? Who can tell me why?!”

Lei Wu Bei’s body swayed for a little while. Then, he suddenly flew into a rage and let loose four kicks on the kneeling individuals. The bodies of the four disciples flew into the air, and they started to vomit blood violently.

“Waste! The four of you are a waste!” the Cold-Blooded Master, lei Wu Bei, exploded. He had never shown such anger in his life. His eyes were red, and his expression was fearsome and frightening. It seemed as if he was looking for someone to lash-out on.

“Bang!”

The whole of Lei Wu Bei’s Xuan Qi exploded at once. It collided with the room’s roof. The roof broke-off and soared high into the night’s sky; it almost seemed like a floating umbrella...

The walls toppled, turned into thin dust and disappeared. The bamboo grove outside the room looked like it had been hit by a tornado. It had been uprooted and thrown into the air before being crushed...

Lei Wu Bei still hadn’t moved from his spot. But, his heart was gradually calming down. He then thought of a possibility. The only ‘rationale’ which could explain this matter was...

Lei Wu Bei’s eyes had turned into deep pools of blood. He took a deep breath. He then spoke extremely slowly, but his voice was full of hatred, “Chu Qi Hun! You and I cannot co-exist in this world any longer!

“I will kill you!” Lei Wu Bei looked-up and issued a long roar. It was similar to that of the mythical ape crying into the night; extremely mournful and shrill. The lengthy roar was extremely

loud. It spread far and wide. The citizens of the Tian Xiang City had heard it loud and clear. It endlessly echoed at a low pitch. Each person in the Tian Xiang City awoke from their sleep frightened and uneasy; without exception...

The Jun residence

The Solitary Falcon got undressed and sat down. He frowned and resentfully looked in the direction from where the roar had come. He then cursed, “Murder; Murder! Da*n you! You’ve screamed twice this evening! Are you confused or what? Da*n you! The older you get — the sicker you become! F*ck you old uncle! Why are you putting pressure on me?! And this ‘targeting of Chu Qi Hun’, do you wish to hasten your death?” The Solitary Falcon cursed for a bit, and then lied down.

Jun Mo Xie was inside his room when he heard that lengthy roar. He rolled his eyes and muttered, “I should’ve written the entire poem! Unfortunately, my language is quite limited. Therefore, I couldn’t write it... Old Lei, the words I left you were deficient in literary talent, but they must’ve been easy to understand. However, you needn’t have been so emotionally moved. Oh, I had forgotten to mention the name of my fellow assassin. How did you decide it was him? This matter doesn’t concern Master Chu, it was my work. But this Young Master doesn’t mind if the mad dog bites someone else in confusion. So don’t look for me if you feel like losing it...”

He was in a happy mood. So he sniggered for a while. But the ‘talented’ Young Master Jun was very tired after a day and night of hard work. Therefore, he lied down and fell into a deep slumber. Jun Mo Xie envisioned several pleasant dreams throughout the night. There was even one in which he was inside a hot spring. And he was surrounded by outstanding beauties; each of whom could cause a nation’s downfall. They were pure and lovely. Yet they had one common characteristic... they were naked and each one of them was silently inviting him...

However, the Hit-man Jun felt a bit strange even though he was only dreaming. [I wasn't aware that one can produce such dreams in everyday life. It seems that my morals are degrading with every passing day! It seems that even gentlemen cannot overcome this... this implies a significant fall from the grace of morality...]

He suddenly transformed into a tiger. It was only natural for a tiger to consume his meals once he enters the forest. The naked tiger courageously leapt into that beautiful forest, and started to bite. He waged wars everywhere, slaughtered his prey, and emerged victorious each time.

Someone had crept into the Young Master Jun's room. But the little girl had been frightened by the 'canopy' under her beloved's blanket, and bounced back.

Jun Mo Xie was sound asleep in front of her. His expression was shockingly lewd and nefarious. This smile was similar to the one the Young Master Jun used to frequently display about half-a-year ago. The people who'd see it would feel that it was... unbearable.

She lightly cursed since she felt embarrassed to see such a vulgar smile. The little girl then shifted her gaze downwards. Her small mouth suddenly opened and became round in shock. She almost screamed in shock. But luckily she had moved her hand to cover her mouth it in time...

[This is extremely scary!]

[I almost fell down!]

The naïve-and-chaste little girl had nearly fainted. Her body trembled for a while. Then she hastily fled from the room. Only then did she feel that sensation in her fragrant cheeks. She wasn't aware when they had become this scalding-hot.

She covered her burning pretty face. She couldn't sleep; she only tossed and turned the entire night. Whenever she'd close her eyes — she'd see that smiling face of her beloved Young Master.

The Little Girl held the top of her quilt firmly as she covered her head with it...

[He's a big, big scoundrel! How can you...? Will I get pregnant now...?] The little girl's heart started to thump as she engaged in her fantasies...

Notes:

King of Malicious Medicines = Malicious King of Medicines. The slight tinkering suits him more.

Don't spare the dogs and chicken either: It means to kill even remote connections of someone.

Chapter 279: This Is Very Embarrassing...

The next day; the sun hadn't yet risen.

Jun Mo Xie hadn't gotten out of bed. He was still researching his sensuous dream, and had made a very shameful discovery. He could no longer wear his underpants since he had discovered a huge wet-spot. He had even felt the sticky-spot with his hands to confirm...

[This is indeed very shameful! Such wet dreams can happen to me, Hit-man Jun!? This is very humiliating for me! For God's sake! Who's going to believe it? ...my illustrious name has reached rock-bottom!]

The Young Master Jun quickly pulled his quilt to cover his first-time-defeated body. Then, he looked around carefully and then quickly raised his butt to pull-off his pants. He'd feel extremely uncomfortable if he didn't change it.

His movements were incomparably swift and nimble as he took off his clothes. He kept the quilt in place with one hand, and stretched-out the other to feel for an appropriate place to dump them...

However, then...

Suddenly...

“Bang!”

The door of the room was suddenly thrown-open at that frightening moment and Grandpa Jun stormed-in with his flowing white beard fluttering across his anxious face. He fierily entered the room and shouted with his mouth wide-open, “You brat! You're still not up! Don't you know what time it is?!”

He had run into a person in that extremely embarrassing moment by pure accident. Fortunately, it was a man; an old man.

Jun Mo Xie felt like dying. His hand extended and he pulled the quilt back like lightning. He then repeatedly promised from underneath that cover, “I’ll get up! I’ll get up! But you go out first!”

“What’re you holding in your hand?” Grandpa Jun got suspicious. And not only did he not leave... he instead took two step forwards. He then frowned and glared angrily before he shouted, “Take it out and let this old man see!”

“It’s nothing! It’s nothing... it really is nothing!” Jun Mo Xie felt that he had never been in such a difficult situation in either of his lifetimes. He dug deeper into his quilt as he complained, “Grandfather, you don’t have any courtesy! I was sleeping and yet you barged in with that ‘Bang!’ Luckily I don’t have a wife. But, supposing you had found a wife for your grandson... would you’ve barged in like that if she were here with me?”

[What did he say?]

Grandpa Jun became extremely angry. His eyes filled with dark look as he said, “Evil creature! How can you speak those words?! This Old Man... you brat, you haven’t hurried and gotten up yet? You really wish to trouble this old man?”

Grandpa Jun grabbed the quilt with one hand and pulled it. How could that little rookie like Jun Mo Xie resist a Sky Xuan expert’s strength?

Grandpa Jun looked at ‘what’ was in front of him. Jun Zhan Tian looked like he had just awoken from a dream; he couldn’t help but become red. He swung his arm and then slapped Jun Mo Xie’s bare ass hard; a sharp ‘Bang!’ resounded, “Show me what you’re hiding!” The reached out with his hand and tussled that crumpled piece of cloth from Jun Mo Xie.

That ball of cloth felt damp for some reason. This was unexpected, and he didn’t know why it was like that. He gawked at it for a moment, and then brought it to his nose and gave it a sniff. Then, he recognized the strange yet familiar smell emanating from

it...

He realized everything in a split second.

His embarrassed face reddened, and he quickly threw it away. Then, he continued fiercely, "...This Old Man will kill you; you shameless little..." the blood-curdling scream echoed everywhere; it sounded extremely mournful...

Jun Wu Yi heard the blood-curdling cry and quickly rushed over. He reached in-time to run into his father. The red-faced Old Man was emerging from Jun Mo Xie's room while puffing his whiskers. However, the inner corner of his eyes showed a faintly amused expression...

"Dad, Mo Xie pissed you off again?" the Third Master asked solemnly.

"I didn't raise that little beast!" Grandpa Jun trembled as he shook his right hand and remained silent. It seemed that he wanted to say something, but he didn't utter another word. He continued to tremble for a long while, and then he finally said, "Alas... that brat has grown up... it's time to look for a daughter-in-law." He then slipped-away with his hands behind his back...

However, he suddenly remembered why he had come there in the first place when he reached the door to Jun Mo Xie's courtyard. Hence, he roared from afar, "Oh right! Third, you hurry-up and get that little beast ready. He is to meet His Majesty!" He then vanished with the 'whooshing' of his clothes.

The Commander-in-chief of the troops of the country, the Great General Jun, seemed quite embarrassed regarding today's matter. The hero of his generation had 'actually held' his grandson's 'lethal weapon'... it was very humiliating. However, he couldn't help but smile even though it was a gloomy matter...

The Old Man seemed somewhat reassured. [It was big ah... he's attained a decent 'capital'... his 'capital' hasn't reached the level of

a grown adult. But he's going in the right direction. He's barely sixteen, and there's a lot of room for growth at this stage...]

[Hurry up and grow branches so you can scatter leaves for our Jun Family!] Grandpa Jun placed his hands on his chest and started to move as if he was carrying a baby. His face suddenly broke into a smile at the thought of it...

The Third Master entered the room, and saw his mystical nephew acting subdued like he had never seen him before. Jun Mo Xie lowered his head like a bashful young lady and pulled-up his clothes. [Something extremely fishy was going on here.]

“What the hell was that shout about? I didn't see what you did, you little devil... but your grandfather was clearly very angry. However, he seemed to be rejoicing something... His expression seemed like he was cursing you... but he was also smiling. Hurry up and explain this to me!” Jun Wu Yi was baffled.

Jun Mo Xie was without an option. He looked-up in embarrassment and asked reverently, “Third Uncle, I beg you... please don't ask...”

This matter could not be discussed face-to-face.

The Young Master Jun was brazen. His skin was thicker than the corners of The Great Wall. But this matter was too humiliating for him; no matter how shameless he was. This was an extremely serious matter.

Jun Wu Yi learned what had happened from his father over their meal. They were dining with the Solitary Falcon. So he must've heard it as well. Jun Wu Yi was eating rice when he heard this. The rice turned into two white lines as he choked, and came out from his nostrils. In fact, he nearly spilt the food over Solitary Falcon's body.

Master Falcon didn't get angry even though he had nearly been spat-on. He had a strange yet blank expression on his face for a

while. Then, he laughed till he was breathless. He hadn't been this happy in a long time. He had gotten to fight Lei Wu Bei the previous night. That had made him very happy. But this was a very amusing matter...

Jun Mo Xie and his grandfather ignore the two men whose laughter knew no end, and focused on eating their breakfast. The General in the wheelchair and the Eighth Great Master couldn't restrain their laughter the entire duration of the meal. Hence, the grandfather-grandson duo quickly finished their meals, mounted their horses, and proceeded towards the Imperial Palace.

Jun Wu Yi and the Solitary Falcon were still laughing as the two of them left. It seemed as if the two men had been nearly engulfed by devil fire.

It was not known why the Emperor wanted to meet Jun Mo Xie. What kind of a crazy request was this? He was supposedly holding the previously-cancelled Golden Scholarly Talent repose that day. And that too in the Imperial Palace...

This was extremely unusual matter.

The news of this had been issued last mid-night. The Master of Rights, Minister Sun Cheng He, ran his legs rugged. Naturally, the people who were busier than him were the Masters of the 'Heavenly Literature Institute' since their students were looking forward to the festivities quite eagerly. Their students had been very disappointed for a long time upon finding out that the feast had been cancelled. However, this sudden news had caused a wild rush; especially since the venue was the Imperial Palace.

It was decided in the evening that the event must necessarily be held the next day. However, this meant that there would be many people who wouldn't be able to participate....

Several white-haired Masters cursed in their hearts. [What kind of an order is this? You must learn how to contain yourself even if you're anxious to suck the milk...]

But he was the most powerful Emperor under the heavens. If he wanted it to happen that day... then it would happen precisely on that day. Hence, this group of white-haired old men couldn't dare to refute his order and cancel it since it would be akin to ruining the golden road of their scholars' development...

The timing very tight this time; the venue was enormous and the scale of the event was unprecedented-grand. The Young Masters of every important Aristocratic Families were invited. The event would include the three Princes; the other Princes would take part as well. Even talented young women from major families were welcome to show-up.

Jun Mo Xie, Tang Yuan and the other notorious debauchees were also on the list amongst other well-known names. So, the two of them received an invitation each.

Grandpa Jun's face was calm along the way, and he didn't speak. Jun Mo Xie pondered hard and felt that there was something wrong with these events. The grandfather-grandson duo simultaneously felt that the so-called Golden Scholarly Talent Repose wasn't going to be a good feast.

[This is very abnormal! This is extremely abnormal... it is to the point of being unreasonable!]

Jun Mo Xie had a faint feeling that there was an incorporeal net which slowly closing upon him... Jun Mo Xie was puzzled; [why am I feeling like this?]

[Damn it! No one ought to be aiming at me! Admittedly, I'm an outstanding talent of great erudition and scholarship. I'm conversant with things past-and-present, and am familiar with a variety of verses... and am a master of the four arts! But these people don't know that. So what status do I hold in their eyes...?]

"Mo Xie! Today's matter... this old man feels that something is wrong." Grandfather Jun Zhan Tian's gaze was dignified, "You... should avoid making a fool of yourself; as much as possible."

Jun Mo Xie smiled in order to relieve his grandfather, "Grandfather, do you distrust me? By no means do we feign madness and foolish acts. I'm the number one debauchee of Tian Xiang City. What's point of hiding my foolishness?! I'm born foolish!"

"Little devil!" Grandpa Jun felt teased by him. He smiled as the pressure on him decreased greatly.

A tower of meat stood with a straight posture in front of the Imperial Palace.

Jun Mo Xie gazed at his dear friend and laughed. Tang Yuan and him were surely brothers in the same boat.

Grandpa Jun went-on ahead into the Imperial Palace first. Jun Mo Xie and Tang Yuan crouched outside and leaned against the wall. These two seemed very nefarious sitting in that posture.

The Young Masters of Each Family and the gifted scholars sat beside them. They looked bright and neat. There was an air of elegance and sincerity about them. These two Young Masters seemed out of place when compared to them.

Some people were unable to recognize these two mischievous figures sitting at a distance. They inquired the others about those two.

"You don't know? You don't even know these two?" an astonished voice asked. This was quite astonishing. It was similar to the Americans not knowing who Washington was... the French not knowing who napoleon was... and the Germans not knowing who Hitler was.

Chapter 280: I'll Show You What Makes Me A 'Rogue'!

"Why? How on earth would I know? Are they famous?" The person asked astonished. [Are those two wretched and smug looking guys amazing individuals? It doesn't look like it... from what can be seen...]

"Haven't you heard of the 'Pests of the Capital'?" the other person replied in a lecturing tone.

"Are those two 'The Pig Tang' and 'The Evil Tyrant Jun'? The 'Tick in the Latrine' and the 'Fly on the Table'?"

"Correct! Those two are the legendary 'The Fat Pig', Tang Yuan and 'The Evil Tyrant', Jun Mo Xie! They are indeed the 'Tick in the Latrine' and the 'Fly on the Table'. They are this generation's two greatest calamities!"

"No wonder I felt like thrashing them when I first saw them. So that's why! The 'Pests of the Capital' surely live up to their name."

"Yes. And their arrival is a very harmful event. To think that these two pests are qualified to attend the 'Golden Scholarly Talent repose'. Alas... the morals of the public are on a decline!"

"These degenerates are a part of the same generation as me... I wish could grab my head; such a shame!" it seemed like the speaker had let-out a long sigh. This opinion was bubbling everywhere. Everyone slanted their eyes as they looked at the two calamities. They even pointed at them as they whispered. Everyone's eyes reeked of hatred while their expressions were full of disdain.

It seemed like Jun Mo Xie and Tang Yuan hadn't heard any of it. They continued to behave free-willed.

"Fatty, do you remember what I told you that day?" Jun Mo Xie kept his voice low.

"I can't forget it." Tang Yuan opened his eyes lazily, "Do you still distrust me?"

"I'm afraid that you are a 'dim-witted lard', and your fat eyes may not be able to see properly!" Jun Mo Xie cursed.

"A gentleman does not attach importance to nonsense! Uh, my grandfather always says that," Tang Yuan seemed very proud.

"You dare call yourself a gentleman...?!" Jun Mo Xie retched. [Who else would be able to call themselves a gentlemen now?!]

Jun Mo Xie was quite satisfied after watching Tang Yuan's show-face. [He looks like a real rogue today! It would hard for the rogue-in-me to abstain from killing him!]

[Are we waiting here in vain? How long will I have to wait? Humph! When will I get a chance to showcase my immoral behavior?]

"Hey you; what are you looking at? Never seen a handsome guy?" Jun Mo Xie slanted his eyes and asked a youngster who was looking at him stealthily. The young man had oiled his hair, and put make-up on his face. He belonged to the well-known Meng Family. Jun Mo Xie and Tang Yuan had been involved with him and Meng Hai Zhou once before. They had falsely accused Jun Mo Xie and Tang Yuan of cheating after they had lost a lot of money. Hence, he pretended as if he didn't recognize them.

"I'm not looking at anything," Meng Fei slanted his eyes and tilted his head as he shouted and looked at the back of Jun Mo Xie's head. Every influential Family had received an invite. The Meng Family wasn't a small Family either. Hence, they too had been invited.

"F*ck off!" Jun Mo Xie gave a long shout. He pulled-up his sleeves as he advanced, "Who the f*ck are you?! Do you know who you're talking to? Bullsh*t! Your mother won't be able to look at you by the time I'm done with you. I'll dig out your eyes and plug them in

your anus; believe me!"

A blue vein popped on the Young Master Jun's neck; his eyes narrowed as the spittle scattered from his mouth.

Fei Meng stood upright in his spot with his oiled hair and powdered face. [Why have I attracted their interested when everyone is looking at them? Why should I suffer when everyone is talking about them?] Jun Mo Xie's curses had turned his face red with anger. His mouth silently moved to mummer a few angry words, but nothing audible came out of it.

"Let it be Third Young Master. There's no need to reduce yourself to the level of these lowly commoners!" Tang Yuan hastily and magnanimous consoled his friend.

The two rogues had been-at-it for a long time; their coordination was seamless. Tang Yuan pulled at Jun Mo Xie and said, "Leave it; we'll go to the throne room soon. And we'll amaze everyone with our brilliant feats. We'll show them our unparalleled talent; and who knows... maybe we'll impress the Emperor. He may bestow the highest official position upon us... then, we can satisfy our desires for a government position!"

"You're right," Jun Mo Xe caressed his hair, and threw it behind his back as he puffed his chest. "I shouldn't reduce myself to the level of these commoners."

The two youths echoed one another, while the people around them had a sudden and fierce urge to vomit. [Getting bestowed with the highest Government position? With that behavior of yours? And your unrivalled talents? This is bullsh*t...]

The donkey that wasn't aware of its place was indeed about to find out...

"Jun Mo Xie! What do you mean?! You think I can't bully you?!" The coquettish and powdered Mei Feng had been stood tongue-tied for a while. However, he suddenly controlled his breathing and let

his rage loose as he cursed Jun Mo Xie.

"Everyone look! This youngster unnecessarily creating a scene! You cannot blame me!" Jun Mo Xie played the innocent victim and spread his hands, "I think of every influential family as a friend-family. Therefore, I've come here. Isn't every influential family is a known to the others? Yet this beast is unwilling to let-go of anything that I might have said to him earlier! What is this place? This place is the Imperial Palace! Yet this young man is roaring in such a way. Does he wish to revolt? Or is it that the Meng Family wants to usurp the throne?"

Everyone went dizzy. [That was too shameless! He doesn't have a single iota of shame! His accusation was baseless. This is too much...]

"You... you're... talking nonsense!" Meng Fei became dizzy with anger. His body started to shake like dead leaves in the wind.

The debauchee Jun hadn't overlooked this. He quickly dashed towards the youth, and gave him two loud slaps on his face. Then, he caught hold of the youth's legs and kicked his abdomen. Jun Mo Xie's movements had been very swift throughout.

Meng Fei was caught off-guard. He hadn't anticipated that the opposing party would make such a move inside the Imperial Palace. The youth was left stunned. In fact, he could see the stars as his waist twisted. His body started to resemble a shrimp as he clutched his stomach. The Young Master Jun didn't fall back. He continued to attack even though the enemy was down and in pain. He wasn't going to allow this opportunity to slip.

The powdered face of the Meng Family's Young Master turned plump like a pig soon; in fact, it looked very similar to Tang Yuan's.

Everyone stood up. [This Jun Mo Xie is too much!]

"Let it be, Young Master Jun! Everyone makes mistakes; forgive

him!" A youth with an indignant expression blocked Jun Mo Xie as he raised his foot to stomp the Meng Fei again.

Everyone looked at the scene with excitement. The youngsters from the prestigious families looked-on as the city's biggest debauchee, Jun Mo Xie, fell from grace.

"And who are you? Are you here to support him? What is your status? Do you not know what offence this youngster has committed? Did you even see what he did before you decided to show-up in his support?"

Jun Mo Xie's lower body was position in a very crooked manner. He twisted his butt, and his body started to resemble an "S" character. He then put his hand on his waist and tilted his head. And now the Young Master Jun appeared like a giant teapot.

"I am Murong Qian Li; I'm of the Murong Family's third generation!" the youth in the ornamented gown answered. His face was full of arrogance as he raised his head slightly to look at Jun Mo Xie. He then calmly addressed Jun Mo Xie in a loathsome tone, "Third Master Jun... oh, won't you give me face? This was merely a misunderstanding; that's all. So why don't we turn this hostility into friendship?"

"Oh shoot! It's the Murong Family... I'm scared... I'm very scared! ...Fatty come and save me... I can't breathe!"

Jun Mo Xie pretended to be excessively shocked as he jumped. He even exaggerated his shout as he thumped his chest; in fact, it seemed as if he had received a huge shock and his heart would jump out. Then, his expression changed so quickly that it would seem as if he had suddenly put on a mask, "Are you trying to scare me? Has the Murong Family arrived to pressure me?! Tsk tsk..."

Jun Mo Xie extended his neck towards Murong Qian Li before he smiled and gnashed his teeth, "Haha, Murong Qian Li, you're awesome! Who here doesn't know the famous Murong Family? He he"

Jun Mo Xie continued in an eccentric tone; he didn't give Murong Qian Li a chance to speak, "Do you think that your Murong Family is stronger than mine? He he... Murong Qian Li, you're representing the Murong Family at such an age... It seems that the Murong and the Meng Family plan an uprising in my Tian Xiang City; I can clearly see that," Jun Mo Xie nodded.

"I never said I represent the Murong Family! And, I've never talked about a rebellion! So stop spreading this rumor! Jun Mo Xie, this method that you use on the others... won't work on me!" Murong Qian Li noticed that several of his clansmen were giving him a meaningful expression. Hence, he hastily explained himself in a loud voice.

"You don't represent the Murong Family? Then why were you jumping-about like you do...? Bullsh*t! So any Tom, Dick and Harry can bully me now?! This is immensely disappointing!"

Jun Mo Xie frowned before he looked up straight again, "Why were you feigning to represent the Murong Family if you don't in reality? You're blocking me. Look here, I said look here; dammit! Do you want me to castrate you inside the Imperial Palace and then serve 'it' for sausage? Hurry up and let go of me! Dammit!"

Jun Mo Xie's arrogant and despondent behavior gave rise to a lot of anger amongst the Gifted Scholars and the Young Masters. A lively discussion spurred as everyone started to criticize him. Jun Mo Xie put his hands on his hips, and then faced everyone in front of the main hall of the Imperial palace. Then, he started to engage the crowd in a war of words with his foul tongue; his spittle kept flying everywhere. The torrents of filthy language and curses continued to increase, but he didn't back-down one inch.

It was like an old verse of poetry; No matter the might of the army — I'm the pier that docks them.

Another verse could be used to describe him; He opened his mouth to scold a thousand accusing fingers.

Fatty Tang looked at Jun Mo Xie's slim and lofty figure with a great deal of admiration. He would continuously exclaim; "that eloquence! That reaction! Indeed very shrewd! You're awesome; the other party was rendered helpless! This is going one-way; it like a child is chewing a candy!"

Many mouths had started to voice their opinions, and the public sentiment was soon greatly roused; that too in front of the main hall of the Imperial Palace. The loud noise soon started to resemble that coming from a fish-market. It seemed as if it would soon turn into an all-out fist-fight.

"Such impudence?! This is the Imperial Palace! Who dares to cause such a clamor here?! Don't you want your head intact?!" an extremely loud and dignified voice echoed like a ceremonial drum.

Everyone had been shouting loudly, but they suddenly raised their heads and looked up. They couldn't help but shout-up to the heavens in plea. The big-shots, including the patriarchs of every major family, stood at the gate with a dark expression on their faces. Suddenly, everyone's face became covered with a layer of frost.

"What a disgrace!" Dugu Zong Heng's loud shout spurred their world in chaos.

The face of every youngster suddenly became sullen and their heads lowered. Their hearts were filled extreme hatred towards Jun Mo Xie; [The impression we had so painstakingly built in the minds of our elders has suddenly been lost; we've fallen in the eyes of our seniors — and it's because of this guy! Ugh...!]

Chapter 281: The Arrival of the Talented Scholars

Several people had been involved in that fight in front of the main hall. The law of the Empire couldn't hold such a large number of people accountable for anything. There was no other option; the matter was concluded without any action against anyone.

Everyone returned to their original places. The big-shots watched Jun Mo Xie stood up and dusted his backside. They suddenly realized the reason why this commotion had been stirred. To make matters worse... Jun Mo Xie had faced this rain of curses while sitting down...

Everyone was left speechless. There was no bench or stool to sit on, but Jun Mo Xie had seemingly refused to ill-treat his buttocks. Shockingly, there as an individual lying under the buttocks. There was a pig-headed like expression on the youngster's face, and it seemed as if he was breathing his last breaths. That youngster was the Meng Family's Young Master, Meng Fei... Young Master Jun had taken seat on the youngster's fallen body. This had instigated the crowd's anger and had incited the eventual curses.

[No wonder he was cursed like that; the crowd's sentiments must've been instigated by the manner in which he's swaying his butts...]

[So that's what happened...]

It was evident from the Young Master Meng's condition that he would be missing the feast...

"He doesn't look good; take him to the Imperial Physician!" the patriarch of the Meng Family, Meng Xue Sheng shouted with anger and anxiety. He then turned to face the smiling and unmoving Jun Zhan Tian. "General Jun, your grandson is indeed very

‘promising’...”

“He He... Elder Brother Meng flatters too much. Ha ha, Mo Xie is very young and inexperienced. You shouldn’t spoil him like this!” Grandpa Jun stroked his beard and narrowed his eyes as he expressed his thanks.

Meng Xue Sheng staggered as he heard this; he nearly fell down. The other patriarchs staggered as well. [It is evident that this shamelessness is hereditary...!]

The Jun debauchee had deliberately created a farce in front of the main hall. His compulsion had been very fierce. The sounds that were made were very loud. He had hoodwinked several people into joining that farce that the sounds of their noise had reached inside the main hall. The main hall was hosting serious discussions on military and civil affairs at the time, and this noise had fell upon the ears of the ministers and the Emperor since they certainly weren’t deaf. The intensity of the sounds continued to increase with the passage of time. Soon everyone’s self-restraint gave-way and they were unable to help themselves. Hence, they quickly finished the discussion. These discussions usually lasted for at least two hours. However, today’s discussion concluded in less than an hour.

The discussion had ended prematurely because the mind of every man was focused on the ruckus outside. The youngsters bickering outside were the apple of their eyes. Hence, each man was worried about the well-being of their respective loved ones...

Jun Mo Xie sniggered inside his mind since he felt quite mischievous. [He He, no one in either of my lives could ever surpass me; besides those who are dead... You made me wait in front of the main hall; wouldn’t it be ‘letting you off too easy’ if I didn’t do something?]

There were many hours left for the Golden Scholarly Talent Feast[1] to begin. However, several court eunuchs and palace maids

had bustled into greet the guests.

“This, Young Master... What do you think is inside those halls? Do you know?” Tang Yuan asked Jun Mo Xie as his tiny eyes scanned the place. “I just see a bunch of book worms, and some more book worms; they don’t even qualify to be men. Where are those beautiful ladies they talked about? I’m yet to lay my eyes on an eye-candy...”

“There’s no use in asking me. It’s better if you consult the Emperor about this problem,” Jun Mo Xie picked-up a shaggy straw of dried grass from the jade railings and put it in his mouth. He moved it back-and-forth and flipped it over. He continued to churn that grass straw in his mouth like it was chewing-gum, and looked extremely smart while doing it.

Tang Yuan looked at his face with envy. His own lips were too fat and his tongue was shorter than a regular person’s. Jun Mo Xie’s mouth was very flexible on the other hand. He snorted and asked, “I reckon that my grandfather will peel-off my skin if I dare to ask this of His Majesty. You said you don’t know, yet you tell me to ask His Majesty when it can do me serious harm. ...You’re my big brother...”

“Bullsh*t! I’ve come to the Imperial Palace for the first time. I’m following your steps since you’ve come here before. So, how would I know if you don’t? And don’t call me your ‘elder brother’ in front of so many people. Having such a fat younger brother will make me dizzy.”

Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes. Then, a meaningful look emerged in his eyes after he glanced at something. He chuckled, “Fatty, look, another batch has arrived; they don’t like men either. They must be your intimate friends! Aren’t those the gifted scholars from the ‘Wenxing Heavenly literature Institute’? Their neat style of walking could make for a military parade. Da*n. What a bunch of hypocrites!”

A group of white-clothed youngsters arrived on the smooth jade steps in front of the main hall. Each one of them was upright, looked refined and moved in an unrestrained manner. Each had delicate features; their mannerism seemed to have transcended the vulgarities of the common man. There weren't many of them — just around twenty. Two white-bearded old men led them at a leisurely pace as they entered.

The two men leading the procession had thin faces, and their white hair was tied by a headband in a scholarly fashion. Their wide sleeves were the epitome of the great scholars' style. These two teachers of the 'Wenxing Heavenly literature Institute' were scholars who were admired unilaterally by the entire country; Mei Gao Jie and Kong Ling Yang.

Fatty's nostrils flared as he screamed in an undertone, "Those two old bastards, their disciples, their descendants; their entire families are a bunch of hypocrites. See! I feel like vomiting at the sight of them! They would make me wash undergarments whenever I would fall short of my task. I used to regard them highly back in the day. But I regret it now that I see things more clearly."

Jun Mo Xie slightly raised his chin to look at that group of people. He looked at their sardonic expressions and then snorted in agreement with Tang Yuan. He knew about Fatty's villainous misdemeanor. Yet, he agreed with Fatty.

Coincidentally, an 'unnoticed' person sighed behind them, "They are truly worthy of the 'Wenxing Heavenly literature Institute's' name. It is a repository of beautiful people. It has so many books on literature. The students of the 'Wenxing Heavenly literature Institute' are like giants among men in my Tian Xiang City. They're so very proud!"

"You're a laundry bat!" Jun Mo Xie and Tang Yuan scoffed in unison as they looked back with disdain. Then they simultaneously raised their heads and tilted them.

The scene was similar to an individual ‘latching on to a person’s smelly feet’. The hall was full of promising youngsters from every powerful family. Moreover, there was no shortage of youngsters who had already been named as ‘successors’ by the patriarchs of their families. Shockingly, some of the disciples from the ‘Wenxing Heavenly literature Institute’ had already fallen from their grace by flattering these ‘promising’ youngsters. Their intention to solicit potential backers was rather disgusting to witness.

The two of them retreated quickly, but the main hall had silenced by now. The two of them had commented in a very loud tone. Hence, the attention of every individual had suddenly shifted towards them.

The two men leading that group of scholars from the ‘Wenxing Heavenly literature Institute’ looked at Jun Mo Xie and Tang Yuan as if they were looking at excrement. Their stare was one of extreme disgust.

Fatty Tang jumped with fear since several gifted scholars and young masters had suddenly started to gaze at them in disdain. The color of his face changed as he trembled. He secretly wanted to destroy a couple of those gifted scholars. However, the contemptible individual couldn’t raise himself to such a status when confronted by the elegant demeanor of these scholars. The towering gazes from the scholars and the other people-present were a demonstration of their fearlessness. Suddenly, Fatty Tang started to lack in self-confidence.

Fatty Tang was a bit scared, but the Jun debauchee hardly seemed affected. He raised his head, tilted it, slanted his gaze and shot a look at the onlookers...

Jun Mo Xie faced the disdainful looks of nearly hundreds of people with condescending toughness. He looked at them arrogantly. His bearing was proud since he wasn’t cowed; [I am a rogue; whose rogue manners can scare me...]

[However strong he may be; I am stronger than him!]

This was Hit-man Jun's life's motto!

“Rotten wood cannot be carved!” Mei Gao Jie stared at the two debauchees in a cold manner. He then raised one end of his goat-like mustache and brushed it away as he scolded them. His gaze was that of heartfelt disdain. He was a well-known and veteran scholar. He had a list of more contemptible words, but he didn't use them. He only spoke that single line. But it was a very severe line of abuse; yet, very graceful.

The word “graceful” was a bit too much. The Old Man's gaze remained sharply fixed on the two individuals as he led his procession to pass besides them. They reached the end of the stairs soon. There, they welcomed and presented gifts to the ministers. They then introduced their admirable student to everyone.

Jun Mo Xie had noticed the sidelong glances those two men had given them as they led the procession pass them. Their hate-stricken gazes were meant for Tang Yuan.

The despicable, vile and corrupt Jun Mo Xie wasn't the person these talented scholars from the 'Wenxing Heavenly literature Institute' despised the most. The person they hated the most in the entire Tian Xiang Kingdom was — Tang Yuan.

However, this wasn't unexpected. Tang Yuan had used his despicable means to attempt a graduation from their institute. Later, he had used his family's power to frame relentless charges against the Institute's scholars. Moreover, he used his family to force the Institute into a tight corner. In fact, he had even tried to use his financial power to gain control over them.

If it were only this much... it would've been tolerable. However, the all-evil Fatty Tang didn't stop here. He forced an unwilling disciple of the Institute into working for him. Then, he made that scholar wash women's undergarments of the household... How could the Institute bear this shame?

[Why would you insult the ‘Wenxing Heavenly literature Institute’ in this way? Why would you insult the place that nurtures the talented scholars of the country?]

Fatty Tang didn’t keep ‘that’ matter a secret; he passed-it-on as news. Mei Gao Jie and Kong Ling Yang spat blood when they heard of one of their disciples being treated with such humiliation. Tang Yuan widely came to be recognized as a ‘debauchee’ inside the Institute ever since... in fact, all over the Tian Xiang City ...

As for that scholar who had submitted to that act of humiliation in order to climb the social ladders blinded by his greed... no one had cared to spare him a thought. [We are fine as long as our Institute is brimming with talented scholars. It is natural that there will a small proportion of lowlives; but they are only a small blemish. Which person isn’t like that nowadays? Such people will eventually have to face the heaven’s punishment!]

[But Fatty Tang was wrong to insult and harm a cultured scholar!]

It was a common consensus in the ‘Wenxing Heavenly literature Institute’ that their two old Masters would die with a huge unaddressed grievance if they weren’t able to dishonor Tang Yuan in return. And since they had been given the opportunity today — they wouldn’t give it up easily.

A black-clothed youth stood calmly in another corner. His face was covered with a veil. He seemed indifferent to the proceedings taking place in front of him. It seemed as if this scene was like mist to his eyes; it wasn’t worth caring about.

His gaze was clear and indifferent; yet, it was warm and genial. Although his face was covered with a veil, but anyone could tell that this youngster was quite exceptional.

He was the Grand Preceptor Li’s grandson, the Young Master Li You Ran!

He had come out this time.

Notes:

The feast could be alternately mentioned as ‘Gifted Scholar’s Autumn Festival Feast’.

Chapter 282: You don't have the Money? Use your Granddaughter to Repay the Debt!

A chubby eunuch carrying a horsetail whisk arrived at the top of the stairs at the gate of the main hall. His cheeks drooped like that of a depressed transvestite as his strange, and undulating voice rang out, “It is time... I request the respected seniors, the scholars and the numerous Young Masters to please enter the main hall for an audience with the Emperor!”

“Bergh!” Jun Mo Xie retched. [This voice is just too much!]

[This is even more unpleasant to hear than those which come on the TV...]

It seemed like this eunuch was imitating a TV soap opera. [How many times has this eunuch given this performance?] But he wasn't imitating in reality... The ‘thing’ below this person's crotch was genuinely missing...

The veteran individuals looked at each other with a tacit understanding. The capacity of the main hall —the Tian Hall — was the greatest in the entire palace. It could house a thousand people for dinner... and then some. It was apparent that the preparation for the feast had reached a great scale. [So why did they not notify several days earlier? Several Young Masters couldn't be informed in-time to return to the city.]

The Young Master Jun and the others were about to leave when they heard the sharp voice of the court eunuch, “His Majesty wishes the brave and loyal Tang Wan Li to bring his grandson along... so that the Emperor may have an audience with him.”

Tang Yuan was scared. He jumped startled as he bitterly looked at Jun Mo Xie, “Damn! What's this about?”

The Young Master Jun rolled his eyes and faced the other way in refusal to acknowledge Tang Yuan. [You think I'm a divine entity

or what? Why would you ask me such questions?!] Debauchee Jun tilted his head and shrugged his shoulders. He turned his buttocks and started to walk towards the hall; as nimbly as a cat... everyone couldn't help but cast sidelong glances to each other...

Jun Zhan Tian looked at his grandson's flashy and coquettish behavior amidst the large crowd and felt his head ache. [Didn't this old man tell you to avoid doing something like that so you don't stand out in such a manner? This surpasses the saying 'the crane among a flock of roosters'. No, it should be called a 'rooster among a flock of cranes'! My lifetime's worth of reputation is finished. You brat! You've destroyed it by twisting your butt like that...]

Dugu Zhong Heng turned his head and his eyes fell on Jun Mo Xie by-chance. He watched as the young man twisted his butt and swayed it as he walked away. The General clicked his tongue and said, "Elder Jun, this is the first time this Old Man has seen your grandkid after he has grown-up right? Indeed, knowing a person by their reputation cannot compare to seeing them in person. And after seeing him today... I know he surpasses his renown! Absolutely amazing! He is indeed very unique and outstanding. He He..." he was smiling slightly, but his tone was quite queer.

Jun Zhan Tian snorted, wore a deep frown and stopped in his footsteps, "Elder Dugu, I seem to recall that your Dugu Family owes my Jun Family around ninety million silver taels. You seem to act like someone who doesn't give it much importance... when will it be returned? I just wish to enquire for the benefit of my heart!"

Grandpa Jun was usually quite resolute. However, Grandpa Dugu was being too unreasonable. He had taunted Jun Zhan Tian merely for fun. [How could that ignorant man come and tease the patriarch of the Jun Family like this?] Therefore, the moment he opened his mouth — he was pressed for repayment.

Dugu Zhong Heng was taken aback. His eyes opened wide into a circle and he remained speechless for a while. Then he ferociously

spat and spoke, “Bullshit! You’re killing me here! Ninety million in silver? Do you think of my Dugu Family as the National Treasury? Even the National Treasury won’t be able to cope with such an amount!”

“You brat, are you planning to renege on the debt?” Grandpa Jun glared, “In the words of your own family — you had acknowledged to compensate in accordance with the price of the auction. So why’re you thinking of reneging on your debt now? Even adding a small amount into this into this sum unfairly is against the Jun Family’s honor. I doubt that your Dugu Family will be lacking the funds if we take this dispute in front of the Emperor! ‘Justice’ may only be a seven letter word in this world of mortals! But it must be kept in mind, Dugu Zhong Heng... that the heavens are looking at this matter today!”

Dugu Zhong Heng was angered by this remark. He felt as if he had been sandwiched between honor and anger.

He was rude and unreasonable, but he wasn’t the master of repudiating a debt. And to make matter worse... the entire Tian Xiang Empire knew about this matter. Therefore, he couldn’t even think about go back on this debt.

[But... what do I say now...? How does this trivial Jun Family find the courage to say something this bold?] His breath was clearly panting, and it was obvious that he had cursed the Jun Family a hundred times in his heart. [Take a good look; you shameless spendthrifts are provoking this Old Man now!]

He was straining his mind hard when a strategy suddenly changed direction of his eyes; a carefully crafted plan came to his mind, “Correct, my Dugu Family does owe your Jun Family a lot in silver. Old Man, your grievances are reasonable! The murderer shall pay with his life and a debtor must return the money; that is fair! Don’t tell me, has the Old Man made-up his mind? Will this trivial ninety million silver be enough? That’s so miserly! If everyone were like you... they’d take whatever little money they

had very seriously! Jun Zhan Tian, how much money could you take to your coffin? I genuinely despise this miserly behavior of your Jun Family!”

Jun Zhan Tian was nearly infuriated; this individual was taking things too lightly. [Ninety million in silver is trivial? This can finance three years of military expenditure for the entire Tian Xiang Empire! Stop it dam*it], “Since you don’t care about it much... hurry up and return me my ‘trivial amount’ of money. Why are you dragging this matter? Let me tell you... my Jun Family has been waiting for this ‘small amount’ of money. Oh, and you’re calling us misers? It’s certainly better to be a ‘miser’ than someone who reneges on their debts!”

“When did I say that I won’t pay it back?” Dugu Zhong Heng turned his face and rolled his eyes, “We acknowledge our debt. It’s just that this Old Man doesn’t have enough money with him at the moment. Still... you needn’t worry. Anyway, it wasn’t settled when to pay the debt off... you tell me, was this not the basis? If not this year... then the next one... or the one after that? And if not in this life time... maybe in the next one? Remember, a certain public-figure once said; ‘Any debt can be repaid if one has an endless posterity...?’”

“Ha ha ha...” the people beside him broke into a frantic bout of laughter.

Some people had taken notice when the two old men had come together and had started muttering to each other. And every white-haired head had gathered around when the two men had started to talk about that huge debt. The mouths of the various families’ leaders were gossipy when they heard Dugu Zhong Heng’s joke.

And they heard Dugu Zhong Heng come-up with such a shameless classic line; the whole room burst into laughter in his support. This person was exceptionally talented. It was just a debt and nothing more. He had merely pushed it onto the next

generation... and the one after that; and unto his entire posterity. He was extremely shameless. In fact, he had attained the peak of shamelessness...

[The tree must've cultivated a leather bark; this person is the most shameless in all the lands under heaven! Today I've learned at last...]

“Fart!” Grandpa Jun retorted impatiently, “Who knows how shameless your next generation will turn out?” Then he turned his gaze and said, “Elder Dugu, if you're unable to repay the debt with money — then your granddaughter can help you repay it. We'll become relatives by marriage if you marry your granddaughter to my grandson...

“Do you expect that this Old Man will haggle about the ninety million with his relatives? Your family's debt will obviously be exempted; how about it? I'll let your debt off in such prime time. Then you can use that money to carve out figurines of your own. How about it?”

“Nonsense! You damned devil Jun!” Dugu Zhong Heng got angry and started to rain curses in an unrestrained manner. “My granddaughter is like a fairy! And just take a look at your grandson, just take a look...”

He pointed an accusatory finger at the back of the debauchee Jun as he said this. He was filled with anger as he continued, “Can that brat ever be joined to my granddaughter? You find me one person in this world who says that he is a good match for my granddaughter!”

“Your words are reasonable. Your granddaughter isn't a worthy match for my grandson. But it seems that my grandson cares for your granddaughter. So, you're in luck.”

Grandpa Jun then narrowed his eyes and said, “Elder Dugu, you will regret it if you don't agree to this. There will come a day when you'll have nothing more than rice for dinner. You will have lost

everything by the time that day comes. Then don't wonder why this Old Man did not warn you!"

"You dare! This Old Man will castrate you!"

Dugu Zhong Heng panted with anger and took a step forward. Would Grandpa Jun back off? His posture was sharp and his arrogance rose. The other old men realized that the situation had become dire since those two individuals were about to 'have at each other'. Three groups of five people each promptly started to calm the two individuals down. This was to avoid a frightening farce incident inside the palace.

The result would be a bit too lively to see if these two old and powerful patriarchs of military families decided to clash inside the Imperial Palace...

The two old men desperately tried to free themselves. It seemed as if they wanted to maul each other. In fact, they were kicking and punching anyone in the vicinity...

"Jun Zhan Tian, if that 'precious' grandson of yours dares to provoke and annoy me... this old man will spank his ass and feed his junk to the birds! Your family will disappear, and you'll spend your last days being a subordinate to bandits!" Dugu Zhong Heng spat everywhere as he roared.

"Bah! You think that you have that capability?! You think I've never thrown a punch in these past years of cultivation? You think I'm scared of you?! I forgot that I hadn't taught you a lesson in all these years! And now this old bastard has grown wings and wishes to ascend to the heavens! But this Old Man will make an exception and straighten-you-up today! You ignorant fool! You refuse to accept the kindness that's being shown to you!"

Grandpa Jun was quite furious. [I took pity on your granddaughter's infatuation. Otherwise, on the basis of my grandson's real situation... even the Emperor's daughter is not fit enough to be joined to him! Let alone your granddaughter! You're

despicable to defame such an amazing young boy. You're the most shameless person under the heavens!]

Several officials were hastily passing by this commotion as a few people tried to hold the doom at bay...

[Who'd have the courage to provoke these two old bastards...?]

[Dugu Zhong Heng is better. He is very unreasonable, but your life won't be in danger with him. That Jun Family's old bastard is another case altogether; he usually stays calm and appears to be harmless. In fact, he even flaunts his 'moral cultivation'... but last time someone provoked him... he killed nearly one-third of the Imperial Council without batting an eye. This guy is very cold-blooded. He won't even frown when doing the deed. He is a silent executioner!]

[There's bound to trouble now that those two are arguing here. One shouldn't stay here for long...]

"Tang Yuan?" the Emperor stared at the fat man in front of him inside the Imperial Hall. His temperament was extremely calm, but his brows shot-up at the sight of him.

The Emperor was shocked to see Tang Wan Li's grandson to stressed-out. [His personality is very different from that day at the Aristocratic Hall.] However, the Emperor somewhat derived a sense of security from the Fatty's flesh since Tang Yuan's body amply reflected the Empire's economical superiority.

It was obvious from one look at his body that the common people didn't have a dearth of food or clothing, and lived lives of plenty...

"Yes! I Tang Yuan pay my respects to Your Majesty!" He found it difficult to kneel. His belly brushed against the floor and his body spread-out like a carpet. He had attempted to touch his head on the ground, but his belly settled on it first.

Chapter 283: Fatty Passes the Test

Tang Yuan was terrified. His grandfather had brought him to the entrance and gone back. He had left him to face the great Emperor on his own. So, the Fatty was extremely nervous.

“Stand up. Come; have a seat,” The Emperor could not help but chuckle a smile after he saw Fatty cut such a sorry figure. His voice was affable as he waved his hand.

“Many thanks, Your Majesty.” Tang Yuan used his plump hands to support himself as he crawled and stood up. He carefully wiped-away the sweat and cautiously moved to take a seat.

He didn’t know whether it was intentional or not... but the court eunuch had moved a circular chair for him. Fatty found that the chair wasn’t very big. A regular-sized person would’ve easily fit into the chair and would’ve sat in a relaxed manner. In fact, he would’ve had plenty of space left to spare. In case of Fatty on the other hand... fitting into that chair had become a very difficult task.

Tang Yuan recalled his grandfather’s instructions, “When facing the Emperor — don’t sit arrogantly if he asks you to take a seat. Always sit with only half of your butt on the chair. Remember this by heart!” However, that chair would become a problem if he were to sit with half of his butt on it. [I doubt that even the half-of-my butt can fit into this. This chair is too small. No wonder people can only place half of their butts in it.]

He huffed and puffed until half of his butt went in. But that part was large enough to fill the entire chair. A circle of fat hung all-around the chair. His fat had overflowed the chair’s dimensions and had come out.

“Ha Ha...” the Emperor couldn’t bear it anymore, and started to laugh. Tang Yuan felt his sweat seeping out as he accompanied that laugh.

“Tang Yuan, I’ve heard that you were the head auctioneer of the Aristocratic Hall?” The Emperor, intentionally or otherwise, stopped laughing and asked the question. A cold light flashed from the depths of his eyes.

“Yes Your Majesty... young official... common person... I...” Fatty Tang stammered before he became speechless. He wanted to call himself ‘young official’, but that was improper since he didn’t have an official position. Then, he tried calling himself ‘common’ but that wasn’t true. He then tried to refer to himself as ‘I’... but then talking like that would be very disrespectful in this situation...

He unexpectedly started to choke...

“Never mind the courtesy; speak your mind,” the Emperor spoke in a mild manner. “Tang Yuan, can you tell me whose idea it was to conduct this auction at the Aristocratic Hall in such a manner?”

“This... that... Your Majesty... he he... that is, this way...” Tang Yuan’s mind raced. [Crap! No wonder Elder Brother solemnly exhorted me again and again. It seems that this old man knows that there’s high-end person behind this entire arrangement...!]

“Your Majesty, I was ahem, ahem, very young at that time... and not quite sensible... I had made a huge mistake. My grandfather evicted me from the house for it. So... I decided to do something which would make the old man wonder that expelling me from the house wasn’t the right thing to do.” Tang Yuan embarrassingly scratched his head. “But what can I do? I’m only interested in making money...”

“You... are you telling me that this idea was yours?” The Emperor’s expression sank. Then, some kind of an invisible power came down to put pressure on Tang Yuan.

This was not the Qi from a Xuan Qi expert... it was in fact the pure force of the Emperor’s personality.

This was something that even the Young Master Jun or even the

‘Eight Great Masters’ could not imitate.

“Yes! Your Majesty... it was nothing; just a small business transaction... and nothing else!” Tang Yuan’s clothes were seeped in sweat within seconds. He could feel sweat-rashes over his entire body. His mouth was somewhat parched, his red mouth and ivory teeth managed to utter these words still.

“It’s nothing? Just a small business transaction? Tang Yuan, do you know the sin you’ve committed?” The Emperor narrowed his eyes to a small crack as he keenly observed Fatty Tang’s expression.

“Insignificant, this insignificant... guilty... I... was unaware... made a mistake... I invited, invited my grandfather to make...” Tang Yuan became even more nervous. In fact, he still didn’t know how to address himself. Then, he recalled what that small boy at the brothel had called himself when he had visited. He pondered on it for a while, and decided that it was appropriate for use.

He only remembered the boy’s words since he has panicking in this moment. He hadn’t taken the boy’s tone into account. He couldn’t figure that the boy would use this tone with the brothel’s customers since he only wished to avoid provoking their arrogance in case he unknowingly made a mistake.

Suddenly, it seemed like Fatty was a street-seller who held two teapots, while the Emperor was a careless patron...

“Are you guilty of it? Your auction resulted in widespread disorder in the city, and everything has been drawn into turmoil. It’s a hideous mess!” His Majesty the Emperor snorted as he continued to exert his power. The Emperor was a learned man. He had understood that this unfathomable mystery was done for since this guy had caught up.

“I didn’t think that much at the time. I just wanted to stand on my own two feet. I had planned to earn some money from the guests in order to scrape a living. That was it. I didn’t think on

such matters. I didn't force anyone to buy those jars; they did it by their free will, Sir." Tang Yuan's sweat flowed down in a single stream.

Sir...

This sentence made the Emperor feel like a patron. Moreover, Tang Yuan didn't know that the Emperor and his sons... the relationship between those four was just a step away travel buddies.

"To speak nothing of earlier... you first put forward those characters depicting 'Aristocratic.' You provoked the rich and powerful of the Capital to make comparisons with this. And the situation became critical every passing day. Then, the prices of every commodity in the city rose rapidly because you sent just one invitation card per industry. And the fact that those invitations were sent to the 'true aristocrats' caused fierce internal disputes in the industries. The entire salt and cloth business of the Tian Xiang City are openly fighting and secretly plotting against each other as we speak! The situation is such that there've even been incidents of bloodshed due to it! Moreover, the entire political situation is unstable..." The Emperor couldn't talk about this final part openly. However, the matters he had raised weren't trivial. In fact, they were enough to intimidate Tang Yuan.

[Elder brother came-up with this plan in secret, and then controlled everything from behind! He is... amazing! And I thought this was just about the money. I was so stupid! I don't have enough face to break through the enemy lines... yet the boss sits far behind as he does it. This was genuinely 'calling the shots of the operations from thousands of miles away']

His Majesty, the Emperor was certain after looking at Tang Yuan's perplexed expression that he hadn't planned any of it. Or at least... he wasn't the instigator of that plan. He slowly got up from the Imperial Throne. He then took two leisurely steps and stationed himself thirty meters from Fatty Tang. "Tang Yuan,

you're the grandson of a brave and loyal Marquis! You may be a debauchee... but you shall receive rank and wealth in the future even if you're ignorant and incompetent. So why're you bothering to suffer like this on behalf of someone else? Would you ruin yours and your Tang Family's future because of it? Do you think it is worth it?"

This was a psychological attack! This was clearly a psychological attack!

No person of the younger generations would remain calm after such a threat was made towards their family. The Emperor was certain of this. Therefore, he spoke these words and then stared 'nails' at Tang Yuan's face as he observed him carefully.

However, the Emperor was entirely unaware that Jun Mo Xie had discovered such rhetorics, and had exposed them a long time ago. In fact, he had grilled Fatty Tang in that manner many times for practice. The Young Master Jun didn't have the power like that of the Emperor's, but his killing intention surpassed such a trivial power. However, how would Fatty cope?

In fact, the Emperor would trick Fatty Tang if were to continue to talk about his family like this... such was that old fox's trick? The young man would give away some of what he was trying to hide sooner or later. Then, the dots could be connected from that information. No matter Fatty's training — he wouldn't be able to resist sustained efforts such as these.

However, there were thousands of people waiting outside. So, the Emperor was seeking a quick method to achieve his aim. However, the fact was that Jun Mo Xie had predicted this exact situation in his plans.

Tang Yuan's situation could be compared with... it was like... learning wasn't helping the student's grades. Therefore, the student had decided to memorize the previous years' test papers on the eve of the exams... but had discovered that those questions had

comprised the entire set of test papers of the next day's exam...

[Elder brother is a divine strategist! Tang Yuan worships you!]

[Take this!]

"Your Majesty... you do not understand. This insignificant person has told you. I was expelled from the house by my grandfather. In any case... I deserved that punishment. My grandfather gave me a thorough beating that day, and I left my family home covered in cuts and bruises. I was left alone and helpless. I moved around the Capital without any money. But the Gods refused to abandon me. My good brother Jun Mo Xie from the Jun Family appeared! He didn't abandon me and brought me back to his home. He rescued me from my situation and saved my exhausted body. He took care of me and nursed me back to health with the utmost care..." The emotions seemed to be appearing on Fatty's face.

"So that plan was the Jun Family's Young Master's idea?" The Emperor felt a little frustrated since the Fatty seemed to be rambling incoherently. It was extremely loathsome.

"Your Majesty, you've misunderstood what I've said. Please allow me to properly finish what I was going to say. I received a warm welcome at the Jun Family's residence by my good brother. The Jun Family provided me with food, clothing and a roof over my head. And even though I am a debauchee... I could recognize their kindness... and the fact that I was a guest under someone else's roof. I started to ponder on how to repay such kindness. Business is a bit of a forte for me... so I struck upon an inspiration! I thought that I and my good brother Jun have something in common..."

[What would be common between you two? That you both are debauchees? You both are failures? Both of you fail to live up to the expectations? What else could it be?]

"Your Majesty must know of the marketplace rumors that I and my good brother Jun are the city's number one and two

debauchees. This insignificant person sought inspiration in this fact. I recall that in the past — I didn't value money! This insignificant person used to wantonly and randomly squander money... often on things which were of little value. I continued to throw away money recklessly. And now as I looked around — I found that I and the Young Master Jun weren't a minority in our generation. It seemed that the term 'debauchee' could be a substitute for the term 'aristocrat.' However, how come no 'aristocrat' was ever considered a 'debauchee'? But this could be considered as a way to make money since these people didn't take money seriously either!

“Coincidentally, I had come to know the greatest wine maker under heaven a few days back — senior Song Sheng. And he agreed to ferment his unique and exquisite wine for the Aristocratic Hall. We've come to today's situation due to various situations and incidences of good fortune. If Your Majesty still has some questions — Tang Yuan is more than willing to answer them all!” Fatty's 'air duct' didn't know whether it should obey or not. Nevertheless, Jun Mo Xie had accurately predicted the Emperor's reactions. Fatty hadn't done so yet... and was thus terrified.

He could easily answer any number of questions that the Emperor would ask; in detail.

The Fatty wouldn't have been this flustered if he realized this. He would've easily answered each and every question with impregnable logic... and on reasonable grounds. When it came to being expelled from his house... the fat man went according to the great director Jun's wonderful script. He passionately brought tears into his eyes as he bawled.

A pile of tears and sweat splattered around from the Fatty's face. The scene was rather difficult to imagine...

Chapter 284: The First Open-Contest!

The Emperor sighed. He knew he wasn't going to get any answers from Fatty today... [Isn't he too fluent? It seems as if he's singing a song?] His majesty was bored and exhausted by now. He went back to the Imperial Throne, sat down and frowned.

He had previously risen from his seat, clasped his hands behind his back and stood in front of Tang Yuan. He had aimed to show his overwhelming majesty to Fatty with help of his huge hall and put some psychological pressure on him. This ploy had started on a successful note when he had gotten up. However, it stopped working after he got up and asked the question since he had gone exactly according to Jun Mo Xie's predicted sequence of moves.

Fatty Tang's heart was awash with admiration for the Young Master Jun. That feeling counteracted the Emperor's efforts. Therefore, pressurizing the Fatty turned out to be useless.

"I got it; you can leave now," The emperor was tired. He used one hand to massage his head, and the other to lightly wave outwards.

It was a dream-like pardon to Fatty Tang. His body relaxed considerably; [Heaven and earth! This fire has passed at last!] He was on the verge of standing up to express his gratitude. Suddenly, the Emperor raised his eyes. His arrow-like sharp gaze shot straight at Tang Yuan as he got straight to the point, and put forth a conjecture, "Was this Jun Wu Yi's idea?"

Tang Yuan had barely gotten up on his legs; his mind was relaxed, and he had lost his strength. Therefore, he started to panic after he heard the word 'Jun' when the Emperor asked him that question. He hadn't properly heard everything else the Emperor had spoken. He had lost his mind out of fear, and stood there dumbfounded. His big mouth turned into a large circle as he subconsciously exclaimed, "What?!"

His Majesty, the Emperor looked at Tang Yuan and smiled

slightly, “Could that be the case?”

At the same time; on the other side... Jun Mo Xie took two steps and called-out as he waved, “Hello face-covering-shameful-youngster!” he had called-out to Li You Ran.

Li You Ran halted. He remained in his place as he waited for Jun Mo Xie to arrive. There were many other youngsters who wanted to accompany him and waited, but he lightly waved at them. He didn’t speak a single word, but his gesture had clearly indicated his desire.

He had conveyed his intentions; like a cloud in the weak wind. However, his companions didn’t mind and continued to walk. This was an incorporeal majesty. He saw the same look in Jun Mo Xie’s eyes as well. The fact was that he had always been adorned in this manner. In fact, he thought that such adornment was the norm.

Every movement of Li You Ran’s was skillful and full of grace. It seemed as if they were made by the heavens themselves. He moved in a manner which belied his freedom from vulgarity.

His eyes flashed with an unusual color as he looked at Jun Mo Xie unenthusiastically. It had dullness... it had aggression and it had fear... but it passed in a flash.

“I don’t know that the Third Young Master Jun would have some rare advice for me?” Li You Ran sounded neither too intimate, nor too estrange. His voice neither sounded too loud, nor too faint. But he had spoken this in discomfort.

“Your mannerism is good; it requires a little family education. And since this Young Master has arrived... he’ll give you some advice,” Jun Mo Xie talked drivel.

“Kindly tell.” Li You Ran’s eyes had a joyful expression, and his tone was sonorous. “I shall listen to the Young Master’s words attentively. You Ran, is honored to listen to you.”

“I wanted to ask you something; you wear that veil the entire

day... don't you feel tired? Doesn't it get too hot? Isn't it very shameful? Or do you plan to harass innocent women?" Jun Mo Xie slanted his eyes and opened his mouth provocatively, "Or has your face been disfigured?"

Li You Ran never appeared in public. He was a bit older than Jun Mo Xie, and his reputation was more profound as well. He intimidated several people, but this Young Master was a very curious case. In some respects, the Young Master Li even feared of the consequences when it came to the Young Master Jun.

[This Li You Ran guy is too phony. His thoughts are too profound and shrewd; they are enough to scare people. It's like he's always planning inside his head. However, he always maintains the same calm, modest and a decent image on the surface.] The Hit-man Jun was always wary of a man who carried a big smile and dubious intentions.

Heavens knew when he would start to plan against him...?

The Hit-man Jun had never feared an evildoer, a madman, a gentleman, a strong hero or even a down-right villain. But what he feared the most, and was most disgusted by was — a hypocrite.

Li You Ran was a hypocrite; a high-level one at that. His hypocrisy was such that he seemed genuine and honest. His level of hypocrisy was so high that he had developed proficiency in it.

Jun Mo Xie had just chided Meng Fei, and had abused everyone else who was considered Li You Ran's younger brother. However, Li You Ran hadn't responded in any manner. He had intentionally or otherwise observed himself. He had examined himself closely! He had felt a faint sense of fear.

[Is Li You Ran is on-guard against me? Or has he discovered something else?]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie made a prompt decision to show initiative, and decided to probe him a bit. He would observe Li You

Ran's behavior from then-on, and see how he conducted himself while responding to questions that were asked with a good intention.

“The Third Young Master has guessed it right! My face has been disfigured!” Li You Ran's eyes flashed with sadness. He didn't think that Jun Mo Xie was causing trouble for him. His voice was dull as he answered. It seemed that he was on-guard, but didn't think that Jun Mo Xie was worth getting mad at.

“Take that rag-off and let me have a look!” Jun Mo Xie carefully scrutinized the veil before he gave a frivolous command, “I haven't seen how elder brother looks after his face's disfiguration. I had heard you were quite handsome before. What a pity!”

Jun Mo Xie had another reason behind these actions. He recalled that Li You Ran had spared no efforts to pursue Princess Ling Meng. He had observed the way Li You Ran had looked at Princess Ling Meng at the Aristocratic Hall, and it was obvious that Li You Ran was deeply devoted to her.

This at least... wasn't false.

[However, when it came to his own interest... he didn't hesitate to put the woman he loved so dearly to death, and then he moved on! So much so that he hasn't even gone in seclusion post it!]

The Young Master Jun could never forget that Lei Jian Hong and the others were Li You Ran's senior disciples. They were involved in that matter with Princess Ling Meng, but it was surely on his instigation.

This was one of his aims behind going to that hideout while being disguised as the ‘Sky Xuan Peak Throwing Knife Expert’. He had a vague feeling that Li You Ran would sacrifice the woman he loved so dearly for the sake of procuring some information about the mysterious man he considered a threat to his plans.

[It was merely to gather some intelligence!]

[His feelings aren't fake. However, he discarded them like an old shoe!]

Jun Mo Xie believed that such a person wasn't fit to be called a 'man'. He could only be called a 'scum'; an anomaly. Yet, his bearing was honorable and graceful on the surface. It was perfect and aloof. This fact made Jun Mo Xie even angrier.

[Can't you act like a vile creature openly like I do? You like to play tricks to deceive people like that?]

[Therefore, I will tear down your mask!]

[I will expose your true colors!]

The two young men were immensely talented and smart. They were about to confront each other. One was a pure hoodlum, while the other had unsurpassed grace. And both of them were hidden behind masks of pretenses. However, neither knew who'd unmask whom first.

This had become a contest.

"My disfigured face is an eyesore." Li You Ran looked at him in a tranquil manner and smiled, "The Young Master Jun would know if he'd slash his flower-petals-like cheeks with two blades and then go home to look in the mirror."

"Really?" Jun Mo Xie drew that out on his face as he gave Li You Ran a sidelong look. "Young Master Li; your thoughts and knowledge are indeed very profound. However, even though this young master wanted to see it... he wanted to know one thing first — you used to be very handsome, but you can't appear in public now. How does it feel? Exciting?"

Li You Ran's self-restraint was repeatedly being tested by the Third Young Master Jun. This was slowly inciting anger within his heart. His smile and expression became cold as he replied, "Yes; very exciting. It's a very pleasurable feeling. In fact, I can lend a hand and make you feel like you're in seventh heaven if the Young

Master loathes missing out on the opportunity...”

“Ha Ha Ha...!” Jun Mo Xie laughed loudly as he patted Li You Ran’s shoulder. He then exclaimed, “Young Master Li is a kindred spirit! I wasn’t aware of it. I’ve indeed missed so many deeds; Elder Brother You Ran is exceptional! You’ve just reminded this little brother of the time he spent at the Night Willow in the Spirit Fog Lake. Ha Ha! We both are intimate with the red light district; this little brother doesn’t know when the Elder Brother You Ran will show him his many unique skills?”

People who had walked away turned their heads to look at them. Some people had recognized the Tian Xiang City’s ‘number one publicly recognized gifted scholar’ — the Li Household’s Young Master Li You Ran. The shocking fact that he was discussing a prostitute openly was big news to everyone. Moreover, he seemed to be experienced in such matters. What was more... the Capital’s ‘number one debauchee’ was bowing to him. This was genuinely unexpected.

A look of anger flashed in Li You Ran’s eyes. He looked at Jun Mo Xie and said, “I’m quite young in this regard despite being the elder brother. How could I even compare to the Third Young Master Jun? I must gracefully admit defeat in this regard. The Young Master Jun is exceptional in this matter. In fact, he is quite... outstanding!”

“Oh? Am I really that awesome? You’re truthfully saying that? I like it when others praise me,” Jun Mo Xie shrugged his shoulders with excitement and laughed with genuine happiness.

“For example, the Third Young Master helped Tang Yuan win his fiancée back with his unparalleled gambling streak. That was truly amazing!” Li You Ran lowered his head and looked at his own shoes; it seemed as if he was pondering about something. But it seemed that he had understood something very clearly by the time he had finished that sentence.

“Oh? Yes, that’s true! The God of fortune was with me; there was nothing that could’ve been done to stop me!” Jun Mo Xie looked at him in an interested manner.

“Again for example... the Young Master Jun and Tang Yuan had beaten Qin Xiao Bao one afternoon. The Northern City Gang was annihilated the next night,” There was a faint smile on Li You Ran’s Face as he wandered forward. It seemed like he wasn’t looking at Jun Mo Xie. But the Hitman’s sixth sense told him that Li You Ran was looking at his own reflection in Jun Mo Xie’s eyes; as if in a mirror.

“The Northern City Gang had done a lot of evil things. So, the heavens would act. That and the other trivial things... I didn’t hold them very important. However, I observe that they seem to be worthy of repeated mentions by Young Master Li,” Jun Mo Xie puckered his eyebrows. “It seems that the Young Master’s and the Northern City Gang’s relations weren’t that shallow.”

Li You Ran gave a long smile before he spoke, “For example... the Third Young Master Jun had passed his judgment in the Magnificent Jewel Hall, and had made Li Zhen spend a huge amount of money to buy that extremely precious jade coral...”

Li You Ran smiled and looked at Jun Mo Xie gently. Then, he spoke in a deep voice, “However, I didn’t expect that it would accidentally explode post its purchase...”

Chapter 285: There's No Harm in Having Fun

“And for example, the Dugu Family’s seven ‘Heroes and legends bravely rushing forward’ came to see the Third Young Master Jun when he was recuperating at his home. I seem to recall that the Young Master Jun would usually avoid those seven. However, you went-on to make a bet with them and set up the Aristocratic Hall. You were able to make the Dugu Family owe you ninety million in silver taels because of this matter. That was amazing...”

“I’ve heard that one of the ‘Great Eight Masters’, Solitary Falcon, is currently residing at the Jun Family’s residence for some reason... he he he... Third Young Master, do you want me to go on?” Li You Ran gazed gently at him and spoke softly, “I fail to understand... Why are you involved in each one of these matters...? You’re indeed a very talented person. This is entire affair is very mysterious!”

Jun Mo Xie’s eyes flashed coldly as he let-out a mischievous laughter. He replied in a sloppy manner, “Actually, I too find it very strange that Young Master Li’s presence is everywhere. You’re outstanding; ...from the underworld to the Imperial Palace... Young Master Li, you show your disfigured face everywhere. I doubt it would bother you; but don’t you think you’d scare the children? And even if you’re not scaring the children... it’s not good to scare the faint hearted.”

Li You Ran’s eyes flashed with a cold and sharp light. But he regained his usual calm and gentle manner again. He pretended to look as if he was embarrassed and then replied softly, “Third Young Master, are you sure that your surname is Jun?”

“Nonsense! I’m a member of the Jun Family! However, could it be that your surname isn’t Li?” Jun Mo Xie snorted.

“We’re both on the same boat!” Li You Ran looked distant as he

took a long breath. Then, he stated in one go, “Third Young Master, I’ve looked down on you several times in the past. But ever since the explosion of the Jade Coral... he he he...”

Li You Ran raised his head and looked straight into Jun Mo Xie’s eyes, “Third Young Master, you must treat everyone as fools. But there are many intelligent people in the world. You’re certainly one of them, but it doesn’t mean that others may not be.”

“Really? And you might be one of those ‘other’ people?” Jun Mo Xie laughed savagely. He then slanted his gaze, “Seems like sitting at home after the disfiguration of your face has given you a lot of time to think; isn’t that true?”

Li You Ran’s eyes were momentarily brimmed with anguish since the other party had mentioned his disfigured face again. However, he smiled in an unrestrained manner and his eyes became gentle soon after. They flashed with many rare emotions as he smilingly said, “Indeed, I’ve been thinking a lot after the Jade Coral’s explosion. There were many things which had evaded my eyes in the past. However, I see them clearly now.

“Therefore, I’m very grateful to that explosion; yes.” Li You Ran took a step and slowly moved forward as he continued, “Third Master Jun, you agree with that... right?”

Jun Mo Xie laughed, “So... this was like ‘turning a misfortune into a fortune’. Or perhaps ‘gaining profit from loss’?”

“Indeed! It was exactly like that!” Li You Ran nodded seriously and looked at Jun Mo Xie, “I never suspected you and I didn’t think that I could be mistaken. A pure debauchee couldn’t figure in my plans. However, I know that Young Master Jun cannot be underestimated after I saw him at the Aristocratic Hall...”

“Is it possible that the auction may have had a loophole?” Jun Mo Xie had anticipated that this might become a problem. This was the reason he had decided to probe Li You Ran.

“Naturally; there’s a loophole! Moreover, the loophole isn’t small,” Li You ran halted; they had reached the main door. The others had gone in, but Li You Ran obviously wanted to finish what he was speaking; and he wanted to finish it outside. “Tang Yuan... a man who could lose his own fiancée could come up with such a brilliant plan... he didn’t bat an eyelid as his plan caused a huge storm in the Capital and induced such confusion. Third Young Master... don’t you think it’s strange? Is Tang Yuan qualified-enough? Do you think he deserves that credit?”

“So, that’s the case!” Jun Mo Xie finally understood. The plan didn’t have a flaw; it was the person who did. Li Yu Ran couldn’t help but gravely underestimate everyone in the world. There was no doubt that Fatty Tang was unbearable. The auction was Jun Mo Xie’s idea, but every arrangement had been made by the Fatty. His business skills were exceptional. However, Jun Mo Xie wasn’t going to relay that information to Li You Ran.

“No matter how chaotic the Capital becomes; the more chaotic it is... the better. Due to the chaos... our Li Family, the Jun Family, the Dugu Family... all other powerful families will be relatively safer. We can secure these families — no matter what happens to the others. This would help us in acquiring time for some respite.” Li You Ran smiled, “Our Li family has benefited from the auction; although the benefit isn’t that massive.”

“Do you wish to thank me?” Jun Mo Xie assumed the bearing of a benefactor, and looked at Li You Ran.

“If the Third Young Master decides to kill me — I’m afraid I won’t be able to escape.” Li You Ran ignored him, and continued to talk. It seemed as if he was minding his own business, “But it’s important that I kill the Third Young Master... though I don’t think I’ll be successful. He he, you have the Solitary Falcon living at your residence — like I have my master at mine.”

Li You Ran had a faint smile as he gently sighed, “There’s presently a balance between us.

“Our Li Family controls the politics, and the Jun and the Dugu Family jointly control the military. That’s a balance as well. However, I’m temporarily unwilling to ruin that balance, and I believe that you aren’t either, Young Master Jun. But if either of us dies... the balance will cease to exist. Would you agree with me Third Young Master?” Li You Ran smiled in a very relaxed manner.

“Young Master Li is right! The situation is very balanced and harmonious,” Jun Mo Xie smiled. But his inner thoughts were fierce; [I know that the balance cannot be disturbed for the time-being. However, that won’t remain the case forever. And I won’t mind taking your head in the dark of the night when the time comes. It will be fairly easy for me to do that!]

“I cannot imagine how the Third Young master will act. But I, Li You Ran, will do nothing excessive for a short while.” Li You Ran smiled, “I wouldn’t dare to act too rashly for the time-being. However, when the conditions are right — the first rival I must urgently eliminate is the Third Young Master.”

Li You Ran said this quite seriously. It was more like an earnest commitment than a few pleasantries. Li You Ran’s conduct was very magnanimous in this case.

“I believe you,” The corners of Jun Mo Xie’s mouth rose crookedly as a seven-lettered word came into his mind; [Strange!] If Li You Ran had the opportunity to eliminate him without being suspected for it... then, Jun Mo Xie was sure that Li You Ran would take the task on without the slightest hesitation.

The reverse situation was the same as well. However, the situation was exactly as Li You Ran had described it to be. Hence, the Li Family and the Jun Family would wish the balance to remain undisturbed. Otherwise, Jun Mo Xie would’ve killed Li You Ran by now.

Jun Mo Xie wasn’t very interested in sitting and chatting with

him at present.

“Therefore, there’s no harm if we have some fun; right?” Li You Ran didn’t know whether he had convinced Jun Mo Xie. The corners of his mouth rose crookedly. His face revelled in a happy expression as he said, “Third Young Master, you’ve become quite capable. You wouldn’t have been anywhere near me a few years ago. But it seems that we’re the same now. We both had a poor childhood... and never had any fun.

“So, there’s no harm in making-up for it and giving it a go. Is it possible that you have another playmate?” Li You Ran seemed very interested as he asked that question.

Jun Mo Xie coughed, [I didn’t have a childhood... just like you... But Jun Mo Xie’s childhood was much more colourful than yours!]

“Have fun while killing people? Or have fun while creating havoc?” Jun Mo Xie laughed mischievously.

“Killing and creating havoc... can be considered a game of sorts,” Li You Ran tilted his head and pondered. However, the look on his face was seemingly akin to that of a longing. “And we have played it...”

The two men stepped inside the hall. Li You Ran gently spoke the moment they passed through the door, “There are very few in the younger generation who can play with me, and then defeat me; repeatedly. You’re a very fascinating playmate... we might as well continue to play.”

His eyes had been on the ground, and his voice had been low as he had spoken those words. In fact, it had seemed as if he had merely thought these words out-aloud.

“Continue to play?” Jun Mo Xie laughed heartily. He saw that hundreds of people had assembled inside the hall. He laughed in a wretched manner as he saw the setting of the hall, “Then let’s continue with our fun games. Ha ha! Then, you and I shall start to

play this game properly...”

Everyone scoffed in unison. The orioles and the sparrows pouted and mutter in their respective voices. Thought, they kept it low. Every individual of notice in the Tian Xiang City had gathered inside the Imperial Palace’s main hall at the moment. Jun Mo Xie could distinctly feel that every eyeball was fixatedly gazing at him.

Li You Ran couldn’t help but smile as he heard Jun Mo Xie end their conversation in his usual hoodlum style. There were several hundred people inside the hall, but he knew that Jun Mo Xie had aimed those words at him.

The two men then parted without looking at each other.

The two of them had some hidden-aces up their sleeves. In fact, they could see some of the cards the opposite party held as well. However, both of them had become more serious... as if by prior agreement.

[A worthy opponent!]

These words emerged inside the minds of those two individuals as they parted.

Young Master Jun regained his train of thought; [that hypocrite Li You Ran is my only rival at the moment. But I can’t always focus my thoughts on him. There are other matters of importance in this feast.] He looked-up and instantly recognized something strange about the setting of the feast.

[It is quite elaborate and... very unique!]

The seat high-above the banquet was where the Tian Xiang Empire’s Emperor would sit. [Does he wish to personally participate in tonight’s feast?]

There were a few more seats around the Emperor’s. They were presumably set to seat the three Princes, and the other members of the Royal Family. The other members of the Royal Family would refer to the Prince Equivalent; Yang Huai Nong. However, the seat

which seemed reserved for the Prince Equivalent and his son seemed to be less that luxurious in comparison. However, one seat seemed to have been designed for the comfort of its guest. It seemed rather obvious that this seat was reserved for Princess Ling Meng.

Another set of tables had been placed in the fair vicinity. Those were undoubtedly reserved for the Patriarchs of the powerful families. However, why was one table placed separately, and slightly higher than this set? It seemed reserved for someone senior. But who was it for? This was a confusing mystery.

Chapter 286: Elder Brother Will Remain at the Top... Even if the Sky Falls Down!

Hundreds of tables were placed in a circle. A small space had been left vacant in the middle. [Would there be a performance at this feast? Will the senior men sing and dance? A normal man may not do it; perhaps those sour and gifted scholars will...]

“The Golden Scholarly Feast has now commenced; everyone is requested to take their seats.”

Jun Mo Xie took his seat. He looked up, and saw someone opposite him. It was none other than the Young Master of the Li Family, Li You Ran. The Young Master Li looked around. He saw the Young Master Jun acting like his debauchee self, and smiled faintly. He then lifted his wine cup to relay his best wishes. Jun Mo Xie sneered and took that opportunity to cross his legs by putting one over the other. This was his signature debauchee-move.

Then, a fragrant smell hit Jun Mo Xie’s nose. It came from behind. He didn’t need to look behind to know that this clean and fresh fragrance was coming from Dugu Xiao Yi. It wasn’t very common, but he was familiar with it. He had been around her several times. So he realized that the Dugu Family would be seated behind him. The Young Master Jun hadn’t turned around to look, but the ‘lady-killer’ Jun could distinctly feel a pair of eyes foolishly staring at his back.

There was another pair of beautiful eyes which were gazing at him from a seat above. Jun Mo Xie raised his eyes to look. Unexpectedly, he came to realize that those eyes belonged to Princess Ling Meng. Her cheeks turned bright red as she turned her head away upon meeting his gaze.

[What’s the matter with that woman? Why was she looking at me like that... she has taken that bullsh*t blood oath... Even if she takes it seriously — I don’t!]

[Wouldn't the thought of that give me a back-ache?] The Hitman had deliberately concealed his murderous aura since this wasn't the place to exhibit it. Therefore, he didn't notice when someone appeared beside him. He turned his head and saw that it was Dugu Xiao Yi. She had come to converse with him. However, she had just seen him exchange 'flirtatious' glances with Princess Ling Meng. Therefore, she pinched him hard instead of giving him a tongue-lashing...

Jun Mo Xie bared his teeth. [How can I be bullied by that woman in such a way?] Jun Mo Xie's was unable to turn his head properly. So, he couldn't see what he had touched in his attempt to pinch her back in retaliation. However, that part of her body was extremely smooth and supple; he felt as if he had pinched a sponge. It was very full and elastic; it felt very good.

"Ah!" Dugu Xiao Yi screamed in agony while Jun Mo Xie exclaimed in admiration. He was as thick-skinned as the city walls, but his face had unexpectedly turned red. He withdrew his hand very quickly. However, everyone had looked at them in unison and had witnessed the entire scene.

The entire hall watched as the little girl's face turn red. She straightened-up into a very awkward posture. Her small hands were subconsciously massaging the area where she had been pinched. She was visibly embarrassed and distressed. Her eyes had started to well-up.

Jun Mo Xie had accidentally pinched her fragrant posterior; everyone figured that the little girl would knife-out the life of him.

The sounds of scoffs and discussions started to well-up shortly after everyone witnessed this scene. The youngsters in the main hall had started to give Jun Mo Xie hate-full looks.

[He takes liberties with a woman in such a serious situation...! That brat is the city's biggest pest! Not only did he harass the Dugu Family's little gem... he did it out of lust...]

Dugu Xiao Yi had come up to Jun Mo Xie in high spirits. But she then saw Jun Mo Xie and Princess Ling Meng exchange amorous gazes. This annoyed her greatly. Therefore, she pinched him hard, and then turned around to leave. She had hoped that Jun Mo Xie would follow-after her to coax. Who would've thought that Jun Mo Xie would silently and quickly pinch her 'there' the moment she'd turn? However, he had done it at the first opportunity. He straight-away grabbed her butt and pinched; it seemed as if he had rehearsed the whole thing.

Everyone watched as the little girl's neck turned red with embarrassment. She flew to her seat and buried her head into her stomach. Then, she tried to cover her face with her little hands. She was conscious that she had been touched at that spot in front of several people. [That little rascal pinched me 'there' even though I haven't told him about my feelings yet... so how could he do that?]

The little girl's posture appeared somewhat strange... the place where she was pinched hurt. She couldn't walk fast. In fact, the pain remained even after she had taken her seat. So, she had no option but to re-adjust her posture a couple of times. And, the resultant posture appeared a bit strange...

Young Master Jun was perspiring all-over. He hadn't expected this to happen; ...that he would grab that part... He then became aware of that feeling... that a green apple had ripened into a sweet peach... and he had taken a nibble...

He couldn't help but think what would've happened if she hadn't turned... [Where would I have grasped if she hadn't turned?] He smiled mischievously and twirled his fingers. It seemed as if he could still feel the satin-like sensation on his fingers. He couldn't help but bring them to his nose and smell the fragrance ...as his face became vulgar.

"Shameless! He's such a degenerate!" Everyone-present on the scene was red with anger. They turned their goat-like beards up;

[that Third Young Master Jun is very shameless! He's a very vulgar man! I'd like to chop this little scum's hand off!

The young men looked at Jun Mo Xie with extreme disdain and cursed him. They cursed him inwardly in rage, but subconsciously rubbed their own two fingers together. They were then lost in the infinite reverie... thinking... how nice it would be if they could feel such a sensation. [One of Tian Xiang City's two beauties' fragrant butt!]

Soon they were overcome with pleasure. They moved their own fingers to their noses to take a sniff... [ah, such a wonderful and fragrant smell...]

Princess Ling Meng was seated many tables away; she didn't know what to think. Her pretty face turned red as she felt a strange itch on her own butt. She snorted since felt a vague envy in her heart.

Suddenly, everyone started to hear heavy footsteps coming from outside. It was clear that an important personality was approaching the Hall. The teachers of the Institute, and the patriarchs of the different families, entered... with sage-like but fast, old yet vigorous, earnest yet grave footsteps.

The main hall fell silent.

One couldn't trifle with such people.

Then... came the three princes... beaming with happiness.

The Golden Scholarly Talent Feast had officially commenced.

Various sorts of delicious foods were brought to the hall by an unceasing line of servants. The fabulous smell assailed every nostril. However, even a bold debauchee like Jun Mo Xie knew not to make a move.

It was because... the Emperor hadn't arrived yet.

The most important individual is always the last to make an

appearance.

Admittedly, Jun Mo Xie didn't care much for the Emperor. However, he didn't desire to stir unnecessary trouble in such eventful times.

Then, everyone quickly sat-up straight since they suddenly heard heavy footsteps coming from outside.

Everyone looked solemn yet respectful as they stretched their necks to see who it was...

What they saw was merely... a large fat person being escorted by a court eunuch.

They recognized the man once he had walked all the way over; it was Tang Yuan!

Everyone was shocked at first. And then they burst into laughter. Tang Wan Li stood up; his face belied his rage, "You little devil! What insanity are you displaying?"

Tang Yuan's face was awash with debilitating fear! He walked as slowly as a zombie — taking his time with each stupefied step he took. His waist was bent-low for the most outrageous reason. A chair was stuck to the backside of his body. He was carrying a round chair on his butts. It seemed as if the chair was growing-out of his butt...

The Emperor's questions to Fatty weren't aimed Jun Mo Xie. His highness had thought-himself-clever and focused on Jun Wu Yi alone. But wasn't that the same thing in Fatty Tang's eyes?

[This matter is fuc*ed!] This was the only thing which was going-through Tang Yuan's mind during his audience with the Emperor.

He had obeyed the Emperor's order to leave, and had gotten up. But he had forgotten to give his salutation since he was beside-himself. He started to wobble at once. But his butt was too big... and the chair was too small for him. So, as he stood up... the chair was raised. It had got stuck to his backside. And it remained glued

there the entire walk to this hall. But Tang Yuan was so overcome with anxiety that he hadn't noticed the chair... or its weight. In fact, he hadn't become aware of it until that very moment...

He came back to himself after he heard everyone's laughter and his grandfather's rebuke. He opened his eyes wider, and realized that he had reached the main hall. He suddenly became teary... like a small child who had been wronged.

"Ha ha! Young Master Tang is very talented! His behavior genuinely stands-out from the masses! He's such a great guy! He must've feared that he may not find a suitable seat at the Palace... so he has brought his own seat! He's outstanding!" Meng Hai Zhou wasn't going to let this opportunity slip. He took the lead and made that comment. His words added oil to everyone's laughter.

Tang Wan Li's face swelled purple. He soared-up and struck that round chair hard. It shattered it into many pieces. His beard fluttered as he then looked around and gazed at everyone. However, he lowered his head once he realized that he couldn't stop the laughter.

He sighed when he saw his grandson in such a state. The old man's heart ached with sorrow. [I've known his Majesty for many years... has he forgotten the years of our friendship... why didn't he stop this mishap? However, this isn't the time to pose such questions; it's better to let this matter go.]

However, he then felt a person come-over and stand beside them. If he was not mistaken... then it was the Young Master Jun.

"Buck up, Fatty!" Jun Mo Xie's voice was somewhat coquettish. He swayed as he spoke. However, Tang Yuan realized what was happening in reality. Jun Mo Xie's expression was full of warmth. He had decided to deal with this situation.

"Elder Brother will remain at the top... even if the sky falls down! Come, have a drink with me!"

Then, Jun Mo Xie laughed heartily. He had initiated the Art of Unlocking Heaven's Fortune as he had spoken his words, and had sneaked the real meaning into Tang Yuan's ears. Everyone else had only heard the last few words since he had spoken them in his normal mode.

“Elder Brother will remain at the top... even if the sky falls down!” These words brimmed with domineering fearlessness. It came like a burst of reassurance and put Fatty's mind at ease. Tang Yuan's heart shook. It seemed like he was lost before... but had suddenly seen the light. He looked up; Jun Mo Xie's expression didn't matter. He then suddenly laughed mischievously and said, “It appears that the wine they're serving the guests in this feast is from our Aristocratic Hall! It won't do if the wine at such a big party isn't genuinely good! It seems that the Three Princes haven't appropriated all of it. That's good; isn't it?!”

The two men laughed mischievously as they walked away together.

Tang Wan Li gaped in astonishment. His grandson had appeared very disheartened a moment ago. [It seemed as if he can't feel any love towards morality since his birth...! That little devil Jun Mo Xie started to talk about drinking... and he suddenly reverts to his old self...!]

[What's this about?]

Chapter 287: A Very Generous and Easy Target!

Most people of the older generation had been seated with the youngsters of their families. However, they didn't wish to share a drink with their children or grandchildren. So, the elders started to walk over to each other's tables in order to form groups. They then deviated from the original seating arrangement and sat with people of their own generation.

Therefore, it was only logical that Jun Mo Xie, Tang Yuan, Dugu Xiao Yi and her brothers — 'heroes and legends bravely rushing forward' — would be seated together on two tables in close proximity.

It wasn't the first time they had done this. The young man who sat on the table opposite was Li You Ran; he was facing Jun Mo Xie... same as before.

This was another coincidence...

Tang Yuan had wanted to say something, but Jun Mo Xie used his stealth voice to restrain him. He secretively told the Fatty that this wasn't the time to talk. Even if it was an important matter... it was better to put-off the discussion for later.

Jun Mo Xie had realized that they were being watched by four distinct pairs of eyes ever since Fatty Tang had arrived in the hall. He believed that the four individuals would come to know of any movement that Fatty Tang might make. However, they couldn't detect the Young Master Jun's Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune. His sound was concealed from the other people, and they wouldn't be able to hear his words.

[We can't take any special actions at present. Fatty and I can't discuss anything even after this feast ends... not before we reach home!]

Jun Mo Xie cracked several jokes. Tang Yuan's brows were raised as he laughed loudly. He was slowly reverting to his original-self. He wasn't fully reinstated, but his mood had been lightened; more or less. Dugu Xiao Yi had been on the verge of breaking into tears, but she had started to chuckle as well. She looked at Jun Mo Xie ferociously and angrily said, "Ignore this lecherous beast!" However, it was obvious that she wasn't as angry anymore.

This girl's behavior was adorable. Her temperament was somewhat irascible, but it kept fluctuating regularly. There was nothing complex about it. Jun Mo Xie's mood lightened in that girl's company and he started to feel relaxed. He started to smile since he felt very comfortable around her.

"I request the honored guests from the Silver Blizzard City to kindly enter!" Everyone's eyes turned to the doorway as the court eunuch who was acting as the master of ceremonies made this announcement. The Young Master Jun sensed his grandfather's facial muscles contract for a moment before they returned to normal. His heart surged with anger at the sight of the Silver Blizzard City's people.

The Silver Blizzard City's people were unexpectedly the honored guests of the Tian Xiang City. Jun Mo Xie sneered as he narrowed and raised his eyes. [Just look at the damage you've done to our Jun Family; I won't forgive you that easily!]

Xiao Han and Mu Xue Tong entered under everyone's gazes. They were followed by Han Yan Meng and Xiao Feng Wu. They honored guests were clad in white clothes. They seemed like flowers that had bloomed beyond the reach of the mortal world.

Everyone felt refreshed and cool as the four individuals entered the hall.

Jun Mo Xie watched as those four individuals sat at that 'separated' table. He sneered inwardly. He didn't have any interest in them at that point. [But how did that Xiao Feng Wu recuperate

so much in such a short time?] He could distinctly recall the strength he had used the last time he met the youngster. Xiao Feng Wu looked a bit unhealthy and pale, but he could walk properly. This was totally baffling.

[The recovery shouldn't have been this quick! Shouldn't it have taken several days?]

Suddenly, he became conscious that the Hong Jun Pagoda had started to rotate again. This made Jun Mo Xie very happy. This feeling was somewhat similar to the time when he had fought and grabbed the strange jade pendant from the Sixth Elder. However, that feeling was much stronger now...

Jun Mo Xie's mind started to race; [is it possible? ...the last time I fought and retrieved that treasure... has another one appeared?] Jun Mo Xie pondered. He couldn't help but feel that he had come upon a treasure — a treasure that was ripe for looting. He couldn't help as his spirits rose. [The moment we're out of the door... this elder brother will play a robber. It's a pity that such a mysterious thing is getting wasted on that brat!]

[Indeed, these people have been generous targets! They've delivered me such treasures... not once, but twice!]

He lifted his gaze and saw Han Yan Meng pull a face at him.

Jun Mo Xie observed the movement of her lips, and quickly understood the meaning behind her actions. He skills had made it easy for him to understand the movement of her lips; "Obedient nephew, your aunt is here."

[This girl lacks class; but I'll teach you! This girl dares to pretend to be from an older generation!]

The Young Master Jun lazily turned his head away.

"His Majesty, the Emperor has arrived!"

The court eunuch's sound resounded loudly. The Emperor had finally showed-up. Jun Mo Xie cursed from the pit of his stomach;

[bullsh*t! The food is getting cold...]

Several clichéd formalities followed, and the Golden Scholarly Talent Feast commenced at last. Jun Mo Xie interpreted things in his own way, and naturally... started to eat. However, those hard working and capable Gifted Scholars behaved rather properly, and hadn't yet made a move.

His Majesty eventually declared, "The high-ranking individuals may continue as they wish!" Jun Mo Xie started to gorge himself with great speed after he heard this line. Most people waited on the sidelines and hesitated... but he had devoured half a bear into his belly.

"Can't you be a bit civilized? You're eating like a maniac while the others haven't even started!" Dugu Ying smiled as he looked at Jun Mo Xie with disdain and positioned his hand midair.

He was a son of the Dugu Household. His skin wasn't thin. However, the Young Master Jun's skin was thicker than a corner of the city-walls. A few people had decided to look for the yellow and greasy sweet smelling bear-paw... only to find that it was resting inside Jun Mo Xie's mouth by the time they stretched their hands to retrieve it. In fact, more than half of the dish had landed in his belly by then. His speed was incredible.

This action as well as the speed at which he devoured the food was near-impossible for the youngsters from the various families to imagine. [You may hail from the military families of Jun or Dugu, but this is the Golden Scholarly Talent Feast! It is a known fact that you don't care for appearances, but you should try to behave a bit reserved in such a situation! Doesn't each family in this hall have enough to eat and drink?] However, this caused the Dugu brothers to start albeit in Jun Mo Xie's steps.

However, the unwritten rules of civility were destined to be doomed when it came to the Young Master Jun. He could go three full days without any food or water in his previous life... and still

have enough stamina and focus to complete his mission. Conversely, he could eat three days' worth of food in one sitting.

Moreover, he was on a mission to showcase his to showcase debauchee-self. And, it was only-logical to expect such a behavior from a debauchee. Therefore, he continued to chew spiritedly.

“Civilized? How much is that worth in silvers?” Jun Mo Xie snorted and smiled. He reached-out with his hand towards the center of the table. The large bowl was greasy and somewhat transparent. He frowned as he tasted the soup, “This isn’t cooked properly... didn’t they taste this?”

Jun Mo Xie could obviously judge the soup’s taste. This was a tiger pen*s soup, but it needed some more work.

Tang Yuan lifted his bowl to his mouth as well. The seven ‘heroes and legends bravely rushing forwards’ were shocked at the sight, and their eyes turned round. Their eyes bulged so much that it seemed as if they’d burst. Fatty hadn’t even used a chopstick. The adjoining seats hadn’t even picked their chopsticks. But the best thing on their table was gone. Unexpectedly, that cheap and fat youngster was ranting nonsense as he ate. [We’re from the military... so how can you eat that fast?] “Is your throat a well or what? Damn! Such Speed! How on earth aren’t you choking on it?” the seven brothers cursed in unison.

“What soup is this? Why did you snatch all of it?” Dugu Xiao Yi’s big eyes turned into crescent moons with happiness. [Brother Mo Xie has only left one bowl on a table of ten people. What does it mean? What does it represent?] The little girl felt quite satisfied as she brought the bowl to her mouth and softly sipped a mouthful of the soup. The smell was somewhat fishy. Then, a radish shaped lump entered her mouth. She chewed on it and realized that the more she chewed... the more fragrant it became.

“It’s the Forehead...” Jun Mo Xie was startled. He then stretched his hand, grabbed a crab dish, and placed it in front of Dugu Xiao

Yi, "Try this too."

The seven brothers were quite shocked at manner in which this scene had unfolded. However, they wanted to eat fast and deftly compete with Fatty Tang. Jun Mo Xie craned his neck and saw Fatty. No sort of civility could prevent Fatty Tang from ignoring such delicacies. He was a great connoisseur of food. The seven Dugu brothers were military brats, but watching him eat with such a speed made them slap their heads. Momentarily, an entirely different scene was created on their table. And then it turned into a bit of a riot.

The center of the table had been full of dishes a moment ago. However, it was suddenly empty. Everyone had used their hands to prop-up the table, and had embraced as many dishes as they could. Each one of them looked alert and ready to gobble-up the food. Then, they suddenly realized that they couldn't hear a single sound around them. This confused them, and they raised their heads to look. Everyone else was watching their table in silence. Everyone was startled, and their eyes were wide open; their faces were full of astonishment.

The people on the other tables hadn't even started yet... but this table had been emptied...

Dugu Zong Heng, Jun Zhan Tian and Tang Wan Li were extremely shocked. They had thick skins... but they had turned red. The three old men exchanged meaningful looks in embarrassment.

"Elder Jun, I'm convinced that the Third Young Master is from your lineage. It's like a tradition... he may not have ascended to the battlefield yet, but I can see that he has a small trait of your family..." Murong Family's Patriarch, Murong Feng Yun spoke as he shook his head. His expression was somewhat serious. His words seem to be of praise and derision; they were thought-provoking.

“You know it well...” Grandpa Jun gave him a quick and harsh glance. The few old men beside them were unwilling to intervene. “How can you be sure, brother Murong?”

“Take a look yourself...” Murong Feng Yun pointed towards Jun Mo Xie. His hands and the mouth were busy. “This brat’s shameless appearance is very similar to yours... in the old days. This old man would be blind if he didn’t see it...”

The entire room burst-out with laughter.

The corners of the Emperor’s mouth drew upwards as he coughed in order to restrain himself. Nevertheless, the fact was that a few youngsters had acted on-their-own and had disrupted the feast. He picked-up the wine without any prior indication, and raised a toast to everyone. The entire hall then stood-up and conveyed their thanks.

The Tian Xiang Empire’s premier man had led the way and drunk his wine; the feast had begun. Every gifted scholar on the scene was in a competition with their counterparts. The civil and military officers were the judge of this contest.

The wonderful event had begun!

Chapter 288: You're Very Lucky!

The sounds of two coughs were heard. Then, the old and decrepit teacher of the Wenxing Heavenly literature Institute —Mei Gao Jie — stood up. His body seemed to be trembling under the effect of those coughs. He faced the Emperor, and cupped his hands in salute. Then, he turned around and greeted the rest of the crowd in the same manner, “Your Majesty; respected seniors... this Golden Scholarly Talent Feast is the finest arrangement this humble man had ever seen. This old man sincerely wishes His Majesty and his lineage the best of fortunes on behalf of the Wenxing Heavenly Literature Institute. May the heavens watch over His Majesty and my Tian Xiang. May the people of the nation always prosper! May the military sweep over the entire continent and unify the land under Tian Xiang’s banners. May the entire land prosper under His Majesty’s grace! We thank His Majesty’s vast and unbounded benevolence to rise above the norms of Imperial Examination and allow scholars like myself to prosper...”

He had drawn a long breath to speak this entire passage in one shot. However, it sounded like it was only the beginning of his speech. He was about to get to the main topic of his speech... when a grumbling voice was heard, “How can you eat so much at such a majestic Imperial Feast... Fatty! I understand that you have a big belly. But you have to realize that there are more people around. You’ve finished an entire table worth of food on your own in such a short period of time...”

The sound of this voice was very low. In fact, it had seemed as if the speaker had deliberately lowered his volume. However, the entire hall had solemnly silenced to listen to Mei Gao Jie’s speech; there was pin-drop silence in the hall. Therefore, everyone heard these remarks rather clearly, and their faces started to reveal a queer complexion...

The speaker was none other than Jun Mo Xie. The Young Master

Jun had his heart set on disrupting matters. He obviously wouldn't have allowed this opportunity to pass-by. As far as the accused was concerned — Tang Yuan merely gazed back at him with a stupefied yet innocent expression on his face. He held half-a-crab in his hand. [Who eats more amongst the two of us Elder Brother? That's obviously me. I do eat a lot, but did I touch your half of the dish? So... why would you accuse me?]

Mei Gao Jie was in the middle of delivering a very moving speech. However, he was suddenly interrupted. He obviously couldn't help but become angry. Moreover, the disturbance had been caused by an utterly shameless person, and for an utterly shameless reason. His lips started to tremble in anger as he turned. However, another gong-like voice sounded; it had a disdainful tone to it, "I've seen shameless people, but I've never seen someone this shameless. The person who tries to devour the best dishes by himself has the nerve to falsely accuse the others... what's happened to people..."

This voice belonged to Dugu Ying. Dugu Ying had been fighting over the bear paw from the beginning. Hence, he was obviously very angry. Therefore, he deliberately raised his voice to express his dissatisfaction. However, he was far more robust than the Young Master Jun. This was merely his normal speech-volume, but it was akin to an average person's shouting-volume-level. The Young Master Jun had successfully managed to cause more mischief since everyone in the crowd had heard this ruckus. The event's proceedings were getting disrupted, but Jun Mo Xie's plan was only finding more success.

Jun Mo Xie's spirits were lifted to see that someone had unknowingly lent him a hand. He twitched his mouth, "And now I can't eat fast, huh? Nonsense! Your family has brought more people than any other family. Your family must suffer to feed those hungry mouths of yours. They must've gone bankrupt. And now you sit your plump butts on this table. I reckon I wouldn't

even be able to taste the soup if I didn't eat quickly enough..."

Tang Yuan stood-up to resolve the dispute, "Third Young Master... his reaction is understandable. You see... he knows he doesn't have to pay for this food."

Even the Emperor was unable to restrain his laughter as he heard these words. He issued a strange "Pfff" sound as he muffled the sound of his laughter. The faces of the other old men in the hall revealed strange smiling expressions as they attempted to restrain their laughter. However, Dugu Ying stared at the Fatty; it seemed as if he'd eat Tang Yuan whole.

The solemnly silence hall was suddenly overcome with 'pfff' sounds as everyone clutched their mouths to muffle their laughter.

Old Man Mei Gao Jie had started to tremble with anger. He was about to speak-up when a peculiar voice mocked, "The Jun Family is genuinely very arrogant, ah. Its reputation is fully justified!" Everyone turned their gazes to follow the source of the sound. The speaker was a white clothed youngster seated around the table that was reserved for the feast's guests of honor — the Silver Blizzard City's Xiao Feng Wu.

Xiao Feng Wu was aware of the matter between his Uncle Xiao Han and Jun Family's Jun Wu Yi. Moreover, the Little Princess Han Yan Meng hadn't stopped gloating about having a nephew ever since she had returned from the Jun Family's residence. This had obviously made Young Master Xiao very uncomfortable. Therefore, he had taken the initiative and spoken such ironic words.

"And who are you?" Jun Mo Xie pretended as if he didn't recognize the man he had beaten-up.

"I'm surnamed Xiao; I'm Xiao Feng Wu from the Xiao Family of Silver Blizzard City!" Xiao Feng Wu eyebrows shot-up. He pulled out a folding fan from his bosom, and started to sway it in a confident and easy manner.

“That’s a good name!” Li You Ran was quick to speak-up, “Elder Brother Xiao has a very refined name! It feels like a breath of fresh air!” The enemy’s enemy is a friend. The Jun and the Xiao Family hated each other. How on earth could Li You Ran not exploit this?

“He he... now that you’ve mentioned it... there’s a short story behind the origin of my name.” Xiao Feng Wu was feeling awfully pleased with himself. Li You Ran had scratched his itch. Therefore, he started to explain, “My mother had a dream one evening before I was to be born... in the dream she saw a beautiful phoenix in the sky. The phoenix landed on a Parasol tree. Therefore, she named me Feng Wu.”[1]

“Your name is indeed bestowed by the heavens,” Li You Ran applauded. There was a look of admiration on his face.

“Ha ha...” Jun Mo Xie burst into laughter.

“Why are you laughing?” Xiao Feng Wu seemed angry. He was enjoying a moment of pride. How could he allow interruptions?

“Nothing. I was just wondering... you mother must be very talented. She dreamt of a phoenix land on a parasol tree, and then named you so beautifully... Feng Wu...”

It seemed as if the Young Master Jun couldn’t restrain his laughter. He swayed back and forth for a moment, and then continued, “Your mother dreamt of a phoenix land on a Parasol tree... but what would you’ve been named if she had instead dreamt of a chicken land on a Banana tree? Imagine that! She dreamt a good dream at the appropriate time. You’re very lucky!”

His Majesty chocked on his wine. His face turned red as he coughed for a while; he was literally between laughter and tears.

[A dream of a chicken landing on a Banana Tree...?] Then, everyone attached these words to Xiao Feng Wu’s surname. Suddenly, everyone came to see the truth... [2]

Everyone wanted to burst into laughter. However, they were

terrified of the Silver Blizzard City's might. Therefore, everyone restrained their laughter. Some people almost choked in the process.

“What are you trying to say?” Xiao Feng Wu didn't get it at first. He then subconsciously pondered over that line for a moment. Suddenly, his face froze, “Jun Mo Xie! How dare you abuse me?”

“Abuse you? When did I abuse you?” Jun Mo Xie exposed an innocent face, “You think you can say whatever you want because you're from the Silver Blizzard City? You need to catch a couple in the act if you wish to accuse them of adultery. You must find the stolen items before you accuse a thief. It's necessary to have evidence!”

“You abused my name!” Xiao Feng Wu couldn't control his anger. He bellowed out of humiliation, “Jun Mo Xie, I will kill you!”

“The Silver Blizzard City is very powerful. It is worthy of being called the most powerful force in the world.” Jun Mo Xie shook his head in admiration, “But you are in our country at the moment... as the Emperor's guests. You were invited to this feast in the Imperial Palace as the guest of honor. However, you threaten to murder the only heir of a powerful family... and that too in front of every official of the Empire... and the Emperor as well? I must admire your courage, ah!”

The faces of the ministers and the officials suddenly became unsightly.

[Ah! He threatened to kill the Jun Family's sole heir in front of the Emperor! Just how arrogant would he become if he were allowed to leave this Imperial Palace?]

Xiao Han quickly stood up, and forced his nephew to sit down. He then cupped his hands and apologized, “Young Feng Wu doesn't know much about life. He merely acted on impulse. Please forgive him.” Xiao Han didn't care much for the royalty. However, he didn't wish to incite trouble against the Royal Family of an

entire nation for no reason. After all, they had an ancient treaty of alliance. Moreover, the Emperor had called them in good faith. Therefore, even the Silver Blizzard City's Lord wouldn't appreciate it if they were to incite trouble in Tian Xiang under such circumstances.

The Emperor smiled magnanimously to indicate that no harm was done.

Jun Mo Xie was forced to sit down. However, Dugu Xiao Yi had taken the opportunity to gather a lot of food dishes. She opened her black and white eyes wide as she curiously asked, "Chicken landing on the Banana tree... and the name stands for?"

Jun Mo Xie nearly tumbled into the table when he heard her question. He picked his face up after some time, and wiped his nose, "Ask your brothers okay? They know it. I've just spoken so many words... I need to save my saliva."

Dugu Xiao Yi grunted and turned towards Dugu Ying. Dugu Ying's face flushed with embarrassment in a split second. How could an elder brother explain this matter to his younger sister? He fiercely looked at Jun Mo Xie as he refused to answer her question. Dugu Xiao Yi wasn't satisfied. So, she pouted her mouth and started to throw tantrums. The seven Dugu Brothers were left perplexed at the awkwardness of the situation.

The atmosphere in the Imperial Hall had become somewhat awkward. Therefore, the other teacher of the Institute — Kong Ling Yang — stood and spoke, "The young masters of the major families battled it out with the disciples of our Wenxing Heavenly literature Institute the last year. Our Wenxing Heavenly literature Institute won... but only by fluke. But Grand Preceptor Li's grandson, the Young Master Li, remained unbeaten and excessively impressive. There are many disciples today who wish to consult with Young Master Li... would he be interested?"

Everyone's spirits started to rise. This was the highlight of the

event.

The Wenxing Heavenly literature Institute's disciples had carried a strange gleam in their eyes since the moment they had entered the hall. They didn't care for the delicious food or the exquisite wine. They had merely been waiting for this moment. If they could somehow prove themselves better than Tian Xiang City's number-one scholar Li You Ran... their future would have boundless prospects.

Li You Ran smiled elegantly. He gently rose to his feet, looked around and said, "This humble You Ran isn't worthy of raising difficult questions for such talented scholars. However, there is one man who has won You Ran's admiration. Therefore, I would like to challenge that man..."

"Who is that talented young man, Young Master Li?" everyone asked in unison. [Is there someone in the Tian Xiang City who is capable of competing against Li You Ran? Someone even Li You Ran admires? But why haven't I heard about this man before?] The eyes of everyman present expressed the confusion of their minds.

"The Young Master of the Jun Family — Jun Mo Xie!" Li You Ran solemnly stated and pointed towards Jun Mo Xie in order to point-out his target clearly. Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but stare at Li You Ran as he continued to nibble on a mouthful of the greasy chicken-leg he held in his hand.

[Sh*t! You publicly trapped me?!]

[This could cause a wild uproar!]

Notes:

Feng means phoenix. Wu is the gene for parasol trees. Xiao means desolate (different from Xiao=little).

This is a tough joke to get. And very explicit. So, we'll stick to translation... the rest is to your imagination... The word for 'chicken' is also a slang for 'prostitut*te'. So ahm... imagine the

shape of the banana tree, and read the line again.

Chapter 289: I Only Feel Like Stepping on the Wenxing Heavenly Literature Institute

Meng Hai Zhou and the others took the opportunity that followed Li You Ran's challenge, and started to jeer at Jun Mo Xie. They never realized that Li You Ran had put forth his challenge with the utmost sincerity.

“Young Master You Ran is indeed very funny,” Kong Ling Yang didn't seem very pleased. “Perhaps the Young Master Jun... is an expert in some other aspects of life... However, his knowledge on literature isn't very eminently known...”

Some people couldn't help but laugh up their sleeves. Master Kong's tone had been very obscure. However, everyone had reached the conclusion that the Young Master Jun's areas of “expertise” were brothels, dog and cock fighting, and other contemptible activities. What would this youngster know about the more important aspects of life? Everyone had started to think very high of the old Masters of the Institute; [These old Masters are amazing. They can manage to insult people in such a refined manner!]

“Master Kong shouldn't have anything to worry about. He he... why don't we have one of your disciples contest against Jun Mo Xie. Then, we'll know if he's any match for Young Master Li... he he...” Meng Hai Zhou smiled and replied. His remark was aimed to incite Master Kong for a war.

Kong Ling Yang was annoyed at this. He thought, [I've nurtured these disciples with such meticulous care. I might as well tie a rope to the ceiling and commit suicide if my disciples are unable to beat this debauchee.] He didn't say anything in response. He merely waved his hand and appointed one of his disciples to take-up the challenge.

“Disciple Han Zhi Dong requests Young Master Jun for some

advice,” A young man stood up with a smile. He then cupped his hands in greeting and looked up. A trace of disdain flashed in his eyes; seemingly for his opponent.

“En... I don’t give advice but I do have the time to teach you a trick or two. You’ll be able to move about the Spirit Fog Lake unbridled after I’m done with you. What could be better than a demonstration of the profound mysteries of that universe? I’ll take the lead if you don’t mind.”

Jun Mo Xie had seen the expression in that youngster’s eyes. So, he was aware of the contempt that youngster held for Jun Mo Xie. Therefore, the Young Master Jun had winked as he stood-up, and laughed along with the crowd as he voluntarily put on his ‘hat of shame’.

“This young disciple had shunned evil influences in his life. This young disciple shall never go near the Spirit Fog Lake’s territory.” Han Zhi Dong’s voice was somewhat cold. He disdainfully thought, [he’s the biggest degenerate. I’ve asked him for scholarly advice, and he starts by mentioning a brothel! Are you aware that this is public event? This is very humiliating!]

“You’ve never been to the Spirit Fog Lake? Then where do you go?” Jun Mo Xie’s heart was brimming with disdain; [I’m not done with you yet.] He then crossed his legs, and continued in a leisurely tone, “Ah, that’s right. This Young Master had neglected that Scholar Han isn’t very wealthy and may not have been able to afford the prices of the services rendered in that area. It seems that he holds his pike in his own hands inside his tent as he imagines the battle formations. He must require to struggle up and down the battlefield. He must manage to relinquish millions of soldiers until he’s too exhausted to continue...”

[What the hell is this!] Han Zhi Dong’s fair facial color turned as red as a dead chicken’s blood. In fact, his neck turned red as well.

Jun Mo Xie’s choice of words had been very elegant, yet very

energetic. Suddenly, everyone present in the hall seemed to be a bit distracted. They carefully pondered on his words in the hope to interpret their true meaning. However, most people spat-out the food they were chewing and burst into laughter once they understood the meaning of his words... [This kid... is too much!]

Every man present in the main hall had understood Jun Mo Xie's remark in a matter of a few moments. However, the indecency of their laughter couldn't be conveyed in words...

Princess Ling Meng, Dugu Xiao Yi, Han Yan Meng and the other ladies of note looked-on with an amazed expression in their eyes. They couldn't understand the crowd's reaction. They could distinctly sense that this matter wasn't good. However, they couldn't figure what was wrong with it. [Jun Mo Xie's words seemed to have described a majestic general... but why does it feel weird?]

Several old men were making gestures at each other with their eyes. However, there were only a few men who were able to laugh-out unrestrained without bothering about the consequences. Some even patted their hand on the table, while some others patted their thighs in applause as their eyes closed-shut from the intensity of their laughter. Dugu Zong Heng's body trembled with laughter as he slapped Tang Wan Li on his shoulders. He then whispered, "Old Tang, I just remembered the time when the two of us had just joined the army. We were sent-off to the battle at the Heavenly Wolf Mountains... Old Jun was a young captain back then... We had caught sight of you when you had left the camp to fight your glorious battles at dawn..."

Tang Wan Li suddenly turned red with rage. He forgot about Dugu Zong Heng's fearsome reputation as he extended and grabbed his sturdy neck. He then roared in a whisper, "You old bastard! Go on, I dare you to say another word..."

Dugu Zong Heng started to cough. He seemed to be laughing as he begged for forgiveness. A few other Family-heads raised their

thumbs in quick succession as they gestured to Tang Wan Li. It seemed as if many people had heard that remark...

Old Man Tang's face flushed red with rage. He stood-up panting and tried to exit the hall. However, several other old men got up from their seats in unison, and persuaded him to calm down.

Dugu Xiao Yi saw that her seven brothers were laughing with their lips sealed. Their overjoyed faces revealed the merry of their hearts as their shoulders trembled with laughter. She figured that it must've been something awfully funny. So, she couldn't help but ask, "What did that mean? Is it that funny?"

[Uh...] The seven brothers looked at each other in dismay. They realized the awkwardness of the situation and quickly readjusted themselves. They shook their heads in unison as they replied, "It's not funny; how's it funny? It's not funny!"

Dugu Xiao Yi groaned. She turned her head away in anger. She suddenly felt annoyed at the sight of her brothers and Jun Mo Xie since they hadn't answered any of her questions today.

She secretly recalled Jun Mo Xie's words, and repeated them again to memorize them by heart. [You think I won't find out if you don't tell me...? I'll ask mother once I get home... I don't think she'll deny me...]

Han Zhi Dong took a deep breath. He was aware that this debauchee had gained the upper-hand as he said, "This Golden Scholarly Talent Feast is being conducted by His Majesty's grace. However, this young disciple is ashamed to be in company of his opponent. To pair this young disciple with Young Master Jun for a scholarly advice is the same as the accidental pair of Golden chrysanthemums and orange osmanthus!"

He didn't wait for Jun Mo Xie's reaction, and continued, "Chrysanthemums' fragrance, Orchid's fragrance, osmanthus' fragrance from the Imperial gardens... the fragrance of these fragrant flowers float in the Tian Xiang... Their heavenly fragrance

floats for a thousand miles... and a thousand miles their heavenly fragrance floats... ”[1]

This poetic verse caught everyone’s attention.

This poetry had sounded simple, but it wasn’t. Especially that last part. He had repeatedly used the words “Heavenly Fragrance” as a metaphor to bless “Tian Xiang”. Everyone started to rack their brains in search of a comeback in order to display their talent in front of His Majesty.

Everyone had nearly forgotten of Jun Mo Xie’s involvement. [How could he possibly make a joke out of such a poetic verse? He wouldn’t be able to conjure a comeback even if he was given two lives to try...]

“Young Master Jun, this young disciple’s talent is humble, and knowledge is shallow. This young disciple can only come up with such shallow words. This shouldn’t be much of a problem in your eyes?” Han Zhi Dong chuckled. He then humbly looked at Jun Mo Xie with a sincere expression on his face, “I hope that Young Master Jun will still teach me a thing or two!”

Everyone would have waited for Jun Mo Xie to come-up with an answer in case this last sentence hadn’t been spoken. They would’ve looked down on him but wouldn’t have blamed him for falling short since this poetry was indeed excellent and difficult to counter. After all, no one had considered him to be any match to this young scholar. Moreover, the young scholar would’ve left a special effect in the hearts of everyone present since his talent was original as well as amazing. However, this last sentence had left everyone sighing.

His unreasonable last line had exposed the savagery of his nature, and had lowered his prestige. [You’ve been studying at the Wenxing Heavenly Literature Institute for many years. So what’s there to be so proud of about being able to speak a few lines of poetry?]

[This so-called young scholar's future achievements are bound to fall short.]

The big shots may allow scholars to climb-up the ranks of their families. However, they would never promote such a person to the top. [What's the guarantee that he won't get rid of us once he gains enough power in the family?] Han Zhi Dong was unaware that he had declared the doom of his future political-career with that last line he had spoken. Therefore, he stood there with a sense of complacency in his heart.

Jun Mo Xie puckered his brows. Any verses he'd come up with in reply would merely be plagiarized. However, even plagiarizing poetry of such level was beyond his ability. [Ah... should I come up with nonsense poetry from my previous life? No... that won't do! This motherfuc*er!]

Master Kong Ling Yang narrowed his eyes. He seemed pleased with himself, "It is okay if Young Master Jun can't come up with a poetic verse to match this... the Young Master Jun wouldn't lose face because of this matter..."

Everyone chuckled. [This old man doesn't forgive easily. He's just using his usual method... he abuses a person without using abusive words...]

A burst of vigor rushed inside Jun Mo Xie's heart. He shouted in a harsh and loud voice, "What's so difficult about this? Wasn't that a shi*ty poem? I will better him and walk all-over this Wenxing Heavenly Literature Institute's chump!"

Several people issued sounds of displeasure. [This kid dares too much when he speaks. He's challenged to come up with a rival verse... he's lost his mind. He should think before he talks. Looks like he's going to get a tough lesson from that young disciple...]

However, Li You Ran and Jun Zhan Tian's expressions were very different from the rest of the crowd. Li You Ran was convinced he had the talent to come-up with a worthy reply. However, he

himself had tried, but hadn't been able to so far. However, Jun Mo Xie had declared that he would reply with a fitting verse... [Is he better than me?]

Grandpa Jun was somewhat anxious. [Didn't we agree that he wouldn't make a complete fool of himself? How's he going to beat that?]

Kong Ling Yang sneered and he spoke, "Young Master Jun seems very confident of himself. I propose an arrangement. The institute shall concede defeat if the Young Master Jun is able to come-up with a reply before the incense stick burns out. However, if he shall lose... Young Master Tang will have to act in order to mediate his losses. Thereafter, he would willingly return my poor disciple back...?"

He was obviously referring to the disciple Tang Yuan would bully into cleaning women's underwear — Scholar Zhao Cheng Song. However, Fatty Tang was worried about leaving such a presence un-monitored in his house. Therefore, Tang Yuan had bludgeoned him to death after he was expelled from his household. So where would he return that scholar from? His stinking bones probably wouldn't accept his soul even if it was somehow recovered from the depths of hell.

"That's done!" Jun Mo Xie stretched his neck. [I don't have any problems in agreeing to that. We'll return his skeleton if I lose. You never said whether you want him back dead or alive...? So why should I even bother...]

"However, you will submit to my superiority if I win. Your Institute will never mention the words 'poetry' is front of me after that. Agreed?" Jun Mo Xie smiled.

Notes:

Native word play. Tian means heavenly. Xiang means fragrance. Tian Xiang means heavenly fragrance. He repeatedly uses the word 'Xiang' in the poetic passage.

Chapter 290: This is the Next One

“It’s a deal!” Kong Ling Yang didn’t think very highly of Jun Mo Xie. [He doesn’t have the skill to come up with a counter-verse for Han Zhi Dong’s verse. And even if he managed to come-up with something... how could this debauchee’s shallow verse match up to the WenXing Heavenly Literature Institute’s standard? This is a joke!][1]

Jun Mo Xie patted his thigh, and crisp ‘pop’ sound echoed. He then raised a bottle of wine off the table, and put one of his feet on the chair. He raised his head upwards, drank a mouthful of wine and thought for a while. Then, he looked upwards once more, drank a mouthful of wine, and continued to ponder.

Everyone’s gaze was fixed on Jun Mo Xie. Even the Emperor was no exception. There was look of interest and a faint trace of coldness in the Emperor’s eyes. He would have to re-assess the Jun Family if Jun Mo Xie was able to come up with an appropriate counter-verse...

Dugu Xiao Yi and Princess Ling Meng gazed at him anxiously. [How’s he going to win? He will have to face a lot of embarrassment if his verse isn’t up to the mark...] However, they didn’t speak up since they didn’t wish to disturb his thoughts.

However, Dugu Ying became anxious as he saw Jun Mo Xie devour over half of the wine bottle, “Hey...! You aren’t using this opportunity to drink extra wine, right?”

Dugu Xiao Yi ferociously shot a glance towards her elder brother, “No one else seems worried about that; so why are you?” Dugu Ying scratched his head in confusion. He remained seated as his helpless eyes remained affixed to the wine-bottle in Jun Mo Xie’s hand...

Suddenly!

Jun Mo Xie raised his right hand and snapped his fingers. ‘Click!’ A clear and crisp sound echoed as he said, “I’ve got it!”

Everyone anxiously listened as Jun Mo Xie complacently recited his counter-verse, “The streets smell sh*t. A man’s sh*t stinks. A dog’s sh*t stinks. A pig’s sh*t stinks. Sh*t stinks sh*it stinks, and shit*y sh*t stinks. To have one’s name go down in history — a scholar must sh*t the most stinky sh*t!”

It seemed as if everyone had been thunderstruck!

“That’s amazing! Really Amazing! To use ‘stink’ to counter ‘fragrance’, and ‘sh*t’ to counter ‘flowers’... Gluah, gluah...” Tang Yuan hurriedly spoke up in praise. However, he hadn’t even finished his sentence when his mouth started to nauseate with a ‘gluah’ sound. He then became speechless as his belly expressed a strong desire to vomit...

Such a pair of counter-verses... was too nauseating. This couplet could make anyone nauseate. Therefore, it wouldn’t be strange if people were to vomit... especially after eating a heavy meal...

Everyone had a weird look on their faces. They looked at Jun Mo Xie with grief and indignation. Suddenly, a ‘gluah’ sound was heard. Silver Blizzard City’s Little Princess Han Yan Meng clutched her mouth and ran out. Several young maidens followed after her with their mouths clutched...

Finally Dugu Xiao Yi followed after them with her mouth clutched. She shot Jun Mo Xie a quick hateful glance before she ran-off...

“Who can dare to say that I’m wrong? I’ve balanced the unbalanced!” Jun Mo Xie made a rousing call. He then grabbed a crab, efficiently fished out the meat, put it in his mouth, and started to chew.

Everyone watched as he started to chew that yellow-colored crab meat. Suddenly, everyone’s complexion turned pale as they

recalled the counter-verse he had just spoken...

Everyone was left dumbfounded. This antithetical couplet was indeed a fitting match. Moreover, the counter-verse had come as a ruthless abuse that had been aimed at these talented scholars. The phrase “A scholar must sh*t the most stinky sh*t” had left the two Old Masters trembling in anger. Kong Ling Yang and Mei Gao Jie made no comments as far as the metrical aspects of the counter-verse was concerned... however...

[You came-up with this counter-verse while everyone was eating their meal. Aren't you deliberately trying to make us look bad? Your verse may have been up to the mark, but you've surely killed everyone's appetite...]

“Time to reverse the wheel; now it's my turn to ask the question!” Jun Mo Xie complacently waved the half-the-crab that remained in his hand, “I recall that I was at my home about a fortnight ago... I was reading poetry... when suddenly... an old friend of my grandfather's showed up. He left a deep impression on me because of his strange name and surname; his Surname was ‘He’... and name was ‘Shang’... He gifted my grandfather a picture he had painted with his own hands. It was a Lotus's painting. He consulted my grandfather with a poetic verse before he left. My Grandfather has asked several people, but no one has been able to answer it...”

Dugu Xiao Yi and the other women returned to the hall. Their pale faces and hateful eyes were bitterly glaring at Jun Mo Xie. In fact, it seemed as if they were itching to bite him.

Someone asked out of curiosity before Jun Mo Xie got a chance to continue, “What was the specific verse Third Young Master Jun?”

“That verse was very simple. It only had 7 words in it — Picture a lotus above a monk's Picture.” Jun Mo Xie groaned twice as he tossed this phrase out. He had used his grandfather as a tool to conjure this shady trickery. He was aware that his grandfather

wouldn't betray him. There were too many people whom he'd never trust. However, his grandfather was amongst the people he considered the most worthy of his trust.[2]

Grandpa Jun would never wipe his buttocks with his own grandson's face. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie could tell such lies with a straight face in public view.

"Picture a lotus above a monk's Picture... Picture a lotus above a monk's Picture..." Everyone frowned as they repeated this verse. This verse seemed very simple, but it was quite complicated; it left everyone's pumping cold air...

It didn't matter which side one looked at the poetic verse from... one would only see the man's name and gift embedded into the poetry. Moreover, the end and the beginning of the verse were exactly the same. However, they were inverted with respect to each other.

Every expert poet in the room frowned. They had never imagined that this incompetent debauchee would be able to come up with such a difficult puzzle.

Every scholar from the WenXing Heavenly Literature Institute found themselves looped in a puzzle of unprecedented difficulty. They puckered their brows as they racked their brains to find a solution.

Jun Mo Xie had put-up this verse even though he didn't know the counter. The fact that he had put-up this puzzle could not be reversed. He would find himself in trouble if the opposition was unable to come-up with a fitting reply. This was because he would have to answer the riddle if they weren't able to. And every person from the institute was likely to gang-up on him if he wasn't able to answer his own riddle...

The solution to this puzzle would come like a miracle to them; and they needed this miracle to happen!

Wouldn't it be a matter of shame if the entire brain-power of the Institute was unable to solve an incompetent debauchee's puzzle...? Therefore, everyone racked their brains, and came up with multiple solutions after applying various kinds of creative concepts. However, none of the counter-verses seemed to be of sufficient quality.

These gifted scholars were required to come-up with a reply before an incense stick burns out. This made them worry more and more as time elapsed.

The two masters of the Institute were struggling as well!

Mei Gao Jie's eyebrows were puckered as he paced back and forth. He'd shake his head from time to time and then mutter, "No. That won't do." Then, he'd attempt to try a different angle.

Old Master Kong Ling Yang was motionless. His eyes were shut. His face was angled towards the heavens. He was immersed in a deep thought. However, if one looked from a distance... they'd see the dark of his gloomy facial wrinkles... his silver-grey and snow-like hair falling over his face. One couldn't help but feel a strange sadness as they'd look at his face.

This verse was meant as a puzzle for the disciples of the Institute. Therefore, the participation of the two old masters of the Institute would be considered illegal. However, this matter related to the reputation of this ancient Institute. Hence, the two old masters couldn't help themselves...

Jun Mo Xie didn't care much about it. He wouldn't have bothered if ten-twenty masters of the institute were to participate... let alone these two...

Time passed very gradually. The smoke from the incense stick continued to rise in spirals until its entire body turned to ashes.

Their miracle didn't happen!

"I have nothing! I concede my defeat!" Han Zhi Dong's head was

hung low in disappointment. He couldn't help but feel frustrated within his heart. How could a top-scholar from the WenXing Heavenly Literature Institute lose to this brat...?!

He wished he were dead...

“No! You lost, but you're not to be blamed for it. Well, the blame isn't limited to you!” Jun Mo Xie half-leaned into his chair as he extended his finger and gently rowed it. “You're not to blame for this bet against me! You can at-best be considered a chess piece in this game; and a very ordinary one at that. You're not qualified to make a bet with me! No matter which way you see it... you're not even qualified to make a bet against me! You're too beneath my own self for that.”

Then, Jun Mo Xie tilted his head and smiled as he looked at the Kong Ling Yang and Mei Gao Jie, “Masters? What do you have to say?”

“We've lost.” The faces of the two old men looked dazed. They had arrived here in high spirits as the two lead-representatives of the WenXing Heavenly Literature Institute — an institution that was publicly accepted to be the biggest and wisest talent hub of the Empire. However, they had unexpectedly suffered a crushing defeat at Jun Mo Xie's hands. The two old masters felt as their lives had been turned into a living-death.

Kong Ling Yang's lips trembled as he spoke in a soft voice, “This Old Man shall keep his promise. The WenXing Heavenly Literature Institute will never speak of poetry in front of Jun Mo Xie.”

There was absolute silence in the hall for a while.

Jun Mo Xie sighed. The characters of these two men had earned them a lot of respect in his heart. He hadn't wished for them to be subjected to such a plight. These two men had set-up the WenXing Heavenly Literature Institute on their own merit. They would hand-pick their disciples personally, and would nurture the Empire's talent pool with their inexhaustible efforts. They had

never disregarded the poor and lowly. Their only selection-criteria had been the disciple's intellect and learning ability. They had solemnly ignored the riches of life, and had stayed away from the political influence of Imperial Ministers. They were genuinely worthy of the Hitman's admiration in this regard.

These two men were certainly admirable. However, they had some short-comings. Their knowledge and teachings were surely worthy of respect, but their ideology and methods were mistaken. They would pay note to a disciple's intellect and learning ability, but they'd neglect his other character-traits.

A teacher mustn't limit to imparting knowledge alone.

Jun Mo Xie had always believed that — Teachers are the engineers of the human soul.

These masters were certainly the greatest of their generation. They had imparted a vast base of knowledge to their disciples. Their disciples were well-versed with poetry. They were well-versed with strategic ploys. They were well-trained to handle important political positions. They were certain to find success in their careers if they were able to put this training to use; and quickly at that. However, the two masters had neglected that their disciples would act selfishly if they weren't good men at heart. Their actions would only revolve around their person glory, wealth, and profits... as such, they'd make terrible servants to the people of the Empire.

It was needless to say that these two masters had nurtured thousands of the disciples under theirs' and the WenXing Heavenly Literature Institute's name.

Such individuals would be bound to act for their own selfish interests once they were to leave the Institute and embark on their bureaucratic journey... regardless of their inherent social wealth or status. Moreover, these disciples were educated at the WenXing Heavenly Literature Institute, and were likely to acquire top

positions in the powerful factions and families. In fact, even the worst of them were bound to make low level officials... such as clerks or book-keepers...

How much harm could they cause to the society if their characters weren't shaped with appropriate moral education? The damage they could cause was unimaginable.

This was the reason why Jun Mo Xie disapproved of them. In fact, he didn't merely disapprove of them... he despised them.

The two old masters were extremely enraged. However, Jun Mo Xie didn't believe that they had been wronged. Rather, he believed that they had been served well.

[I'm not a good person. Nor do I care about the sufferings of the people on this land. However, if you bully me like that — I shall not be reluctant to stand-in for the heaven's punishment!]

[These worldly matters, ah!] Jun Mo Xie sighed. Then, the Hitman Jun suddenly turned into a champion for a cause. He had started to think very nobly of himself — [I shall relieve people of their pains and sufferings no matter which world I live in. I shall emerge when people are in dire need...] Well, that situation hadn't arisen yet...

Notes:

The term we've used to describe Jun Mo Xie's poetry is 'Counter-Verse'. The most appropriate term would be 'Antithetical Couplet'. An Antithetical Couplet is a verse of poetry which counterpoints its counterpart verse. In China, such poetic verses are often drawn or written on paper/wood, and are used as decorations. The competitions described in these chapters were known to be a popular intellectual pastime in ancient China.

This verse is situationally untranslatable to some extent. The verse is 'Hua Shang He Hua He Shang Hua' in the native language. The man's name is 'He Shang'. 'He' means 'poetic rhyme'. 'Shang'

means 'above'. 'Hua' means 'drawing' or 'Painting/Picture'. 'He Shang' means 'monk'. 'He Hua' means 'Lotus'. It's basically the same thing in reserve. Hua Shang He... Hua... He Shang Hua... And he only uses the man's name [He Shang... means monk] and his drawing [Hua]... of a lotus [He Hua] to create a situationally complex rhyme [Rhyme is written as 'He' in the native language]...

Chapter 291: I Will Abuse You Till I Don't Die!

“Young Master Jun, our two Masters are very graceful. They’ve always considered victory and defeat to be like mist. Therefore, they aren’t bothered about such temporary gains or losses. I disdain the very thought of coming down to your level, however... I think it is impediment to ask Third Young Master — what is the appropriate counter-verse to your riddle? If an exceptionally good counter-verse exists... kindly tell us and broaden our minds,” a tall scholar from the Wenxing Heavenly Literature Institute spoke as he stood up. Apparently, he wasn’t convinced of their defeat.

“Or are you a bigger hypocrite than that Li You Ran?”

Jun Mo Xie looked at him with a stunned expression on his face, “I request that you please use your brain before you speak. Please don’t use your butt to deal with every problem! Would I deliberately make things difficult for everyone if I had an appropriate counter-verse? Were you kicked by a donkey in your childhood? How can the Wenxing Heavenly Literature Institute produce an idiot such as you?!”

“Oh I see... are you deaf apart from being stupid as well? I clearly stated that no one has been able to solve it before I set this problem before everyone! I merely borrowed it; from which ear did you hear that I created that verse myself? I think that you either have no brains... or that it suffers from a fungal infection! You want me to provide you with a counter-verse? You have some nerve to open your mouth! This institute demands payment when it wins, and starts a fight when it loses? Isn’t this unreasonable?”

No one spoke in rebuttal when Jun Mo Xie said these words. After all... he had clearly stated that the verse wasn’t his own... but someone else’s. It showed ‘how tough it was to bring the man to book’. The scholars were unable reply to the verse. Therefore, one

of them had asked this question in an attempt to bring back some measure of honor to their Institute. Nevertheless, it was a failed scheme. What's more... his attempt provoked a few scoffs from others.

That scholar turned red with anger.

The others had no idea what to do. Then, Li You Ran suddenly opened his eyes. [What's the matter with this man? He has somehow involved me in his problem... What do you mean by "A bigger hypocrite than Li You Ran?"]

[Damn it! What is this guy even saying? How was I being a hypocrite?]

"Is it possible that the Masters may have turned around to send an apprentice to raise a scene after they conceded their defeat? Is it possible that the Wenxing Heavenly Literature Institute is a sore loser?" Jun Mo Xie appeared very angry as he spoke, "Anyway, it doesn't make any difference to this Young Master if you can't accept a defeat. I may not be a good man, but I respect the wise and venerate the worthy."

[So you've known that you aren't a good person?] Everyone in the great hall rolled their eyes.

[Do you respect the wise and venerate the worthy in practice? It seems like you're trying to pull those two old men's image down to hell.]

"Yan Feng, stand down! A defeat is a defeat; it's pointless to argue. Why would you try for an incomplete victory? This is merely the first level; do you believe that our Wenxing Heavenly Literature Institute can't pull-back in the next opportunity?" Kong Ling Yang's lips trembled as he used those harsh words to scold and discredit his disciple.

[We don't aim for half gains...] The venerable Master Kong was unable to keep his thoughts to himself due to his anguished state of

mind. This was the way it was — there was always victory or defeat. However, he had seemingly lost the respect accorded to a Master. He had always attained comprehensive victories in the past. However, this feast had always been held on an island in the middle of the Moon Lake. And the Emperor would never be present for the occasion. However, the venue was the Imperial Palace this time around. Therefore, the Emperor was present... moreover... there was no shortage of the Empire's high-ranking officials. The importance of this feast was much larger than before. However, he had lost this time...

How could he not feel depressed...?

Fatty Tang had seemingly been the debauchee whom the entire Wenxing Heavenly Literature Institute had hated the most. However, the Fatty had suddenly gone down those rankings, and had been replaced by the Young Master Jun at the top. It seemed that the people at the Wenxing Heavenly Literature Institute would never forget their hatred for him... even after tens-of-thousands years. Their hatred for Jun Mo Xie had suddenly been embedded in their very bones.

“He he... respected Master Kong spoke the truth. A scholar only ponders on counter-verses during his leisure time. The true embodiment of an educated man's talent resides in his poems of accomplishments...” Li You Ran smiled without batting an eyelid, and continued, “Is it possible that the Institute won't be able to match up to the Young Master Jun in this regard as well...?”

This sentence was very vicious.

If the Wenxing Institute was to concede at this point of time... in front of every civil and military leader of the country... wouldn't it be akin to admitting that the entire Institute didn't possess the skill to match a great debauchee like Jun Mo Xie? How could the Wenxing Institute fall to such a level? How could they agree to leave the matter be?

They drew their daggers once again.

[I can see it now. This Li You Ran's intentions aren't good. This pretty boy doesn't mean well. He forced that Master's dagger in an effort to compel me to show my cards!]

Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes and leaned to one side. In fact, he nearly came intimately close to Dugu Xiao Yi's face. Then, he smiled and nodded as he brought out his pre-planned card, "The WenXing institute has brought several scholars, but we also have a large talent pool on our side. How could the Young Masters from each of the great families shy away at this juncture? This will be a charming tale since this Young Master and Young Master You Ran have joined hands to face the Wenxing Institute — regardless of who the final victor is. In However, Young Master Li You Ran has just spoken that he admires this Young Master for many things. He he... this means that this Young Master has surpassed him. In other words... I'm much better than Young Master Li... he he he... did everyone hear that? Therefore, there's no reason to challenge me if you're not even on the same level as Li You Ran. This Young Master is very busy; each moment of mine is measure in gold. Therefore, I shouldn't waste it!"

These words had made for a beautiful counterattack. Not only did he tie in every Young Master present to his warship in one move — he had made Li You Ran the primary scape goat. These words had played an offensive role and a defensive role. In fact, he had executed this move very cleanly.

Everyone exclaimed and changed their gaze. However, the object of their attention wasn't Jun Mo Xie — it was Dugu Xiao Yi. Jun Mo Xie had leaned towards her, nodded, smiled, and then spoken those words. These words had allowed him room to attack, and then retreat. Even a dumb person could see that he had been trapped in a tough spot. They could make-out that he had brought Dugu Xiao Yi's pretty face inside the frame as a distraction. [How could such a shameless bastard speak such a long phrase without

half-a-trace of obscenity in it?]

[This guy's words were unnatural for his nature. It sounded like a general endorsement of himself, but there was not a single word of profanity in it! That was bizarre. It seems like he had practiced this beforehand!]

Everyone watched as Jun Mo Xie fell back onto his chair and closed his eyes. It was evident that he wouldn't explain what he had done even if he were inquired. Everyone from the Wenxing Institute felt powerless. Therefore, they turned to Li You Ran since they didn't have a better option. "So, we turn to Young Master Li You Ran for advice in the second round."

Li You Ran stood up and nodded his head slightly, "I am extremely honored." He surprisingly didn't hold any resentment towards Jun Mo Xie for pushing him to the front in this manner.

The Young Master Jun had won that round in all honesty. It didn't matter whether the victory was glorious or not. A win was a win. He believed that he was the heaven's favored child. So, how could Li You Ran defeat him?

The Emperor's gaze invariably flitted across the hall from atop the Imperial throne, and settled on Li You Ran. However, he continued to observe Jun Mo Xie, who sat beside Dugu Xiao Yi, from the corner of his eyes. His inner thoughts were incomprehensible.

"We've heard the opposite side's verses. But everyone knows about Young Master Li's famous flute songs. So, how about we compare the melody of our instruments? I, Jin Yin Zhen, hope to ask Young Master Li for guidance on the notes," A scholar got up and walked towards the Emperor and the big shots. He then turned to face Li You Ran after he had adhered to the necessary ceremonies. He calmly moved his hands and lightly took out a white, jade-shafted, flute.

"Young Master Jin Ying's tunes can move the heaven and earth!

How can this You Ran ever hope to compare with you? We needn't compete this round; I admit defeat," Li You Ran smiled bitterly. However, Li You Ran's deliberate admission of defeat had a different purpose behind it. He didn't wish to exert himself unnecessarily. After all, he was in presence of the Emperor at the moment. Therefore, he wanted to form a favorable impression on him. He was looking to achieve the same with a timely effort.

However, Jin Ying Zhen was a formidable opponent. It would be extremely difficult to beat him in this particular field. Every man in his family was handed-down the traditional flute skills after they turned fifteen. Their music was well-known in the entire continent. So, how could Li You Ran possibly win this match? The Wenxing Institute had dispatched him with the hope that he'd win-back a round, and tie the two sides in a draw. This battle had started to turn rough.

"He he... Young Master Jun and I are ashamed. Our skills are inferior in this aspect, and we're willing to concede defeat." Li You Ran's expression didn't change as he continued, "The next round will be taken by Young Master Jun. Li You Ran wishes the Third Young Master the very best."

[I, Jun Mo Xie, says fuck off! This brat made no efforts. He straightaway conceded his defeat. This is too much... If I had gotten a tough opponent — I would've still roared-out a popular song from my throat! I'd prefer to die than to be intimidated to death!]

These feasts would usually start with mutual provocation by poetry. That was generally followed by the regales of the many accomplishments of great and learned men. After that, it would be time for strategies, tactics, welfare policies, foreign policies, etc. — till every art had been deemed as 'discussed' in its entirety.

Jun Mo Xie's words had prepped the two factions for a mutual confrontation by now. However, the gun powder like acrid smell of their rivalry was much more intense than of any confrontation he

had experienced in his previous life. Each person who had previously participated in these feasts was aware that the Young Master Jun and Tang Yuan were participating in such a fierce competition for the first time. Therefore, they lacked the obvious experience.

They had surely participated in fierce competitions in the past. But... their competitions usually centered-around topics such as... picking-up young girls. Those circumstances couldn't remotely be mentioned in the same breath as this one...

The Minister of Rights — Sun Cheng He — would now consult with others, and set a theme for poetry. The contestants would then compete fiercely, and then the winner would be adjudged based on their merits.

"The theme for this discussion is 'Knowledge'. I ask both the sides to choose their candidates," Sun Cheng He looked at Jun Mo Xie, shook his head, and sighed. He could already judge the winner and the loser.

[Jun Mo Xie isn't going to win; he's going to make a laughing-stock of himself.]

A scholar clad in blue stood up. It could be gathered from the introduction that he was called Qin Qiu Shi. It was obvious from his name itself that his parents had an obsession, and wanted him to obtain scholarly honors to sate it.

"I request Young Master Jun to grant me a consultation," Qin Qiu Shi cleared his throat and spoke. Half-the-incense-stick had burned down, and he had spent then entire time straining his thoughts.

The court eunuch assigned the task to write-down the poem prepared himself. He put his elbow on the desk, suspended his wrist in the air, and waited for Qin Qiu Shi to start. He was supposed to record everything.

"The brave man had scaled the sky-high icy-mountain,

He had dared to cross the sea of knowledge.

His heart was diligent — he needed no road,

The stars in the sky weren't far.

He had hoped for his country's blessing in that life,

His ardent blood had cast a rainbow bridge.

He seemed to be moving inch-by-inch,

Yet, he didn't give up — he brandished his writing brush."

Qin Qiu Shi was very talented. He had no option since the incense stick had burnt-down to half of its length. However, this verse was rather unexpected. His creative-concept wasn't first-class, but it was well-balanced; it could be considered 'good'. He had clearly explained the concept of 'learning'. Moreover, he had showcased the country's lofty ideals, and the grandeur of his personal aspirations.

The court eunuch finished recording the poem. He then respectfully gave it to the Emperor so that he could go over the verses. The Emperor turned to look at Qin Qiu Shi's face. He looked at him in a profound manner; but there wasn't a single change in his expression. Then, he waved his hand and handed the poem to the court officials so they could pass it around until everyone had looked at it. The court officials nodded after they had looked at it; they proclaimed it to be 'good'. The officials were very talent as individuals. However, they thought that if they were in the same place as this young man... under such enormous pressure... tasked to come up with a poem... with only half an incense stick left — they reckoned they might not have been able to produce such a result.

Jun Mo Xie applauded loudly, "I must concede defeat. You're too quick, too quick..."

"Many thanks for this praise, Young Master Jun. I have little knowledge and talent. So, you and the elders embarrass me by

over-praising me..." Qin Qiu Shi spoke humbly of his profound verses. He then continued. "Still, I must ask for the Young Master's guidance in this subject. This person wishes to hear your reply."

"My reply? This Young Master doesn't have so much talent. I can't be that quick; it's not in my nature to finish my artwork so fast," Jun Mo Xie hurriedly and modestly declined the invitation. However, he sounded very disorderly to everyone present.

Tang Yuan burst-out laughing. He was unable to control his laughter. He even clasped his belly after some time. His face twitched with spasm; it seemed as if he was on the verge of death. Tang Yuan had endured Jun Mo Xie's influence for a long time. He had clearly understood the concealed jab Jun Mo Xie had landed with regard to his 'lasting ability'. However, other people hadn't understood the Young Master Jun's words. Fatty, nevertheless, had understood their true meaning, and couldn't stop himself from bursting into laughter...

Everyone else looked at Tang Yuan with disdain since they hadn't understood the mystery of these words. [This Fatty is very insincere! You're here with Jun Mo Xie, but you start to laugh the moment you see his defeat... Such an individual is truly contemptable!]

"The Young Master Jun is very talented; so why did he concede defeat? This won't do; he must recite a poem so that everyone can evaluate it," Han Zhi Dong jumped-up and shamelessly egged Jun Mo Xie.

"Does the Young Master despise the thought of competing with us?" Mei Gao Jie's eyes turned to Jun Mo Xie as he continued in an awe inspiring manner, "This is a completely unacceptable way of treating scholars!"

"Young Master Jun belongs to a military family... So, it is unavoidable that he doesn't much literally talent," a gifted scholar chuckled. He was brimmed with a sense of contentment and

happiness at this achievement. He seemed very pleased to see Jun Mo Xie's state of humiliation, "So, how's it surprising that he has conceded defeat in this matter?"

These lines were intended as a corny joke which wasn't supposed to make anyone laugh. However, everyone laughed; and their laughter was full of malice.

[That's a fact; I do look down on you!]

Jun Mo Xie was unlikely to speak these words out loud. [But now you're asking for me to abuse you; and that too with persistence. It seems that you didn't get enough the last time. You'll feel sorry for yourself soon...]

Jun Mo Xie snorted coldly, "I won't be impolite since everyone is waiting so earnestly for my poems. However, I haven't come across much of poetry during my scholarly studies. Therefore, I shall casually compose a song for everyone's pleasure..."

"Casually compose a song? The Young Master Jun is exceptionally talented! His every movement is akin to a poem in itself. He's so admirable; he's very admirable!" It was once again Han Zhi Dong. He had come to hate Jun Mo Xie ever since he lost to his verse. But, how could he allow himself to be beaten by Jun Mo Xie? A loss at such an event would be akin to the destruction of his future prospects.

However, he had been presented with an opportunity to take revenge. How could let it slip by? He wasn't doing it for the sake of the WenXing Institute — rather... he was doing this for his personal revenge.

"WenXing Institute... gifted scholars..." Jun Mo Xie tilted his head and gave a meaningful smile. "Is this the proper way to behave? I would be better off riding my horse to the brothel, taking women, and then act in all sorts of tyrannical ways... without refraining from any crime of debauchery if this is the kind of up-and-coming young men the Institute has to offer to the

Empire? Why do you behave with such a political mindset... and act like a groom who wants to change his bride every night?"

He spoke those lines very lightly; in fact, it seemed as if he was casually dishing-out an abuse on the road. However, the intended listeners paid due interest to them. The Emperor's eyes shone and his expression became thoughtful.

The bigshots stared pensively as well.

Everyone suddenly recalled that the WenXing Institute's desire to emerge victorious had always been strong and unbridled in every competition in the past...

Suddenly, everyone's gaze turned towards Jun Mo Xie; [was this kid genuinely not interested in this contest? Or did he point this out intentionally?]

Everyone looked very disappointed. [The very thought of this... is too... wretched.]

Then, Jun Mo Xie frowned, got up, and slowly made way from his seat. His crooked neck was very stiff as he took eight steps. It seemed that was moving forward from the movement of his legs and lower waist. However, in reality... his entire body was moving backwards. It seemed as if an unseen hand was pushing him backwards. His chest shuddered... like he had gotten an electric shock. The Young Master Jun's movements were very strange and unnatural... yet... free and easy.

Anyone from his previous world would've recognized his actions in an instant. Those were the very moves of Michael Jackson — the legendary 'Moonwalk' and the 'Robot'! These two world-renowned moves from his previous world had now made an appearance in this one...

A learned man from his previous world would've started to scream by now: [That shock move was amazing! That neck angle is insane! That moonwalk is the best! Wow! It seems that you've been

possessed by Michael Jackson's soul!]

It was a pity that no one amongst this world's plebeians could appreciate the art of it. These people were completely blind to the Young Master Jun's charming and coquettish moves. [Ah...To have talent, yet no one's there to recognize it... But they'll judge the moment I start to abuse them? This world doesn't understand talent! So, I don't expect these people to understand this. I won't stop until I abuse to my heart's content! I won't back away from this today!]

Everyone inside the main hall stared at him like fools. They felt that they couldn't bear to watch it anymore. [Jun Zhan Tian's grandson is a buffoon; how can the Jun Family come up with such a piece of work?] Everyone was speechless...

They then saw him twist his waist... and come to what was a standard 'electronic' stance. His right hand then brushed-up and rested on top of his head, while his left hand made a quick gesture as he snapped his fingers. It then went down to his abdomen. He then started to move in a coquettish manner.

It had to be admitted that if Jun Mo Xie had showcased those moves in his previous life... they would've been considered as extremely hard dance-steps, and would've been labeled as masterpieces of dance. In fact, these couldn't have been done without a proper foundation and training. But how could Jun Mo Xie perform these moves? If it were someone else doing it — they too would've been considered a top dancer.

However, the people of this world could only associate those extremely difficult and artistic high-level movements with the actions a man makes in the bedroom; even the women felt the same way about his dance moves. They looked at the high-speed and provocative movement of his lower body parts... [this is... unbearable!]

"Aooo!..." Jun Mo Xie screamed; it seemed as if he was groaning.

The main hall had the Princess... along with several other notable young ladies and the Empress... seated inside it. They all cursed in rage; [this man is extremely vulgar! He has no shame! He acts in this manner in front of so many people!]

Dugu Xiao Yi's eyes had started to shoot flames, while Princess Ling Meng's beautiful face had become deathly pale. Their desires had been plunged into the ground; that lecherous beast had broken them into pieces! [This is extremely disgraceful! This is too vulgar!]

"Listen to me... 'cause I speak with passion;

Ugly ones won't do;

Don't tell me you love me,

I'm too bad;

Don't be infatuated with this elder brother,

This elder brother is a legend;

Don't provoke me,

I'll make you spit blood."

Jun Mo Xie sung the verses under the public's gaze. However, the tone of his voice was intolerable to everyone's ears as he continued;

"Don't be smug with me,

Elder brother is your daddy;

Don't mess with me,

I'll cut your tiny thing;

Elder brother's heart is a desolate place,

I'll kill you and burn everything;

You dare to embarrass me?

Fu*k that!"

As Jun Mo Xie finished — his fingers pointed towards the gifted

scholars of the WenXing Institute to indicate whom he was referring to. His expression was one of rage and murder; [I haven't abused you yet, you old fart! You think you can embarrass me? Bullsh*t! Don't you know who I am, you old man?]

There was an uproar in the audience.

Who were his audience? They were sly public officials who had been speaking their view-points for most of their lives. They'd endure every insult and consider their words in order to relinquish their speech of vulgarity. However, Jun Mo Xie had directly pointed at his opponents and abused them.

Each verse was that of a hoodlum — each line was that of a rascal. Then, he had pointed his finger towards the WenXing Institute's scholars at the end, and had hurled abuses at them. Moreover, he threatened and insulted someone of the elder generation.

"You, you, you, you... you... you..." Mei Gao Jie and Kong Ling Yang were revered scholars. How could they have ever been humiliated like this before? And not only had that debauchee insulted them before the high-level officials — he had done so in front of the Emperor! They were extremely enraged. Their bodies had started to tremble frantically; even their beards. Their fair faces had turned somewhat blue, and their eyes had rolled backwards... it seemed as if they were about to faint from excessive anger...

"You darned evil creature!" Jun Zhan Tian jumped up. His beard scattered as he descended angrily. He didn't restrain his strength as he gave his grandson's butt a strong kick. Jun Mo Xie seemingly flew into the clouds at that exact, and was about to hit against the main hall's pillar. His brain would've burst-out from his skull if he had hit the pillar.

However, a man had arrived to save him.

But who?

Standing opposite Grandpa Jun... was Dugu Zhong Heng.

The two men had worked together for many years. So, how wouldn't one know the other's mood? He had stationed himself at the appropriate spot, and caught Jun Mo Xie. His eyes widened into a glare as he shouted, "Jun Zhan Tian! Are you that big an idiot? Do you wish to kill the sole remaining youngster of your family?!"

This old man was something different... He had flatly asked if Jun Zhan Tian would kill the only youngster of his family, and seemed determined to stop him... if needed.

"None of you try to stop me! I must kill this little animal! We've lost our honor! He has tarnished the name of the Jun Family! He'll never turn a new page if I don't teach him a lesson!" Jun Zhan Tian had gone mad with rage. His eyes had gone red, and his red eyeballs were about to pop out. It seemed that he was going to flay his grandson to the bone.

However, those words made the other civil and military officials despise the family; [what honor has he tarnished? Jun Zhan Tian, do you even know what honor is? Haven't you gotten used to your grandson's behavior by now? How many times has he tarnished the family-name today? But you only speak of killing him now? Suddenly, you've changed your attitude, and you wish to teach him a lesson? That's very admirable!]

However, they restrained those curses within their hearts and followed after Grandpa Dugu. Everyone rushed towards Jun Zhan Tian to hold his arms and legs in order to restrain him. How else would they deal with this situation?

Tang Yuan cried out in alarm. His voice echoed, "He's dead... he's dead; someone save him! Third Young Master, my good brother... please don't die... waaaah!" Tang Yuan's tears and nasal mucus rushed towards Jun Mo Xie like a rising tide from the sea.

It suddenly got so noisy that the Emperor furiously hit the side of

his Imperial Throne and angrily shouted at everyone, "Be quiet! Be quiet! What a disgrace!"

The power that came from the throne was such that everyone immediately stopped in their tracks, and looked at each other. Their voices started to wheeze as they panted. They felt as if their strengths had been exhausted. However, there were some people who hadn't expended any efforts in this ruckus...

"Your Majesty, please do us Justice. Please punish this shameless and frenzied young brat!" Mei Gao Jie wept bitter tears as he knelt on the floor. Many young students had failed and succeeded over the years. However, had anyone ever humiliated him by the means of such a blatant insult? This instance had been extremely humiliating for him.

Jun Mo Xie lay unconscious on the ground. The corners of his mouth were pulled downwards. He wasn't budging.

"I'm very disappointed with today's matter! Very disappointed!" The Emperor furiously flicked back his sleeve, "How can the great families bicker day and night? How can the WenXing Institute act so petty and narrow-minded instead of contributing towards the good of the common people? This matter ends right now! All of you go back home — and introspect!"

Everyone was dazed by what they heard. The Emperor had spoken those words in a very serious tone.

Just then — they all heard the sound of urgent footsteps. Suddenly, an alarmed voice rang-out, "Emergency conflict report!"

The military officials were stumped as they coldly looked-up. A battle was something these blood-thirsty old men had longed for — but hadn't been able to derive the pleasure of in a long time.

An Imperial Guard hurried-in, kneeled, and presented a scroll to the Emperor.

"A wave of Tian Fa Xuan Beasts is attacking our southern

provinces? How is this possible?" the Emperor couldn't help but frown. He doubted what he read aloud. His frown was very profound. "The entire humanity is in danger. Master Shi Chang Xiao and the Xue Hun Manner have issued a joint summon to everyone? Are things really that serious?"

Chapter 292: Attacked by an Assassin!

Inside the secrecy of a secluded room...

An adorned chessboard was laid out...

The black and white cavalry soldiers were engaged in a battle. And the battle had turned very bitter.

“Brother Wen, how do you feel about today’s events?” His Majesty gently put down his piece on the board. His actions issued a loud ‘pop’ sound.

Wen Cang Yu was seated opposite to him. He was dressed in ink-black attire. This was the first that the Emperor had seen his best friend adorn such a dark choice of clothing inside the Imperial Palace.

“It is difficult to determine. There was no Qi fluctuation on his body; that I’m certain of,” Wen Cang Yu’s facial expression remained stagnant. However, his eyes flickered as he saw his white pawn falling to the board.

“Brother Wen, did you believe that you could kill my imperial queen with this pawn? It’s not that easy, ah.” His Majesty explained the move, and continued, “But I’ve always felt that the Jun Family’s little brat isn’t a very suitable character. What do you think?”

“He’s far more than a suitable character. So, there ought to be something fishy,” Mr. Wen closed his eyes and considered for a while. He then continued, “This Jun Mo Xie kid is very odd. He was acting evilly, and without a care in the world. He seemed like a debauchee who was enjoying messing with everyone. But he didn’t seem to be pretending as far as this Old Man is concerned.”

“Elder Brother Wen means... ” His Majesty lowered his head slightly. He raised his finger to his temple and started to massage it.

“Perhaps he was afraid to reveal himself to everyone!” Mr. Wen spoke in a thoughtful tone. It was evident that he had studied Jun Mo Xie’s movements very clearly, and had given them prior in-depth consideration. He was merely using this opportunity to speak his mind, “He didn’t wish to bring himself out in front of everyone; including His Majesty.”

“Oh, that’s what you meant!” His Majesty picked up the fallen chess piece from the board, but stopped his hand mid-air, “How would you know that?”

“There are no reasonable words to justify. But I believe that Jun Mo Xie used his renowned behavior to display his arrogance to everyone; however, he also told His Majesty one important thing,” Wen Cang Yu smiled and chuckled.

“He doesn’t intend to dispute the power structure of the world!” His Majesty gave the reply on his own, “His actions were telling me this very clearly so I can feel at ease; so I never have to fear him. And, he used his abusive attitude to inform me of the failures of the WenXing Heavenly Literature Institute’s education system. He tried to tell me the unreasonable faults of their so-called gifted scholars! He wanted me to see the unseen threats posed by the corrupt officials and bureaucrats. His concealed love for the Empire’s welfare leaves me in a debt.”

“Yes. That’s right. That’s the kind of person he is. It’s not necessary to be on guard against him. The WenXing education system has excelled for many years, and their contribution to Empire can’t be denied. However, they’ve focused too much attention on nurturing talent over the last few years, but have forgotten to mold their talents with the proper moral education. The WenXing scholars are shiny at the top, but shaky at the base. They’ve cultivated talented individuals, but they’re nothing more than mere talent. They made a good temporary choice. But when it comes to the welfare of the people, and finding appropriate leaders to solve the public’s problems — their scholars are far from the

right choice!

“So, the concealed problem of the WenXing-structure is merely a small problem for now.

“There are some extraordinary talents within Tian Xiang’s group of young heirs to the powerful families. But the main center of attention isn’t very big. There are only two people talented enough for us to concern ourselves with...” Wen Cang Yu smiled, “One is Li You Ran, and the other is Jun Mo Xie!”

“Li You Ran?” His Majesty the Emperor smiled, “Li You Ran is very ambitious, but his schemes aren’t. He never reveals his feelings, and conducts himself in a very smooth manner; he’s airtight. I’ve often heard people say that he’s very talented, and that his strategies can win a war from over a hundred miles. He may be very talented, but mere innate talent isn’t worthy of taking note.”

“Why is that?” Mr. Wen was puzzled by this turn in the conversation. He couldn’t understand why a talented genius wouldn’t be worthy of consideration.

“Perhaps Li You Ran hasn’t perceived it himself, but he had every means, every research, and every skill... but he lacks basic attribute. He has everything it takes to make a great official someday, and would probably be very prominent in his career. However, his traits are more in-line with that of an official; not a ruler!”

The Emperor smiled, “Therefore, Li You Ran can at-best become a top official, but his ambition will obstruct his growth at that point. He would be considered worthy of my worries if he were able to take one step further, but he doesn’t have what it takes to be a Monarch! ...His ambition is not worthy of my praise. I’m confident that his ambitions will fade-out over time. So why should we worry?”

“Would a Monarch plot from behind the scenes? Li You Ran is

too accustomed to acting from behind the scenes. He won't act even if he comes out on the front-lines. His habit prevents him from being accustomed to the role of an Emperor! However, an Emperor needs to be a figure-head. He is required to face the public out in the open. Therefore, Li You Ran is temporarily a target for monitoring, but only temporarily. We merely need to pay attention to his movements to see if we can use him; but nothing more than that. However, there's no need to eliminate him from the picture since he can cause some waves, but he can't start a tsunami."

His Majesty the Emperor had ruled-out the Tian Xiang City's number-one genius from his list of notable individuals.

"Your Majesty's thought process is indeed admirable," Wen Cang Yu carefully considered the angle, and approved of it. He had to admit that the royal prerogative of his friend was indeed much superior to his own abilities. There was a world of difference between the thought process of a Monarch and that of a martial scholar. It was similar to the proverbial distance between the heaven and the earth. The two ideologies followed very different paths.

"That Jun Mo Xie is far more dangerous than Li You Ran. The contrast in the threats they pose is so massive that it can't even be mentioned in the same breath. Li You Ran's progress will be limited to some point. But Jun Mo Xie is a hidden dragon. He is bound to fly high once he grows-up and spreads his wings. He had made it clear that he has no thirst for power, but he will become someone noteworthy no matter how his life develops. Li You Ran can turn the clouds and make it rain with one gesture, but he is controllable. However, Jun Mo Xie will become an unstoppable master of the sword once he matures. And, no one will be able to stop him!"

His Majesty sighed deeply, "There are several people in the mainland countries at the moment. However, this land has never

seen peerless talents like Jun Mo Xie and Li You Ran. I wish I had fifty years to sit and watch these two youngsters. Their achievements could become the pillars of this Empire once they come of age! They could write history! Moreover, their natures are very complimentary. That would allow them to maintain balance of power. Therefore, they are suited to become excellent partners! However, I don't know what these kids are for my Tian Xiang Nation's future — a blessing... or a curse...?"

"His Majesty is in the prime of his youth. He is young and energetic; where do such thoughts even stem from?" Wen Cang Yu spoke in a comforting tone.

"I'm clear about the reality of my physical well-being. Perhaps my body will persist for 10-20 years; but it won't hold for much longer than that. The effect of the pain from those wounds will start to show their effect in time. Even the Malicious King of Medicines had made that clear; I will not live for long. There's no need for you to comfort me.

"I only have one concern; and it is the cause of my deepest worries. I've met two individuals that the world has never seen. I can keep them in check as long as I shall live. But once I die... my three sons don't have the skill to control them. They don't have the skill to suppress even one of these two kids once they've spread their wings..." His Majesty sighed with a sense of disappointment and frustration.

"The four seas are calm. The borders are peaceful. Every Family is loyal to the throne. I believe that such an instance will not happen in the near future." Wen Cang Yu continued, "His Majesty can rest assured."

"This lack of disturbance in the situation is the main reason behind my indecisiveness. Perhaps Brother Wen doesn't see it yet... but Jun Mo Xie and Li You Ran have already replaced the balance of the older generation. These two are the key figures in the balance of the present civil and military situation. If one causes

trouble... this balance will break in an instant, and this prevalent domestic calm will be torn apart. These two have chosen to preserve this balance for now. However, there is no assurance that they will in the future as well. The harm they can cause isn't minor. There are bound to be turns and twists at every point in the future."

"His Majesty's idea... is to... eliminate them...?" Wen Cang Yu pondered on His Majesty's words for a while. He then lowered his head, and asked in a soft voice.

"The Jun Family has suffered a lot of late. So, how could I eliminate their only surviving heir?"

His Majesty smiled bitterly. However, Mr. Wen wasn't convinced by his words.

"Let's just say that this isn't the appropriate timing. Think about it Brother Wen... There would be a widespread unrest in the Empire if Jun Mo Xie were to die. Would the Empire be able to sustain such a major storm? If he is to die — he must die from a real accident. Otherwise, this isn't the appropriate time to eliminate him. The entire Jun Faction will counter-attack. It would become a situation of life and death. We can't make a move until the Jun Faction has been disintegrated."

He sighed, "Moreover, let's not forget that Jun Mo Xie is backed by another family apart from the Juns. Their strength may not be as formidable as the Xue Hun Manor or the Silver Blizzard City, but their retaliation at the time of Jun Wu Hui's death shook the entire continent!"

He sighed with boundless regret. It seemed that the regret in this sigh had originated from the deepest abyss of his soul.

Wen Cang Yu could tell this very clearly from the sigh he just heard. However, he couldn't tell why the Emperor had chosen to show the emotions of his heart in regard with this matter. He couldn't understand why the Emperor regretted and repented this

incident...

“The Dong Fang Family! The world’s most powerful family of assassins!” Wen Cang Yu opened his eyes wide as he exclaimed, “Didn’t they disappear eight years ago? Is Jun Mo Xie backed by the Dong Fang Family?”

“You’ve guessed it right!” His Majesty the Emperor painfully closed his eyes and tilted his head upwards, “After Jun Wu Hui and Jun Wu Meng were mysteriously killed in battle... The Dong Fang Family’s top assassins suddenly and frantically charged out to take revenge. They came out to confront the Tian Xiang Empire; they came out to confront the Silver Blizzard City. They came out to confront the entire continent. And, they soaked the entire continent in blood to avenge Jun Wu Hui’s death! Nearly every foreign personnel of the Silver Blizzard City was assassinated in the year that followed. Several generals who had opposed Jun Wu Hui on the battlefield were assassinated as well! And that’s how I received this injury... the Dong Fang Family sent seventeen of their best assassins to kill me, and they inflicted me with this mortal wound. I still haven’t been able to recover from it. My body can never recover from the damage caused by that injury!”

“Silver Blizzard City’s Xiao Family wasn’t the only one who sent out their elites to match them — the Xue Hun Manor came out to confront the Dong Fang Family as well. These elite warriors battled in secrecy. This battle lasted for one year’s time. Eventually the Dong Fang Family was suppressed. The Xiao Family’s Xing Yun and Bu Yu lead the final battle against the Dong Fang Family. Li Jue Tian and Fan Feng Xue had signed a pact, and they testified that they had eliminated half of the Dong Fang Family’s strength at the time. However, the Dong Fang Family wasn’t eliminated. They gathered their younger generation and went deep into the secrecy of the mountains to hide. They made an oath at the time of their retreat — the Dong Fang Family will never show-up on the mainland again... not unless the snow-capped sword peak collapses

under a landslide, and the Tian Fa forest's Xuan Beasts meet their end!"

"Not unless the snow-capped sword peak collapses under a landslide, and the Tian Fa forest's Xuan Beasts meet their end!" Wen Cang Yu knew about this oath. However, he couldn't help but tremble when he heard it again.

"The sword peak resides at the summit of the snow-capped mountains, and has remained there for the last ten thousand years. How could it collapse under a landslide? The Xuan Beasts live in the sanctity of the paradise of their inside the Tian Fa forest; how could they meet their end? Doesn't that mean that the Dong Fang Family will never come-out in the open again ah...?"

"That isn't necessary. The Dong Fang Family will dispatch its troops in case someone stirs up their base. And their base lies with the people they care about. Jun Mo You and Jun Mo Chou died in battle five years after they made their oath. The Dong Fang Family dispatched their troops once again. They claimed that they needed to extract revenge. The Tian Xiang generals commanding that war didn't survive that assassination spree. The heads of those generals were thrown into the Imperial Palace at night. There was a note attached to their heads. The note read: If Jun Mo Xie were to meet with a mishap — the Tian Xiang Imperial Palace would be the next target! No one apart from me knows about this secret. Not even Jun Zhan Tian!"

"And Brother Wen... it's been three years since... and we still can't stop those assassins from entering the Imperial Palace." The Emperor's voice reeked of anger. There was strong trace of weakness and humiliation in it as well, "Jun Mo Xie is the last surviving son of their daughter; the last grandson of their female bloodline! A gamble with his life could result in the death of the entire Royal Family!"

"Jun Zhan Tian had insisted against rebelling with their support. In fact, he had broken all ties with the Dong Fang Family!" His

Majesty smashed that white chess piece onto the board with a ‘pop’ sound, and a few pieces on the board scattered. His fingers trembled as he hung his head, “Elder Brother Jun has showed undying love for me... I ... I can’t do this to my brother!”

Then, he suddenly looked up and spoke, “This, I have to admit! I may... I’m always the Emperor! I’m always the Monarch of my nation. I will never be a father to my Tian Family! The Emperor shall be ruthless... I must always think in favor of the Imperial Power. I must always consider the future of this country. I cannot allow any possible threat to my Imperial Power... to exist! And I cannot think of my Brother’s feeling when... so much is at stake...”

“Perhaps... this is the reason why the Emperor’s post is the most desolate! He must be cut-off from the rest... he must be cut-off from the rest... ah...” Wen Cang Yu was silent for a long time before he heaved a deep sigh.

“Therefore, we can’t make any moves on the survivors of the Jun Family. No matter what side they take... we can’t make a move on them. Even if there is a reason to eliminate them... we can’t make a move on them! If they die — they must die in a real accident! And no matter what happens... the Royal Family’s members mustn’t be involved in this accident in any capacity. Otherwise... if we were caught... and the Dong Fang Family were to lose their mind again... Brother Wen... the situation isn’t the same as if was ten years ago. We’re on our own since Yun Bie Chen left! If the Dong Fang Family comes back... my Tian Xiang would be... in mortal danger!”

“A real accident... killing a man like Jun Mo Xie in a real accident...” Mr. Wen sighed, “... will be very hard...”

“It’s not that hard!” His Majesty smiled deeply. There was a complex expression in his eyes, “This accident would need a fortunate timing. And fortunately, the timing for this accident has presented itself!” He then slowly pulled out a scroll from the sleeves of his robe, and then rolled it out on the chess board.

“The Xuan Beast wave? His Majesty intends to...” Wen Cang Yu’s eyes lit-up as he heaved a sigh of relief.

“This incident has happened in the southern parts of Tian Xiang. No other country is involved in it. However, if the Xue Hun Manor’s forces were to fall... the first to suffer would be my Tian Xiang!”

His Majesty frowned his brows, leaned his body backwards, and turned his hands, “So, we need to mobilize our troops. And the might of this army mustn’t fall short. Therefore, every major family from the Capital will be asked to volunteer their people. We will create an army of elites, and then assign them an army of tens of thousands.”

“The people to volunteer for this army will hail from the MuRong Family, the Tang Family, the Li Family, the Song Family, the Jun Family... haha. The entire Capital will be emptied once these people march for the south, and I shall make use of these days and prepare my three sons.”

“And then we shall wait until they return. I believe that matter can change with the passage of time. The entire situation would’ve changed by the time they return.” His Majesty smiled and said, “This force will be massive, and every major family will be asked to volunteer. Who wouldn’t wish to join this army if its might and strength were to be so excessive... ha ha...”

His Majesty the Emperor’s laughter reeked with a cold and malicious intention. Who wouldn’t approve of such a massive force? Who wouldn’t wish to join such a massive force? No one would pay heed to the Xuan Beast’s threat before signing up for this army! The majority would be met with a dead-end!

“Has His Majesty chosen the leader of this army?” Wen Cang Yu asked even though he had guessed the answer.

“Jun Wu Yi!” The Emperor smiled monstrously, “Who apart from Jun Wu Yi could lead this army! Could there ever be a more

suitable candidate?” a cold light flashed in the Emperor’s eyes. [I don’t know why you organized that auction at the Aristocratic Hall, Jun Wu Yi... but I’ve gone one step ahead of you this time. And, I’m going to hinder your plans in their tracks! These Tian Fa Xuan Beasts... have come as a blessing!]

Outside the Imperial Palace — Jun Mo Xie’s face was clouded in darkness. It seemed as if his sharp and eagle-like eyes were angrily watching the Emperor. It seemed as if he was looking at the Emperor’s back. In fact, he could barely hold himself in check.

The Young Master Jun had started the “Art of Unlocking the Heaven’s Fortune” to spot any hidden spies in the vicinity. However, he had come across something very unexpected. He whispered, “Fatty, I had asked you to collect the herbs. How many have you managed so far?”

“I’ve just started. How many do you think?” Tang Yuan was stunned. Young Master Jun had asked him to collect some of the rarest herbs a few days ago. Therefore, it would’ve been odd if he had somehow manages several in such a short period of time.

“Listen, I want you to collect those herbs for me in the shortest possible time. I don’t care what method you resort-to in order to accomplish this task. The sooner the better! Make a public announcement if you have to; spread the word for the acquisition of these herbs. You must purchase them even if you have to pay two-three times the price! Also, I had mentioned three special herbs... if you find them — get them; no matter how astronomical their price! Basically, I want them as fast as possible, and I don’t care about the cost or the means. I want you to send over the herbs you’ve acquired to me each day... and I want you send me a batch in the morning, in the day, and the evening. Even if you’ve acquired only one herb — I want you to send it over to me. I want them all as soon as possible! Do you understand?”

“I understand! I will do my best!” Tang Yuan could sense the urgency in Jun Mo Xie’s body language. Therefore, he agreed

without any hesitation.

Jun Mo Xie exhaled a long breath; his eyes seemed very dignified. He turned around, and stared at the Imperial Palace's building which dazzled-golden under the sunlight. It seemed as if he was gazing into two unseen eyes that were staring back at him.

He recalled his performance at the event, carefully considered it, and then calmed himself down.

The Emperor had been suspecting him. He had realized this at the Aristocratic Hall's auction. This Feast at the Imperial Palace had merely come as verification to the Emperor. No matter how arrogant Jun Mo Xie had acted... no matter how carefully he had planned his behavior... no matter how meticulous he had been... he still wouldn't have been able to alter this fact.

He would've only found a temporary relief if he had given up on his pride, and reverted to being the previous Jun Mo Xie. However, this temporary relief would've allowed the Royal Family to become more aggressive in their actions against the Jun Family.

However, Jun Mo Xie would rather die before he'd back-away! "Having balls does not make you a man! It is the incomparably indomitable spirit which does!" These ancestral teachings had become the Hitman Jun's motto.

Therefore, even though Jun Mo Xie had come across as a debauchee to most people inside the Imperial Palace, but he had demonstrated his true and unrestrained arrogance in reality. He had done this because he had come to realize one important thing when Fatty Tang had stumbled into the main hall with the chair hanging up his buttocks...

If the Emperor wanted to make a move against the Jun Family... he wouldn't need a reason... he wouldn't need any reason! Even if Jun Mo Xie was genuinely a senseless debauchee, and the Emperor decided to eliminate him... he'd do it without a second thought. On the other hand... if the Emperor didn't wish to make a move

against the Jun Family... he never would. Even if Jun Mo Xie was the most talented man inside the entire Empire — nothing would happen to their family.

Jun Mo Xie had realized that his fears were baseless.

Moreover, the Jun Family had a certain amount of protection at this point. The Solitary Falcon's reputation as one of the 'Eight Great Masters' would unlikely fail them over the period of the next year to come. As for a year later... Jun Mo Xie was confident that any man who'd wish to make a move against the Jun Family would end-up paying a very heavy price for it.

Jun Mo Xie hadn't planned to drag the Silver Blizzard City's matter for too long either.

He sighed as he recalled that he had the Ninth Grade Xuan Core in his hands. That Xuan Core was waiting to upgrade a person's strength. The ideal person was available as well. However, he didn't have the required herbs...

The HongJun Pagoda, the Flame of Primal Chaos, and the Furnace of Good Fortune were ready... but he didn't have the necessary herbs.

Herbs... this was the crux of the matter; the entire predicament could be described in just one word.

Jun Mo Xie frowned as he sighed.

Jun Mo Xie had recited the book of Folk Remedy in his mind several times in the past few days. In fact, he had memorized the preparations-conditions of every herb and ingredient by heart. However, Jun Mo Xie had come to realize that he could only refine some low-level drugs. Moreover, the success-rate of this refining process wasn't bound to be very high.

The Second Layer of the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune only allowed him to refine drugs which could enhance a person's skills. Moreover, the herbs required for refining of these so-called

low-level drugs weren't particularly valuable or rare to find either. However, Jun Mo Xie was very dissatisfied with this since the instructions on the book revealed that these medicines may increase a person's skills, but they'd only do so temporarily. The effect of this enhancement would not be permanent, and wouldn't last more than 8-10 years. Moreover, these drugs couldn't be taken repeatedly.

This had left Jun Mo Xie very dejected.

He felt, [Is the HongJun Pagoda's ability to refine drugs not even at the same capacity as the Xuan Beast's Xuan Core?] It must be mentioned that a level nine Xuan Core could enhance a person's skill by many levels in a single shot. Moreover, the drug would even ignore the person's rank and level. So, how could that effect be compared to a temporary enhancement? There are some bottlenecks a person isn't able to break through in his life. And most people are never able to reach the higher levels even after their deaths.

That's the reason why the Supreme Masters were in such a short minority.

Jun Mo Xie had expected far too much. He had only unlocked the second layer of the pagoda. Therefore, the ability to refine such drugs was more than he should've asked for! A Ninth Level Xuan Core was very precious. How many of such would exist in this entire world? Even if there were more than a few... how many people could acquire and refine their cores?

It must be mentioned that some people had been able to acquire medicines which could enhance their skills, but no one had ever refined a medicine which would promote any individual's skill permanently.

His methods would allow him to produce medicine which could enhance a person's skill for 8-10 years. And, the cost of the raw materials wasn't very high either. The news of this matter could

create an unprecedented uproar in the world.

Moreover, the Young Master Jun planned on mass-production of these medicines. Therefore, his ability to produce more powerful medicines was likely to increase with the enhancement of his refining efficiency.

However, a man with a belly-full of food never understands a hungry man's hunger.

Jun Zhan Tian was atop his horse. He gazed at his grandson with a tense and unmoving expression on his face. However, he felt very happy inside.

He didn't believe that Jun Mo Xie's performance at the Imperial Palace would lead to anything significant. Therefore, he didn't care much about it. [Who inside this Tian Xiang City could dare to harm my only grandson? In fact, who in this Empire could dare to harm him?]

[My Grandson will rise to the top! That's what a Jun does!]

A sudden change happened in front of everyone while Grandpa Jun was busy feeling complacent!

A strange shadow abruptly appeared under the sunlight. It created waves as it twisted midair. It had emerged from the cover of the trees on the roadside at an unparalleled speed, and had made its way towards Jun Mo Xie like a streamer of light.

This streamer of light had arrived in front of Jun Mo Xie's chest in a flash.

The accuracy and the timing of the attack had been unparalleled.

The timing and speed were so unparalleled that even a Sky Xuan Jun Zhan Tian was unable to act in time. This incident had happened in front of the Imperial Palace. Someone had decided to assassinate Jun Mo Xie at the most unexpected time.

Everyone felt that they were in a dream as they watched that

stream of light penetrate into Jun Mo Xie's chest. The streamer of light continued to push-in. Then, that streamer of light retreated at the same pace it had showed-up, and made its way back to the cover of the trees. It climbed up a tree on the side of the street. Then, the tree shook and the shadow disappeared without a trace...

From the start to the finish — everything had happened in the blink of an eye — and everything was over by now!

Chapter 293: A Sharp Sword on the Verge of Being Unsheathed!

The assassin turned his waist around to take a look once he had climbed the tree. However, no one noticed that since everyone's attention was fixed on Jun Mo Xie.

Before anyone — including Grandpa Jun — had the time to feel any grief... Jun Mo Xie roared, "Naa!" But anyone who hadn't listened carefully thought that he had shouted, "Maa!"

Jun Mo Xie's chest had been pierced as far as their eyes could see. This meant that he should've been covered in blood. However, he wasn't dead. In fact, he was perfectly fine. There wasn't a single bloodstain on his body; nor was he injured!

Everyone stared dumbfounded. [What is going on? Jun Mo Xie's chest was pierced by that double-edged sword... how's he...]

Jun Mo Xie's senses had raised an alarm the moment he had come into the assassin's range. He had been a vicious assassin in his previous life. He had gained invaluable experience in the art of assassination. His intuition had become very sensitive towards impending. Therefore, he had sensed that someone intended to murder him before the attack was launched.

Jun Mo Xie's expression had remained the same, but he was mentally prepared to face the attack.

However, the speed of that assassin's movements had managed to surprise the Young Master Jun.

[He's extremely fast!]

The assassin had come-over like a shadow, and attempted to pierce Jun Mo Xie's chest. He was so quick that Jun Mo Xie had barely managed to raise his guard. In fact, he had gotten so close that Jun Mo Xie had actually felt the extremely cold temperature of the assassin's sword.

Jun Mo Xie was the only person who was able to see his assailant's eyes; they were devoid of any warmth. They were deathly still. In fact, the cold of his watchful eyes were no different from that of a dead-fish.

[And then, his speed has created a dusky shadow!]

[This man is too fast! It's too late to dodge!]

His years of experience had been rendered useless in front of that assassin's speed. The blow would've been fatal!

Jun Mo Xie had then made a quick decision. He had no option but to expose himself. The Third Young Master then quickly used his greatest ace, and escaped into the Hong Jun Pagoda to save his life. But, the speed of this unforeseen incident had seemingly created after-images during that transition. So, it had seemed to everyone that the double-edged sword had passed through his chest.

Then, he instantly came-out of Hong Jun Pagoda, and resumed the same body posture as his previous one. This entire sequence had happened in the blink of an eye. It was too much for the bystanders' eyes to interpret. So who would've been able to suspect that Jun Mo Xie had used a supernatural technique to save his life?

So, everyone cried out in alarm.

The Earthen Xuan Light of that man remained still for a moment, and then followed his line of attack as he launched a second attempt.

Jun Zhan Tian had already positioned himself in front of his grandson. His body got shrouded in blue light as he summoned his entire strength. Then, he suddenly started to throw punches. And, each one of his punches exploded in the air like thunderclaps. It was evident that he was employing his full strength.

However, his attacks only hit the voids of the air.

That overbearing yellow light scattered at the moment it came in contact with that blue light. It then disappeared without a trace —

as if there was no force behind it.

"It's an after-image!" Jun Mo Xie opened his mouth to speak as he watched that Xuan light disappear. There was very serious expression on his face.

The assailant's Xuan Qi level couldn't be considered very high since he was only at peak Earth Xuan level. However, his speed was 'strangely' fast. The Solitary Falcon was famed for his speed. However, Jun Mo Xie reckoned that he'd only be able to match that assassin's speed; and nothing more.

He was so quick that he managed to leave his after-images behind?! How dreadful is his speed?!

[How could a mere Earth Xuan expert have such an incredible speed?]

Jun Mo Xie wasn't the only one who was unable to comprehend this. Everyone else around him was a Xuan expert, but they weren't able to make head or tail of it either. [Does a person with such speed really exist?]

Jun Mo Xie gave a dull smile as he realized that everyone was on-guard against the enemy, "Don't worry. He is very fast, but I think he can only strike once at that speed. Wouldn't he be fiercer than Yun Bie Chen if he could continue to attack?"

Suddenly, everyone came to themselves. They realized that even though that assassin's speed was dreadful — he could only strike once. [But only a few people who could've avoid that blow...]

[Even a Sky Xuan expert may have sustained serious injuries. He wouldn't have died, but he would've surely been injured very seriously. So, how was Jun Mo Xie able to dodge that attack?]

However, no one knew that the Young Master Jun was covered with layer-upon-layer of cold sweat. The fear of that event was still lingering in his heart.

[Such a lightning-fast death strike!] He had never heard of such

speed; not even in his previous life.

Even Jun Mo Xie's unique assassin techniques couldn't cope with it.

Such speed had surpassed the apex of the human body's capabilities.

That isn't to say that nobody could achieve it since it could be done by the Supreme Masters. For example, it wouldn't be surprising if the Solitary Falcon was able to match that speed at the peak of his abilities; or even exceed it somewhat. But, this speed had been demonstrated by a person who was a mere Earth Xuan expert. It had genuinely transcended the scope of expectation.

Jun Mo Xie had always been very conceited and self-confident. He'd looked askance at the world's great warriors and war-lords, and feel that his age was the only reason he hadn't surpassed them. He was extremely proud of his speed. In fact, he was so sharp in his previous life that he had once dodged a bullet that was fired from a sniper-rifle merely 10 meters away. And not even a hair on his body was hurt then.

In fact, his comparative speed wouldn't fall short of anyone in this world either once he'd initiate the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune. However, he was unable to evade that thunderous death-strike with his usual method.

Couldn't it be said that his speed was faster than a bullet fired from a sniper-rifle? A bullet from a sniper-rifle could travel at nine-hundred meters-per-second. It was nearly thrice the speed of sound.

Jun Mo Xie was extremely shocked. He had managed to dodge that thunderous attack, but he was sweating profusely enough to soak his clothes.

His feet had always been firmly fixed on the ground in every encounter in his previous life. But, he was saddled on top of a horse

in this instant. This was a noteworthy difference. However, that assassin's speed was indeed dreadful...

Then, Jun Mo Xie was suddenly struck by an idea. [It's impossible for an Earth Xuan Expert display such speed. However, it may be possible to attain such speed on occasion if one were to possess a unique skill... it would be something similar to Hai Chen Feng's self-destruct skill, but in the context of speed...]

[From the angle of this analysis... that assassin may not be in good health after the usage of this technique. In fact, he may have injured his vital internal organs.]

Jun Mo Xie's eyes became stern as he gazed in the direction of his assailant's departure.

[This man is really dangerous!]

It was very fortunate that no one had gotten injured in that assassination attempt. But everyone remained on-guard on their way back home. Meanwhile, Tang Yuan separated from them after sometime, and hurried to the Aristocratic Hall to get the money for the herbs.

They soon reached the gates of the Jun residence. Then, Jun Zhan Tian finally asked his grandson the question he'd been suppressing this entire time, "Mo Xie, how did you dodge that attack?" He had choked this question in his throat on the way home. He had introspected and realized that he himself may not have been able to dodge this strike. So, how was his precious grandson able to evade that attack? Jun Mo Xie admittedly possesses some remarkable abilities, but this wasn't a matter of skill. It was a matter of timing. There was no shortcut to this. Therefore, it was only natural that Grandpa Jun was baffled.

Jun Mo Xie smiled dully as he looked at his grandfather. Then, he spoke in a serious manner, "You don't need to worry, grandfather. As long as I'm your grandson — no man can ever kill me; no matter what! Even the Eight Great Masters can't harm a

single hair on my body. I'm extremely confident about that!"

"Ah!" Jun Zhan Tian started shaking at the spot. [Isn't this brat bragging a bit too much?]

"Grandfather, this relates to my biggest secret," Jun Mo Xie winked in a ridiculous manner. "It can be used as a last resort to save my life at under any circumstance. You wouldn't want me to expose this secret, would you?"

"I see." Grandpa Jun heaved a sigh of relief. Then, he raised his eyebrows and smiled. Grandpa Jun didn't ask what the secret was. He was a mature man who had seen many-a-things in life. So, he naturally knew that genuine secrets were to be kept close to the heart. And, the higher the number of people who knew of that secret — the higher the probability of its exposure would be. Therefore, he didn't wish to enquire any further as long as he knew that his grandson possessed such means.

"Mo Xie, then you must treat it as your most precious secret." Grandpa Jun looked relieved as he warned, "Don't even tell your future wife. You must keep it sealed in your heart. Your life will depend on this. Having such an ability is akin to having a trump card. It is your secret power. But you'll lose this secret power once your trump card is exposed."

"Don't worry Grandfather. I understand," Jun Mo Xie said somewhat moved. [My Grandfather cares for me from the bottom of his heart.] No one had ever shown him such care in either of his two lives.

"His Majesty will certainly deploy troops this time," Jun Wu Yi was the only one in the family who hadn't gone to the Golden Scholarly Talent Feast. So, the grandfather-grandson had told him about everything that had taken place there. He spoke in a tone that reflected his confidence, "His Majesty will certainly take action this time! His Majesty wouldn't have read this out-aloud by mistake even if the sky had come crumbling down."

Grandpa Jun nodded, but remained silent. Jun Wu Yi had succeeded his father as the head of the Family after his recovery. It was Jun Wu Yi's responsibility to make the decisions. Therefore, Grandpa Jun would try to talk as little as possible so as to allow Jun Wu Yi to shoulder the family's burden. He'd give his opinions only when an extremely difficult situation, or an unexpected one, arose. Even then, he'd merely suggest his views; nothing more. He'd only dive into the matters half-heartedly. He'd never show excessive intervention.

"It seems that I should get ready," Jun Wu Yi chuckled happily. His eyes reveled in the dreams of a battle. The long-forgotten warrior had awakened inside him.

"Why?" Jun Mo Xie was very clever, but he couldn't understand this sentence. He couldn't fathom why Jun Wu Yi would need to get ready if the Emperor was to send his troops to battle. It was important to know that only a few people knew of Jun Wu Yi's full recovery; he was still a cripple in the eyes of the common people.

"Actually, this Golden Scholarly Talent Feast wasn't a festival in its strict sense." Jun Wu Yi sneered and said, "This feast was held for you; Jun Mo Xie. You were the main reason why this event was organized! You would've been exposed no matter how you had acted — unless you had willingly taken those insults. Your counter-verse was vulgar... but you were able to come up with it in such a short period of time. This is a talent in a sense. Therefore, the feast ended right after your counter-verse; that too at the Emperor's bidding. This means that His Majesty had reached a conclusion by then!"

Jun Wu Yi gave a wide smile, "Mo Xie, you haven't seen the usual disputes that take place in the Imperial Court. The situation at the palace was chaotic today, but there have been many such incidents in the past; some were even worse. So, why was it that the Emperor was so intolerable towards it today? That is why... I think that our Jun Family was being targeted by His Majesty by the

means of this event! Mo Xie, you must've left some small clues. And the Emperor being an overly suspicious person would ask the question — why? He wouldn't think that our actions are for self-preservation. He would view them with jealousy and suspicion. The Emperor must think that we're biding our time and planning something big! Regardless of whether our intention was devious or not!"

Grandpa Jun released a long sigh from the other side. It seemed like he didn't wish to hear what was being said again. He had already thought the same thing that Jun Wu Yi was mentioning at this point. However, he hadn't brought it up. He knew that it was a possibility, but he hadn't spoken of it since he was holding onto his delusions. [To think that after being like brothers for so many decades... the Emperor would treat his family in this manner...] He felt very sad at the thought of it.

"The Emperor is a very suspicious and cautious man by nature. Therefore, I believe that he's unlikely to use a thunderous move against our Jun Family. He would first seek to weaken our family's strength little-by-little. And I'll be the first one to bear the brunt. This attack by the Tian Fa Xuan Beast wave presents him with the perfect opportunity to deal with me first," Jun Wu Yi spoke these words unenthusiastically, but a cold and sharp light flashed in his eyes. The man could see the 'big picture'.

Jun Mo Xie smiled mischievously, "He's gravely mistaken if he thinks that way... Third Uncle, I'll accompany you into battle if you're forced to leave for it. The Tian Fa forest is a wonderful place for our family as far as I'm concerned!"

Jun Wu Yi narrowed his eyes, "You wish to come? I'm afraid that you'll also risk death in that case. However, what I'm mainly concerned about is..." He then looked to his father, "If Mo Xie and I were to leave for the forest — you'll be alone at home..."

Jun Zhan Tian laughed gently, "He won't take rash actions against me. Be at ease; our Jun Family hasn't lost the entirety of its

power yet. Why else would he try to measure you beforehand?"

Jun Wu Yi clapped his head, "This child hadn't considered that angle."

Jun Mo Xie smiled, "I didn't expect that this matter would worry Third Uncle such much."

The three men of the family had concluded their discussion. This solution to this situation was bound to be ever-changing.

The three men felt that this matter... hadn't gotten out of their hands yet.

Especially the Young Master Jun. He felt that he had solid grip on this matter. So, why would he worry?

"Mo Xie, can't you ease the training of those three hundred guards a bit? ...They are getting very tired. It seems you're making them run before they're even qualified to walk." Jun Wu Yi's expression was solemn as he raised this issue.

Jun Mo Xie stared blankly for a while. Then, he slowly started to speak, "Third uncle, I understand your concern, but my demands from their training are far from over! I'll only strengthen their training step by step. But I won't loosen it up! What I'll set up... and what I wish... is the strongest military force!"

Jun Wu Yi was stunned. [Is it necessary to continue with this sort of inhumane training? If I were to send anyone from that group to the battlefield at this moment... they would be nothing short of a standard 'slaughtering machine'! Yet... he says that their training is far from finished?]

[What kind of an abnormal squad does my nephew wish to train?]

[And will those ordinary soldiers be able to hold-up to that training?]

Meanwhile, those soldiers divided into different groups, and

advanced towards each other on the training field. Each man was sweating profusely; each man was drenched in sweat. Jun Mo Xie had introduced an even tougher training regime ever since they had returned from the Tian Fa Forest. He had doubled the intensity of their training, and would make them work round-the-clock for twenty-four hours-a-day. The Young Master Jun had been particular to the last detail.

A sandbag was tied to each man's arms, hip bones and legs at present. The function of the sandbags was to add extra weight. They weren't even permitted to remove them when they were having a meal... or going to sleep. Their training had become more strenuous with each passing day! It was like a struggle between life and death.

An outsider would become extremely shocked if he saw this. It had ceased to resemble a fight between humans; or a drill of regular soldiers. Rather, it appeared as if frantic beasts were madly tearing at each other. Everyone's eyes had an ominous glint, and a murderous aura radiated around them. It seemed that they were brimming with irreconcilable hatred towards their "enemy"... and were ensued in a battle of life and death.

They had endured that brutal training the entire afternoon. The Xuan Qi inside their bodies had become similar to an incense stick that was entirely burnt-out. They were solely relying on their bodily strength and instinct as they battered each other and received blows in return at present.

Not a single grain of dust remained on the Jun Family's training field. Each and every inch of the training field had been irrigated with sweat and blood. The men had been repeatedly smashed into the ground. It would appear that even an iron hammer wouldn't be able to make a dent on the battlefield's surface. The whole field had a glossy texture to it...

It was extremely terrifying to look at!

The battle had come to its climax by the time Jun Mo Xie reached there. No man in that confrontation had any strength left.

A soldier roared madly and threw himself at a large individual. He beat him ferociously with his fist and leg. The opposite party neither evaded the attacks — nor did he yield. An unbearable "Bang" sound emanated when the fist and the leg made contact with the man's body. Both men then tumbled backwards. Then, an explosive sound resonated as the both of them smashed onto the ground. Both soldiers then crawled back-up and resumed their ferociously fight. It seemed like two giant rhinos were smashing into each other.

The Jun Family's pond had turned black. Ten huge iron cooking-pots were stationed on its sides. These pots bubbled endlessly. The pots were being used to prepare the medicinal herbs, and some people were continuously pouring the liquid medicine into the pond once it was ready. After that, they'd add some water, and would continue to refine the medicine.

Close to a 100 soldiers soaked naked inside the pond. Their eyes were closed-shut, and their expression was solemn and respectful. They weren't taking a bath. This was another kind of training. During this time, Jun Mo Xie would have each one of them to soak their bodies in that pool as the medicine was poured into it. The water from the pond was replaced every three days, and the medicine was replaced along with it. Therefore, these soldiers would soak their bodies in that medicinal pond everyday after finishing their training in order to restore their health and rejuvenate by absorbing the medicines.

The reason this was just another sort of training was — the water in the pond was always on the verge of boiling point. But it wasn't enough to cook them alive. Also, the water contained precious medicinal herbs; it would replenish their energy, and give nourishment to their bodies so that they could endure the harsh training.

It was only natural that those soldiers would have to pay the corresponding price for availing that useful medicinal water. Therefore, the task of changing the medicinal water was done by them only. Moreover, this task wasn't allowed to encroach upon their training time.

Jun Mo Xie's training methods couldn't merely be termed as 'cruel'. Jun Wu Yi was a harsh soldier, but when he looked at the plight of these soldiers... he felt that this training was somewhat inhumane.

Jun Mo Xie hid on the side-lines. He observed every individual carefully. The Young Master would change the intensity of their training every day these days. And every day, the soldier would be amazed to discover that they when they had barely adjusted to the training of one day... they were on the verge of death the next...

Their limits were exceeded every time!

They trained every day, and round-the-clock. And, they continued to surpass their previous limits. Their bodily strength would increase every two days, and they would be pleasantly surprised to find that their Xuan Qi level would also see a slight increase every few days. And, although the increase was somewhat marginal... it was still a remarkable increase when one considered the time it had happened-in.

This sort of 'speedy' enhancement was simply shocking!

Chapter 294: Determination!

The Xuan Qi cultivation within the ranks of these soldiers wasn't very high. The best among them were at the peak of the Gold Xuan, while the overwhelming majority were at the Silver Xuan realm. However, each man's physical strength had reached 'hair-raising' levels!

Fifty men stood in a row a little distance away. They had their hands to their sides in the 'horse' stance.[1] They stood like that at the foot of the wall. Beside each man that stood in that stance was another one who held a stick in his hands. Each man on the side would gnash his teeth and brandish his stick with a 'whipping' sound. He'd hit each and every part of the man who stood in the stance. The sound of impact was monstrous; it somewhat resembled that of beating a raw cowhide. However, none of the men receiving the beating showed any signs of pain on their face. Perhaps one's face would twitch a little, or maybe another one would frown slightly. However, they didn't show any other outward signs apart from these two things.

They staunchly remained in their stance.

They'd get beaten hundreds of times. Then, the men would pant heavily as they'd rise from the horse stance. They then stretched their neck, wrists and ankles in exercise. This would give rise to a loud "Pop!". The noise was similar to the one that is issued when a firecracker is burst. Then, they'd take-over the wooden sticks. And the men who were previously beating them assumed the 'horse' stance with their hands drooping to their sides. Their muscles were as taut as a young dragon's.

The sharp 'whistling' sounds would be resumed. Only this time — those who were getting beaten and those who were doing the beating — had switched places.

A command was given after they had finished their rounds.

Then, the total of these hundred men would make their way to the training field in two orderly groups. The two groups would stand panting on the field where the previous group had been ordered to fight hand-to-hand. The two groups that had been fighting in the field would neatly organize themselves into two groups, and would proceed to the foot of the wall. Then, they'd beat their partner... and then get beaten themselves...

Then, another command would be given, and the hundred men who had just taken the field would commence their horrible fist-fight. Every fist and every leg would hit a vital point; pit of the stomach, the throat, the temples, the back of the head, between the legs, behind the knee... every critical joint...

The scene was hard to imagine as it is. But what would it take to withstand such a bitter beating again and again? However, the men had gotten used to it. They could resist each and every hit. They would try to pick-out each and every possible crack in their opponent's defence. And if they fell into a trap — they'd try their hardest to maintain indifference by keeping their skin thick...

Occasionally, one person would hit their opponent on the nose. This would cause a long stream of blood to gush-out. However, their expression wouldn't change; they'd remain unfeeling. ...As if the man they had hit wasn't their comrade... but their enemy.

Then, there would be a whistle. The men in the pond would come out, get dressed, and line-up beside the pond. Meanwhile, the men on the field would stop, make their way to the pond in an orderly fashion, and enter the pool after undressing.

The men who had just exited the pool would then start with an even harsher training. They wouldn't fight one-on-one this time. This round would be a hysterical beat-up where 'anything goes' between the two groups. Maybe at one point it was one person taking on another one... or maybe at another time it would be many people confronting a single person.

An individual could be surrounded by many others at one moment, and he could be part of a large group that surrounded another individual the next. The chaos of the scene was spectacular and indescribable. Many-a-times one could see a single individual lying on the ground, and being ferociously stamped-on the pit of his stomach and his lower abs. Then, the next moment, he could be seen flying-out and hitting the people that surrounded him; each man would fight with the vitality of a dragon and the ferociousness of a tiger in this crazy battle...

In the entire course of events — besides the bossy battle-commands, and the war-cries — no one would open their mouth to speak anything. They spoke using something else. They spoke using their fists, their legs, their elbows and even their shoulders...

The three groups of men were cycled in this manner. These men were supposedly playing the role of their comrades' training partners. However, this was mere the daytime training schedule. They would undergo Xuan Qi training in the evening. This training session would be accompanied by something even more brutal than what they'd endure during the daytime... an arms drill!

Each individual would gnash their teeth and put their very soul and consciousness into the training. They only had one aim in their minds; [I must meet the Young Master's standards!] This was because the Young Master had told them that their final inspection was upon them. They would be removed from the squad if they were to fail the assessment. Then, these so-called defaulters would be re-assigned to residence guards and kitchen staff!

...after tasting the sweetness of steady and rapid progress ...after seeing a clear hope of becoming a powerful expert ...none of them wanted to return to their former decadent life. It would be a matter of grave shame for them!

These steeled troops were like phoenixes that had attained nirvana after a deadly ordeal, and were now waiting to take form again...

Jun Mo Xie's eyes were unfeeling and ruthless as he oversaw the harsh training on the field. His posture was calm and steady.

He didn't intend to stop at that. He would use his unique medicines on these soldiers once they had attained the highest limits of their strengths. The medicine would show its best results then, and everyone's efficacy would shoot up!

Jun Mo Xie would assign these troops the specific task of 'slaughter' in the future. Just slaughter! Uninterrupted slaughter! Unending slaughter!

Grandpa Jun and Jun Wu Yi stood side-by-side on top of the high-tower of the Jun Residence. Their eyebrows twitched for a moment as they saw the cruelty of the training that was taking place below.

"Wu Yi, you see the training he's giving them... what do you think he plans to do with them? Why would he train them like this?" Grandpa Jun's vision seemed heavy.

"Such training would make these soldiers the master of the enemy combatant's life! These soldiers may or may not be able to defeat the enemy on their own, but I think that Mo Xie is training with a sole purpose in mind — slaughter!" Jun Wu Yi spoke with a greedy expression on his face. It was only natural that any General would wish to covet such troops after he had laid his eyes on them. In fact, it would've been extremely absurd if Jun Wu Yi didn't feel envious of this squad's abilities.

Such a squad would be a part of any General's dream army. Forget three hundred — even a hundred of these soldiers could make a General's army unstoppable. That army would be unbeatable and invincible; nothing would be able to stop such an army!

They would become the enemy's nightmare!

"Slaughter...!" Jun Zhan Tian looked anxious. "Even if they are

being trained to slaughter... the important questions would be — for whom would they slaughter, and for what reason they'd slaughter for? This question is very important when you keep the other people of this country in your perspective..."

"This child would beg to differ from his father's words; this child believes that no matter what — these troops would find it fulfilling to fight for only one person!" Jun Wu Yi lowered his gaze coldly, "These three hundred men would fight only for Mo Xie; for Mo Xie and the Jun Family! The future of our Jun Family rests on Mo Xie's shoulders. So, what importance would the other people of this country hold?"

"This kind of strength..." Grandpa Jun didn't seem any less worried, "will attract a lot of jealousy and suspicion once it's revealed to the people!"

"Jealousy and suspicions? Why?" Jun Wu Yi's eyes narrowed. A sharp and cold ray of light passed through them, "When has the Jun Family ever been involved in misconducts? And hasn't the Jun Family always supported the people?"

Jun Wu Yi's line of thought was beginning to get influenced by Jun Mo Xie's. He didn't sound like himself.

The old man sighed. [Did I really make the right decisions in those days? Our Jun Family's talent has withered... should I also take on some responsibilities?]

"Ah, with Jun Mo Xie... our Jun Family will rise quickly! No power will be able to hold us back! I'm confident about this fact!" Jun Wu Yi then turned his neck to look at the tussle taking place on the training field. He then slowly continued, "However, we need time and strength to achieve that goal. We need absolute strength! And now we already have a prototype of that strength!" Jun Wu Yi clenched his fists. The sounds of his joints' 'clicking' echoed.

"Didn't that little brat Mo Xie say that he'd oversee this training?"

So, why can't I even see his shadow?" Grandpa Jun looked around.

"The training of these men doesn't require anyone's supervision," Jun Wu Yi stated. His eyes were full of admiration, "This training has reached amazing levels! And as for Jun Mo Xie... I don't know where he is or what he's up to. However, we shouldn't try to control him. He can take care of himself. We shouldn't worry about him. Father, he's a hidden dragon. We should give him a free hand."

"You think that we shouldn't worry about him? You think everything is fine...? Then, you're not behaving like an Uncle should. This isn't enough. Mo Xie isn't that young anymore. Aren't you concerned about his marriage?"

"Weren't you the one to witness his 'growth' that day? So, how would I know if he's old enough to take a wife yet...? By the way, how's his asset, good enough?" Jun Wu Yi asked in a lofty manner.

"It is really good; in fact, he has surpassed this old man's paragon from the old days... Bah! You brat! What are you saying! Do you want a spanking?!" Grandpa Jun suddenly came to himself and raised his hand. He desired to teach his son a lesson.

The Third Master chuckled, "Why are you angry, dad? Aren't you happy that Mo Xie has grown up? It's just that when it comes to marriage... he'll certainly take his time to make a decision. However, if you plan to force him into do something he doesn't want to... I won't have any objections. Rather, I'd be glad to see it happen."

[Facing my sons is like facing an army...] Grandpa Jun found himself in a knot as he thought about it. He realized that he may not be able convince his precious grandson to act against his will in the most trivial of matters... let alone a topic as important as marriage...

"That little Dugu girl is good to Mo Xie, and I see that Mo Xie also finds her interesting. Is there anyone else? I can't stand that girl

for Mo Xie!” Jun Zhan Tian asked; he seemed unwilling to resign himself.

There was nothing dignified about this. The father and son had started to create a harem for their grandson/nephew.

“Apart from this... Mo Xie used to wander around the Spirit Fog Lake. Maybe there’s someone there...” Jun Wu Yi winked.

Jun Zhan Tian almost fainted. He had to use his hand to support himself, “Is there anything else besides that?”

“I remember that... Mo Xie would seem very ambitious about Qing Han...” Jun Wu Yi dashed-pass and flew-out the open window the moment he finished speaking those words. Even his shadow didn’t linger behind. He knew what awaited him if he had stayed any longer.

“You Bastard! Get out from my sight!” Jun Zhan Tian flipped out in rage. However, he realized that his son had already disappeared without a trace. So, he had no choice but to open his eyes wide, stamp his feet and roar down the tower. However, he suddenly stopped his roar in between, and started to ponder pensively...

“Would our Jun Family have to wait for a long time?” He let out a long sigh and shook his head. “That’s absurd! That’s completely absurd!” The Old Man had no other words apart from “Absurd”.

Jun Mo Xie was on the sidelines of the training field when he heard the faint sound of his grandfather’s roar. He couldn’t help but be muddled with confusion, “Why is Grandpa shouting? Who ignited the fire this time?”

Young Master Jun was unaware that he was the reason behind his grandfather’s anger... even though he was entirely innocent in reality.

Jun Mo Xie’s body disappeared from the sidelines of the training field without a trace.

Jun Mo Xie looked at the sky and figured that it would night

soon. His heart was full of anticipation. He was about to deal with a lot of important matters that night.

First was that accessory worn by Silver Blizzard City's Xiao Feng Wu. It was indeed a spectacular item. How could an ordinary piece of jewelry invoke such a response from the Hong Jun Pagoda? Young Master Jun was unaware of that accessory's origins. However, it didn't matter whether he knew about it or not. He had nevertheless devised a plan, and was quite certain of returning with that item.

Next — was the assassination of his assassin! Jun Mo Xie had the highest level of interest in that matter.

Not only did Jun Mo Xie like that man's execution-style... he highly approved of them.

That person didn't even look back after his head-on strike didn't bear fruit. Instead, he escaped far and wide. And he didn't do a sloppy job at that either. The man left behind no trace. This was the same technique which the Hit-man Jun had employed in his previous life. This man was the only one Jun Mo Xie could consider a true 'assassin' in this world. The other groups of assassins he had confronted in this world were no more than good Xuan experts.

[Did they possess an assassin's style?]

[Those people don't deserve the tag of an 'assassin'!]

Moreover, that assassin was in possession of an extremely fast and unique technique. Jun Mo Xie's killing-ability would shoot-up like a whirlwind if he were able to obtain that skill. Then, he could even hope to kill a Spirit Xuan expert by staging an ambush for the same.

[There must be some mystery behind his speed.]

Jun Mo Xie hid in nothingness till he approached his own small courtyard. His train of thought stopped and he stared blankly in

confusion upon seeing two figures up-ahead.

There were two figures at the entrance of his courtyard. They were small and frail. They were kneeling on the ground; their backs were straight. It was impossible to guess how long they had been kneeling like this. However, they seemed stubborn and unwilling to stop.

Jun Mo Xie sighed as his demonic and shadow-less figure slowly walked past them. These two were among the many children he and his uncle had rescued from the Huang Hua Hall. The rest of the children had been re-located to good places. However, these two children had refused to leave for the life of them. They only desired to learn the skills they'd need to extract their revenge.

Their disabilities couldn't be regarded as 'very serious'. However, they were both mute. Their tongues had been cut into half. They would never speak again. Moreover, one of them had only one arm left.

It wasn't that Jun Mo Xie's heart hadn't been moved by their perseverance. However, he had reluctantly rejected them after an examination. These kids had astonishing willpower, and their hatred towards their enemy would also be helpful. However, their aptitude was mediocre; to say nothing of the fact that they had become physically handicapped.

The Huang Hua Hall hadn't abandoned the prospect of their cultivation for no reason.

Jun Mo Xie had whole-heartedly considered training the two children at one point. He figured that he could use his harsh training methods to suit their tenacious wills. They could show significant progress in just over a decade as long as they were willing to endure the cruel training and have an old-fashioned 'baptism by fire'. In fact, they'd even have a chance at reaching the Earth Xuan realm!

Earth Xuan level could never be considered meagre. An ordinary

person would struggle his whole life to attain it. It was a very high goal for an ordinary person to look up to. However, this target had no meaning in the eyes of the Young Master and these kids.

However, could Jun Mo Xie afford to train them? He'd have to spend lots of time and money on their training and rehabilitation. Moreover, it would be a great waste if their progress were to stop at the Earth Xuan realm. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had considered the topic for a long time, and had then decided that the prospect of their cultivation wasn't worth the effort.

Moreover, their strong desire for revenge wouldn't help in reaping any short-term results. Therefore, it didn't have any significance.

Jun Mo Xie sympathized with them. In fact, he secretly praised their willpower. But, he had realized that it wasn't meant to be.

However, those two children were seen kneeling outside his courtyard ever since he had refused to train them. They could not speak, but their eyes would implore Jun Mo Xie whenever they'd see him.

It was already the ninth day since they had been kneeling at the entrance of his courtyard.

Their slender bodies trembled as they heard the familiar sound of Jun Mo Xie's footsteps. They straightened their backs even more; though, they still remained motionless in that kneeling position.

The Young Master Jun sighed as he slowly walked to stand in front of them. "Look up and look at me!" his voice was a command they couldn't defy.

Their bodies trembled as they looked up to face Jun Mo Xie in accordance with his command.

Jun Mo Xie was startled. Those two must be around thirteen or fourteen years in age. However, their eyes no longer showed the same longing and urgency of the past few days. That expression

had been replaced by deathly stillness.

However, it wasn't exactly an empty sort of deathly stillness. Rather, it was one where they had disregarded life and death; it was the deathly still of an individual who had disregarded the mortal world.

That 'deathly stillness' wasn't synonymous with 'emptiness'.

Jun Mo Xie sighed inside. [These are the eyes of a top-notch killer.] One could only bring-out this expression in their eyes once they had been oppressed to an extreme degree, and had begun to consider human life as worthless. In fact, such people considered their own life to be worthless.

If their natural endowments had been any better... as long as it was even a little bit better — Jun Mo Xie would've accepted them without hesitation. However, he was helpless at that point of time. Their natural endowments were too substandard...

It required 1% 'insight' and 99% 'sweat' to become formidable. However, that 1% 'insight' was the key. It was more important than the remaining 99% 'sweat'.

"Tell me your reasons! Show me the extent of your determination!" Jun Mo Xie's heart felt pity. These two children had suffered a lot. A normal person couldn't even imagine their suffering. Their hearts were filled with hatred towards their enemy, but they didn't have any aptitude to practice martial arts. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but sigh.

Determination?

The two children looked at each other. Then, they nodded heavily in unison.

The child on the left slowly extended the finger of his remaining hand to his mouth. He then bit-down on it resolutely. The kid bit with considerable effort, and tilted his head to the side until he had torn-off a chunk of his own flesh. A river of blood rushed-out from

that finger. His entire body shivered with pain, and his face had gone deathly. However, he was otherwise motionless. The child then started to write a character on the ground with the flow of his own blood. He had only written about half of it when the blood-flow slowed down. The boy looked at it in an unsatisfied manner. He then brought his finger to his mouth again. He desperately and ferociously bit-down on it again as he tore-out some more flesh.

A small piece of finger's bone was also pulled out. The white mix of flesh and bone fell-down. A fountain of blood shot-out. The fountain of blood gushed-out far, and some of it was even spilt on Jun Mo Xie's face.

The other child mimicked the first one, and bit into his finger as well. The two children's bodies shivered, yet they maintained control over themselves as the blood gushed-out. The children then drew big and straight characters on the ground.

The child on the left wrote, "I will kill them by hacking them down. I will have no regrets till I die."

The child on the right wrote, "Those who aren't powerful — can only die; nothing more."

Their words contained power. The two of them were trembling with pain; but, they wrote each character meticulously, and with a lot of effort.

The two children kneeled facing Jun Mo Xie after they had finished writing, and knocked their heads heavily on the ground.

Jun Mo Xie's eyes suddenly turned red. He felt a strange feeling in his heart; his heart had started to tremble ferociously.

Jun Mo Xie had conducted himself with cold-blooded apathy in both his lives. He had never been benevolent, and looked at all living things as 'mowed grass' or 'lowly dogs'. He was numb inside, and thought nothing of the common people. He hadn't felt the least bit disturbed when he had witnessed the horrors of the

Huang Hua Hall that day. He wasn't shaken at all. However, the stubborn acts of these two youngsters had moved him very deeply.

“Good! If this is how you feel — I will not be miserly to present you the opportunity!” Jun Mo Xie took a long breath. The color of his eyes became milder as he continued in a sinking voice, “The opportunity I shall provide might grant you the power to rule over the heaven and earth someday. However, it is important that you remember that such a path is full of killing and death! I hope that you... will not disappoint me.”

The two children looked up in unison. They couldn't speak, but their eyes were full of ecstasy. Then, that ecstasy was suddenly replaced by unwavering determination. It seemed that they had made the decision from the bottom of their souls. They looked at Jun Mo Xie and knocked their heads on the ground. One of the heads got injured, and blood started to stream out from it.

Jun Mo Xie quickly took the children into his arms and flew inside; he nearly burst-through the entrance. These two had suffered a lot of pain to demonstrate their determination. They hadn't made any noise to reveal their pain, but they'd be in a lot of trouble if they weren't administered a timely medical treatment. This could turn into a very big problem.

Jun Mo Xie had already decided to help them. So, he wasn't going to let another mishap happen to them again.

They possessed such great willpower. They may not have much aptitude, but wouldn't their immense willpower make up for it? The number of people who possessed the necessary aptitude were the same as the number of sand perches on this land. But, how many people had such a strong willpower?

What would natural talent achieve if one didn't have the desire...?

When a person could be so fierce in dealing with themselves — how would they deal with their enemy?

Two phrases had been smeared in blood at the entrance of the courtyard. The words within these phrases dazzled brightly.

“I will kill them by hacking them down. I will have no regrets till I die.”

“Those who aren’t powerful — can only die; nothing more.”

The curtain of darkness hooded the sky.

Jun Mo Xie frowned and pondered deeply as he looked at the two thin and weak figures that lay on his bed.

His residence was full of wounded people. There was a thick scent of medicine in the air.

Ye Gu Han lay tranquilly on the giant bed on the side. His breathing was faint, but he was free from danger.

Jun Mo Xie had tidied-up another bed on the side. It had been taken-over by those two children at that moment.

Three wounded people; three crippled individuals.

Those two youngsters had stretched their vitalities to the limit. They had fainted right after Jun Mo Xie had promised to help them. However, they had fainted noiselessly. They hadn’t even issued a groan.

Jun Mo Xie had seen many fierce people. However, this was the first he had seen someone with such a strong base in terms of ferocity, and none with relation to martial arts.

[Will these little devils turn out fiercer than me?]

[Since I’ve promised to help them... how can I train-up these talentless individuals in the shortest amount of time?] Jun Mo Xie was completely clueless in this regard.

[With Xuan Qi? No, this method won’t do. The Huang Hua Hall wouldn’t have stuffed them into those giant jars if they had any aptitude for Xuan Qi practice.]

[That's it for that angle!]

Jun Mo Xie suddenly stood-up. There was an ominous glint in his eyes. [At worst, I can teach them my previous life's Core Law! I'll train them in accordance to the standards I practiced in those days. And as for how much they can advance... it will depend on their luck! And I should be able to refine a 'cleaning essence' Dan if I'm able to ascend to the fourth level of Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune...]

[I'll personally train these two into something which would shock the entire Xuan Xuan Continent! They would eventually be capable of killing the Gods of this continent! With their willpower, my Core Law and Dan medicine... these two terrifying demons would rise like the stars!]

Jun Mo Xie left the room gently, and sat on the threshold. He looked up at the night sky. His train of thought was long, and a lot of time had passed by the time it ended. The stubbornness of those two youngsters had evoked his own past in his mind.

[Wasn't I the same as those two in my previous life? I used to play with my life. I would push myself to my limits in training. How many times did I pass out from the shock of pain? How many times did I push myself to the point of death?]

In what way had Jun Xie's unrivalled reputation come about? Who knew how much effort, sweat and tears of blood had been invested into his reputation...? His fellow apprentices were trying their hardest, but his training had exceeded their difficulty by three times.

Any man who desired success and unrivalled fame — had to be very fierce with himself!

Facing the enemy with ferocity was nothing — being fierce with oneself was important. A true assassin would never care about his life or his accomplishments. Worrying about capabilities brings harm. The worry of one's mind would act as an obstacle.

These... were the words of his previous life's master!

An image of a face floated in front of Jun Mo Xie. It was a face which was black as iron, and cold as ice. Murderous aura emanated from its eyes. However, he felt relieved whenever those two eyes would look at him. However, Jun Mo Xie could feel the presence of those eyes even though he tried to dodge them.

Those eyes were full of nothingness. It was as if they had passed through the two worlds, and were gazing at him from the distance.

He shivered in their cold — just as in the past — but it felt auspicious and peaceful.

“Master...” Jun Mo Xie had lower his head, and covered his knees with his hands in sadness. A door opened, and a ray of light escaped from that crack. It painted Jun Mo Xie's silhouette. His silhouette curled-up as it shivered in the night wind. It was somewhat lonely.

Power... was it worth yearning for?

He heard light footsteps behind him, and then felt a warm overcoat cover his body.

Jun Mo Xie remained as motionless as before, and asked, “Tell me Little Ke... do you wish to become a powerful individual?”

“Ah?” the little girl cried in alarm. This was clearly unexpected, “Become powerful? What use will that be?”

“What use will that be? That's an interesting question. If you become someone like the old Solitary Falcon — you can kill whomever you want to kill. You can live in this world free and unfettered; don't you wish such a life?” Jun Mo Xie asked heavily.

The little girl walked to his side, and calmly sat down beside him. She then tilted her head, and placed her hands on her cheeks to support it. The girl then looked up at the moon and started to ponder earnestly. The moonlight sprinkled on her face; it brought out a somewhat beautiful and gentle flavor to her face.

A little time passed. Then, the little girl smiled shyly and said, “Powerful... I don’t want to become that kind of a person.”

“Oh? Why?” Jun Mo Xie tilted his head and looked at the little girl. Little Ke’s words came very unexpectedly to him. According to Hit-man Jun’s view of the world — any person would answer in the affirmative if they were provided an opportunity to become a powerful individual. It didn’t matter what they did afterwards to achieve it.

Little Ke lowered her head shyly, and started to gently nip at her nails, “Young Master, I don’t know what it would feel like to be a strong person. But, I don’t think... perhaps I’ll enjoy the attention and the praise. But, I don’t know why... but I don’t want it. I’m only a little girl; Young Master’s little girl. All I want... is to take care of the Young Master every day. I look forward to washing Young Master’s clothes, make food for Young Master, and wait for him to return when he has gone out. I just want to be an ordinary maid.”

The little girl smiled shyly again, and spoke, “Young Master, do these words mean that I don’t have any spirit? But... I really don’t want to become strong!”

“No, what you said... I really like it. You’re an adorable little girl who I’m very fond of!” Jun Mo Xie carefully looked at the little girl who sat beside him; for the first time. The moonlight shone on her skin. Her white-blond hair was tied in a bun, and the loose silky strands danced in the wind. Her long eyelashes blinked, and there was a tuft of hair sticking to the skin beside her ear.

The little girl felt a bit uneasy since she was being seized-up by Jun Mo Xie. She twisted her fingers, but pretended to not notice. However, her heart was jumping madly inside her chest. Her face slowly turned red as she lowered her head; she felt like a deer inside her heart.

Jun Mo Xie’s face reveled in an interesting smile as he felt his

mind relax. His heart felt at ease upon having such a pleasant little girl beside him. He unexpectedly felt a faint yet heartfelt happiness.

Everyone had their own way of 'living'. This was the least one could do without a problem.

Like the little girl; her dream was very simple, practical and very warm...

He caressed her beautiful hair softly and said, "You hurry-up to your room, and go to sleep." Jun Mo Xie was astonished to find that his voice had been very... gentle. He felt like he was facing the daughter of his previous life's master...

"Yes..." the little girl answered as she lowered her head. She stood up slowly. She could feel her cheeks getting warmer. It was like her entire body lacked strength as she slowly walked to her room.

She walked two steps before she thought of something, and then turned around to say, "Young Master... you'll go to sleep early... huh?" She found that the Young master, who was just sitting beside her a moment ago, had disappeared without a trace by the time she had turned her head.

"He's very quick..." The little girl bit her lip and smiled shyly again. She then pursed her mouth and raised her head as she remembered what had happened earlier that morning. This made her cover her face... [I am thinking nonsense...]

Jun Mo Xie welcomed the night wind. He didn't even leave a shadow as he flew fast. He could feel the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune revolving inside of him. Each cycle brought about a large surge of formidable strength in him. There was an unstoppable tendency of Qi flowing through his meridians. He felt extremely satisfied at that moment.

The first target was the Magnificent Jewel Hall.

Jun Mo Xie painstakingly restrained his own aura. He floated silently for a while, and then submerged underground. The Young Master Jun then used his spirit sense to search each and every inch of the land ahead as it slowly spread out.

Jun Mo Xie hadn't forgotten how he had nearly been discovered by Lei Wu Bei the last time. He knew that there were at least three Spirit Xuan experts inside the Magnificent Jewel Hall. So how could he act carelessly?

Being cautious and prudent was a top 'character requirement' for an assassin.

However, the result of his spirit sense's probe greatly alarmed him.

When did the Magnificent Jewel hall have so many experts?

This was quite a terrifying strength!

Jun Mo Xie had searched every corner of the Magnificent Jewel Hall. There were several powerful people in the Magnificent Jewel Hall. Some of them were clearly at the Spirit Xuan Realm, while the others were at least at the peak of the Sky Xuan. He could sense seven powerful Individuals! There were two weaker people as well. They must be Xiao Han and Mu Xue Tong.

[When did so many powerful experts fall from the sky?]

[Are they possibly the re-enforcements from the Silver Blizzard City?]

And Jun Mo Xie's spirit sense detected a very formidable presence in the center. [It must be a Spirit Xuan expert.] There was one amongst them, who, although wasn't as strong as Solitary Falcon... but wasn't very weak in comparison. In fact, he was nearly as strong as the Great Master!

One, two, three... four... five... and another one! There were six other Spirit Xuan experts present there! Jun Mo Xie felt himself getting drenched in sweat.

Notes:

Horse stance is martial training stance. Imagine a person sitting on a horse. Now remove the horse, and just imagine the person. The resultant image is a 'horse' stance.

Chapter 295: Xiao Family's Plans and Arrangements

Six Spirit Xuan experts, seven Sky Xuan peak experts, and two Sky Xuan mid-level experts! This was a very frightful force from the Tian Xiang City's standards!

Why did the Silver Blizzard City send so many experts? — Jun Mo Xie's butt could think of an answer to this question... This force had been assembled to deal with the Jun Family; who else could it be for? They had mobilized this force since one of the 'Eight Great Masters' — The Solitary Falcon — had taken residence with the Jun Family.

If such power was coordinated properly — it could be used to defeat the Solitary Falcon!

Jun Mo Xie carefully controlled his Yin Yang Escape and entered the building. Then, he silently hid himself in the ground.

He couldn't focus on his main target at this time since it was of paramount importance to understand the true objectives of those experts from the Silver Blizzard City. He would learn their true objectives, and then quickly devise some countermeasures to neutralize the enemy's strength.

Otherwise, the consequences of this situation would be very troublesome...

He hadn't expected that his 'moment of greed' would reward him with such important information. Jun Mo Xie sighed from his underground location, [man, my greed is very rewarding. Would I have stumbled upon this information if I hadn't followed after my greed? Didn't I just stumble upon the proverbial 'Pie in the Sky'?]

[The heavens favor the good. This Young Master's good actions substitute the heaven's justice. I punish the wicked, and so my good deeds pave a bridge to my success... Would the heavens

strongly favor this Young Master if I hadn't done noble deeds? Humph? Humph...]

“What for...? Don't tell me that wretched cripple is acting up again? I think it's best to take this opportunity and destroy the very roots of this disease! Otherwise we'll have to deal with a prolonged problem!” Not much could be determined from the voice. However, it seemed to be full of resentment and defiance. Therefore, the speaker must've been Xiao Han.

“Such impudence...! We're from the upper echelons of the Silver Blizzard City. Yet, you dare to question our word? It seems that you can't distinguish between our ranks!”

A somewhat gentle voice scolded, “Would we be in such a mess if it weren't for a 'devil' like who willfully started a fire and fanned the flames? The Silver Blizzard City's situation had been tumbled by your actions. If the Dong Fang Family hadn't acted-out, killed our members, and diverted the public anger — I'm afraid that the Supreme Alliance itself would've tried to meddle in that affair! And your willful actions would've been the root cause of that chaos! And, you're still resigned to the destruction of the Silver Blizzard City?”

“Can the insignificant Jun Family ever destroy the Silver Blizzard City? Why are you blaming me for this, Grandfather? How did start any trouble? He tried to steal my wife! He started this animosity between us! Please tell me, which man on earth could ever stand this insult?” Xiao Han asked somewhat emotionally.

[Grandfather? Xiao Han's grandfather? Isn't he the top-most individual in the Silver Blizzard City's Xiao Family?] However, he didn't know whether that person was Xiao Xing Yun or Xiao Bu Yu. The Young Master Jun held his breath and stayed calm. He remained motionless as he continued to eavesdrop. Hit-man Jun carefully listened to all sorts of voices... whether loud or faint... without any exception or negligence.

“But you’ve already destroyed the four important members of the Jun Family, and the backbone of their power! And Jun Wu Yi was crippled because of a ‘devil’ like you! What more do you want? Do you intend to show no kindness to the dogs and the chicken in their family?” The gentle voice scolded with some resentment and disappointment, “And what of the present circumstances? The Xue Hun Manner and Shi Chang Xiao have issued a joint summon; is that trivial to you? We should be hurrying towards the south. And, now you ‘little devil’ are delaying us with your quarrel over a nonsensical grudge...?”

[I have to admit... this person’s way of dealing with matters is impressive. At least Xiao Han can’t stand up to it.]

“Now that you mentioned that matter — I’ve remembered another one. These two matters are somewhat related. I request Grandfather to pay heed.” Xiao Han’s spirits seemed to rise, “We received a small scroll when we were at the Imperial Palace today. There was very little content on it. It said that Jun Wu Yi would lead the army which would go south to confront the Xuan Beast uprising. Grandfather, it would be better if we...”

“Employing common soldiers to deal with the Xuan Beast uprising?” The gentle voice suddenly paused... as if in contemplation. Then it spoke again, “Ah! Good... if this is the case... then this is truly an opportunity...perhaps...”

“Second Brother... that scroll does present us with an opportunity, but we must remember the summon! They’ve called all the Great Masters to arms! This means that the Solitary Falcon may go south! And in all probability... he would be accompanying Jun Wu Yi throughout the journey. The Solitary Falcon won’t be easy to deal with even if we can handle Jun Wu Yi with ease. Then, the problem will continue to go around in circles. Therefore, I beseech the Second Brother to focus only on Solitary Falcon. He’s the core of our problems!”

[Second Brother? It seems like it’s the Xiao Family’s second in

hierarchy — Xiao Bu Yu!]

“You’re right! That old Solitary Falcon deserves a corresponding reply since he has decided to stick his head out! How could we back away from avenging the Sixth Brother?!”

Xiao Bu Yu’s gentle voice was brimming with killing intent, “We’ll wait for an ideal opportunity when we get to the south. First — the six of us and the Seven Swords — we thirteen will coordinate and kill the Solitary Falcon. Then, we can decide whether we’d need to tidy-up Jun Wu Yi or not. In any case, everything will become clear to us once we get rid of the Solitary Falcon. In fact, we can easily finish this matter — given that area’s natural threat — once we’ve suppressed the Xuan Beasts’ uprising.”

“So, the Second Brother is suggesting that we wait and deal with this matter after the Xuan Beasts’ uprising is handled?” It was an old and familiar sound. Jun Mo Xie listened to it, and determined that it belonged to the Third Elder.

“That’s right! Every Great Master has been summoned this time. So, if we make a move and attack a Great Master before the matter in the south is taken care of... I fear the rest of the Great Masters would attack the Silver Blizzard City in return. Therefore, we’ll handle him after this situation is taken care of.” Xiao Bu Yu spoke with a dark mental-frame.

“Besides, there’s that matter of the origins and abilities of that black clothed ‘masked man’.” Xiao Bu Yu spoke in an even gentler manner, “He snatched our Xiao Family’s Soul Replenishing Jade despite our status. He’ll understand its importance soon. Then, he’ll become aware of the jade being worn by Feng Wu. So, he’ll come to snatch it as well. This will happen because Feng Wu will be alone. We’ll make it as convenient for him as possible.”

He smiled darkly again, “There may be a chance of casualties if the Jade is in possession of an Elder. So, we can’t risk it. However,

Feng Wu will be an easy target, and he's unlikely to feel threatened. Therefore, he won't harm the boy. This Old Man has already mastered the Divine Inhibition. I can lock onto his soul's scent for 500kms. Xiang Sun will remain on stand-by at all times. Therefore, he won't be able to escape us once he has stolen the Jade. We'll find him even if he escapes to the ends of the earth! Then, we can concentrate our strength, catch-up with him, and resolve the matter in one fell swoop. We'll be able to retrieve both the Soul Replenishing Jades this manner!"

"Good idea, Second Brother!" Everyone's spirit rose when they heard the plan. However, Jun Mo Xie was stunned. [That's their plan? They've conceded so easily?]

It had to be said that this plan of Xiao Bu Yu's would've been very effective in dealing with anyone. Even Yun Bie Chen wouldn't be able to see through it. However, it was worthless in Jun Mo Xie's eyes...

This plan seemed like a 'honey-trap', but it was being used on a castrated man. This analogy sounds vulgar... but the result of the matter would justify it.

Suddenly, many elders cried in alarm, "Second Brother, you can use the Devine Inhibition?! Have you stepped into the fourth level of the Spirit Xuan realm!"

"He he..." Xiao Bu Yu's voice clearly revealed his complacency. "I'm ashamed that it took nearly ten years to make this breakthrough. However, this is the reason why I'm confident that I'll be able to capture that mysterious 'masked man'."

"Congratulations on the remarkable feat, Second Brother!" Everyone spoke in unison. However, Jun Mo Xie laughed in his heart. [Confidence? You speak of confidence in front of this Young Master? How can you behave like that? Your Devine Inhibition is limited to five hundred kilometers. That's worth a fart to this Young Master.]

“Ahem... no one is to allow any information out if we’re able to deal with the Jun Family successfully... understood?” Power radiated from Xiao Bu Yu’s eyes as he looked around.

“That’s obvious! Otherwise, the Lord of the City will blame everyone, and the consequences will be very unpleasant. Besides, the Jun Family has the Dong Fang Family behind them. So, everyone will carry out their tasks stealthily.” Everybody chuckled as they discussed this.

This made Jun Mo Xie very angry. [This Xiao Family is very malevolent! This Young Master will see who exterminates whose roots when we’re all in the south.]

“Second Brother, about this matter with the Xuan Beasts... It’s apparently a very unusual occurrence. Is it possible that the Kings of the Tian Fa forest have decided to meddle in this matter?[1] How can there be such a huge commotion otherwise? Every Great Masters has been summoned. Second Brother, which ‘Eight Great Masters’ do you reckon will answer to this summon?” This was the voice of the Ninth Elder.

“That isn’t very difficult to judge. No one has seen tracks of Yun Bie Chen for many years. I’m afraid it’ll be the same this time around. And then, the Great Blue Master Meng Hong Chen lives too far from the Tian Fa forest. He most probably won’t be able to go even if he receives the news on time. However, the Cold Blooded Master — Lei Wu Bei — and the Solitary Falcon will go for sure. After all, they’re right here in Tian Xiang City. They won’t be able to turn their backs even if they wanted to. Also, the one who gave these supreme summonses — Shi Chang Xiao — is already at the Xue Hun Manner. Li Jue Tian will probably return to his Manor since this threatens his family the most. I roughly estimate that four out of the Eight Great Masters will go. As for the Silver Blizzard City... we will go and represent our lord. And perhaps, we’ll be the most powerful in the terms of comprehensive strength. And as for Great Master Wen Tian — I cannot say. He

may go, or he may not go. But I think the strength of this tyrannical gathering will be enough to deal with the Xuan Beast uprising even without Master Wen Tian's addition," Xiao Bu Yu's smile exhibited great confidence.

"It's just that this Xuan Beast uprising is very strange. Some say that they are directly attacking the Xue Hun Manner. Second Brother, I don't recall the Tian Fa Forest and the Xue Hun Manner having any cause for quarrel." The Third Elder frowned.

"There must be a reason behind the Xuan Beasts' decision to leave Tian Fa and attack the Xue Hun Manner. We'll get to know this after we've arrive there," Xiao Bu Yu spoke faintly. The look in his eyes showed that he didn't desire to discuss it further.

Everyone was silent.

Everyone was confused about the reason behind the Xuan Beasts' uprising. However, stationed underground, Jun Mo Xie had a rough idea as to why...

The Young master Jun smiled bitterly.

[If I've guess it right... I may have a lot to do with this Xuan Beasts' uprising.]

Notes:

King of the Tian Fa Forest. This term refers to the King Xuan Beasts. Big Bear and Long Crane are King Xuan Beasts.

Chapter 296: The Xuan Beast Uprising in the South...

Jun Mo Xie remembered putting the condition in front of Long Crane and Big Bear — if they were able to cause a ruckus at the Xue Hun Manor, and break the legs of its Young Master — then he'd help them advance in their cultivation and break through their bottlenecks. This would be their reward for dealing with the Xue Hun Manor.

They had said that they would take half-a-month to complete their task. But, he had relaxed the time-limit to one month. He had anticipated that they'd finish the task in a very short period of time since they had spoken about it in a very easy-going manner. However, he had received no information about them for a while. Therefore, he had started to feel strange.

[And, now there's this sudden Xuan Beast uprising. Who apart from those two guys could be behind this?]

[I had merely requested them to put a temporary check on the Xue Hun Manor. I never asked them to act so aggressively. And, now the situation is on the brink of a war. How are these two things the same?]

This matter remained a mystery to Jun Mo Xie; no matter how much he wracked his brains over it. [There's a lot at stake here. Didn't those two realize this? But, why did they do this? Did they have some other reason behind it?]

Jun Mo Xie admittedly didn't know much about the Xuan Beast uprising. Those two Tian Fa King Xuan Beasts had left him extremely gloomy at the prospect of venturing south.

[The Heavens' plans supersede our own!]

It had seemed that dealing with the experts of the Xue Hun Manor wasn't a big thing for those two Xuan Beasts. Moreover,

they didn't need to confront the enemy head-on. They were merely required to stir up some trouble. That would've been enough.

However, they hadn't anticipated that their appearance in the Tian Xiang City would alert Shi Chang Xiao — the Master of Life and Death. After the fray for the Xuan Core had come to an end, Shi Chang Xiao had left southwards for the Xue Hun Manor to make enquiries regarding the same...

The King Xuan Beasts had come out of the Tian Fa forest; how could this be a trivial matter?

The Tian Fa forest was located near the Xue Hun Manor. Therefore, it would've been curious if the Xue Hun Manor hadn't been alerted when the King Xuan Beasts had left the Tian Fa forest. Then, another curious coincidence had taken place. The Heavenly Master Li Jue Tian was in the process of making his return to the Xue Hun Manor after getting tired to his travels...

What should certainly be happening... and what shouldn't have happened — had coincidentally happened at the same time. This had given rise to a large-scale commotion.

Long Crane and Big Bear had rushed-over to the Xue Hun Manor. They had decided to carry-out Jun Mo Xie's request very energetically. So, they arrogantly kicked-down the Manor's gate and stormed-in. They first ransacked the entire place, and then beat-up the resident-experts. They had stopped once they had caused enough trouble to mark the end of the first request. Then, they had decided to proceed towards the second one. They started to look for the Young Master of the Manor since they needed to break his legs. They had planned to grab the youngster, spank his buttocks, and leave the Manor.

How would the Xue Hun Manor respond to this? Their so-called 'Lord' would be disgraced because of this.

Those two King Xuan Beasts possessed supreme cultivation, and their bodies were absurdly strong. The Xue Hun Manor had many

Spirit Xuan experts and numerous Sky Xuan experts. But, these two powerful sides weren't a suited opposition for each other.

A Master is a Master and a King is a King. Big Bear and Long Crane were like two tigers in a flock of sheep. Those two fought in high-spirits, and didn't hold anything back. They were very proud of their origins, and firmly believed that they could even confront a Great Master on their own. Therefore, they took advantage of the chaos, entered the Xue Hun Manor, brought down the eastern wall, and set fire to the western side. The Spirit Xuan experts of the Xue Hun Manor were obviously enraged by this. However, they were unable to deal with this threat since their strength was scattered in their numbers. They were beat-up instead of being able to punish their infiltrators.

The two of them were like ferocious monsters who took joy in causing chaos. However, they weren't able to enjoy themselves for long...

The Master of Life and Death, Shi Chang Xiao had earlier hurried to the Xue Hun Manor. He arrived in time, saw the situation, picked his opponent, and started to engage Big Bear. Meanwhile, the rest of the experts combined their strength to face Long Crane. The chaos paved the path to a huge battle, and the situation reversed very quickly. Long Crane and Big Bear were soon at a disadvantage.

It wouldn't have mattered if the two King Xuan Beasts had decided to retreat at that point. Their task was by-and-large complete. However, they were both King Xuan Beasts; so, how could they lose face like that?

They couldn't make their return so easily. How could they face the mysterious man who had promised to help them breakthrough their bottlenecks when they hadn't yet carried-out his task properly? They had merely burned down a few houses. How could that be considered as 'wreaking havoc'?

Besides, they had specifically requested to break Li Teng Yun's legs. However, they hadn't been able to spot him yet. Would they be able to fool that Mysterious Master so easily?

One must say that those Beasts were indeed quite genuine at heart. They had decided to loyally carry-out the task that had been entrusted to them by the Mysterious Master. [Shi Chang Xiao is just one guy, right? We'll come back tomorrow if we're defeated today. Then, we'll see who beats whom!]

[Can it be that you humans have more endurance than us divine beasts? That's nonsense!]

Besides, those two Xuan Beasts possessed extremely tough skin. A powerful strike didn't make much difference to them. They had been surrounded, but they valiantly issued the battle-cry, and effortlessly killed many more people. The Xuan Beasts then acted without any grace, and continued with their wanton destruction... while completely ignoring Shi Cheng Xiao.

Then...

They retreated in order to catch their breaths, and returned the next morning to wreak more havoc. Those two Xuan Beasts had decided that they wouldn't give-up till they had satisfactorily completed their mission! The two of them surely had a strong character-ethic in that regard.

However, this became a cause of grievance for the Spirit Xuan experts of Xue Hun Manor. There were many Spirit Xuan experts in the Xue Hun Manor, but they weren't always guarding the gate or the courtyard. And, those two supremely powerful Xuan Beasts were repeatedly ambushing their east and west wings. Even a divine entity wouldn't be able to stop them...

There were many experts who could take-on these two on their own, but they weren't strong enough to keep-up for long; let alone kill them...

The experts were getting increasingly exhausted, while the Spirits of the two Xuan Beasts continued to rise. The battles over these past few days had brought them much pleasure.

Li Jue Tian returned to the Manor in the middle of the chaos...

Who could have imagined that the Second Great Master would find himself enraged upon his return? He had only been out for a few years, but had come back to find his home under a siege. Everything within a radius of three-hundred meters of his Manor was a complete mess. Things had been brought-down here-and-there, and many things had been overturned. [Is this really the Xue Hun Manor? Is this what I had built so painstakingly over so many years?]

[This looks like a refugee camp!]

Li Jue Tian's enraged counter-attack proved near-fatal for those two King Xuan Beasts.

The two King Xuan Beast were extremely fierce and thoroughly enjoyed a tough fight, but they were no match for Li Jue Tian. Moreover, they had used-up their energies while trifling with their opponents earlier. They were extremely exhausted, and weren't in their peak conditions.

However, the two King Xuan Beast were gifted with very tough bodies. They cooperated with each other, and were momentarily able to cope up with Li Jue Tian; albeit with difficulty.

The final result of the battle — the two Xuan Beasts managed to escape after sustaining serious injuries, while the Xue Hun Manor emerged victorious.

However, it was a bit of an overstatement to call this a victory. Something that Li Jue Tian had painstakingly built over half of his life... laid nearly ruined. Many of his Spirit Xuan experts lay seriously injured. Li Jue Tian had defeated the two Xuan Beast Kings, but this victory could — at best — be regarded as a tragic

one.

However, Shi Chang Xiao had paid them a visit; their Old Master had returned, and the two King Xuan Beasts were nearly defeated — these factors became a cause for celebration. However, mishap reared its head again; that too on the very evening the celebration-feast had been held.

A horde of Xuan Beasts, spreading as far as the eye could see, arrived without any prior indication.

Low level, middle level, high level... whatever one wouldn't expect... were there.

What was even more frightening was that... a massive pack of blood-thirsty Xuan Beast wolves charged at them like a surging wave. Moreover, the pack comprised of an uncountable number of Xuan Beast wolves...

However, this massive pack of the Xuan Beast wolves acted very unlike them, and retreated after they had caused a lot of damage to the Xue Hun Manor. In fact, the omnipresent beasts disappeared without a trace. They felt that their luck had favored them...

Everyone had started to relax. However, at that very moment — a massive horde of Tian Fa forest's man-eating Golden Ants showed-up.

They weren't very lucky... in fact, they were quite unfortunate!

They had barely been able to deal with these man-eating Golden Ants when all sorts of aerial Xuan Beasts started to attack them.

It was said that there was no Sun over the Xue Hun Manor for two consecutive days...

The two King Xuan Beasts hadn't taken their defeat very well, and had instigated a Xuan Beast uprising.

This was no longer a matter of completing that Mysterious Master's task — this had turned into a matter of pride. The

situation had turned very hostile. Two King Xuan Beasts had been forced to turn their tail and flee after being suppressed by a man... Xuan Beasts had been defeated! How could they call themselves 'Kings' if they couldn't even avenge this defeat?

Moreover, the Xue Hun Manor's experts had cheered excessively when Li Jue Tian had defeated the two King Xuan Beasts. Those two had been bullying them around for a few days, but had finally been chased away by their Lord. These cheers had naturally been very unpleasant to the ears of the two King Xuan Beasts. A battle with Li Jue Tian may not have killed those two King Xuan Beasts, but they nearly died from excessive rage after they heard the cheers of the Xue Hun Manor's experts...

Thus, the two King Xuan Beast were angered and enraged! In fact, they had nearly pulled-out their feathers in rage.

Then, another unforeseen event took place in the Tian Fa forest, and that allowed these two King Xuan Beasts to become even more unscrupulous. It was the so-called situation where there's 'no tiger in the mountain... so the monkey becomes the king'. Therefore, they took advantage of this situation. How could they be trusted to deal with bigger issues if they couldn't even deal with such a small task, right?

Therefore, the Xuan Beast uprising arrived like a reckless storm and engulfed everything in its path.

Even Li Jue Tian had no option but to retreat in the face of such strength. However, the two Xuan Beasts didn't accept that as the end. It seemed as if they were unwilling to let him be. It seemed that they'd exterminate them all.

However, the two of them were only thinking one thing: [Old Man, we just want you to handover your son to us. We'll break his legs, and leave. Don't you understand such a simple request? We won't shatter his legs... we'll break them very gently... you'll be able to fix-him-up in a couple of months! It's merely a formality we

need to carry-out for that Mysterious Master! It's such a simple request. Why are you trying to turn this into a death-match...]

Chapter 297: Femme Fatale?

However, who was Li Jue Tian? He was second-only to the most powerful Great Master, Yun Bie Chen. So, wouldn't it be a problem in the future if he handed-over his son under these circumstances? It wasn't that no one from either side came forward to negotiate, but every effort at negotiation was short-lived, and failed miserably. So, each side started to attack in an increasingly vicious manner. Soon, the Xue Hun Manor was completely exhausted, and was about to be wiped-out by the Xuan Beasts; It seemed that they'd become their meal, and later... their excrement.

Therefore, Li Jue Tian and Shi Chang Xiao had no choice but to issue a joint statement, and summoned all Xuan experts in the world to their aid.

And, that's how Jun Mo Xie and the others got to know about the prevailing situation.

This matter had already turned into a big problem...

Everyone was confused as to why such a thing was happening? They wondered as to what could have provoked those two King Xuan Beast.

[They've taken-up arms against the Xue Hun Manor... but why? I don't understand...]

This question not only made everyone gloomy, but also made them feel victimized. Li Jue Tian and the others from the Xue Hun Manor were very confused and angry. [Whom did we provoke? Why has such a heavenly calamity befallen us? Who is behind all this? This is very strange!]

Li Jue Tian had asked Long Crane and Big Bear several times, "Why? We've lived in peace for so many years. What's more, we've even had business dealings between us. So, why are you suddenly attacking us? Even if we have to fight... can you at least tell me the

reason for it?"

Li Jue Tian's question wasn't unreasonable. In fact, it was a very fair question. Shouldn't there be a good reason for the two large forces to go to war?

However, the two King Xuan Beast were unable to answer him every time; [wouldn't it be wrong to tell him that we lost a bet to someone, and your Xue Hun Manor is an eyesore to that person. So, we've had to come here to break your son's legs... nothing more...?]

[Wouldn't we lose a lot of face because of this?]

[It would seem that we've reduced to the status of 'hired thugs'... carrying out the orders of another person.] Being interrogated like that made Big Bear lose his temper; [aren't you the Second Great Master? And, you dare interrogate us like that? Do you know who we are?]

Li Jue Tian didn't inquire further after Big Bear said those words. But, the attacks from both parties became even more ferocious. In fact, if the Xuan Beasts were to retreat at this point... Li Jue Tian would follow them, and raid the Tian Fa forest.

Everyone was annoyed...

Then, Big Bear came up with a classic line and spoke, "Why not? You're not pleasing to my eyes. I've been watching your Xue Hun Manor for a long time, and I think it needs a spanking! You had bullied the two of us that day, right? Now, we've come with so many beasts in order to bully you; how about it? Fuc*ing old bastard! You were more than 80 at the time, and yet you played with young women to make them beget you a son! Even if you aren't ashamed of this — I, your neighbor — feels extremely embarrassed! So, I've decided to teach you a lesson!"

The hundred-year-old second-strongest Great Master almost vomited blood. After that, the ferocity of the battle between the

two sides increased further since the Great Master was extremely outraged to hear those words.

At that point, the two sides reached a point where there was no room for negotiation...

Therefore, innumerable people and Xuan beasts amassed to fight at the risk of their lives. This led to the formation of a huge mountain of corpses, and a sea of blood. But, they didn't understand the reason for this hatred; neither were they aware of the truth behind these events...

Even the architect of this mishap — the Jun Family's Young Master, Jun Mo Xie — was confused and stunned.

[I had only instructed you to wreak havoc, right? But, now I see that you've instigated a world-war!]

[I can't be blamed for this battle! I didn't intend this to happen; I'm innocent!]

Li Jue Tian devoted half-his-life to set-up the Xue Hun Manor. But it was on the verge of destruction. However, if he got to know that the 'real' reason for his predicament was his desire to get a young concubine for his treasured son — it wouldn't be surprising if he turned red with anger and died.

What's a femme fatale? No man could guess this term's meaning under these circumstances. But the corpses of the countless Xuan Beasts, and the blood the innumerable Xuan experts searched for this truth in the heavens above, and eventually came to know about the truth of the matter...

Since time immemorial, there had been legends of beautiful women who had caused problems between countries. However, no woman had ever caused a problem between the human martial world, and the beasts...

Guan Qing Han, this young lady from the Jun Family was unprecedented. She could leave any other woman in the dust!

If a list were to be drawn up regarding this — the Jun Family's young lady, Guan Qing Han would surely be adjudged the number-one 'beauty' in the universe! It was only natural for such beauties to cause a ruckus in successive generations. And, these beauties had one thing in common... they were innocent.

And, she was the most innocent of all!

Guan Qing Han was unaware of this entire matter from the start. She was thousands of kilometers from this place of sorrow and tragedy. So, how would she know that a mountain of corpses was being formed because of her?

In fact, this entire matter would remain an unresolved mystery for an eternity!

At the moment, the Six Spirit Xuan experts on the ground floor of the Magnificent Jewel Hall were coming-up with random conjectures. Similarly, Jun Mo Xie also frowned and pondered over this problem while hiding underground.

[This Xuan Beast uprising... what's its purpose? A battle of such massive armies? It's a waste in my opinion...]

Jun Mo Xie stayed calmly inside the ground. His thoughts tossed and turned inside his mind. However, he felt as if he had failed to grasp the most important point of the matter. He felt that some unforeseen mishaps would exceed his expectations and preparations.

In the end, he decided not to worry about it. [Does this Xuan Beast uprising have any direct relations with me? In fact, I think this is very a fortuitous event! Besides, I'm only going to the Tian Fa forest to hunt for treasures. The others may be going there to put a stop to this uprising. But I don't have the time to do that...]

[Moreover, these people above are really hateful. They plan to deal with Third Uncle and the Jun Family. In fact, they've gone as far as plotting to destroy our Jun Family in one go! This can't be

tolerated!]

Then, Jun Mo Xie escaped into the distance. He silently made his way inside the ground. The Young Master Jun was very stealthy the entire time.

This Yin Yang Escape was very mysterious. Even an extremely strong expert would be hard-pressed to find his silhouette. Earlier, Lei Wu Bei was able to detect faint signs of the Young Master Jun. But, he was unable to truly locate him in the end. Jun Mo Xie was truly amazed at the sharpness of the Great Master's senses. However, his confidence in the Yin Yang Escape had increased many-fold. If a Great Master was unable to find his tracks — one could forget about the small fries then.

Xiao Feng Wu wasn't present in that meeting. Perhaps it was because of his status. Perhaps he wasn't considered 'qualified-enough' to attend such high class meetings. However, Jun Mo Xie hadn't forgotten the main purpose of his visit.

[Only a genuinely good item can provoke such a reaction from the Hong Jun Pagoda... The Xiao Family's Soul Replenishing Jade? That name is very awkward to pronounce!] Jun Mo Xie criticized. The corners of his mouth became crooked. [Xiao Bu Yu's Divine Inhibition? Locking onto my soul's scent for 500kms?]

[Humph; humph. I will go into the Hong Jun Pagoda once I've grabbed my prize. Even an ancient immortal's divine inhibition would be useless then, right? And, as for that soul scent locking technique... your technique may be awesome, but it won't be able to detect me, would it?]

[As a matter of fact, this is precisely like those saying, "Virtue is one foot tall, but the devil is ten foot in height." You're strong, but I am better than you!]

[It is rare for a Xiao Elder to show such good intentions. Xiao Feng Wu is isolated in a separate room; as if offering to be robbed. Such good intentions fit well with me. It's like they are offering a

present with both hands! So, how can I disappoint such good intentions and turn-down this offer?]

Jun Mo Xie would feel very guilty if he turned-down the Xiao Family's second elder's well-intended offer...

[This Xiao Family's second elder isn't merely magnanimous, but he's very easy going too...]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie started to search the entire building for the hidden treasure in high-spirits. [They've deliberately choreographed everything in a manner which would make it easy for me to steal the prize. So, it shouldn't be very difficult to find it.]

Jun Mo Xie's mind was calm as he searched each room in the building with his formidable spiritual sense. He realized that there one thing that was common in each room. Everyone had secretly dispersed a part of their faintly discernable spiritual essence — whether strong or weak — inside the rooms with the purpose of monitoring them. Whereas, a secret room in the middle of the building was covered with layers of these essences. Therefore, a person who broke-in wouldn't be able to retreat without getting smothered these layers.

Jun Mo Xie smiled since he didn't feel any fear. He then stealthily started to move towards the secret room. [Bullsh*t! You think yourselves to be Great Masters?! You think your spirit's essence monitors the room? Really? You think too highly of yourselves, and underestimate me too much!]

Sure enough — everything was as-expected.

Xiao Feng Wu sat crossed legged and straight-backed inside the room. His eyes were closed. His face was a little pale. His hands were placed on his chest to support and protect a jade. That jade was the Young Master Jun's main target — the Xiao Family's Soul Replenishing Jade!

This item was the genuine thing; not a fake. Jun Mo Xie could

feel a massive amount of pure energy concealed in it. The Xuan Qi cycled with every breath of Xiao Feng Wu's. Bit by bit, it came out of the jade and was converted into absorbable Xuan Qi, and would start to flow through the young man's meridians. It could be seen that Xiao Feng Wu's complexion improved by an almost unnoticeable margin after every cycle.

The usage of the Xiao Family's Soul Replenishing Jade suddenly became clear to the Young Master Jun.

The Young Master Jun could clearly feel the pure energy that Xiao Feng Wu was absorbing. The Jade concealed a lot of energy, but the Young Man was absorbing less than a fraction of it. However, Jun Mo Xie was very distressed at this; [How can this bastard possess this item! How can this lowly Xiao Family be allowed to hold such a precious treasure! How can they be considered a suitable owner for such an invaluable item?]

[They shouldn't be allowed to possess this Heavenly Item. Their attitude is outrageous. They anger the heavens and infuriate the people.]

[Only this Young Master is capable of being a flawless-fit for that jade.]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie flew across at a great speed without any hesitation. His hand became like an eagle's claw as it floated in front of his body. He then quickly grabbed the item.

His movements were lightning-fast!

Chapter 298: The Jade is Running Away...

Xiao Feng Wu was wholeheartedly absorbing the energy from the jade. With that, the injuries to his body and meridians were getting healed. He knew that he was being used as bait because of his Soul Replenishing Jade. And, it would false to say that he wasn't afraid. There was a chance that the Mysterious Master wouldn't kill him since the youngster was too beneath him own self in terms of rank. However, Xiao Feng Wu was panic-stricken at the thought that his injuries may not be able to fully heal if the Mysterious Master was to show-up very early... though, that fear was baseless. He'd have to suffer this pain for a few more days...

Therefore, he diligently and wholeheartedly continued to absorb the pure energy from the jade. The effect of this pure energy on his meridians was such, that he could distinctly feel as if his entire body was soaked in a warm spring. He felt warm, relaxed, safe and comfortable. His seriously damaged meridians were getting restored at an astonishingly rapid speed. This amazingly and comfortable feeling almost made him feel like moaning. It was as if his mind was floating; like he was at the limits of the heavens. Xiao Feng Wu felt he was intoxicated, and in a dream.

Then, the jade he held suddenly disappeared during this period of comfort.

Xiao Feng Wu hastily opened his eyes in alarm. He saw that the jade wasn't on his chest, but was in-fact floating in the air. However, it was going away from him rather quickly. What was most-astonishing to Xiao Feng Wu was that he could neither see a shadow, nor sense any person's aura. It was as if the jade had sprung a pair of legs, attained life, and was escaping on its own.

[How's this happening? What's happening? Is that Mysterious Master using Xuan Qi to manipulate the Soul Replenishing Jade away from me...? But there's no fluctuation in the Xuan Qi either.] Xiao Feng Wu couldn't distinguish the truth of what he was

witnessing.

Xiao Feng Wu's consciousness felt a bit fuzzy; he felt as if he was in a dream. He cocked his head to regain some sense. He realized that the jade would soon disappear. He was dismayed at the thought of losing the miraculous Soul Replenishing Jade. He was initially very reluctant, but he gathered some courage and exerted himself to shout mournfully, "Someone... come here... the Jade is running away!"

[The Jade is running away?]

Jun Mo Xie almost laughed and gave away his position in the nothingness. [Damn! This guy is very talented! The jade is undoubtedly a marvelous thing. But, it's still an inanimate object. To say that... 'it's running away...' I'm truly speechless...]

However, Xiao Feng Wu was desperate. Moreover, he was at a loss as to how he'd explain what was happening in front of his eyes. As for someone snatching it from him and running away with it... well, he couldn't see anyone... In fact, he couldn't even see the shadow of a ghost. Therefore, Xiao Feng Wu had shouted in desperation, "The jade is running away..." — not realizing how ridiculous it sounded. Though, his words had managed to accurately describe what he could see.

"Someone is attempting to steal the Soul Replenishing Jade!" Xiao Bu Yu was in the other room. But, his white eyebrows shot-up the moment Jun Mo Xie snatched the jade from Xiao Feng Wu's hands. He had initiated his Devine Inhibition, and it had instantly transmitted a message to his mind. Then, a delicate green eagle quickly flew out of his chest, and flew straight towards Xiao Feng Wu's room.

This result was something which he didn't expect. In fact, it was beyond reason!

The Third Elder had described the Mysterious Man's tyrannical strength and temperament. And, since the former had already

discounted the status of his opponent and snatched away the younger generation's treasure — it was unlikely that he wouldn't attempt to take the other half as well. In fact, he had no doubts about it.

However, the room was covered with many layers of Spiritual Essence at that point of time. Thus, it had a very powerful defense mechanism. Even the First Great Master, Yun Bie Chen, would find it hard to conceal his position. So, it would be impossible that a normal person wouldn't trigger the Spiritual Essences' that were being used to guard it. But, this mysterious person had managed to infiltrate without giving anything away. Such skill was extraordinary and extremely rare.

The next moment, Xiao Bu Yu's slim body quickly flew-out; light as a feather and swift as the mist.

He flew to the secret room where the injured Xiao Wu was getting healed.

Xiao Bu Yu simultaneously let-out a gentle yet shrill and scream. The volume of the scream wasn't very high, but it was uninterrupted, and alarmed the entire Magnificent Jewel Hall. The Spirit Xuan Experts reacted with an amazing speed. In an instant, there were twelve experts who had surrounded Xiao Feng Wu's room in accordance with the plans set-out earlier. Everyone in that cordon focused their full attention, and seemed prepared to react at any moment.

This man had infiltrated several layers of Spiritual Essence, and had stolen the jade. He wasn't a 'regular' foe. Everyone understood this.

[This man is a major enemy!]

Xiao Bu Yu's shrill scream hadn't yet ceased. His eyes were brimming killing intention. The elder then took initiative, and rushed into Xiao Feng Wu's room.

He attacked the thick-red-sandalwood door with his Xuan Qi when he was about seven feet from the room. The door then silently disintegrated into small fragments and disappeared mid-air. Xiao Bu Yu ducked into the room like a young dragon. The speed of his movements had been as fast as lightning.

Xiao Bu Yu had counted the chickens before the eggs had hatched. He believed that his troops would simultaneously move into action if he took the lead. However, he needn't have every man burst into the room. That would result in a chaotic situation, and would instead help the mysterious man to escape.

Therefore, he had decided that only the strongest person would burst through the door, while the rest of them would form a huge encirclement around the room. They could then initiate strict surveillance, and block-off any route the escapee could attempt to use. In that case, the thief would have to face one of them head-on if were to step out of the room — no matter which escape route he'd try to take.

If the one blocking that mysterious man's path brought-out his full power, and managed to stop him for even a moment... that would be enough for the rest of them to surround the enemy and mount a joint attack.

Xiao Bu Yu had full confidence in his people; even the weakest one amongst them. They could even make it hard for the strongest of the 'Eight Great Masters', Yun Bie Chen, to break through as long as they had put their life on the line; forget about other people.

Xiao Bu Yu wouldn't believe that there was someone in this world who could escape his line of sight at this juncture. Moreover, five Spirit Xuan Experts and the Silver Blizzard City's Seven Swords were waiting outside!

That mysterious man was able to infiltrate the room very stealthily, but it would be a joke to think that he'd be able to escape

such a tight cordon.

This arrangement was absolutely flawless, and secure. There was no chance of any mishap.

However, Xiao Bu Yu hadn't realized that mishaps often happen unexpectedly.

He broke-in and flew inside Xiao Feng Wu's room. He was covered in Spirit Realm Xuan Qi from head to toe, and had burst-in like a massive cluster of tornados.

He had heard the rumors about that masked man's terrifying strength. Though, he wasn't afraid of that. He had also been provided a description of that man's character by the Third and the Sixth Elder. And, he feared it. He was worried by his own negligence could help that masked man escape. So, could he dare to be careless at that point?

His body was covered with Xuan Qi as he entered. Then, he quickly spun in a circle on his toes. It appeared as if a ballerina was trying to perform a very difficult move. However, Xiao Bu Yu couldn't find anything strange in the room.

Only Xiao Feng Wu was present inside the room. He stood with a foolish expression on his face.

"Where is that man?" Xiao Bu Yu yelled. He thought to himself. [Don't tell me that we're too late! This is impossible! The Fragrance-Eagle also flew in this direction! What did we do wrong?]

"Which man?" Xiao Feng Wu was at a loss as to what his grandfather had just asked him. So, he asked in confusion.

"The man who stole your jade! Are you an idiot?" Xiao Bu Yu felt like vomiting blood because of his own grandson. [Damn it! That man snatched that jade from his hands, yet he asks, "Which man?"] It was a good thing that Xiao Bu Yu had enough cultivation. Otherwise, he would've caught fire due to his own

rage.

“There was nobody here,” Xiao Feng Wu was dazed. He looked at his empty hands, and then at his angry grandfather. He was at a loss as to what had just happened, and was endlessly confused. [How did that jade fly away from me? This is extremely strange. Did it turn into a ghost?]

“Nobody? Nobody took away your jade from your hands? Are you telling this old man that the Soul Replenishing Jade sprang wings and flew away on its own?” came a loud rebuke in reply.

“Yes, grandfather. It was very strange. The jade didn’t grow wings, but it did fly away on its own... really...!” Xiao Feng Wu’s face was truly earnest.

“You’re a piece of trash!” Xiao Bu Yu rained curses in anger. His clothes made a ‘whooshing’ sound as he leapt into the air. His face was dark with anger. [I have seen useless individuals... I have even seen idiots... but I’ve never seen ‘trash’ such as this. And unexpectedly, this kind of ‘trash’ is my grandson!]

“Well... I’m telling the truth... the jade flew away... it didn’t grow wings... but it flew away... and it did so very quickly...” Xiao Feng Wu mumbled as he stood in front of Xiao Bu Yu. He felt wronged, and felt that he was being treated unjustly. [Why do I even speak the truth when no one is ready to believe me nowadays? I’m only speaking about things that I’ve seen with my eyes!]

“I’m your grandfather! You scoundrel, how dare you speak such nonsense in front of me!” Xiao Bu Yu rained curses while in mid-air. The Qi congealed in his palm came down like the wind, and hit his grandson’s face with a “Bang!”

Xiao Feng Wu staggered a little bit, and fell down. His face swelled up.

Xiao Feng Wu covered his face in resentment. But he kept his

feelings to his heart. [Bullsh*t! You're my grandfather? Then, find that person. But you're no grandfather of mine if you can't find that person...]

Xiao Bu Yu's body shot-up like a meteor in the horizon, and rose thirty meters above the Magnificent Jewel Hall. He started to roam around in wide circles. He was as quick as lightning. His eyes took-in everything under the starlight for around five kilometers. However, he couldn't find the tiniest of clues.

[Can that man's movements be this stealthy?]

The small Fragrance-Eagle also circled around with him. It was evident that it had also lost bearing of its target.

[How is this possible?]

Chapter 299: We Fell Head-First!

Xiao Bu Yu's voice was gentle, yet it echoed heavily; it seemed as if a volcano was about to burst. He was unable to restrain his emotions, "Did you see anyone go out?"

The twelve experts who had covered the escape routes looked at each other in dismay.

[We weren't able to discover him when he infiltrated the place. So, how do you expect us to find him now? Nobody came out. Ah!]

"Be at ease, Second Brother. The twelve of us have set up a very tight cordon. Even a mosquito won't be able to fly out and escape. Therefore, I request Second Brother to make the move." The Third Elder touched his sword's handle. He had spoken those words in a respectful manner. His white hair was like strands of silver; his beard was as white as snow, while his sword shone with a cold light.

"Third Elder Brother is right! Please be at ease, Second Elder Brother!" everyone echoed their agreement. It seemed like they were making a solemn vow.

Xiao Bu Yu would've been gratified if he had heard these words earlier. In fact, he would've even felt proud. After all, the abilities of his junior brothers could never be doubted.

However, at present, their bold words sounded ridiculous to his ears. In fact, he felt somewhat ashamed of them. An incomparable feeling of helplessness arose from his heart. He looked up and let out a long and desolate sigh. Then, the Second Brother slowly descended to the top of the Magnificent Jewel Hall, and stood there in a daze.

"Is something wrong, Second Brother?" Everyone could see that his mood wasn't good. So, they couldn't help but crowed around him, and enquired with concern.

“We fell head-first...” Xiao Bu Yu sighed deeply and looked into the distance. His expression was melancholic and desolate. It revealed the utter humiliation his heart was suffering.

[Who was this man who stole the Soul Replenishing Jade?]

[Who in this world could possess such Godly and clever methods that we couldn't even track them?]

[He came-in without exposing his tracks... or even a shadow!]

[He left without leaving a single trace!]

[Could Master Yun Bie Chen and the other legendary characters have pulled this off?]

“We fell head-first? Second Brother, what are you saying?” Each one of the other twelve experts turned pale without exception. After Xiao Bu Yu had said — “Someone is stealing the Soul Replenishing Jade,” everyone knew what had happened. They had presumed that that mysterious man had finally appeared. Everyone was in high spirits, and was rearing for a fight. They wanted to see who was superior between them and that man. However, they couldn't even find his shadow. Everyone assumed that it was a false alarm. But then, they heard that they had “fallen head-first” from Xiao Bu Yu's very mouth.

Could someone have lived long-enough to reach their age if they couldn't even comprehend the meaning behind this sentence?

“Could it be...?” Everyone looked at Xiao Bu Yu and noticed his expression. Their words were inquisitive in nature. Their expression revealed their disbelief, but the tone of their voice suggested that they had already started to believe it.

“Yes, you've guessed right. The Soul Replenishing Jade has fallen into the hands of that man,” Xiao Bu Yu's gentle voiced seemed gloomy. In fact, he couldn't talk properly because of his dismal, “I couldn't even see that person's shadow. And, the jade has disappeared without a trace. We couldn't see the man even though

we gave him an immediate chase. You people obviously couldn't spot that needle in the haystack either. This is one tumble the Silver Blizzard City has taken head-first..."

"How can that be? Second brother, we mustn't forget that you had used your Divine Inhibition on the jade." The Ninth Elder stared wide-eyed, "But with the precautions we took... wouldn't it be easy to find him if we wanted to?"

Everyone had a "you are an idiot" expression on their faces the moment those words left his mouth. [Would the Second Brother show such a mournful expression if his methods were of any use now?]

However, everyone's expression underwent a huge transformation as they thought of this.

"It's of no use. The moment that man laid his hands on the Soul Replenishing Jade — his superior method eliminated my Devine Inhibition, and the 500km Soul-Scent Lock. We can't use them now." Xiao Bu Yu looked-up at the small green eagle that was soaring above. He felt very helpless.

"How's this possible?" The twelve experts gasped a mouthful of air, "The Divine Inhibition links itself to the target's body once it makes contact. So, how could a person break-away from this connection without a trace? Moreover, what kind of strength did this person possess to pull this off? Furthermore, the 500km Soul-Scent Lock is a secret substance of the Silver Blizzard City. It literally sticks to a person's soul once it makes contact with its target. Only the special antidote from the Silver City could remove that smell. Otherwise, it would remain stuck to a person throughout their lives. So, how was this man able to remove it? This entire matter seems completely inconceivable!"

"Are you sure, Second Brother?" a stern voice asked. Everyone turned to the source of the voice, and realized that the Fifth Elder had spoken those words. Out of the nine brothers — he was the

most cautious one.

“I’m sure!” Xiao Bu Yu sighed and frowned. It seemed that he had aged ten years in an instant. Then, he continued softly, “My main concern right now is that... he was able to eliminate the Devine Inhibition, and the 500km Soul-Scent Locking... So... we can’t say that his strength is ‘number-one under the heavens’, but it is many levels above ours. So, I reckon that if he wants to obtain our Soul Replenishing Jades... he could do it with ease. In fact, it wouldn’t be difficult for him to compel us into surrendering the remaining Jades by attacking the Silver Blizzard City... so...”

Everyone understood the meaning behind his words very clearly, “Yes... if he’s truly an unrivalled expert... why would he willingly shoulder the reputation of a thief throughout his life? His name would be tainted with that reputation. And, he won’t be able to remove this stain if he were to become famous throughout the land in the future. This doesn’t make any sense!”

Everyone went silent.

If everyone-present fought with heart and courage — their strength would’ve possibly been enough to prevail over the Great Eight Masters. However, this man hadn’t revealed himself. And, those thirteen experts from the Silver Blizzard City had fallen head-first into a tumble against this mysterious man. So, everyone felt frustrated. But, they were also afraid of him. In fact, they were extremely scared...

[We’re lucky that he only wanted to steal the Jade! Had he intended on fighting with us... Wouldn’t he have been able to pinch us to death like we were nothing more than river snails?]

The Seven Swords of the Silver Blizzard City stood expressionless. However, they were clenching the hilts of their swords so sharply that their bones were visible.

“I’ve held my head with complacency in the Silver Blizzard City for the last thirty years. But I’ve unexpectedly been handed a

defeat today...!” Xiao Bu Yu moved his hands behind his back as he stood at the summit of Magnificent Jewel Hall. He pensively gazed at the Tian Xiang City. The city seemed ablaze with lights under the luminous starlight. He then let out a long sigh, and stood motionless for a long time.

The twelve experts felt a somewhat stifling sensation in their chests. The mere process of breathing had started to seem like a tough task... as if the vast sky above the Tian Xiang City was suddenly pressing down on them. They felt as if layer-upon-layer of heavy pressure had started to descend upon their minds.

“Hurry up and fly to the Silver Blizzard City. Inform them about today’s matter. We shall leave for Tian Fa soon. This place hasn’t been benevolent to us. We must hurry.” Xiao Bu Yu’s white hair, beard and gown rustled as they floated in the wind. His voice was extremely desolate and bleak. It seemed that the pride and arrogance — everything he had cultivated throughout the years — had left his body as he spoke those words. There was an air of unspeakable dismal about him...

It felt as if this was... the end of the road for a hero!

“Second Brother!” the twelve Experts called-out in concern.

Xiao Bu Yu waved his sleeve, “Too much thinking isn’t good for you! Everyone must go and rest.” His body moved as he finished his sentence. Then, he suddenly vanished from the rooftop; leaving behind a heavy and desolate aura.

Jun Mo Xie had smoothly put the Soul Replenishing Jade in the HongJun Pagoda in a split second. Then, he had put all of his effort into initiating the Yin Yang Escape, and had stood motionlessly in the corner of Xiao Feng Wu’s room. The Young Master Jun had decided to quietly observe the situation, and any changes which would occur thereafter.

However, Xiao Bu Yu had burst-in the moment he put the jade away. The Elder’s sharp Xuan Qi had dispersed in all directions;

along with his Divine Inhibition. It was as if a thousand sharp swords were swinging wildly in the air. It had almost made it difficult for Jun Mo Xie to breathe. He couldn't help but be astonished.

[This person from the Silver Blizzard City is no small fry. His imposing aura is slightly inferior to the Solitary Falcon's; but not by much.]

[No wonder the Silver Blizzard City was so confident about their plans.]

After that, Jun Mo Xie settled-in to watch the drama unfold — free of cost. He could only feel one thing about these experts from the Silver Blizzard City: [They are amazing]. He was nothing more than a 'small fry' in front of them. However, these great shark-like Spirit Xuan experts had praised him, and had nearly declared him the 'number-one expert' under the heavens.

This was very pleasurable for him! In fact, it was almost too pleasurable...

It was only natural that the Young Master Jun was merely observing everything from the side-lines at the time; nothing more. He wasn't going to make his opinions known at that point. So, when Xiao Bu Yu was standing depressed — Jun Mo Xie stood not far away from his side. He had placed his hands on his knees, and looked at the elder's face with interest. The Young Master Jun was deriving joy in his sadness.

Jun Mo Xie unexpectedly felt very relaxed when he witnessed Xiao Bu Yu make a sudden decision go to Tian Fa. He was aware that these people would try to make things difficult for him and his uncle in the Tian Fa Forest. In fact, they might even try to kill the Solitary Falcon; but, he wasn't worried about it.

He was aware that the effect of his Aura would be far worse in the south than it was here. So, would he need to fear them?

That would be a big joke!

However, he was worried about the possibility of these people from the Silver Blizzard City intercepting and attacking Jun Wu Yi's army en-route. The chances of this taking place were very slim. In fact, it seemed ridiculous. But, this was Jun Mo Xie's main concern.

Everything else was unimportant in contrast.

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie didn't leave since he had decided to keep watch from the top of the Magnificent Jewel Hall. He would only feel relieved after he'd see them leave. Then, he would try his best to delay the movement of the army since it wouldn't be good for him if these people were to attack the army midway...

The next morning, Jun Mo Xie saw the Silver City's six Great Elders, seven Sky Xuan peak experts, Xiao Han and Mu Xue Tong again. The pale-faced and weak Xiao Feng Wu, and Princess Han Yan Meng — and her luggage — were accompanying them as they departed in a grand manner. He saw them leave the Tian Xiang City, and trailed them for half-a-kilometre. He noticed that they were completely engrossed in their journey. So, he felt relieved and set-off to return home.

[You've finally fled! Tian Xiang is my world now!] Jun Mo Xie returned home feeling as light as a feather. He felt incomparably relieved.

He had barely reached the gates when his nostrils were assailed by an extremely acrid smell. He nearly tumbled. [What is this matter about?] He carefully tried to ascertain its origin, and jumped-up in fright. [My Heavens! Ah! What's this?!]

Chapter 300: That's How Ingredients Are Procured

He hadn't noticed that a group of soldiers had escorted over ten chariots to the Jun resident's gate. One team of soldiers was moving the boxes from the carts on to the ground. Each of those boxes was either bulky or delicate. And, the extremely pungent smell of medicines which had assailed his nostrils was originating from these boxes.

Fortunately, those boxes were being moved inside the house; not outside. Otherwise, Jun Mo Xie's first response would've been, "People have raided our house! They are confiscating our stuff!"

The scene was very chaotic to begin with. However, it didn't end there. A group of approximately fifty middle-aged men were scrambling around. They were calling-out-loud mournfully as they impleaded. This had made the entire situation even more chaotic.

[What is going on? What in the world is happening here? What is this?]

Jun Mo Xie walked through the crowd with suspicion and doubts in his mind. And, just when he was about to enter through the gate... he heard loud cries from his side. The mournful middle-aged men had come rushing towards him, and had started to kneel in front of him. Their faces were covered with snot and tears. They started to impleaded, "Young Master Jun, please be kind; please be generous and let us off! We wish you a long life! We pray you have a blessed life of hundred years, and you attain a great position in the court! Have pity on our small businesses! We have families to feed; please have mercy on us!"

Jun Mo Xie was stumped; [how am I related to this? What are they saying? They are making it seem like this Young Master is an evil man from the legends who forces girls into prostitution... like I am an evil tyrant who brings great misfortune and oppresses

people! Who are these folks?! What is this?!]

“What’s the matter?” Jun Mo Xie frowned. He knew that those merchants wouldn’t dare to talk-back to someone of his stature. So, he asked a soldier standing at the side. But, the soldier merely shook his head. Unexpectedly, he wasn’t aware of the reason behind that commotion either.

Just when the Young Master Jun started to feel gloomy — the ground started to shake. Then, a monstrous head arrived.

“I’ve brought the medicines you had asked for. The ones which were easily accessible, and the ones which weren’t; I’ve brought them all.” Fatty Tang chimed in his distinctive intonation. It seemed as if he were showing-off his treasures. He then extended his ‘round-and-fat’ bear’s claw-of-a-hand to gesture. “And these are it! Your brother moved fast, and gave his hundred percent to the task!”

Jun Mo Xie felt somewhat dizzy; [I had told you to get as many ingredients for my medicines as you could. But, this is too much. And, what’s the deal with these middle-aged men?] He couldn’t help but blurt out, “How did you get so many ingredients? And, what’s the matter with these people?”

“Ah! Young Master, everyone is on the same side. So, why do you speak so formally? And, why do you look so confused?” Tang Yuan squeezed through the crowd and winked; as if to imply a clear understanding between the two.

“Young Master Tang, Young Master Jun, please be kind to us. Please let us off! We beg you; leave some means for our survival!” The middle-aged men started to weep the moment they saw Tang Yuan. They then surrounded the two Young Masters, kneeled in front of them, and started to knock their heads on the ground.

“You...” Jun Mo Xie was stunned for a while. Then, he slowly started to understand what had happened... by-and-large. It seemed that Fatty Tang had gone to several pharmaceutical

families, and had seized these ingredients from their stores. [And if I'm not mistaken... these people may not have been in a position to give-out such a large amount of raw material.]

“You had urgently asked for these ingredients. But, the amount was a lot. How could I have procured so much in such little time? And, where would I go to get those ingredients for you? So, this Young Master frowned and carefully devised a plan with his foresight!”

Tang Yuan looked very pleased with himself as he spoke, “Therefore, I made arrangements to go to these pharmacies. Then, I made my desire to buy the ingredients known to them. However, you had asked for a very high amount of ingredients, and they said that they didn't wish to part-with so much of it. They told me that they wouldn't be able to conduct their day-to-day business if they sell the ingredients you required...”

Jun Mo Xie was speechless. He rolled his eyes; [you've made a stupid move! How will they do business if you seize their stock with prior notice? Don't you know that it takes several days for one family to complete its turnover? And, did you just say “All of it”? Have you taken everything in their stores?]

“So, this Elder Brother got very angry.” Tang Yuan's eyes opened wide, and a murderous expression emerged inside them, “They had refused to do business with me. They weren't selling anything to me. That clearly meant that they were trying to defraud me by force! Really?! How could they do that?! They dared to bully us-two brothers! And, isn't this a breach of the law? So, I straight away went to the Ministry of Justice, and obtained a written approval. Then, I set upon rectifying these people. I then went to the biggest families — and because they acted so tough yesterday — I took everything they had, and closed their shops. Now, I've transported those medicinal ingredients here.”

Jun Mo Xie staggered, “What reason did you give to the Ministry to seize these items from these families? Did you tell the Ministry

of Justice that you wanted it... and they thought that it was awesome ...and gave you the written approval?”

“Third Young Master... aren’t you being foolish? Why are you talking like you don’t know how the business works?” Tang Yuan looked at him suspiciously, “We can seize their stuff whenever we want because of our status. Why do we need to give any justification? They will learn to respect us if we can go and seize their families’ resources at our whims! That is exactly why powerful people go and make arrests for baseless things! They seize the businesses, and wait for a few days. Then, they usually let the owners go if they’re in a good mood. However, they chop everyone’s heads-off if they’re in a foul one since listening to these laments about trivial matters is very annoying...”

The corners of Tang Yuan’s mouth rose upwards. He then made a scoffing sound.

Jun Mo Xie stared with his eyes wide open. This was the first time he realized that he hadn’t properly integrated with his social status since crossing-over to this new world. Tang Yuan’s ideology was very reasonable. Given the setting of this feudal society... would two young nobles like Tang Yuan and Jun Mo Xie need to give any justification if they wanted the entire stock from a shop?

[But, isn’t it too forceful and tyrannical?]

There was no better way to explain it. Jun Mo Xie and Tang Yuan could act harsh and unreasonable. Their status would allow them to walk into any shop, and seize the family’s entire business. Even if they were to kill each of these people — they could turn to the Ministry of Justice. After that, they could strut around and say — “We’ve killed them, but it’s important to mete-out justice to those who deserve punishment. We acted in accordance to reasonable self-defense, and deserve to be accorded an Imperial Commendation! Oh, and wait... the dead man’s family still owes compensation for the damage to our spirit! Humph! We had suffered quite a shock! ...but what of the family whose men you

murdered? ...Send them all to prison. Otherwise, they'd trouble me if they were left in the open. And, if you lowly officials have a problem with it — I don't mind sending you to prison for a few days. This, I've decided!"

This was an advantage of such a high status in this type of a society. It might as well be asked — how many people in all of Tian Xiang could provoke the two great families of Tang and Jun?

[I can't speak for this world... but I could never have acted like this in the previous one... the internet would've... so, this really is a different world!]

Jun Mo Xie turned around to look at the numerous entreating faces. He counted their numbers. Eventually, he figured that shopkeepers from pharmacies of seven families were present outside his door.

He had started to understand this matter very clearly. Fatty Tang had acted exactly like the Hit-man Jun would've. He killed the target, and moved-on without a second thought. But, the base of this matter...

"Everyone heard me, right? Do you know what the problem is? Let me tell you — this elder isn't happy. Let me ask you — who in Tian Xiang Empire dares to refuse business with this elder?!"

Tang Yuan had cried his throat horse with this nonsense. How could those pharmacists have missed his it? [I regret this now... from the bottom of my very heart... and even my guts. I would've given him a cheap bargain if I had known that this would happen... maybe he would've left me alone if I had given him a present as well. We can't do business beyond 10-15 days under these circumstances. If I look at things now — my family is ruined!]

The pleading members of the crowd nodded in agreement about something, "We're willing to offer all of our family properties to the two Young Masters. We merely ask that the two Young Masters don't take the entirety of our stock... and show us some mercy."

“Bullsh*t! Do you think this Young Master is poor? You think I need your offerings? Besides, what could you offer me except medicines? Damn it! Will you give me medicines along with the gifts? Are you hoping that I fall ill? Would you be happy if I died?” Tang Yuan shouted as he waved his status in their face once again.

[We hope that you ‘both’ fall ill. The common people will be very fortunate if you fall ill and die.] The shopkeepers thought angrily. However, their faces only showed obeisance out of fear.

“Everyone, listen! Our Aristocratic Hall needs those ingredients urgently! We had no choice but to use such a method to obtain them. I’ll gladly accept your medicines for now. But later, you can arrange an accountant, and settle the accounts with Young Master Tang. This Young Master will ensure that you get paid; no matter what amount we will have owed you. We’ll buy your goods at fair prices. We don’t try to cheat anyone. Shall we agree upon this, Gentlemen?”

Jun Mo Xie had deliberated at-length before he finally opened his mouth. Why would he wish to exploit those shopkeepers by using his status? It didn’t feel good. Fatty had overstepped the boundary a bit too much in this case. So, it was better to settle this matter as quickly as possible since it would be quite improper if any more trouble was unnecessarily provoked.

“Yes. Yes. We lowly people wouldn’t dare object.”

“You wouldn’t dare to object? I’m in-charge here. The decision is mine anyway! Good! Now, everyone must return to their homes. This matter had been decided.” Jun Mo Xie frowned at Tang Yuan, “Foot the bill for these urgently-needed ingredients to me. Pay them double the price. Anyway, I had instructed you to pay a higher price. And yes, tell the authorities to remove those trivial accusations. These people are innocent; let them go.”

Tang Yuan’s face twitched in distress. [Pay them double...]

“We lowly folks wouldn’t dare...” With this, the matter was

finally resolved. The shopkeepers relaxed and sighed in relief. They didn't say anything since they didn't wish to get into more trouble over these ingredients. But, at least their family businesses had been saved.

“Uh, and I don't want so much of it. I won't need whatever is remaining after I'm done filtering through them,” Jun Mo Xie pointed at the ingredients and spoke. He barely took a step before he stopped, “Oh, that's right... send your shop-assistant to lend a hand. Otherwise, I don't know when I'll be able to finish with such a large amount.”

The shopkeepers agreed with pained expressions. They could only think; [what 'way of the world' is this? We run honest businesses. We didn't provoke anybody. However, one person comes out of the blue and seizes our family business. Then, he threatens us with death. Then unexpectedly, we're let-off. And, we're grateful for that... But now, we have to send our assistants to help sort-out and recycle whatever this person doesn't use? Oh, and, we have to keep a smiling face the entire time?! This is unfair... this is very unfair...]

[Why didn't I see this coming?]

All seven shopkeepers thought of the same thing in unison.

“Good! Now relax and do what I just told you to do. And, hurry up. Everyone — get moving; now!” Jun Mo Xie pulled-up his gown, and proceeded in through the door. He could faintly hear Tang Yuan's voice in the background. It seemed that he was gnashing his teeth, “So, so, so... you guys opened your mouths, and convinced the Young Master to pay you double...”

“We wouldn't dare to...” the replying voices were full of respect and humility.

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but smile. He felt that status and authority was handy in dealing with things. [Ah, why hadn't I thought of this earlier?] These pharmacies didn't have any

legendary medicines in their stock, but they had every common-one a person could hope for. [I could've saved so much time if I thought of this earlier, ah!]

Table of Contents

[Otherworldly Evil Monarch](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 201: 'Free Hand' granted](#)

[Chapter 202: Battle in the Maple Forest](#)

[Chapter 203: As it turns out](#)

[Chapter 204: Burning both jade and common stone](#)

[Chapter 205: Request me! I'll save him!](#)

[Chapter 206: Breakthrough](#)

[Chapter 207: The Hongjun Pagoda and the Good Fortune](#)

[Chapter 208: The Flame of Primal Chaos, and the Furnace of Good Fortune](#)

[Chapter 209: You will wish you hadn't said that](#)

[Chapter 210: Don't call him your senior again](#)

[Chapter 211: A Great Master's arrival](#)

[Chapter 212: You want me to save him? Let's talk about the conditions first!](#)

[Chapter 213: Join me, you won't regret it](#)

[Chapter 214: Allow me to be your host for one year!](#)

[Chapter 215: Accomplishing the ultimate objective](#)

[Chapter 216: Operating separately](#)

[Chapter 217: The Riddle of the 'Throwing Knife'](#)

[Chapter 218: Remarkable Coincidence](#)

[Chapter 219: Guan Qing Han's doubts](#)

[Chapter 220: A plan to make a fortune](#)

[Chapter 221: Tyranny](#)

[Chapter 222: The Great Master's rage](#)

[Chapter 223: Do You Agree?](#)

[Chapter 224: Starting an Enmity is Met with the Regrets of a Vengeful](#)

[Compensation](#)

[Chapter 225: Master Falcon's Gloom](#)

[Chapter 226: The Unrivalled Master](#)

[Chapter 227: A Special Picture](#)

[Chapter 228: Jin Yang Gang's Transformation](#)

[Chapter 229: You Were Using Me as Cannon Fodder!](#)

[Chapter 230: The Twelve Levels of Spirit Xuan, Each Level Scaling to the Sky!](#)

[Chapter 231: Silver Blizzard City's History](#)

[Chapter 232: Operation Begins](#)

[Chapter 233: Subduing the Spirit Dragon Gang](#)
[Chapter 234: Silver Blizzard City!](#)
[Chapter 235: The Seven Swords of the Silver City](#)
[Chapter 236: Fatty's Blind Date](#)
[Chapter 237: Strangely Heroic Woman](#)
[Chapter 238: The Troublesome Iron Winged Panther](#)
[Chapter 239: Dreamy Feelings](#)
[Chapter 240: Aristocratic Status](#)
[Chapter 241: The Emperor's Verdict](#)
[Chapter 242: One Smile Can Obliterate Hate and Grievances](#)
[Chapter 243: Collision in front of the Aristocratic Hall](#)
[Chapter 244: Young Master Jun's Rogue Tricks](#)
[Chapter 245: I Just Like to Bully You](#)
[Chapter 246: 'Great Auctioneer' Tang Yuan's Interpretation of Aristocracy](#)
[Chapter 247: Jun Mo Xie's First Abduction](#)
[Chapter 248: The Gong to Start the Show!](#)
[Chapter 249: Who is worse than whom?](#)
[Chapter 250: Locked Onto Their Respective Targets](#)
[Chapter 251: The Prince's Shamelessness](#)
[Chapter 252: Brother Mo Xie Playing a Handsome Hoodlum!](#)
[Chapter 253: No Relations for the Tian Family](#)
[Chapter 254: Unintentional Leak of Secrets](#)
[Chapter 255: Jun Mo Xie's prepares for the troubles ahead; Tang Yuan's lofty
Ideals.](#)
[Chapter 256: Brother, Will You Be My Scapegoat?](#)
[Chapter 257: News of the Crossbows!](#)
[Chapter 258: Unexpected Misfortune](#)
[Chapter 259: Desperateness' Gentleness](#)
[Chapter 260: Little White Arranges a Rescue Squad](#)
[Chapter 261: I Shall Give Up On the Heavens, But Not On My Beloved](#)
[Chapter 262: To Save or Not to Save?!](#)
[Chapter 263: Get Someone Else to Do One's Dirty Work?\[1\]](#)
[Chapter 264: You Got Framed!](#)
[Chapter 265: I Will Withdraw When the Task Is Completed](#)
[Chapter 266: Jun Family's Ancestral Teachings](#)
[Chapter 267: I'm Sorry... There's Nothing I Can Do!](#)
[Chapter 268: Blood Oath](#)
[Chapter 269: Is It... Is It Him?!](#)
[Chapter 270: Reprimanded](#)

[Chapter 271: You Three Are Very Stupid!](#)
[Chapter 272: The Cold-Blooded Master](#)
[Chapter 273: A Supreme Master's Rage](#)
[Chapter 274: Intentionally Stirring-Up Some Trouble](#)
[Chapter 275: I Will Seek To Avenge!](#)
[Chapter 276: I'm Not Satisfied Yet](#)
[Chapter 277: The Super-Misunderstanding!](#)
[Chapter 278: Soaring Rage](#)
[Chapter 279: This Is Very Embarrassing...](#)
[Chapter 280: I'll Show You What Makes Me A 'Rogue'!](#)
[Chapter 281: The Arrival of the Talented Scholars](#)
[Chapter 282: You don't have the Money? Use your Granddaughter to Repay the Debt!](#)
[Chapter 283: Fatty Passes the Test](#)
[Chapter 284: The First Open-Contest!](#)
[Chapter 285: There's No Harm in Having Fun](#)
[Chapter 286: Elder Brother Will Remain at the Top... Even if the Sky Falls Down!](#)
[Chapter 287: A Very Generous and Easy Target!](#)
[Chapter 288: You're Very Lucky!](#)
[Chapter 289: I Only Feel Like Stepping on the Wenxing Heavenly Literature Institute](#)
[Chapter 290: This is the Next One](#)
[Chapter 291: I Will Abuse You Till I Don't Die!](#)
[Chapter 292: Attacked by an Assassin!](#)
[Chapter 293: A Sharp Sword on the Verge of Being Unsheathed!](#)
[Chapter 294: Determination!](#)
[Chapter 295: Xiao Family's Plans and Arrangements](#)
[Chapter 296: The Xuan Beast Uprising in the South...](#)
[Chapter 297: Femme Fatale?](#)
[Chapter 298: The Jade is Running Away...](#)
[Chapter 299: We Fell Head-First!](#)
[Chapter 300: That's How Ingredients Are Procured](#)